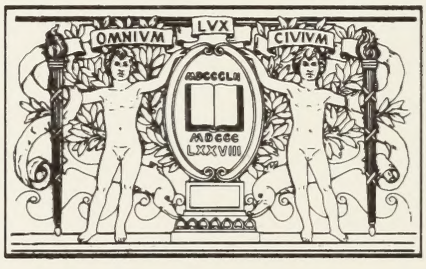
THOMAS SEAVY AND ROBERT IRWIN

Crockett Allen Harrison



BOSTON
PUBLIC
LIBRARY

Book design by Helen Lynn Granger, a 12th generation descendant of Thomas Seavy, the emigrant, 13th generation descendant of Francis Cooke of the Mayflower and 14th generation descendant of Christopher Branch of the Jamestown, Virginia Colony.

THOMAS SEAVY & ROBERT IRWIN

Their Descendants and Connecting Lines

Crockett Allen Harrison

CROCKETT ALLEN HARRISON

GATEWAY PRESS, INC.
Baltimore 1988

CS71
.5443
1988

© 1988 by Crockett Allen Harrison. All rights reserved. Published 1988

Library of Congress Catalog Card No. 87-83076

Please direct book orders to:
Crockett Allen Harrison
RD. 5 Box 2029
Grove City, Pa. 16127

Published for the author by Gateway Press, Inc.,
1001 N. Calvert St., Baltimore, MD 21202
Printed in the United States of America

CONTENTS

	Preface	*vii*
	Introduction	*xi*
I	Early New England Coast Exploration and Settlement	*1*
II	Isles of Shoals and Dun Fish	*15*
III	The Seavey Family of Devon England	*29*
IV	William[1] Seavey	*39*
V	Thomas[1] Seavey	*55*
VI	Samuel[2] Seavey	*63*
VII	Berry	*69*
VIII	Foss	*75*
IX	Samuel[3] Seavey	*85*
X	Hannah Seavey	*91*
XI	Samuel[4] Seavey	*93*
XII	Emerson and Fuller	*107*
XIII	Solomon[5] Seavey	*115*
XIV	Buffum, Pope, Buxton, Osborne and Joslin	*121*
XV	Celia Thaxter	*141*
XVI	Harold Hanson and Mrs. A. C. Hall	*153*
XVII	William[6] Seavey	*157*
XVIII	New England and Clinton County, N. Y. 1780–1830	*167*
XIX	The Washburn Line	*187*
XX	The Separatists and the Cooke and Mahieu Lines	*195*
XXI	John[1] Washburn	*207*
XXII	Experience Mitchell and the Mitchell Line	*211*
XXIII	John[2] Washburn	*219*
XXIV	Samuel Packard	*223*
XXV	Samuel[3] Washburn	*227*
XXVI	The Leonards	*229*
XXVII	Samuel[4], Samuel[5], and Reuben[6] Washburn	*233*
XXVIII	Eunice and the Wrights	*237*
XXIX	Simeon[7] Washburn	*239*
XXX	Solomon[7] Seavey	*243*
XXXI	Curtis	*247*
XXXII	George[8] Washington Seavey	*253*

XXXIII George W. and Sophia (Sharrow) Collins *265*
XXXIV Jane Richey and Robert[1] Irwin *275*
XXXV Rooney and Robinson *281*
XXXVI James[2] Irwin *291*
XXXVII Lawrence[9] Albert Collins and Jane (Irwin) Collins *303*
XXXVIII Fannie[10] Elizabeth Collins *327*
XXXIX Amityville Years *345*
XL Birmingham Years *367*
XLI Grove City Years *371*
XLII Retirement and Travel *379*
XLIII Sarah Sophia, George Irwin and Adelia Katherine Collins *397*
XLIV Children of Crockett A. and Fannie C. Harrison *411*
Acknowledgments *431*
Appendices
A. Seavey Documents *435*
B. Excerpts from Booklet: The Berrys by the Beach *439*
C. Will of Thomas[1] Emerson *451*

Preface

During the years between 1968 and 1980 while collecting information for, and writing, a book on the various family lines of the author, numerous trips were made to the area of the home of his wife in northern New York—Plattsburgh, Saranac and Peru in Clinton County. Being interested in history, and relationship of families to history, and hers in particular, I naturally inquired about her family. As is quite common these days, she knew very little about her family and the same was true for her sisters and cousins. Beyond their lack of interest in having full information about their families, there was a very good reason for their lack of knowledge concerning them.

The father, Lawrence Albert Collins, died when she was only ten years of age, so her memories of him are limited to those of a child of that age. He, in turn, was left without a mother when he was less than two years of age. George W. Collins and his wife, who was Sophia Sharrow before her marriage, took young Lawrence and raised him as their own son. Due to the second and third marriage of his biological father, and his move to another area, Lawrence, as far as is known today, never really knew him, and until about thirty years of age, did not seem to be concerned in the least that his name was really Seavey and not Collins, the name that he had always used.

A little more was known about the family of the mother, Jane (Jennie) Irwin Collins. Her parents and connecting lines had come from Ireland by way of Canada, and some, if not all, were originally from Scotland before going to Ireland.

Briefly, enough was learned to realize that the story of the family should be searched out and written. Once the search started, one difficulty after another was encountered. Every possible source of information was checked, but nothing seemed to yield results. At times the temptation was great to abandon the project. Eventually some progress was made and then the pieces began to fall in place. With each new discovery of information, the story became more interesting.

As suspected in the beginning, the story of the Seaveys and their connecting lines is one that should be recorded for their descendants and others who can tie into one or more of the lines. While there is much that is not known, and might be found by more searching, enough has been brought together to record. While the temptation is great to continue searching for additional material to make the story more complete and more interesting, the possibility of not being able to put it together and into print must be considered as the author is five years over the line into the four score year period.

The ideal plan for this project would be

to start with an account of conditions in England, Scotland, Ireland and France, the countries of origin of the various family lines, in order to establish their reasons for departure. The next step would be to tell about the conditions involved in coming to this country. But fifty-nine pages are devoted to this kind of background information in the book on the family lines of the author, *The Allens and the Harrisons of the Kingdom of Callaway*, which can be considered a companion volume. Rather than repeat this background presentation, as most of it is applicable to the Seaveys and connecting lines, only brief summaries and material not in the other book will be included here.

The stories of the two sets of family lines are much the same but still they are very different. First, the families of this account all came to America from England, Ireland, Scotland, and France. Those of the other account came from these countries with the addition of Germany. The Seavey family and its connecting lines came to New England and moved west to northern New York and the Irwins and their lines came to northern New York by way of Canada. In contrast, all of the lines of the Allens and Harrisons came to New York City and other ports as far south as Jamestown, Virginia. They were soon concentrated in Virginia and from there went west to Missouri directly or with a stop of a generation or so in Kentucky. Except for the Irwins and their connecting lines of this account, all lines of both families were in America in the 1600's or the very early 1700's—well before the Revolutionary War and the signing of the Declaration of Independence.

Thomas Seavey was living on the Isles of Shoals off New Hampshire as early as 1640. His uncle William Seavey had arrived in 1632. Several of the connecting lines of this family go back to the earliest days of the Massachusetts Bay colony and were Puritans. The Washburn line which connects with the Seavey line in its seventh generation in America has the Mayflower line of Francis and Hester (Mahieu) Cooke. He was English but living in the Plymouth or Pilgrim colony in Holland where he married her, a French Huguenot. The Seavey line mixes Church of England, Puritans and Pilgrims or Seperatists. The Irwin line mixes Scotch-Irish Protestants with a Catholic line from Ireland by way of Canada. The Allen and Harrison lines were mostly Church of England or Scotch-Irish Presbyterians. Some of these lines were in the Jamestown colony by 1620 or earlier.

Although the two family situations were different in detail they were much the same as far as fundamentals were concerned. This is the story of people who were dissatisfied with their situation whether it was poverty, lack of opportunity for betterment, religious discrimination or political persecution or a combination of some or all of these conditions. They made up their minds to do something about their situation and had the courage to go ahead, even though it involved leaving family and friends and a long, unpleasant, even dangerous, North Atlantic crossing to a new land. Finally, it is an account of their part

in building the nation we have today. Briefly this account will tell where the various lines came from, why they came here, how they arrived and what they have accomplished. The children of the families of these two books and their children and generations to come can be proud of those from whom they have descended. They have a combination of lines of descent that probably is not found frequently. The Mayflower of the Pilgrims and lines that arrived sufficiently early in the Jamestown colony to make them eligible for membership in the Jamestown Society. It is hoped that once they know more about their families they will be encouraged to so direct and conduct their lives that the priceless heritage passed along to them will not only be preserved, but will serve as a base for continued contributions to the growth and general betterment of this great nation of ours and the world in general.

Introduction

The general plan of this book will be the same as that used in *The Allens and the Harrisons of the Kingdom of Callaway*. It will start with an early family line, in this case the Seaveys of England, and generation by generation come down to the present. Connecting lines brought in by marriage will be presented, followed by the Seavey of that generation and then the account will go on to the next generation.

This year, 1987, is the 355th anniversary of the arrival of the first Seavey in this country and the 367th of the arrival of Francis Cooke, the Mayflower ancestor. We are, therefore, attempting to cover a long period of time. If England and the early family lines there are included, the total time period is about nine hundred years. While English records are generally good, and also those of New England, there is still many that do not exist today. They were never made or, if made, have been lost due to fire, carelessness or some other reason. Many of the old records of Devon in England were destroyed during World War II. However, in general, the records desired in connection with the Seaveys and others have been found. Unlike Virginia, Maryland, the Carolinas, and Kentucky where records were destroyed or lost during the Revolution, the War of 1812, the War Between the States and by fires in log courthouses, New England records have generally come down to the present. Loss of records has been the exception rather than the rule. The principal difficulty encountered in searching for Seavey and other information was in the 1760–1860 period when they were moving from Rye, N.H. and other coastal areas of New England, westward in New Hampshire, then in Vermont and finally to Clinton County, New York. This was frontier country in that period. Not many records were made and some of the few that were made have been lost. For example, the early records of Grafton Town, Grafton County, New Hampshire were all destroyed. One book covering the very period we want in Georgia Town, Franklin County, Vermont has not survived. In Clinton County, New York in the 1820–1840 period when the first settlers were pushing out from Plattsburgh and Lake Champlain into the forests to the west they just simply do not seem to have generated any records. There were no roads and the early settlers were fully occupied in trying to maintain their existence in a raw and unfriendly land.

Every reasonable effort has been made to sort out the various Seavey lines and other lines so that the families are correctly presented. In the case of the Seaveys particularly, it has been difficult as the information that is available contains conflicts. Also, every reasonable effort has been made to have dates for birth, marriage and

death, and have them correct, but some have not been found and others that have been found may not be exactly correct.

While this account of the Seaveys and connecting lines leaves much to be desired, it still tells much about an American family over a period of nine hundred years. It is the hope of the author that the contents of this book will arouse enough interest in the family that others will use it as a framework and add more family information to it. Some may already have additional material that can supplement what is presented and make it more valuable. Others, in time, it is hoped, will search for, and find, more information on the Seaveys and the connecting lines so that it can be added to that included in this volume.

CHAPTER I

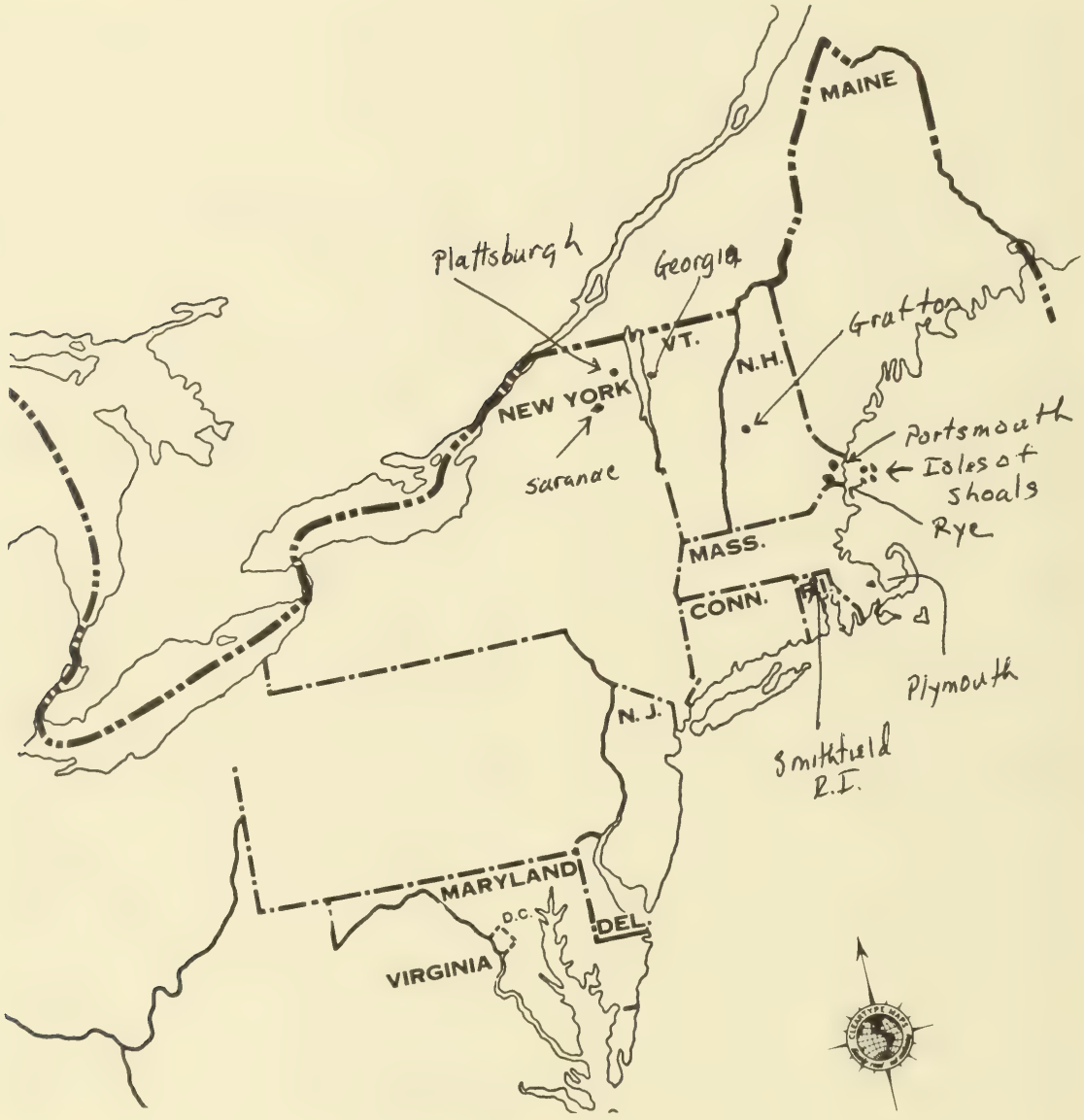
Early New England Coast Exploration and Settlements

The account of the first Seaveys to come to this country will mean more if we first review briefly the various voyages of exploration along the coast of New England, the very earliest settlements and the great interest in America that existed in England, and in much of Europe, in the late sixteenth century and the early part of the seventeenth century.

There seems to be good reasons to believe that the first exploration of the coast from Newfoundland south as far as Maine was by the Vikings. Additional evidence of their voyages has been found in recent years but there is still much that is not known. Leif Ericson, son of Eric the Red who had been banished to Greenland from Norway, is supposed to have made the voyage to obtain timber for boats and houses in Greenland because they had no timber there. The first voyage is supposed to have been made about the year 1000 A.D. and other voyages were made over a period of two hundred years by various Norse adventurers. No evidence has been found of any attempt at permanent settlements although some evidence has been found of a short term settlement in Newfoundland.

Before there was any attempt at a permanent settlement in New England there was a number visitations. First there was Giovanni Caboto, a Venetian in the service of Henry VII of England. He later changed his name to John Cabot. With a small, fifty ton ship (half the size of the Mayflower of the Pilgrims) and a crew of only seventeen he explored the coast of Nova Scotia and Maine. His very complete report to Henry VII served as the basis of the English claim to New England. This was in 1497.

In 1524 Giovanna da Verrazano (the bridge in New York harbor is named for him) with a ship of 100 tons and a crew of fifty reached America at Cape Fear, North Carolina. He sailed north along the coast, charting as he went along. As far as is known, he was the first white man to enter New York Harbor. Continuing north he sailed around Cape Cod and continued north to Newfoundland. Having exhausted his stores he sailed back to France and reported to Francis, king of France, having been gone only a little over two months. His charts and information recorded by him helped many other navigators including some of those who brought over the early colonists. On a third voyage Verrazano waded ashore on a Carribean island to meet some natives who led him to believe they were friendly. They proved to be cannibals who killed him on the



beach and ate his flesh within the sight of his crew who were still aboard ship.

Verrazano was followed by Estaban Gomes, a Portuguese, who sailed along the Maine coast in 1524–25.

Later in 1597 a Portuguese, Simon Ferdinando, in the hire of England came to the New England coast.

David Ingram, who was supposedly put ashore in Mexico in 1568 from an expedition of the pirate Sir John Hawkins, claims to have walked, with two companions, to the St. Johns River of northern Maine and New Brunswick, Canada where he found a French trading vessel. He eventually arrived back in England. Ingram

wrote a book and told of Norumbegg, a city of fabulous wealth that he had found. An earlier map of Verrazano drawn in 1529 showed a city on the Maine coast with the similar name of Oranbegg.

In 1580, Sir Humphrey Gilbert of England, who was well known and highly respected, financed an expedition by John Walker to search for the fabled city of great wealth. He anchored in the Penobscot Bay of Maine. No treasure was found but he brought back a glowing report to his sponsor in which he told of mountains of silver. Most likely these mountains of silver were exposed rock faces of Mt. Battie with particles of quartz and mica that would glitter when the light struck them from the right angle. Sir Humphrey himself came to America with four vessels in 1583 and claimed Newfoundland for Queen Elizabeth. He found no treasure but reported that he found vessels fishing. On his return voyage his ship sank and he was lost at sea.

In spite of the failure of any of the adventurers to find treasure of the type and in the amount found by the Spaniards in Central and South America the dream of easily found fortune persisted. Considering that the adventurers came from different countries, each with their own language, and that printing was new and not widely used, it is difficult to understand how information could spread so rapidly and to so many countries. Generally it contained the most glowing accounts of discoveries made and their potential as financial backers had to be satisfied and most of the adventurers hoped to get funding for more trips. One of the most widely used sources of information was *Voyages—America* by Giovanni Battista Ramusio of Venice published in 1657.

More adventurers or explorers deserve mention as the frequency of visits to the New England coast increased after 1600. Bartholomew Gosnold sailed from Falmouth, England to Maine in 1602 by way of the Azores rather than the longer route by the Canary Islands. He named Cape Cod and as a result of the rapid growth of some seeds planted on Elizabeth Islands he wrote a report that in part was responsible for colonizing efforts in a few years. He was also the captain of one of the ships carrying the Jamestown colonists when they left England in 1606 and landed in Virginia in 1607.

In 1603 merchants in Bristol, England formed a company for exploration in the New World. Martin Pring, only twenty-three years of age, was sent out with two vessels. He explored the Piscataqua and landed at several spots. His account of his voyage, printed in 1625, is the first known printed record of the region. In 1604, a year after the trip of Pring, Pierre du Guast, sieur de Monts, received a grant from the King of France for the territory from where Philadelphia is today to Newfoundland. He established a colony on St. Croix Island at the mouth of the St. Croix River in Maine. The Maine winter and scurvy caused the loss of half of the population. When summer arrived in 1605 the colony was moved over to Port Royal, now Annapolis Royal in Nova Scotia. The next visitor to New England was also French.

In the summer of 1605 and again in the fall of 1606 Samuel de Champlain was in

the Piscataqua Bay—Isle of Shoals area. Fortunately he kept records of his explorations. While the Isles of Shoals had undoubtedly been seen by Capt. Martin Pring on his earlier voyage, Champlain has left the first record of them. Still another visitor to the New England coast in this period was George Weymouth who came over in 1605 from Plymouth, England. He explore the Monhegan, Georges River and Muscougas Bay area. Several things made his voyage a very important one. After some friendly visits with the Indians there was some friction. He kept as captives three that visited his ship plus two more that he captured along with bows, arrows, two canoes and other items that would be of interest to his backers. While earlier voyagers had given reports of their trip, Weymouth made his trip prepared to publicize it. He had a full time writer, James Rosier, aboard to record events and prepare reports for his financial backers. Kraus in *The United States to 1865* has this interesting passage:

> Weymouth took back to England a cargo of timber, fur, and "five savages, two canoes, with all of their bows and arrows." The naked Indians, struggling to escape, could only be dragged on board "by their long hair." Here was a prize to be exhibited before Englishmen fascinated by everything relating to the fantastic New World.

Weymouth upon his return did exhibit his Indians and all that he brought back from America to the governor of Plymouth, Sir Ferdinando Gorges, who was very much interested. In fact he took three of the Indians into his home and they lived with him for several years as guests. He learned their language and arranged from them to be presented at court in London where they were treated as visiting royalty. Bill Caldwell in his book *Islands of Maine, Where America Really Began* tells about Weymouth, his voyage and his interesting and significant accomplishments in nine different places through the book. His account is well worth reading but much too long to be quoted in full.

It will have to suffice here to say that Weymouth's voyage led directly to serious efforts on the part of the English to colonize America. Sir Ferdinando Gorges and Captain John Mason became, in effect, the founders of the states of Maine and New Hampshire respectively. Incidentally, an attempt was made to return the five Indians to this country. Two were sent on a colonizing voyage which unfortunately was blown off course by storms and ended up near Puerto Rico where all aboard were taken prisoners by the Spanish. The third, Squanto, returned to New England on another colonizing voyage. He evidently told his chief Samoset that he had been well treated and taught him some English words. As all who have read about the Pilgrims know, Samoset befriended them many times when they really needed help. No information has been found about the other two Indians who were not turned over to Sir Ferdinando Gorges.

The central or the royal government of England, being reluctant to carry out exploration and colonize in the New World and elsewhere, adopted a policy early in the seventeenth century of encouraging private individuals to form companies to explore and colonize and then granted such

companies charters. When the charter was granted the Virginia Company in 1606, two groups were recognized. One was the London Company. They established the Jamestown, Virginia Colony with three ships that left England late in 1606 and arrived in Chesapeake Bay in April 1607. The other was the Plymouth Company which was made up of merchants and adventurers from the ports of Plymouth and Exeter in Devon and Bristol in adjoining Somerset. The Plymouth group made an effort to plant a colony at Sagadahoc, Maine, during the summer of 1607 according to Michael Kraus in *The United States to 1865*. His account follows:

> . . . . but after a few months conceded victory to the climate, disease, and Indians. The colony, said one of its backers was pursued with "the malice of the Divell." This part of America had been explored in some detail by Bartholomew Gosnold, George Weymouth and others.

In his new (1981) book *Islands of Maine, Where America Really Began*, Bill Caldwell has an entire chapter devoted to "Popham, 1607." This is the same venture as the Sagadahoc settlement of the preceding paragraph. According to Caldwell the life of the colony was thirteen months instead of a "few months" as stated by Michael Kraus. The account of Caldwell is most interesting, telling of the lack of adequate preparation for a Maine winter, friction among the colonists, trouble with the Indians, the loss of their leader, through the death of George Popham in December and many other problems. One of the two ships that brought the colonists over went back in October and the second returned to England in mid-December. It carried fifty or more discontented colonists who were trouble-makers, leaving about forty-five or maybe a few more.

Bill Caldwell summarizes the situation so well that a few excerpts will be included here:

> Then Sir John Gilbert died in England. He was the brother of Raleigh Gilbert [a cousin of Sir Walter Raleigh] who had succeeded George Popham as leader of the Popham Colony. When this news reached Gilbert in the summer, he felt he had to hurry home to England to take care of his brother's estate to which he was heir. This was the final blow to the Popham Colony. They'd had a tough winter; they'd had skirmishes with the Indians; their first leader had died; their next leader was leaving. They could see no future but more trouble and more hardship in their outpost. One year and one month after they landed, the Popham contingent left. The first colony in America had failed.

Actually the "Lost Colony" of 1585 which was left in the Carolinas was the first colony. It had also failed. The second was the Pierre du Guast settlement at St. Croix Island, Maine which lasted a year before being moved to Nova Scotia. The Popham Colony was started a short time before Jamestown and over thirteen years before the Plymouth Colony of our Pilgrim Fathers. It was a full-fledged, adequately financed and well planned effort, considering the little that could be known about the conditions that would be encountered, but still it lasted only thirteen months. Had this brave effort succeeded, all history books would tell about it and a bluff on a remote peninsula of the Maine coast would

be visited today as the site where our nation had its beginning.

One more voyage of exploration will be reported for it is a most significant one and one for which there are some records. It was made by Captain John Smith who was the leader of the Jamestown, Virginia colonists. L. B. Parsons in his *History of Rye* has the following:

> The next foreign visitor to the Piscataqua of whom we have a record was the famous Capt. John Smith, who, being at Monhegan, Maine (neither island nor state having at that time having been named), in the summer of 1614, with an English fishing expedition of two vessels, took a boat with a crew of eight men and explored the coast from Penobscot Bay to Cape Cod. He gave the name of Smith's Isles to what are now the Isles of Shoals; entered the Piscataqua,[1] the harbor of which he commended; and drew the first map made by an Englishman, so far as is known, of this coast, which on his return to England he presented to Prince Charles, who gave the territory the name of New England.

Kraus in *The United States to 1865* adds the following which is interesting and significant:

> Captain John Smith made a map of this part of "Virginia," to which he gave the name of New England, described it with care, and brought back to England fish and fruit valued at 1,500 pounds. No permanent settlement, however, was made by the English as a result of these efforts, which lacked the sustained drive of the London Company in their part of "Virginia."
>
> Captain John Smith, who knew the New England waters, had suggested that the "main staple" for trade be fish. He suggested that though fish "may seem a mean and base commodity," it was the source from which the Hollanders gained their great wealth; "Never could the Spaniard with all of his mines of gold and silver pay his debts, his friends and army half as truly as the Hollanders still have done by this contemptible trade of fish."

As will be seen, the appraisal of Capt. Smith proved to be a realistic one and one that bears directly on the migration of the first and second Seavey to this country.

Earlier mention was made of the charter to the Virginia Company in 1606 and the two groups authorized to explore and colonize America—the London Company and the Plymouth Company. The granting of this charter was the first of many to follow, resulting in great confusion and conflicting claims. No attempt will be made in this book to tell in detail about all of the grants and the developments flowing from them. Rather, excerpts will be taken from Parsons *History of Rye* and from an address by Charles Thornton Libby in 1922.[2]

The following is from the *History of Rye* by L. B. Parsons, pages 6 and 7:

> In 1620 a party of noblemen, knights, and gentlemen of England, were constituted a company or corporation by King James I under the title of "The Council Established at Plymouth, in the County of Devon, for the planting, ruling and governing of New England in America." This was the "Plymouth Council," or "Grand Council of Plymouth" to which King James gave a patent or charter to all of the territory in the New World between the fortieth and forty-eighth degrees of North Latitude [roughly from Trenton, N.J. to the south coast of Newfoundland], which patent was the foundation of all of the subsequent grants of lands in New England. These grants—owing partly, perhaps to imperfect acquaintance of the grantors with the topography of the sections granted, but still more to forced and dishonest construction of the terms of some

of the grants, placed upon them by the grantees—often conflicted with and overlapped each other. Certain grantees, while anxious to hold all of the territory specified in their patents, were eager to appropriate what had been granted to others; and the consequent disputations and difficulties were not settled until long after the War of the Revolution. Sir Ferdinando Gorges and Capt. John Mason were two of the most active and influential members of the Grand Council.

In 1622 the council granted to Mason and Gorges jointly all of the territory between the Merrimack [just north of present day Boston] and the Kennebunk [about twenty miles north of Portland, Maine] Rivers, to a distance of sixty miles back from the coast, with all of the islands along the coast, this grant being designed to be called the Province of Maine. . . . . and in the fall of the same year the Council granted to David Thomson a patent for six thousand acres of land in New England, and an island on the coast, both to be selected by him.

Parsons in the *History of Rye* continues:

In the spring of 1623, the exact date being unknown, the ship *Jonathan* of Plymouth, of one hundred and fifty tons, arrived at the Piscataqua with the first party of settlers, David Thomson being the leader.

After discussing the conflicting accounts that have come down to us from various historians and others, Parsons in his *History of Rye* goes on:

Thomson's grant was from the Plymouth Council, of which Mason and Gorges were the dominant spirits; he could not have secured it in the face of their opposition. His venture was an independent one of very limited extent; in a few years it became merged with the larger one of Mason and Gorges in the development of the vast territory granted to them.

. . . . Thomson and his men (the latter numbering probably not more than ten) selected the point at Little Harbor[1] as a "fitt place to build their houses for habitacions," the site being selected with excellent judgement by Thomson, it being easily defensible against savages, having a good harbor for small vessels and a fine spring of water on the harbor shore; and "from the Little Harbor fronting the north side of the promontory a salt water creek [Seavey's Creek] runs back so far towards the ocean as almost to convert the enclosed point to an island of about six hundred[3] acres area, which is the precise amount of land required by the indenture to be allotted to the new plantation."

In the above account Parsons quotes a history prepared and printed privately by John S. Jenness of Portsmouth in 1878. Jenness in turn quotes the original indenture of Thomson and the three merchants of Plymouth who backed him. The Seavey's Creek reference of the account was inserted by Parsons.

Now we have a settlement and one that continued. It was founded in 1623, only three years after the Pilgrims arrived at Plymouth in what is now Massachusetts and several years before the Massachusetts Bay Colony was started by the Puritans.

From this point the situation becomes more and more complicated. Conflicting accounts have been prepared and there have been forged documents, testimony that differed from the facts, various claims and legal proceedings as heirs of Capt. John Mason attempted to gain title to some of the land given Mason in the various grants. Rather than try to determine what really happened, which would probably be an impossible task at this late date, and then present it, a better course seems to be to select one historian who seems to be reliable and present his account. This is the course that will be followed.

On Thursday, August 10, 1922, the Piscataqua Pioneers, an organization of the descendants of the early settlers of the region, at their annual meeting and field day held at the Rockingham County Court House, in Portsmouth, N.H., celebrated the three hundredth anniversary of the grant of the Province of Maine by the Plymouth Company to Sir Ferdinando Gorges and Capt. John Mason, August 10, 1622. On the occasion Charles Thornton Libby[2] of Portland, Maine, delivered an historical address. It has been preserved in *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Volume LXXVI, pages 315–318. Except for some opening remarks, the entire speech follows:

"It has been said that the patent of the Province of Maine, Aug. 10, 1622, granting all between the Merrimac and the Kennebec, was of minor consequence because nothing was done under it. Rather may we regard it as the foundation, both in legal operation and in actual carryings on, of all that came after.

"By the terms of this grant, which we celebrate to-day, Sir Ferdinando Gorges and Captain Mason bound themselves under £100 penalty to settle one colony with a competent guard and at least ten families within three years. We must believe they did it. They two were the efficient colonizers of New England. They squandered both their own wealth and the wealth of others, but they achieved. Having agreed to settle ten families, they did it. Here was the founding of this State and of Maine this side of the Kennebec.

"It is true that the Plymouth Company in 1622 deeded this land where we now are to Gorges and Mason, and in 1623 deeded it to Mr. David Thomson, and in 1629 deeded it to Captain Mason, and in 1631 deeded it to the Laconia Company, and in 1635 gave a nine hundred and ninety-nine years' lease of it to Sir John Wollaston, all covering the same land. But in dealing with these old patents we must bear three things constantly in mind, or we shall trip ourselves up. For one thing, the corporation called 'the Council established at Plymouth in the County of Devon for the planting and ordering of New England' was only another name for Sir Ferdinando Gorges and Capt. John Mason. Second, when Sir Ferdinando and Captain Mason gave deeds of parts of their land, they did it in the name of the corporation. Third, the deeds they gave were really only options, conditioned on making actual settlements. When the conditions were not performed; the lands reverted to Gorges and Mason.

"Wollaston's deed back to Captain Mason openly explains the lease, 'which said indenture was made unto the said John Wollaston by and with the consent of the said Captain John Mason.' Instead of Captain Mason giving the lease himself, he gave it in the name of the Council. The grant to Mason in 1629 is explained by the lawyers of Mr. Mason's grandson, 'being a division of the lands formerly granted unto Sir Ferdinando Gorges and John Mason.' Instead of Sir Ferdinando and Captain Mason giving deeds to each other to divide their lands, they issued new grants to themselves in the name of the Council.

"Mr. David Thomson, the first planter of New Hampshire, was not what the historian Hubbard said he was, 'the agent of Gorges and Mason.' Nor did he receive a conflicting grant of lands already granted to them. His deed, although in the name of the Council, was really from them. Some historians have failed to understand how he received a grant of six thousand acres already granted them, or why he did not hold it afterwards. These two questions answer each other if permitted to do so. Sir Ferdinando Gorges and Capt. John Mason in effect deeded to Mr. David Thomson six thousand acres of the best of their lands on conditions which he failed to fulfill; and so the lands reverted to them.

"As the patent to Mr. Thomson is lost, we cannot know exactly what the conditions they

put into it were, but we may be sure that they covered the undertaking for which they themselves were under bond, to settle in this wilderness a sufficient guard and ten families. We have from Mr. Samuel Maverick, who came to Massachusetts in 1624, some years before the Boston colony started the Year One of New England, as they reckoned it, and who soon married Mr. Thomson's young widow, a graphic account of what was done:

'*Strawberry Bank, the Great House and Isle of Shoals*. Within 2 myles of the mouth is Strawberry Bank where are many families, and a minister and a meeting house, and to the meeting houses of Dover and Exeter most of the people resort. This Strawberry Bank is part of 6,000 acres granted by patent about the year 1620 or 1621 to Mr. David Thompson, who with the assistance of Mr. Nicholas Sherwill, Mr. Leonard Pomery and Mr. Abraham Colmer of Plymouth, merchants, went over with a considerable company of servants, and built a strong and large house, enclosed it with a large and high Palizado and mounted gunns, and being stored extraordinarily with shot and ammunition, was a terror to the Indians, who at that time were insulting over the poor, weak and unfurnished planters of Plymouth. This house and fort he built on a point of land at the very entrance of Piscataqua River and having granted by patent all the islands bordering on this land to the middle of the river, he took possession of an island commonly called the Great Island, and for the bounds of this land he went up the river to a point called Bloody Point, and by the seaside about four miles. He also had power of government within his own bounds. Notwithstanding all this, all is at this day in the power and at the disposal of the Massachusetts.'

"So here we see what method Sir Ferdinando and Captain Mason took to fulfill their bond to the Council. Mr. Thomson, a cultured and travelled gentleman, whom Sir Ferdinando had employed in difficult negotiations with high officials, was to do it for them, and for this service to have six thousand acres on one side of the river. To get the necessary capital, he contracted with three Plymouth merchants to run the plantation five years, and then turn over to them three-fourths of the improved land and three-fourths of the profits. After three years' effort, he saw fit to remove to Massachusetts Bay, where he could have all his improved lands and all of his profits. Whether he settled all the ten families within three years from Aug. 10, 1622, or whether Gorges and Mason had to come forward to finish the task, we do not know.

"Let us remember that we know very little about this dark period when the Province of Maine covered Maine and New Hampshire both. Except Mr. Thomson and the Hiltons and, perhaps, Mr. Ambrose Gibbins, we have not one name to associate with this period. The arrival of the *Warwick*, when our written history begins, was not until the summer of 1630.

"They have in Boston, not in its legal custody, a sheet of paper written on both sides, a separate document on either side, and both certified by Elisha Cooke, clerk of courts. On one side is a copy of the inventory of the Laconia Company's goods, July 1635, attested by Mr. Chamberlain, secretary of this Province in 1683, when the case of Mason *v.* Waldron was tried, and this is of unquestionable genuineness.

"On the other side is the list of people, 'sent by John Mason, Esquire,' winding up with 'Eight Danes, Twenty-Two Women.'* If this list was offered in court in 1683, it was rejected as spurious. Both from external and internal evidence it seems a fraudulent production. Probably it was made up to use in the suit against Humphrey Spencer in 1704, as there is a check mark in the margin opposite Thomas Spencer's name, and Elisha Cooke was not appointed clerk of courts until 1702. The list omits names of some who we know were sent over by Captain Mason, as Thomas Crockett, inserts names of young

*This list was printed in the REGISTER, vol. 2, p. 39; but Mr. Libby states that he has examined the original manuscript of the list.—EDITOR.

men who were children or unborn at the time of Captain Mason's death, as the two younger Chadbournes, Thomas Fernald, and Jeremy Walford, and includes the names of men who we know were not sent over by him, as William Seavey, who came on a fishing trip to the Isles of Shoals, John Symonds, sent over by Trelawny to Richmond's Island, Francis Norton and Sampson Lane, who came after the Captain's death, and others. The name printed as Henry Baldwin is not that name in the Boston list; evidently Clerk Cooke could not read it, but from his imitation of the writing I judge it was Odiorne. No Henry Odiorne is known to have been here, which is true of other names in the list, which may have been invented at the same time as the Wheelwright deed, in the desperate resolve to protect the community from the loss of their homes, with various names inserted that might help different ones to claim their lands as descendants of Captain Mason's servants. Thomas Crockett's descendants were living on Kittery side; but, as they claimed no lands on Portsmouth side, there was thus no occasion to include his name.

"So our certain knowledge after the arrival of the *Warwick* is none too full, yet luminous when compared with the unwritten period preceding, although the Isles of Shoals and the Piscataqua were the principal ports in New England in that period. If the settlement had been abandoned, Governor Bradford would surely have recorded the fact. On the contrary, in 1628 Piscataqua contributed as much as Plymouth to the expense of banishing Morton, who was selling firearms to the Indians. There must have been many people here, besides hundreds of transients here and at the Shoals; but we ask in vain who they were.

"If Mr. Gibbins came over early, he went back, as he came on the *Warwick*. Hubbard says the Hiltons were here, that they came with Thomson. Hubbard, who certainly was mistaken in part, seems to have gotten his information from young William Hilton, a boy not six years old when Mr. Thomson came over. In young Hilton's petition to the General Court in the year 1660, to confirm lands given his father and himself by the Indians, he said:

> 'Whereas your petitioner's father, William Hilton, came over into New England about the year Anno Dom. 1621 and your petitioner came about one year and half after, and in a little time following settled ourselves upon the River of Pischatag with Mr. Edward Hilton, who were the first English planters there.'

"This reads as though Mr. Hubbard accepted Hilton's story, and recorded it as history, merely inserting David Thomson's name with the Hiltons. Mr. Hubbard, who was the minister at Ipswich, was a few years younger than William Hilton, Jr., who was baptized at Witton church, in Northwich, Cheshire, June 22, 1617. Hilton's two wives belonged to prominent families of Newbury and Charlestown, and Mr. Hubbard must have been well acquainted with both families. William Hilton, Jr., was a shipmaster, and had had a book of soundings or charts printed before Mr. Hubbard got up the map of New England for his history of King Philip's War. About Plymouth, as well as the Piscataqua, Mr. Hubbard seems to have gotten information from Hilton. He says, what no one else does, that the first complaint against Mr. Lyford, who was brought over by Mr. Winslow in 1624 to be minister at Plymouth, was over baptizing a child of Mr. Hilton's, although not a member of their church. Hubbard's 'History' shows familiar knowledge of the Hiltons, as accurate as a little boy might remember and tell things to a friend.

"Certainly William Hilton did not come over with Thomson. He came to Plymouth in 1621, and was there with his family in 1624. It seems doubtful whether Edward Hilton did, although from April 9, 1621, when he came out of his apprenticeship in the Fishmongers' Company of London, until 1628, when he contributed to keep firearms away from the Indians, we have as yet no knowledge of his movements. But there is contemporary evidence that some Bristol merchants joined with him to settle his colony, and a young fellow just out of his apprenticeship must be allowed sufficient time

in which to perfect such important connections, even if aided by Sir Ferdinando Gorges. If Edward Hilton was one of Mr. Thomson's first company, it seems that he must have gone back.

"At any rate, if here early in 1624, he was with Thomson at Little Harbor, and had not yet made his settlement up the river. Capt. Christopher Levett in 1628 printed a book on his voyage of 1623–4. He stopped a month with Mr. Thomson at Little Harbor. While there he 'discovered' the Piscataqua River, and an Indian who came down the river told him that up the river was much good land. In this season of tercentenary good cheer we all wish to work our believers overtime if necessary to keep everybody happy; but we must be equipped with believers as big as bushel baskets to believe that that Indian told Captain Levett that there were good lands up the river without telling him also that there were Englishmen living on them, if there had been such.

"So in 1922 we can all join in celebrating the three hundredth anniversary of the granting of the charter under which New Hampshire and Maine were colonized; and next year we can all join in celebrating the founding of New Hampshire; and at later periods, as we may learn the facts, different localities can celebrate, in a series of tercentenaries, all in our turn, and begrudging none."

Unless the many conflicting and confusing accounts that can be found have been read, the Libby speech serves to introduce confusion rather than reduce it. However, it does actually clarify the situation considerably and shows that there is not as much conflict in some ways as seems evident from the study of the separate accounts.

No attempt will be made to continue the history of the early settlements except as it fits into the narration of the various family accounts. However, the list of those that are supposed to have been sent over by Mason on the *Warwick* in 1630 will be included here. This list, although probably spurious, as brought out by Mr. Libby, is included here because it is mentioned in so many accounts that are extant. There will be references to it in later chapters.

The Names of Stewards and Servants sent by John Mason, Esq., into this Province of New Hampshire.

Walter Neal, *Steward*,
Ambrose Gibbins, *Steward*,
Thomas Comock,*
William Raymond,
Francis Williams,
George Vaughan,
Thomas Wonerton,† *Steward*,
Hinry Joceyln, *St.*,
Francis Norton, *Steward*,
Sampson Lane, *Steward*,
Reginald Furnald,‡ *Chirurgeon*,
Ralph Gee,§
Henry Gee,§
William Cooper,
William Chadborn,
ffrancis Matthews,
Humphrey Chadborn,
William Chadborn, Junr,
ffrancis Rand,
James Johnson,
Ant. Ellins,
Henry Baldwin,
Thomas Spencer,
Thomas Furral,
Thomas Chatherton,
John Crowther,
John Williams,
Roger Knight,
Henry Sherburn,‖
John Goddard,
Thomas Furnold,
Thomas Withers,
Thomas Canney,
John Symonds,
John Peverly,
William Seavy,
Henry Langstaff,
William Berry,
Jeremy Wolford,¶
James Wall,
William Brookin,**
Thomas Walford,
Thomas Moor,
Joseph Beal,
Hugh James,
Alexander Jones,
John Anlt,††
William Bracket,
James Newt,
Eight Danes,
Twenty Two Women.

* *Carnocks* in Adams.

† *Warnerton*, ib.

§ This name is perfectly plain in our MS., but in *Adams's Annals of Portsmouth*, it is *Got*. Which is right remains to be discovered. We feel quite sure of the present spelling.

‖ *Sherborn*, ib.

¶ *Jeremiah Walford*, ib.

** Also perfectly plain on our copy, but in Adams's Annals it is rendered *Brakin*. The name of John Brookin occurs in the early conveyances, in Suffolk Deeds, Boston, where he owned a house and land, 1672. One error causes many more. Farmer was misled by this.

†† *John Audt*, ib.

A word will also be included about Thomas Crockett who is mentioned by Libby as having been brought over in 1630 by Captain Neal. As most, if not all of his party as well as that of Thomson probably came from Devon and the Plymouth-Exeter area of that county, Thomas Crockett likely was from the same area. The Crocketts of the author did not leave France until 1672 or 1673. However, Thomas Crockett could have left at an earlier date or be of a family that left earlier. The persecution of Huguenots started many years before the Edict of Nantes was revoked in 1672. It is possible that he might have been an uncle of Antione de Crocketagne of our line who fled first to England, then to Ireland and whose sons came to America. Devon and other English counties along the south coast were on the course of flight of the refugees who left mostly in small sailing vessels. Descendants of this Thomas Crockett have the same given names as many of our Crocketts and Thomas is a name in the Crockett family that the author found in Ireland. Unfortunately, none of the several descendants of Thomas Crockett that were met at the Piscataqua Pioneer meeting in Portsmouth, N.H., July 31, 1982, knew anything about Thomas Crockett prior to his arrival in this country in 1630.

There is still one more situation that deserves mention. Aside from the confusion from over-lapping and conflicting grants and the efforts of the heirs of Capt. John Mason to recover some of the land that had been granted their ancestors, the other principal course of trouble was the unending efforts of the Massachusetts Bay Colony to gain control of the Maine and New Hampshire colonies founded by Sir Ferdinando Gorges and Captain Mason under their various grants. The Massachusetts Bay Colony was founded by Puritans. They had strong, capable and aggressive leaders with great religious zeal. Very early they established local control of their domestic affairs. The Gorges and Mason Colonies were largely made up of followers of the Church of England or established church. Unfortunately, they did not have strong local leadership and England had more control over their affairs than it did over those of their neighbors. The Gorges-Mason Colonies were a sort of vacuum and Massachusetts Bay moved in like a strong wind into a low pressure area. They were propelled by the natural aggressiveness of their leaders and their great religious zeal. As we know they came over here to worship as they desired but turned out to be most intolerant of those who did not believe as they did—even more so than the English were intolerant of them. Finally the Seaveys signed one of the petitions for Massachusetts to have dominion. They held out for a long time for local authority. The situation was not finally cleared until after the War of the Revolution.

Additional information about the early settlements in the area that we know today as Portsmouth and Rye, will be included in the chapters dealing with William[1] Seavey and William[1] Berry who were very early settlers. More will be included with the chapter on Thomas[1] Seavey, John[1] Foss and others who are emigrant ancestors.

William[1] Seavey and William[1] Berry arrived at a time when the small recently established settlements in the area were more or less adrift as far as ownership, local government and higher authority were concerned. They, along with a few others, took charge in establishing local authority, distributing the land and getting a community of families and business endeavors underway. We must not lose sight of the fact that the area including the present Portsmouth and Rye, plus the Isles of Shoals had even at this formative period with all of the confusion and uncertainty, greater commerce than either Boston (The Massachusetts Bay Colony) or Plymouth. All of the agents, representatives, etc., of Mason and Gorges had one by one departed so the settlers in the area were on their own. The historian Hubbard is quoted by Stackpole in his *History of New Hampshire* as saying that the people at Strawberry Bank[1] entered into a combination for self-government soon after the departure of Captain Walter Neale, which was in 1633. He was one of the agents of Captain John Mason.

A record that has been preserved tells of one action taken in this early period in 1640. On the twenty-fifth day of May, a grant for fifty acres of glebe land for the support of the ministry was signed by twenty persons. A chapel and parsonage had already been erected by these same persons according to Stackpole in his history. Francis Williams signed as govenor. Another signer was William[1] Berry, the emigrant ancestor of one of the lines of Fannie C. Harrison. Another was Renald Fernald who was one of the emigrant ancestors of the wife of a descendant of Thomas[1] Seavey, and it was through her that the island in the Piscataqua River that became known as Seavey Island came into the family and obtained its name.

The History of New Hampshire by Everett Stackpole on pages 30 and 31 has the following information:

> Little can be learned about the first steps in local self-government at Strawberry Bank, because the first book of records has not been preserved. In the first book extant, under date of January 13, 1652, there is a record of the meeting of the selectmen at the house of George Walton, who kept an ordinary on Great Island.[1] "This night the select men exsamened the ould Town booke and what was not aproued was crossed out, and what was aproued was left to be Recorded in this booke and to be confermed by the present select men." From the old book were copied into the new one grants of land dated as early as 1645, showing that some form of town government then existed. The fact is that the first towns of New Hampshire, that is, Strawberry Bank and Northam, did not wait to receive a charter or to be incorporated before doing the business of a town. The first settlers acted on the principle later enunciated, that all government derives its authority from the consent of the governed. Human society can not exist without acknowledged customs, which soon become laws. The basal principles of law, with some of its precepts, the first settlers brought with them from England. New regulations had to be made to suit changed conditions, and these were made by common consent, or by majority vote of the settlers assembled. Thus the town meeting became the legislative assembly.

Stackpole goes on to say "The earliest records of Portsmouth are made up principally of grants of land, the inhabitants

voting to themselves individually portions of the land that had been granted to Captain John Mason, and some of the same had been improved at his expense."

In this period William[1] Seavey was treasurer of Strawberry Bank for a time.

Strawberry Bank as a name for the community was changed to Portsmouth by a petition submitted to the General Court of Massachusetts May 28, 1653. It pointed out that Portsmouth would be most suitable "for this place being the River's mouth and a good harbor as any in the land". They stated that there were fifty to sixty families at Strawberry Bank.

After presenting information on the various settlers of this early period and conditions then, Everett S. Stackpole in his *History of New Hampshire*, page 23, offers the following opinion:

> These were among the earliest settlers of New Hampshire, and certainly their families grew up with the country. They helped largely to make the state what it is now. Their labor and their spirit contributed to its prosperity and drew other settlers to join them.

NOTES

1. With place names changing over the years and with different names being used for a place at the same time in history, an attempt to clear up the confusion will be made:

   Piscataqua: The river separating New Hampshire from Maine and entering the Atlantic Ocean at Portsmouth, N.H. and Kittery, Me.

   Little Harbor: Term used for the Great Island. Part of it became Rye in time and part Newcastle.

   Strawberry Bank: Area along Piscataqua River that is now the river of Portsmouth so named because of the abundance of wild strawberries found here when the first settlers arrived.

   Sandy Beach: Term used to describe the area that later became Rye. Essentially, it was a part of the area of the original grant of Thompson who arrived in 1623.

   Great Island: The settlement of Newcastle was most of the Great Island.

2. One of the compilers of Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, which is often referred to as "Libby".

3. This seems to conflict with the area of six thousand acres mentioned in the patent.

CHAPTER II

Isles of Shoals and Dunfish

A chapter will be devoted to Isles of Shoals and the fishing industry that centered around them in the pre-colonial and colonial days. This group of small islands off the coast of New Hampshire and Maine was important to the beginning stages of New England, to the colonies and to the Seavey family.

There were two principal reasons for the earliest settlements in New England. One was a desire on the part of the Pilgrims and the Puritans to have a land of their own where they could worship as they desired without persecution. As the story of the Pilgrims and Puritans is generally well known and is aside from the mainstream of the account undertaken in this book, it will not be included at this point. Instead we will go directly to the second principal reason for the settlement of New England.

The second was a desire by Sir Ferdinando Gorges of the North Virginia or Plymouth Company which had been given a grant of land in New England in 1606, to make settlements in the area and develop the many natural resources that Captain John Smith had reported as being there. Gorges formed a partnership with his friend, Captain John Mason, who was a former merchant shipmaster and then commander of a small fleet for his Royal Highness, James I. Later Mason was govenor of Portsmouth, Devon, England and still later govenor of Newfoundland. In his

The Isles of Shoals are six and a half miles off the shore of New Hampshire at the nearest point. At high tide there are nine of them but at low tide White and Seavey Islands are joined. Appledore, the largest, has only ninety-five acres and all the islands have a total land area of only 206 acres. Seavey Island has a land area of five acres. The highest point on any of the islands is sixty feet above sea level.

The stone chapel built in 1800. Conference guests go to evening vesper services with hurricane lamps or lanterns which are placed in brackets on the wall to light the chapel.

book, *The Isles of Shoals in Lore and Legend*, Lyman V. Rutledge has a concise statement about two men and their goals.

> Both were Royalists in high favor with the king, and equally devoted to the Established Church. Both were violently opposed to the Puritans, Separatists and any other democratic independents. They were by nature and culture aristocrats, and viewed growth of American colonies as a source of wealth and strength to the aristocracy of England. Their joint ambition was to revive the fading glory of the archaic feudal system. They saw themselves, by the King's favor, Lord Proprietors in Utopia. By securing large grants of land in the teeming wilderness, they would exercise their lordship by subletting lesser grants to relatives, friends and tenants. There would be royal titles, baronies, lordships and all major industries would be held by the Lord Proprietors as monopolies.

The grandiose plans of Gorges and Mason were never realized in the way that they had in mind. Gold, silver and other metals were not found. There were, however, three favorable developments. Our woodland timber and forest products. The virgin forests of New England provided something for which there was a great need in England and on the continent. Commerce in timber and products from the forest developed rapidly to satisfy the de-

White and Seavey Islands at high tide.

The monument honoring Captain John Smith. A shaft was originally mounted where the gull is standing but it was blown off in a storm and never replaced.

mand, primarily because there were individual ship owners and merchants interested and willing to supply the demand rather than due to the efforts of the proprietors. Second, some trade was developed in furs bought from the Indians, but again it was individuals. The third development, and the one of the greatest importance, was the supply of salt fish to England and Europe. However, this was well under way, with much of it centered around the Isles of Shoals, long before Gorges and Mason obtained their grants and started to make their plans. It continued to develop without the help of the proprietors, and even to a certain extent, in spite of them. The Shoalers who had come on their own, brought into being at a very early date, a thriving fishing industry based on their famous "dunfish". They had trading operations that supplied other settlements as they were made. Soon they had good homes on the various islands and then, on the mainland and by the standards of the day, were prosperous. We know that there was a tavern operating on Hog Island, one of the Isles of Shoals group, as early as 1628, because Miles Standish brought a prisoner there to be deported to England. We do not know whether the tavern operated throughout the year or in the spring, summer and fall when there were many fishing boats in the area.

When Star Island had a year-round population a fence separated the south side of the island, which was used as a pasture for cows and other domestic animals, from the north part where the inhabitants lived. A turnstyle provide access for people not animals.

A few quotations from the *Isles of Shoals in Lore and Legend* by Rutledge will help

us obtain a better appreciation of this unusual chapter in the history of the settlement and development of our country.

The thriving village at the islands was in the truest sense a settlement, although it had no leader or colonizer known to history. Even the names of the seamen, the fishermen, and the artisans are lost. Whoever they may have been, they came without grant or patent, took possession without question from any source, developed their industry, and passed from the scene with no official recognition from colonial leaders, councils or courts. There has been nothing like it in our history. We should erect a monument to our nameless Shoalers.

The Vaughn Library on the left with the chapel and a conference building in the background.

The restored hotel on Star Island with some newer buildings in the background.

Having no official recognition, the islanders were under no government but their own. Law and order were maintained by the ship's commanders until colonial governments were formed. Shoalers had no truck with the political life of the mainland. Orders from the Crown and later from the Massachusetts Bay Colony were ignored. Even in later years, when they perforce had to accept the authority of Maine, Massachusetts, and New Hampshire, they continued to be the most independent of colonials. Without oath or ceremony they owed first allegiance to their island empire, and to the customs which had grown up among them as islanders.

A few years after the arrival of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, they, by an interpretation of their charter that was never intended, claimed jurisdiction as far north as present day Portland, Maine. For many years, the Shoalers paid no attention to their claims of authority. But finally in 1652, when population and commercial activity on the Shoals had grown so much that they could no longer wait for court action from England, twenty residents petitioned Massachusetts Bay Colony to constitute their islands a township. Their petition was refused and a second one in

1659 was also denied. Finally, in 1662, they were permitted to become the Township of Appledore.

The little that has come down to us about life on the islands in the early days is most interesting. The following is found in *The Isles of Shoals in Lore and Legend* by Lyman V. Rutledge, pages 14 and 15.

> The new residents who came to the Isles of Shoals after 1623 were mostly young unmarried men from England who had been induced by Mason, Gorges, and Smith (Capt. John) to seek their fortunes in the untouched wealth of New England. The well-established independence of the fishermen and their sense of personal ownership of the island empire caught the imagination of the newcomers, who were happy to be members of such a community. On the other hand, the loyalty of the newcomers to church and Crown did not offend the fishermen.
>
> Perhaps the most interesting conflict was over the residence of women at the islands. True to the ancient tradition among seamen that females aboard ship bring bad luck, the fishermen had not brought women to their far off fishing grounds. But the young men of the new dispensation were sent out as colonists and were expected to become permanent settlers with families. This alarmed the fishermen. There must have been "rip-roarin knock-down-drag-out arguments on the subject with the result that at some early date a "court order" was brought out forbidding women to reside at Shoals. What court ordered it has never been discovered. In part, the only evidence that it ever existed is the acknowledgement by later courts that it had become obsolete around 1635.
>
> In 1647, Richard Cutt, absentee landlord of Star Island, and John Cutting, whose name appears no-where else, presented the following to the court at Piscataquak, Maine:
>
> "The humble petition of Richard Cutt and John Cutting shewith: That John Renalds, contrary to an Act in Court, that no woman shall live upon the Isles of Shoals, both brought his wife Thither with the intention there to live and abide; and both brought upon Hog Island a great stock of goats and hogs, which not only doth spoile and destroy much fish . . . but also doth spoile the spring of water, etc. . . ."
>
> "Your petitioners, therefore, pray that said Renalds may be ordered to remove his said goats . . . from the Islands forthwith. Also, that the Act of Court, before mentioned, may be put in execution, to the removal of all women from inhabiting there . . . etc"

The court ordered the removal of the goats and hogs but permitted the wife to remain. Today, although women are still seeking to obtain more rights, they are not included in a request for expulsion from an area along with goats and hogs who "not only spoile and destroy much fish . . . but doth also spoile the spring water."

It was not until 1650, when there was an appeal to a court in Boston by William Wormwood, that a definitive ruling was obtained. This ruling is interesting.

"Upon the petition of William Wormwood, that as fishermen of the Isles of Shoals will entertain womanhood, they have liberty to sit down there, provided they shall sell neither wine, beare nor liquor."

There are many recorded instances of violence, threats to constables and primitive behavior by the residents of the Isles of Shoals. John Scribner Jenness in his book "*The Isles of Shoals*," 1873, is particularly critical of the early residents. He described them as "the motley, shifting community of fishermen, seal hunters, sailors, smugglers, pecaroons [pirates or term used sometimes for a rogue of most any

type] who made the Isles of Shoals their rendezvous and home". He goes on to tell about Samuel Matthews and Andrew Kelly of the Shoals, who were indicted for abusing and reviling the constable there. He also mentions Stephen Foide who abused the constable and called him a rogue and rascall; William Curtis who assaulted "his majesty's officer"; Gabriel Grubb who said that he could find it in his heart to kill the constable; and Barthalomew Mitchell, Rebora Doions and Barthalomew Burrington who were charged with assailing the Shoals constable by "words and blows, and threatening to break his neck on the rocks, and pulling off his neck cloth". However, Jenness is considered by many as having been too severe in his evaluation of the residents of the Shoals. The general opinion seems to be that they were only a little more independent, rough and inclined to go their own way and have their own ideas about conduct than others in an age that was generally that way.

Having sketched in the general situation for the Isles of Shoals-Portsmouth area, we can now get back to an account of the reason for being of the first settlement of the Isles of Shoals and the nearby shore area. It was the desire to take advantage of the plentiful supply of fish off the coast of New England and what are now the Maritime Provinces of Canada. There was then and still is today, no source of fish equal to that found in this area. The fishermen who started coming to the waters off New England, Nova Scotia and Newfoundland at a very early date deserve, in the opinion of the author, more credit for the opening up and development of New England and the Maritime Province areas of Canada than those who came seeking the right to worship as their conscience dictated. In fact, the former, really to a considerable extent, made the welfare of the seekers of religious freedom possible. This is a phase of the development of our country that is known to, and appreciated by, very few of our people today. All know about the "brave" Pilgrims and their "trying" days in the Plymouth Colony. Also, about the "stern" Puritans of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, about the persecution of witches at Salem and other places and how the Puritans of the Massachusetts Bay Colony drove out others who dared to have different ideas about worship, notably Roger Williams, the founder of Rhode Island. But how many know about the daring, hardy fishermen who ventured across the broad and frequently stormy North Atlantic to get a cargo of fish to sell in England or on the continent. The story of these fishermen will be told here as it is also the story, in part, of the early generations of the Seavey family and some of their connecting lines.

The accounts of many of the early explorers who came to the New England and the Maritime Province areas of Canada, told of finding fishing vessels. There does not seem to be any doubt that these men, in their tiny sailing vessels of less than a hundred tons and with only a limited knowledge of celestial navigation and the most primitive navigational equipment, were fishing off New England, Nova Scotia and Newfoundland at a very early date. In 1583 Sir Humphrey Gilbert found fishing vessels off the New England coast.

In his book *Islands of Maine*, Bill Caldwell writes that the Hanseatic League, a loose but effective combination of merchants and bankers of the Germanic states were financing fishing expeditions to the waters off America in the 1400's. The Hanseatic League was a very effective combine or cartel type operation when they were at the peak of their activity. In time their grip on foreign trade, including fishing, weakened. As it did, enterprising sailors from the counties of Devon and Cornwall in England as well as others began making trips to the coast of New England for fish. They were over here as early as 1480 according to Caldwell and his account continues:

> By the 1580's a fishing boom was in full swing. Captains of fishing boats from England, Spain, Italy, Portugal and France had heard the news of huge catches along the banks of the Gulf of Maine. They flocked here. By the 1600's, 300 fishing boats were off our coast.

This is the situation that prompts Caldwell in *Islands of Maine* to say "The first roots of the United States are not in the soil of the mainland, but in the fishing grounds off the coast of Maine. Fishermen began this nation in rough, temporary settlements on the Maine islands, spreading down the coast from Newfoundland to the Isles of Shoals." He then goes on to point out that it was the search for money from fish rather than the search for religious freedom that was responsible for the first rough trading posts and settlements of New England. But Caldwell does point out that the church had a hand in this as Europe was largely Catholic at that time and the Catholics had 160 days out of the year when the populace were supposed to eat fish. Even in England, which was not then Catholic, fish was eaten on many days. This was in part a hold-over from the days when it was Catholic before Henry VIII, and in part, due to a limited supply of a suitable meat substitute.

The fishing vessels had to go ashore during the course of their long absence from their home port. It might be to renew their supply of water, for repair to their ship, caulking, for fire wood or for a combination of these reasons or others such as trading with the Indians or to cut timber to take back to their home port. Many landings were undoubtedly made and temporary settlements established but were never recorded nor reported as these men were seamen and fishermen and not explorers or colonizers. Another factor led to the establishment of shore stations and eventually, a few permanent settlements. The fishing boats were out for months at a time so they had to have some way to preserve their fish until they could reach their home port or a port where they could sell their fish. There was, of course, no refrigeration in those days. The customary procedure was to clean the fish as soon as caught and then pack them in layers in huge barrels or hogshead with salt between each layer of fish. The English had no low-cost supply of salt as did the Spanish and Portuguese, so they had to preserve their fish with a minimum of salt. They developed a "dry" method as distinguished from the "wet" method just described.

The procedure followed by the English was to cure their fish on shore. From a

third to a half of the crew would be put on the shore. They would build a dock for unloading and loading the fish. Then they would also build drying racks or "flakes." Also, some storage sheds. The half to two-thirds of the crew remaining on the ship would catch the fish and bring them into the dock where they would be unloaded. The shore crew would immediately clean and split the fish on the dock. They would next lightly salt the cleaned and split fish, afterwards carrying them up to the "flakes" or racks for drying. Hung or laid on the "flakes" they were left to dry in the sun until they were hard, even stiff, and slightly cooked. To protect the drying fish from rain and even fog they would be covered with old sails or brush. After several weeks they would be taken to nearby storage sheds. At a very early date the fishermen visiting the Isles of Shoals developed a process that produced a product known as "dunfish." It was much the same as the one just described but was carried out with greater care and some variations. The following is from *The Isles of Shoals in Lore and Legends* by Lyman V. Rutledge.

> When a boat came to dock with the day's catch, the fish were immediately put ashore and taken up by the cutter, who ripped them open and passed them to the header, who in turn cut off the head and removed the viscera. The splitter then cut out the backbone and passed the two halves on to the salter to be rubbed with salt and piled in bulk to cure for ten to twenty hours. After that the shoremen washed and laid them out on "flakes" and frames to dry slightly. Then followed a long period of alternate drying in the sun and "sweating" in the storehouse until the product was ready for market. In the words of Celia Thaxter [poet of the Isles of Shoals], "a real dunfish is handsome, cut in transparent strips, the color of brown sherry wine."

Bill Caldwell, in *Islands of Maine Where America Really Began*, tells of a variation in the procedure for processing dunfish, "light on the salt, and heavy on the sun; then bury them in salt hay [hay cut from areas covered by sea water at high tide] until the flesh turned the color of brown sherry wine."

The account from *The Isles of Shoals in Lore and Legend* continues,

> The discovery, or development, of dunfish turned out to be one of the most important items in New England economy. For decades the price of fish in the world market was quoted from the Isles of Shoals. As late as 1822 it was $8.00 a hundred pounds while other fish was selling at $2.40. Fishermen from the best grounds brought their catches to the islands for dunning and reshipment to Bilbao [Spain], Talloon [Holland], Rochel and other foreign ports.

Since there are no records of these settlements of fishing crews, no one knows when they started. Capt. Christopher Levett, in his 1623–1624 voyage to New England, landed first on the Isles of Shoals. He reported the harbor as being suitable for six fishing vessels. L. B. Parsons in his *History of Rye* interprets the Levett account to mean that there were two hundred men temporarily on the islands and five hundred on ships in the area. Actually his arithmetic seems to be wrong. He assumes six ships with fifty to a ship or, three hundred. Of this number, one third or one hundred would be on shore, not six hundred total with two hundred on the ships.

There seems to be no question but what there were fishing crew settlements along the New England coast before the Pilgrims arrived at Plymouth and maybe even before the colonists arrived at Jamestown. The very earliest never became permanent settlements.

Before proceeding, there is another development that deserves attention. This does not apply to the Isles of Shoals as much as to Monhegan and other areas. The early arrivals would go ashore for caulking and repair. They also took timber back for the boat builders of the continent and England. Long, straight timber was in demand for masts and America offered better timber than was available in England and Europe. Also the early arrivals would build small boats for their own use in fishing. With time, increasing demand for vessels and good timber available, boat building developed into a major industry. Of course, the ultimate development was the famous clipper ships of the Yankees and their large, fast schooners that placed America ahead in peaceful commerce and in naval warfare.

The Isles of Shoals are directly east of Rye and Rye Beach, New Hampshire. They are about six and a half miles off shore and there are nine of them at high tide and eight at low tide. By boat from Portsmouth, the trip is about ten miles. Except for one, they still have the odd names given them by the early fishermen. Captain John Smith on his chart called them Smith Islands but the quaint names of the sailors and fishermen have prevailed—Hog, Smuttynose, Cedar, Star, Duck, Malaga, Lunging, White and Seavey. Hog Island, the largest, was so named because it reminded those fellows of long ago of a fat hog wallowing in the sea. Its name was later changed to Appledore. Smuttynose was given its name because of a smudge of dark seaweed on the nose of the rock extending into the sea on the northeast end. Cedar had a few scrubby cedar trees around the time Captain John Smith was there and it was the only one of the islands with any trees. Star has a rugged rock structure extending into the sea that reminded the early arrivals of the spangles of a star. On Duck Island there was a small pond where wild ducks landed occasionally. Malaga reminded an early Spanish sailor of the Malaga grape section of Spain. Lunging is a derivation from Londoner the name of a ship that frequented the Isles at an early date and was wrecked on the rocks of the island. It may also have been derived from the name of the company that sent out colonists, The London Company. Of the other two islands, White and Seavey, which are joined at low tide, Lyman V. Rutledge in *The Isles of Shoals in Lore and Legend* says: "no one has as yet identified the Seavey who gave his name to the western bump, but the eastern rock, which has borne the lighthouse since 1820, was named for an ancestor of Captain Joseph White, born on Hog [Appledore] Island about 1750 and brutally murdered in Salem, Massachusetts on April 6th, 1830."

The islands are really rocks that rise from the ocean and are surrounded by shoals and rocks that have been given names but are not really islands. There is just one harbor and that is Gosport on Star Island. None of the Isles are large, Hog or Ap-

pledore, the largest is only 95 acres and the highest point is 60 feet above the sea. Star, the second in size is 35 acres with a high point of 55 feet. Seavey Island is only five acres and its highest elevation is 15 feet. The total land area of the nine is 206 acres. The islands lie within a quadrangle, three miles from north to south and one and a half mile from east to west. The nearest point to the mainland is on Londoner or Lunging, which is six and a half miles from Rye Beach, New Hampshire.

Four of the islands, Star, Lunging, Seavey and White, are now a part of New Hampshire. The others belong to Maine. This division was made when the present boundaries of the states were established.

Today, the only permanent or year round residents of the Isles of Shoals are the Coast Guard personnel manning the White Island Light and the caretakers for the Star Island Corporation properties which include the old Oceanic Hotel as well as cottages and other buildings of more recent origin. The Star Island Corporation comprised of units of the Unitarian and Congregational Church Association, now own Star Island. They hold conferences and gatherings for eleven weeks from early June until Labor Day that are religion oriented.

The temptation is great to include much more about the Isles of Shoals. Settlers have been there for at least 357 years and possibly as much as a hundred years longer on a seasonal basis. Much has happened during that period of years, for at one time over a thousand people lived on these tiny islands. They were, at an early date, the most important commercial center in New England, more so than Boston. There have been large summer hotels for the wealthy and the famous. Churches have come and gone. The Puritans tried and finally succeeded in overwhelming the Episcopal or Church of England followers that Sir Ferdinando Gorges and Captain John Mason were so anxious to have prevail. Stories of pirates who frequented the Isles abound as do accounts of buried treasure. There was even a well known seminary on the Isles at one time. During the period of the great hotels on the Isles of Shoals, Celia Thaxter, who was a poet and writer and the daughter of the owner of four of the islands, the hotel on Appledore and at one time the keeper of the light on White Island, attracted to the Isles the literary and cultural elite of the day. They included Nathaniel Hawthorne, James Russell Lowell, Richard Henry Dana, Harriet Beecher Stowe, Franklin Pierce, William Dean Howells, Sarah Orne Jewett, Frances Burnett (of Little Lord Fauntleroy fame) and Childe Hassam, the artist and many others.

The account could go on, for so much has happened over the years that a number of books have been written about the Isles of Shoals. A few instances that tie directly to the account of the two Seaveys who were on the Isles early will be related in later chapters. At this point it is appropriate to quote from *Islands of Maine—Where America Really Began* by Bill Caldwell.

> At times close to a thousand people lived happily on these Isles of Shoals. During 370 years [written in 1981] scores of ships have been

wrecked here. Today old headstones on the island cemetery tell the story; the graves of sailors shipwrecked and drowned here; and the tiny headstones of children who perished from some forgotten plague. Yet poets and artists have written and painted peans of praise to the strange, hypnotic beauty of these remote Isles of Shoals. Robert Low described them:

"A leaf of bare and splintery crags
Tumbled about by lightning and frost,
With rifts and charms and storm bleached jags
That wait and growl for ships to be lost."

It was the good fortune of the author and his wife to be able to spend six days on Star Island in the summer of 1982 and it is something that we will long remember. The weather was perfect each day except the day of our departure for the mainland. While the rain and wind of that day could not compare with the storms of the winter months, it did give us a little taste of bad weather and let us know that not all days are perfect. During the day, when it is clear, the shore line of New Hampshire was visible and on the clearest days, the mountains back from the coast could be seen. At night, the lights along the shore formed a sparkling crescent. Several of the other islands were visible. At high tide, Seavey and White were two islands but at low tide, the ridge of rock joining them was clearly visible. There were gulls by the thousands and wild flowers of many kinds.

As I would wander around the island, on the narrow paths between the rocks and the various types of native bushes, my thoughts would dwell on the various periods in the last 357 years of the island. First and even farther back than 357 years, there were the fishing vessels that had been at sea for weeks and even months. They must have been glad to see these islands with their safe harbor and a fresh water spring. Then there was the period when, fishing vessels by the dozens and even more would come. Part of the crew would be put on shore to clean and cure the fish while others went out to catch more. At the end of the season, when they had a full cargo of salt cured, dry fish, they would all return to England or the continent. Later, a few started to spending the winters on the islands or on the shore. Then there was commerce—the incoming ships would bring sugar, salt, and other supplies for the year around population and for the Indian traders. As has been mentioned, the island had a population of about a thousand at one time and they and nearby Portsmouth had more people and commerce than Boston. But there is always change. During the Revolutionary War, such authorities as there were, more or less, forced practically all of the residents of the Isles of Shoals to come to the mainland. They were considered vulnerable to attack by British ships and the Continental Congress did not want people on the islands for this reason and in addition, they did not want any one there to supply the British. When the war was over, some people came back but the Isles of Shoals never regained their prominence in commerce or even fishing. There was a long period of rowdiness, crime, drunkeness, church burning, etc.

When Thomas Bell Leighton bought four of the more or less abandoned islands about 1834 and came out to care for the light

on White Island, the Isles of Shoals were practically deserted. He believed that the fishing industry could be revived. After a while he began to think about building a hotel for summer vacationers. The idea may have had its beginning from his observation of the success that one of the few other residents of the islands had with a few rooms in his home that he would rent during the summer months. In time Thomas Leighton, his sons and Levi Thaxter, who later married his daughter Celia, had a small summer hotel in operation on Hog or Appledore Island. They constantly enlarged it and before the end of the summer hotel period there was also a large hotel on Star Island. After a few years and long after the death of Thomas Leighton, his two sons Cedric and Oscar operated the Appledore Hotel which ultimately could accommodate 500 people and the competing Oceanic Hotel on Star Island, which he bought, with accommodations for 350 people. With the coming of the railroad and still later of good roads and automobiles and the changing of the vacation habits of people, the large summer hotels of New England and northern New York gradually lost their patronage and most of them went out of business. The same happened to the Leighton hotels on the Isles of Shoals. The number of guests declined to the point where the hotels could not be maintained. Cedric Leighton died leaving only Oscar to run the properties. Financial difficulties were encountered and after the Appledore Hotel burned, some of Appledore Island was sold and two groups of New England churches purchased the Oceanic Hotel, Star Island and the remainder of Appledore. This was the beginning of the conference center period which has continued until the present.

The first conference was held in 1897, before the purchase of the properties which did not take place until 1915. The hotel, the island and most of Appledore was purchased for the amount of the mortgage on the properties, which was $16,000. Although purchased by an individual while the interested churches were formulating plans and organizing, the island was later turned over to a corporation jointly owned by the Unitarian and Congregational churches. No attempt will be made to narrate in detail this latest period in the life of the Isles of Shoals. It will have to suffice to report that the properties on Star Island have been constantly improved and the conference programs are generally booked to capacity each season. In fact, the season is now being expanded to include several weeks in the late spring and early summer before the opening of the June through August season and several weeks are being added in the early fall.

This chapter could go on and on and every bit of it would be interesting. As has been mentioned, several books have been written on the Isles of Shoals and many articles. More will be told about the Isles in the chapter on Celia Thaxter, her brothers and the Thaxter-Seavey connection. A few of the poems and some of the prose of Celia and her brother Oscar will give you a better idea of the Isles than this author can possibly give. This chapter will conclude with two bits of information that it is hoped will contribute to an understanding of the Isles by readers.

Reverend John Tucke, a young minister, accepted a call to the church at Gosport on Star Island in 1732. He served the Isles until his death in 1773, a period of more than forty years. Dearly beloved and revered, there is a monument to him on Star Island. Once, when he was asked by mainlanders about the weather on the islands, he said that it was only a waistcoat (vest) different from that ashore—"one more in summer and one less in winter."

Fred McGill, present day historian of the Isles of Shoals, likes to tell the story of an older woman from Kensington, New Hampshire, who when hunting for a lost item, would often exclaim, "I've looked over all creation and the Isles of Shoals!" They are different and always have been.

The Isles of Shoals can now be reached by sight-seeing boats from Portsmouth. They are on the National Register of Historic Places. In matter of fact words, The Historic Register states: "The Isles of Shoals, though small in area, barren in appearance, and possessed of an inhospitable winter climate, have exerted an historic and cultural influence that is disproportionate with their modest area and resources." To this Bill Caldwell in his book, *The Islands of Maine* says, "Indeed they have".

CHAPTER III

The Seavey Family of Devon, England

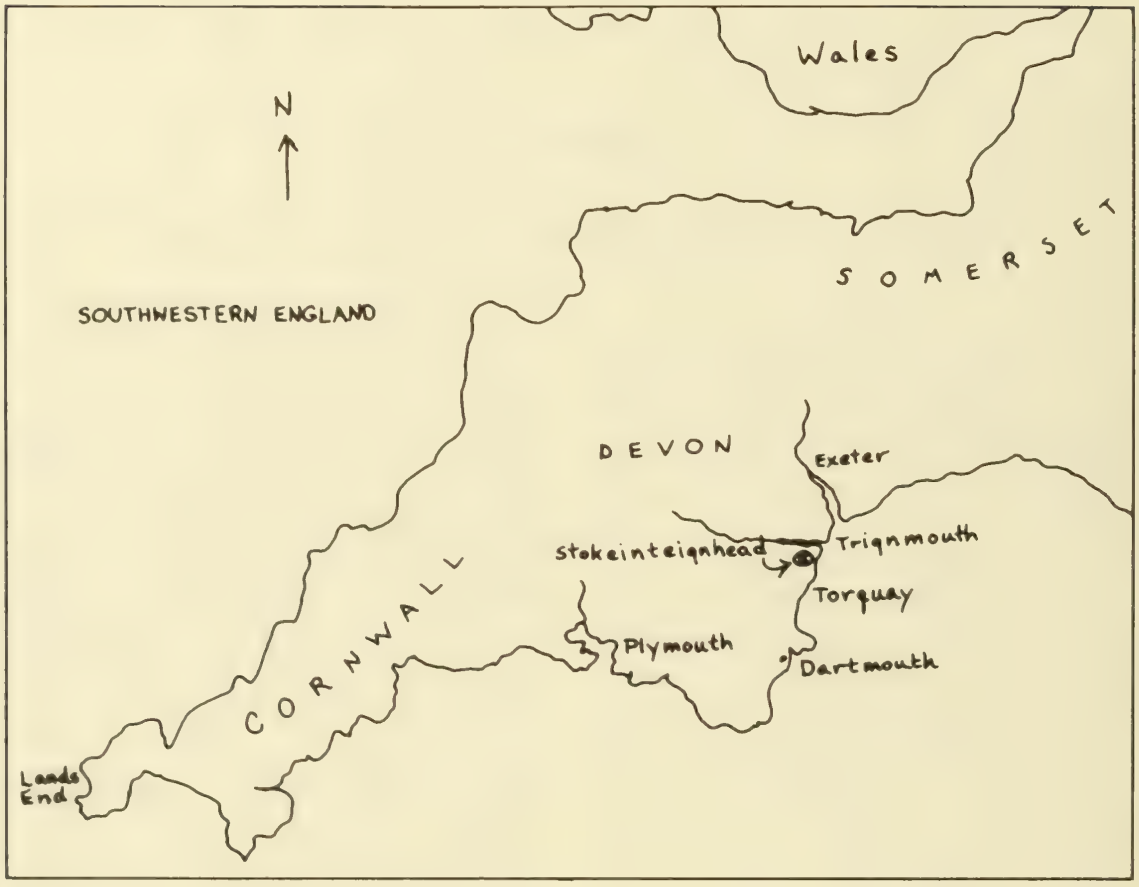
Devon is one of the larger counties or shires of England: It lies in the southwest on the peninsula that has Land End at its extreme western tip. Only the county of Cornwall lies to the west of Devon. On the south is the English Channel. The Bristol Channel and the Atlantic Ocean are on the north. The land back from the coast line is rolling with some deep valleys and high hills. In the Dartmoor section, there are elevations as high as 2000 feet. The open rolling country is much like some of our west. It is a beautiful area with a mild climate at the lower levels and somewhat cooler at the higher levels.

Due to its location in the extreme southeast of England, Devon has fared a little differently from the rest of England as one people after another have invaded it. In the earliest times England was the home of the Britons, an uncivilized people of unknown origin. However, they mined tin in Cornwall and traded with the people in the areas that are now France, Belgium and Holland. In fact they helped the Gauls defend themselves against the invasion of the Romans. This led in time to the invasion of England by the Romans in A.D. 61. They landed in Kent and spread west and north. Their system of roads and civilization reached only into the eastern part of the area that is now Devon.

The Romans remained for about 350 years or until 410 A.D. They were followed by successive waves of invasion—the Saxons came into the south, the Jutes into the Southeast and the Angles into the northeast and the Scots into the northwest. In general the Britons were pushed into the Devon-Cornwall peninsula and into the extreme west of England and the section we know as Wales. Later the Danes or Vikings came into the central eastern sections of England. The final conquest was by William, Duke of Normandy, in 1066. He and his followers landed on the south coast of England in Hampshire the second county to the east of Devon. In a short while he overran all of England including an invasion of Devon.

The population of Devon in the seventeenth century probably had a heavier admixture of the peoples pushed to the west by invaders than did other parts of England. Also, due to their location they probably had an influx of people from Wales and from France and Spain. Many of the Huguenots that fled from France landed first on the south coast of England as it was the part of England on a direct sailing route from France. Some undoubtedly settled in Devon, either temporarily or permanently.

In the early part of the seventeenth cen-



tury, aside from farming, grazing and some weaving, the principal activity in Devon was fishing. With good ports, fishing and shipping were a natural pursuit for the men of Devon. This was evidently the case with the early Seaveys and eventually led them to this country.

For several years after the accumulation of information on the early Seavey family was started, no serious attempt was made to search foreign records. In general, I have not even used the information collected by others as I have not been able to convince myself that it is reliable and can be trusted. However, in the case of the Seavey family, some work has been done by a descendant that impressed me as being scholarly, thorough and well documented, so there is every reason to believe that it can be trusted. My original plan was to draw heavily on this work as I could not possibly do it myself and there is no reason to duplicate what has already been done. The Seavey descendant who did the work or had it done for him, in fact, by implication, invites others to use it. His findings are of great value and most interesting. Proceeding on this course, the first draft of this chapter was prepared. Then in January of 1985, I learned of a genealogist

located in Devon, England. After an exchange of letters, I commissioned him to search for certain information on the early Seavey family. His extensive searches in Devon and in London confirmed the soundness of the information in the book of James T.M. Seavey, M.A., L L.M., S.J.D. In addition, he found additional information concerning the emigrant Seaveys and the first generations prior to them. As a result, our knowledge of the emigrant Seaveys is expanded and enriched. Also, we now have a better understanding of the daring of the Devon fishermen with their early recognition of the potential of fishing off New England and Newfoundland and their willingness to go after it.

The information that follows is taken from the book *The Ancestry of Elisha Porter Seavey 1838–1913* by James T.M. Seavey, M.A., L L.M., S.J.D., 1958. He is a direct descendant of William Seavey, the first of the family to come to this country

to live. Although, it has only thirty-six pages the book is a valuable contribution to family lore and history, in fact, it is really the foundation for it. James T.M. Seavey described his line as the "Maine branch" of the family. Additional material supplied by M.J.L. Wickes, M.A. will be worked into the account as it progresses.

THE NAME

The name of Seavey is derived from the Old English given name of Saewig, stemming from the Saxon words for "sea" and "war," which in the Middle English forms of Saewi and Sewi is found in eleventh and twelfth century muniments of the abbeys of Bath and Shaftesbury and in Domesday Book (Searle, *Onomasticon Anglo-Saxonicum*, 408; V. C. H., *Oxfordshire*, 399).

In Devonshire, about 1140, folio 4a of Exeter Book discloses an acquittance witnessed by one Sewi at Powderham, and another releasing "Hrodolf Sewies sune," that is, Rolf, son of Sewi, from all obligation to the manor of Alphington in Wonford Hundred.[1] A facsimile of this page has been published by the New Palaeographical Society (ser. 1, vol. 1, plate 10).

The late Cecil L'Estrange Ewen, in his *Early Surnames of Devonshire* (Paignton, 1947, p. 23) mentioned a Sewy, perhaps Roger Sauy at Budleigh, listed in the lay subsidy roll of 6 Edward III, 1332 (P. R. O., E. 179/95/7).

There were a few early instances of the surname outside of Devon. This, in 1309 Roger Sewy was one of the free tenants of the manor of Salterton, near Salisbury, in Wiltshire (*Index Library*, XXXVII, 364). The reputed manor of Stowford, in Bradford Hundred, Wiltshire, was leased in 1458 by the Abbot of Keynsham to William Sewey or Stowford and Margaret his wife for a term of ninety-six years. Margaret's will, probated at Lambeth in 1488, shows that she had survived her husband and moved to Chippenham (P. C. C., 16 Milles; V. C. H., *Wilts.*, VII, 73–76).

The will of Thomas Sewy of Gloucester in 1485 named his widow Margaret residuary legatee and executrix (P. C. C., 17 Logge).

A scroll of arms in Devonshire churches, 1588, once owned by Sir George Carewe, describes a memorial coat of arms in the church at Stokenham which comprised a pair of crossed knives with red hafts and silver blades on a black shield, under which was the name Sewye (*Devon Notes and Queries*, I (2), 10, 124).

Like many other old coats, this appears never to have been officially registered in the College of Arms, but the original there of Joseph Holland's Devonshire Roll of Arms, 1585, adds the information that the full name beneath the shield was "Jo. Sewye" (letter from A. R. Wagner, Richmond, Herald, March 6, 1957).

The New England family came from Stokeinteignhead, Devon.

HUNDRED AND MANOR RECORDS

The ancient South Devon manor of Stokeinteignhead, near Teignmouth, is mentioned in Domesday Book, in Exeter episcopal registers from 1279, and in Exchequer records about 1285. Besides the court of the manor, the hundred court for one of the three divisions of Wonford Hundred met there.

Although the courts themselves were far older, the extant manor rolls cover only the period from 1466 to 1601. The first mention of the family in that place is in the manorial records.

At the manor court held on the Feast of All Saints, November 1, 1466, the ale-tasters presented that Richard Sewy, William Martyn senior and William Browne "brasiarent cervisiam" in breach of the assize, for which petty offense they were amerced three pence. Similar entries for brewing ale were repeated in 1467, 1474 and 1475. In 1474 and 1475 Richard Sewy complained in a plea of debt against Richard Gybbe or Gybby and had distraint for two pence. He died about 1487, and his successor to the tenement gave a cow of the value of ten shillings in heriot to the lord of the manor.

In 1488 Alice Sewy, apparently his widow, was also in breach of the assize of ale, and in

1494 she turned over to the custody of the steward of the manor a stray bay horse.

William Sewy was amerced nine pence in 1489 for having wounded William Browne with a poniard. Richard Sewy junior, living with William Sewy, was presented in 1505 as being "of the age of twelve years and more" yet not sworn in a tithing. In 1506 William Sewy was presented for brewing ale and for not attending at the manor court.

At the hundred court in 1509, the tithingman at Ringmore in St. Nicholas presented that William Sewey junior was without the assize of the lord king, and at Teignharvey John at Bowe and William and John Flaccher, by their pledge William Sewy, were presented as being "common players of football," for which in 1510 they were each fined two pence. Football was regarded as a waste of time which could better be used at archery.

The manor court in 1531 required Richard Martyn, living with Richard Sewy and being of the age of twelve years and more, to be sworn in accordance with the king's assize. The ale tasters also presented that Richard Sewy had brewed ale to be sold.

Joan Sewy, widow, having died in the spring of 1531, her son Richard was admitted as her successor in the tenement.

The hundred court amerced John Sayway in 1545 for default in prosecuting his suit for debt against Edward Lange, and in 1550 Thomas Seway was sworn as tithingman at Ringmore.

John Dottyn, gentleman, was amerced two pence by the manor court in 1593 for leave to agree with William Seevye in a plea of trespass, for the evident purpose of a fine confirming William's title to land. One of the twelve jurors of this court was William Seevye, freeman.

William Seevye was also among the conventionary and customary tenants who made presentments at the manor court in 1594. He complained against William Cooke in a plea of trespass, and Cooke was amerced two pence for leave to agree. John Seevye and Richard Tomlyn living with John Seevye took the oath of allegiance to the queen.

At the hundred court of October 24, 1594, William Sevye was sworn as tithingman at Stokeinteignhead. As this was his last appearance, he may have been the William Zeavie whose will was probated that year at Exeter.

OTHER ENGLISH RECORDS

Among the Devon wills and administrations formerly in the District Probate Registry at Exeter and lost in the air raids of 1942 were the following: 1545, Nicholas Sevey, Stokeinteignhead; 1582, John Sevie, Haccombe; 1584, Thomas Sevie, Haccombe; 1587, Alice Sevey, Stokeinteignhead; 1594, William Zeavie; 1626, John Sevie, Stokeinteignhead (September 1627); 1668, John Seevey, Combeinteignhead;

At the Public Record Office, London, the Devon militia muster of August 1569 for Wonford, Haytor and Teignbridge Hundreds lists William and John Sevee at Stokeinteignhead and a John Sevye at Tormohun (Torquay), bowmen, another John Sevye at Tormohun, pikeman, and Thomas Sevye at St. Mary church and Robert Scewe at Paignton, billmen (S. P. 12/57/31).

The Principal Probate Registry has these wills: 1585, John Sevye, Tormohun, 39 Brudenell, and 1589, Ellise Zeue, Stokeinteignhead, 85 Leicester.

John Sevye's will was made September 20, 1575, and probated August 23, 1585 in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury. He left legacies to the poor of Stokeinteignhead, the church and poor Tormohun, the maudlin house of Teignmouth, his servant William Brown, his friend John Babb, John Bickford the younger (son of John Bickford of Stokeinteignhead), and William and Alice Bickford. His remaining goods were divided equally between his son Christopher and daughter Margaret, and his share in the ship *George*[2] of Torbay between his children and John Bickford of Teignharvey and John Martin the elder of Cockington.

Ellis or Elizeus Zevye[2] or Servye appears in the Exeter port books as master and owner of the 20-ton ship *John* of Teignmouth, which re-

turned from Newfoundland on September 11, 1583 with a cargo of train oil (*D. A. Trans*, LIV, 479). By his will made April 16, 1589, he gave to his elder daughter Thomazine his leasehold at Gabwell plus three pounds five shillings eight pence; to his other daughter Marie twenty pounds; and to William Zeve his son twenty pounds, also one-half of his sea craft and "my goulde Sygnett." He gave also to his sisters Ellen Rowe and Elizabeth Case, with five shillings eight pence and "one pilchard nett' to his "brother" William Case of Gabwell. There were other bequests to John Bickford the elder, to Thomas Martin of Teignmouth, and to William Rowe. It appears that he was the son of John and Alice (Rowe) Zeve, for he added to his mothers' bequests to her grandchildren, Richard, Mary and Petronell Haywood. His wife was named executrix and residuary legatee of his estate, including his share of "such fishe as God shall send out of the newfounde land," with further provision "if the *Grace* my shippe come to mischance and not returne." This will was probated November 26, 1589.

At Kingswear, across the river from Dartmouth, there resided in 1622 a William Seavey (not the emigrant), who was then master of the good ship *William* of Plymouth, "bound for the Newfoundland" (will of John Garrett, probated October 27, 1626, Exeter Consistory Court). He was listed as an inhabitant of Dartmouth in the years from 1626 to 1633 (Dart. Corp. Rec., Nos. 62,254; 62,329; 62,419; 62,467; 62,498; 62,522). On March 11, 1626, letters of marque against Spain were granted to the *Blessing* of Dartmouth, William Sevy master (*S. P. Dom., 1628–29*, p. 286). As "William Sevy of Dartmouth in the County of Devon Captain," he sued in the High Court of Chancery in 1628 against Abraham and Ambrose Jennens (C. 2 Chas. I S/83/18 and S/132/10), alleging a Newfoundland voyage as "Master and Marchant" in 1624 for which he was still unpaid; and in a Dartmouth Borough Court held March 16, 1634, William Booth was in default "at suit of Johanna Sevie, widow, administratrix of goods which were of William Sevie, her husband, deceased, in plea of debt."

Ellis Seavie, perhaps a brother of the aforementioned William, was living in the same ward in Dartmouth in 1629 and 1630, but was not there in 1632.

At Rotherhithe, Surrey, a Thames-side district long inhabited by seafaring men, a John Seavey was buried on March 28, 1638.

FIRST GENERATION

THOMAS ZEVIE, the progenitor of the New England family, was born sometime during the middle years of the reign of Henry VIII. There is no record of his baptism, but he was probably born well before September 15, 1538, when the first register of the Church of St. Andrew at Stokeinteignhead was inscribed with the entry of the christening of John Zevye, possibly a brother, who was the son of Thomas Zevye.

His parents are not known. His father may have been Thomas, or Richard (d. June 7, 1559), or Bawden (Baldwin), and his grandfather was perhaps the Richard Zevie buried at Stokeinteignhead on July 6, 1545, or the Nicholas Sevey whose estate was administered at Exeter in the same year. It seems likely that Richard Sewy, who died about 1487, and Alice Sewy, living in 1494, were his great-grandparents.

At the hundred court held at Stokeinteignhead on October 22, 1550, Thomas Seway was presented and sworn as the tithingman for Ringmore. He married at Stokeinteignhead, September 18, 1552, Elizabeth Browne. The will of a Thomas Sevie of Haccombe, about a mile from Stokeinteignhead, was probated at Exeter in 1584, and Elizabeth Zevie, widow, was buried at Stokeinteignhead on March 14, 1588.

Children, baptized at Stokeinteignhead:

i. Richard, bp. September 23, 1553.
ii. John, bp. October 5, 1556.
iii. Charity, bp. September 29, 1560.
iv. Johan, bp. September 29 (sic), 1563.
2 v. Henry, bp. June 16, 1566.

SECOND GENERATION

HENRY ZEVIE, son of Thomas and Elizabeth (Browne) Zevie, was baptized at Stokeinteignhead on June 16, 1566.

He married, September 25, 1592, Helen Baron. She was probably a daughter of Edward and Joan Baron, who were married at Stokeinteignhead on June 6, 1556.

There are no direct records of any of their deaths, but the estate of a Joane Barons, of Crediton, about twenty miles north, was administered at Exeter in 1593.

Children of Henry and Helen (Baron) Zevie, all baptized at Stokeinteignhead:

i. Julian, bp. December 18, 1592; buried January 15, 1593.
ii. Thomas, bp. December 4, 1594; perhaps father of Thomas Seavey (1627–1708), of Portsmouth, N.H. John and Elizabeth Seavey, children of William, below, on March 29, 1669, deposed of their cousin, Thomas Seavey.
iii. Gregory, bp. July 28, 1598.
3 iv. William, bp. October 25, 1601; fishing at Isles of Shoals, 1632.
v. Julian, bp. July 21, 1604; m. January 12, 1636, Gregory Aleigh.

In addition to the material in the text of his book, much of which has been quoted in the preceeding paragraphs, the appendix of the book of James T.M. Seavey has six pages of entries copied from Old English records, many are in Latin or a combination of Latin and English. Items from the Stokeinteignhead[1] Manor roll cover the period 1466–1608 and include thirty-two items that mention Seaveys with various spellings. The nine items from the Stokeinteignhead Hundred Court Rolls are from the 1490–1601 period. And, finally, there are two pages of entries from the Stokeinteignhead Parish Register and other sources during the sixteenth and seventeenth century. About sixty items of baptisms and marriages are included.

Supplementing what Dr. Seavey has brought together there are now from J.J.L. Wickes of Devon, England, seven 8½ × 11⅝ inch pages of typed records. Many items duplicate those of Dr. Seavey, thus confirming them, but there are many from other sources.

While hard to read and containing words that are no longer in use there is some very interesting and significant information in the account compiled by Dr. Seavey and the recently received data. It not only tells us something about the Seavey family, but tells us something about the Devon area and even about our country that very few people know.

From the records alone, the change can be seen of Devon from a pastoral, feudal area to an area where trade, shipping, fishing and even piracy become very important. For example, Mr. Wickes has supplied the following from *Maritime History of Devon*[2]:

> There is a reference to the Newfoundland fisheries[3] in an Act of Parliament of 1542. By 1578, there were 50 ships reported fishing in Newfoundland; 100 ships recorded in 1594, and by 1615, 250 fishing vessels of 15,000 tons with crews of 5,000 men. 300 ships recorded by 1620.
>
> There was also a reference to a petition in State Papers Domestic. This was found and the following is taken from it: ". . .petition of owners and masters of shipping and sea-faring inhabitants in the parishes of St. Marychurch, Tormohun, Paignton, Brixham, Churston and Stoke Gabriel, County Devon, that use the trade of fishing to Newfoundland, above 800 per-

sons." All of these parishes are in the area surrounding Stokeinteignhead. It concerned the payment of tithes to the parish clergy in England.

The meaning of one bit of data furnished by Mr. Wickes is not entirely clear, but it is interesting and bears on the point that we are trying to make here, namely, that our Seavey family was in an area where many of the men went to sea. The item follows:

Devon Protestation Returns: 1641

Totnes	:	Christopher Seavey
Marychurch	:	Richard Seavye: at sea
Tormohun	:	Henry Seavy.
		Gregory Seavy
		"All the rest of the inhabitants of the parish are now at sea."

Not only did members of the Seavey family go to sea, but some owned, or were part owners, of ships. Records also show them as masters or captains. John Sevye, in a will made September 20, 1575 and probated August 23, 1585, gave his share in the ship *George* of Torbay to his children and others.

Ellis or Elizeus Sevye appears on the Exeter port books as master and owner of the 20-ton ship *John of Teignmouth*, which returned from Newfoundland September 11, 1583. A William Seavey, and Dr. Seavey says that he was not the emigrant William[1] Seavey of our account, is recorded as being master of the ship *William of Dartmouth* that was bound for Newfoundland in 1622. He is listed as a resident of Dartmouth from 1626–1633 and lived near Ellis Seavie for some of these years. They may have been brothers. William sued in 1628 for money due him from a voyage to Newfoundland and in 1634 his widow Johanna was still trying to collect money due her late husband. This same William was issued, March 11, 1626, letters of Marque, against Spain as master of the *Blessing of Dartmouth*.

The Wickes data gives some additional information that is interesting even though those involved do not carry the name of Seavey, among the Stokeinteignhead Burial Records he found the following entries:

1604	John Sellmas was drowned in The partes of Newfoundland about this time of the year.
1606	Thomas, son of John Kellis died this year as he was sailing towards Newfoundland about April in the beginning of the voyage.

A pattern of given or christian names being used from one generation to another can hardly be considered a record of genealogical merit, but where children were generally named for parents, grandparents and other family members, it must be admitted that it does have some value. In many cases, there is no other guidance. In the opinion of the author, it is most significant that the Devon records show the recurrence for generation after generation of the names that the William[1] Seavey and his nephew, Thomas[1] Seavey, used for their children and that continued to be used for generations in this country. Thomas, Henry and William are found many times. Then there are some unusual names. In 1642, in Marychurch, Rebecka, daughter of Thomas Seavey was buried.

Our Thomas[1] Seavey had a daughter Rebekah. The April 15, 1589 will of Ellis Sevey mentions his daughter Thomazine. The same name with variant spellings was used in this country and was the given name of the wife of Thomas[1] Seavey.

Much more could be presented on Devon, England and the Seavey family members there prior to 1630. However, what has been included in this account establishes beyond a reasonable doubt that William[1] Seavey and Thomas[1] Seavey did come from Devon, England It has also been shown that the whole area around Stokeinteignhead was a center for sea-faring men and that many ships were going out to North America regularly back in the 1500's and even earlier. The members of the Seavey family were not only crew members, but masters and even ship owners in some cases. In at least one case, a Seavey was master of a ship that was authorized to attack Spanish ships.

While the Devon fishermen made no permanent settlements prior to 1623 it is reasonable to assume that they had camps or temporary quarters on the shore where a part of the crew would be stationed for several months at a time. They would be cleaning and salting and drying the fish. They would also be obtaining fresh water, wood and probably wild game and other items of food for the return voyage of the ship. It is the opinion of this author that the early seekers of fish off our shores made a much greater contribution to the founding of our country than has been credited to them.

Also, with the background that William[1] Seavey had, it is easy to understand how, once here, he fitted right into the turbulent life of the early days of our country on the Isles of Shoals and in the Portsmouth-Rye area. As will be brought out, he was in many things and successful in most of his endeavors. The same is true of Thomas[1] Seavey and the descendants of the two of them.

NOTES

1. Stokeinteignhead where William and Thomas Seavey were born and raised is in Wonford Hundred, Devon, England.

2. *Maritime History of Devon* by M.M. Oppenheim in 1968.

3. At this period in time, Newfoundland seems to have been used to describe the large area off the coast of New England or well as the sea immediately adjacent to the island of Newfoundland. For some time after there were settlements in New England, the reference to the area of Newfoundland continued when discussing fishing and ocean trade.

CHAPTER IV

William[1] Seavey

The first Seavey to arrive in this country and remain was William.[1] Although he was not a direct ancestor of Fannie C. Harrison, it seems appropriate to start the account of the Seavey line in this country with him. The exact relationship will be brought out later in this chapter.

On pages 522 and 523 of Miscellaneous Provincial Papers of New Hampshire there is an exact copy of a sworn deposition made by William[1] Seavey on September 3, 1676.

The Deposition of *William Seavey aged about seventy five years*. Saith that he came into New England upon a fishing acco[t] at y[e] Isles of Sholes neare y[e] River of Piscataqa about a year before Cap[t] Neale went from this Countrey for England who (as this Deponent was credibly informed) came over on y[e] acco[t] of Capt Mason about y[e] yeare One thousand six hundred & thirty & y[t] the s[d] Capt. Neale lived in a house in y[e] Little harbour of Piscataqa which by comon Report was formerly built by some Merchants &c. of Plymouth in England And about a year after this Deponent came over into New England which was in y[e] year 32 Cap[t] Neale went back againe for England & left Thomas Wannerton in trust with what estate was left behind, that was either sent out of England or improved here And that the Cattle that were Left on Cap[t] Masons were fetcht away by one Cap[t] Norton of Charlestowne in y[e] Massachusets Baye and y[e] rest of w[t] was left was disposed off and spent by y[e] s[d] Wannerton who afterwards was kild by the ffrench in this Countrey of New England And further saith that neither Cap[t] Neale nor Cap[t] Mason nor any by from or under y[m] did ever set up or exercise any Goverm[t] in this Countrey more than over the family that Cap[t] Neale brought with him Nor ever built any house or settled any family here except a trading house at Niwichewanacke to trade with the Indians that ever this Deponent knoweth or heard of who hath been in this Countrey and in the same place for y[e] most part to this day ever since.

Portsmouth ye 3d Sep[t] 1676 William Seavy came and made Oath to y[e] above written before us

Elias Stileman
Edw : Rishworth Commiss[s]

The deposition was made in connection with lengthy and complicated legal maneuvers of Robert Mason, a grandson of

House on the site of the home of William[1] Seavey. An old private cemetery to the left of the barn has recently been cleaned and restored by the present occupants of the house part of which dates back to about 1700.

Two of the buildings of the U.S. Navy complex on the Seavey Island in the Piscataquea River.

Captain John Mason who, along with Sir Fernando Gorges, had the original grant to the area that is now New Hampshire and Maine, to secure the return of some of the land or compensation for it. In an effort to win his case, false documents were prepared, others were altered and false testimony was given. Robert Mason did not win his case but the documentation alterations, forgeries and perjured testimony have caused all kinds of confusion ever since for historians and genealogists. The deposition of William[1] Seavey was probably the most damaging of any testimony to the case of Robert Mason.

The deposition of 1676 definitely establishes the year of arrival of William[1] Seavey as 1632. It also proves that William Seavey was not one of the company of men and women sent over by Captain Mason concerning which there are many differences of opinion. *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, Volume II, for the year 1848, starting on page 37 has an article entitled "First Settlers of New Hampshire." It deals with the early settlement at the mouth of the Piscataqua River, an area now partly in Portsmouth and partly in Rye. The article is based on documents the author says have never before appeared in print. He discusses them and the events they cover in relation to previous accounts such as that of Adams in his *Annals of Portsmouth* and Hubbard's *History of New England*. Other writers on early history are also mentioned. The author bases his account on copies of the documents that evidently differed in some respect from those available to earlier writers. The list of arrivals numbering fifty, including Captain Neal plus eight Danes and twenty-two women, is the one that is included in Chapter I. In that chapter this list is discussed by Charles Thornton Libby and its many inaccuracies are pointed out by him in his address of 1927 which is included in full in the chapter. He labels the list as a fraudulent production and gives his reasons for believing it to be fraudulent. One of them is that William Seavey was not sent out by Captain Mason but "came on a fishing trip to the Isles of Shoals." What actually happened is that the people on this list came to the Piscataqua region but over a period of time extending from 1623 to 1634 and even later. And not all were sent by Captain Mason. Also, there were others such as Thomas Crockett, who is not on the list but was in the area at a very early date.

All that we know about William[1] Seavey's reasons for coming to New England and when he arrived, comes from his own statement given under oath in 1676 when he was seventy five years of age. Nothing more has been found. In the absence of any additional information some speculation seems desirable. Since he says that he was seventy five years of age in 1676,

Rye, N.H. in 1805. The site of the old Seavey mill, Seavey Creek, Foss Beach and the Foss Cemetery have been marked.

he was born in 1601, so he was thirty one when he arrived in this country in 1632. This means that he was a mature man, probably more mature than men are today at that age, for boys of that period would start apprentice courses in their early teens and many, in areas such as the part of Devon near the ocean, went to sea at ages of twelve to fifteen. With many fishing expeditions leaving Devon ports in the early 1600's for Newfoundland and the New England coast and his family being ship owners and masters, it is possible, and even probable, that he had made one or more trips to the shores of this country before he made the voyage in 1632. It is also possible, and even probable, that one or more of these voyages could have been made on a ship or ships under the command of a Seavey family member or even owned by a member of the Seavey family. Carrying our speculation even further, he may have owned in full or in part and been in command or at least an officer on the ship that brought him over here to stay in 1632. Chapter III mentions several cases of Seavey ownership of ships. On one or more of the earlier voyages, he could have been one of the crew members stationed on the Isles of Shoals for the duration of the trips to clean, salt and cure the fish. What this might mean is that William[1] Seavey could have been crossing the North Atlantic and spending months ashore well before 1632, possible even before the Pilgrims landed in Plymouth in 1620. He would have been nineteen years of age then and could have been going to sea for as many as five years or even more.

William[1] Seavey, as the account that follows will show, was more than a fisherman. He was an energetic, enterprising and successful businessman for his time. In addition, he was active in public affairs in the early settlement in the Portsmouth-Rye-Isles of Shoals area. His range of activities shows that he fitted easily into the chaotic, even turbulent situation that existed in the early days of the Portsmouth area.

Before proceeding with the account of William[1] Seavey, it will be well to establish his relationship to Thomas[1] Seavey, the emigrant ancestor of the Seavey line of Fannie C. Harrison. The one definite tie that we have comes from a deposition given by children of William[1] Seavey where they designated Thomas[1] as "cousin."[1] As cousins can be of various degrees of kin with a common ancestor any number of generations back, it is fortunate that we have the family data given in *The Ancestry of Elisha Porter Seavey 1838–1913* by James T. M. Seavey. On page 6 he lists the children of Henry and Helen (Baron) Zevie with baptismal dates. There is a Thomas baptised December 4, 1594 and a notation that he is perhaps the father of Thomas[1] Seavey (1627–1708), of Portsmouth, N.H. He goes on to say that John and Elizabeth Seavey, children of William[1], on March 29, 1669, deposed of their cousin Thomas[1] Seavey. William[1] is listed as having been baptised October 26, 1601 so the dates fit together nicely. It seems reasonable therefore to proceed on the premise that Thomas[1], the emigrant, was a nephew of William[1], the other Seavey emigrant, and thus a first cousin of his children. As mentioned in the previous chapter, the soundness of the research findings of Dr. James T.M. Seavey have been confirmed by the

1985 research of M.J.L. Wickes, M.A. of Devon, England.

Dr. Seavey, on page seven of his account, has this interesting information:

> He settled for a time on Appledore, then called Hog Island, the largest of the Isles of Shoals, which Captain Christopher Levett, in his *Voyage to New England, 1623–24*, had described as "a good fishing place for six ships, but more cannot well be there, for want of convenient stage room as, this year's experience hath proved."

This seems plausible, as various records confirm that the first arrivals to remain the year around did live on Appledore Island. Also, these accounts tell us that there were no women living at the Isles of Shoals for a number of years. The statement of Captain Levett also tells us that there were in the area, in the 1623–24 period, more ships than the harbor, which was adequate for only six, could accommodate.

When, where and to whom William[1] was first married is not known. He was thirty one years of age when he arrived at the Isles of Shoals. He may have been married then, but probably he was single. If married his wife had undoubtedly been left in England or had died earlier. In 1642, he probably had a wife as he adopted a child in this year. He could have left the adopted child with her own mother, but the account on the record can be interpreted that he took the child into his home. The following is taken from *The Ancestry of Elisha Porter Seavey—1838–1913*, page 7.

> William Seavey's "sarvant" and Stephen Crawford were "cast away in a shallop" in 1642. With exemplary fidelity, William Seavey administered Crawford's estate for his widow, Margaret, and their two small children, Susan and Sarah. The older child, Susan, "William Seavey kept as his own," but evidently frail, she died after doctoring at Boston.
>
> William Seavey rendered a preliminary account as administrator, July 5, 1642; and on October 18, 1647, the General Court of the Province of Maine, consisting of Henry Jocelyn, deputy governor, Edward Godfrey, secretary, Henry Boad and Abraham Preble, assistants, and Basil Parker, recorder, approved his final account and decreed:
>
> We whose names are underwritten at the lower end of this side peruseing the account and knowing the indulgent care and charge that William Seavey was at in the bringing up the child deceased, and more mony disbursed than hath come to his hands, we think fitt he be discharged, and refer it to his Charitable consideration what hee will bestow on the Child of Croford out of his love, that now liveth. (*Me. Prov. & Ct. Rec.*, I, 120–123; cf. *N.H. Prov. Papers*, XXXI, 17).

For a full appreciation of this some supplementary information can be helpful. Stephen Crawford was a partner of William[1] Seavey in his fishing operation on the Isles of Shoals. At an early date, he had a house at Braveboat Harbor on either the York or Kittery side of the Piscataqua River and later built a house at Oyster River which was not fully paid for at the time of his death. He had a wife Margaret and two young daughters—Susan and Sarah. The latter lived with her mother who later married Thomas Willey but William Seavey administered the estate including her portion.[2] A shallop is a small boat that was used for fishing either going from a harbor or from a mother ship. A "sarvant" of William[1] Seavey was also lost.

If William[1] adopted Susan and took her to live with him, he must have had a wife. If he did, he had no children of his own if we accept the findings of Dr. James T. M. Seavey for he lists the first child William[2] as having been born in 1648.[3] However, several sources[4] give his date of birth as 1640. The date of 1648 is probably correct as the will of William[2] was proved in June of 1733. There is another possibility that must be considered here. William[1] may have had a wife and no children at this time. If we accept this, it may be that the wife who was the mother of his children was a second wife.

Before leaving the incident of the loss of his partner and the administration of his estate, an observation seems in order. The last paragraph of the old record quoted is something very unusual for old records. The writer has never encountered anything like it. The General Court of the Province of Maine must have been very much impressed with the compassion for the family and the thoroughness of the administration of the estate that William[1] Seavey had shown. Henry Jocelyn, the deputy govenor and one of the members of the General Court at the Province of Maine, was one of the men on the questionable list of those sent over by Mason in 1631, and he accompanied, at an early date, Captain Neal on an expedition to find the source of the Merrimac River.

The ownership of land by William[1] Seavey gives us some basis for assumptions about a wife or wives and the birth of children. According to Libby[5], he had a lot in Portsmouth before 1646. Nothing has been found to tell us whether there was a house on this lot, and if so, whether he lived in it. However, some idea as to when he first acquired land can be determined by another event. Dr. James T.M. Seavey on page 7 of his account says that on April 17, 1644 he was sworn freeman at Portsmouth. For this to happen, he had to have property. So it can be assumed that he owned land before April of 1644. There are records showing that he acquired additional grants of land in 1652, 1653, 1660 (161 acres), 1666 (101 acres) and 1669. William[1] did buy land of William[1] Berry and his wife, Jane, before 1654, and possibly several years before or around 1652. This property had a house on it and was located in the section known as Little Harbor. It was on a creek that appears on the 1805 map of Rye as Seavey Creek and runs from the higher ground where it is a fresh water creek to sea level, where it becomes a salt water or tidal creek. The deed for this property was granted to him on December 6, 1670, by the widow of William[1] Berry, Jane, her children and her second husband, Nathaniel Drake. The supposition is that William[1] Berry, who seems to have died suddenly in 1654, did not have a chance to give him a deed for the property before his death. That several years might go by without a formal deed being granted may seem strange to us today, but in the early days of this country, they were very lax about formally recording transactions and granting deeds. Such delays were not uncommon.

Several accounts tell us that William[1] Seavey lived on one side of Seavey Creek at a very early date and that Thomas[1] Seavey lived on the other. The Rye His-

torical Society states that William[1] lived on the north side and Thomas on the south side. It is my belief that it was Thomas[1] who lived on the north side. This is confirmed by Ezra S. Stern in *Genealogical and Family History of the State of New Hampshire*, Volume II, Page 813. Other accounts, telling of early land grants to William[1] Berry, Robert Puddington, Thomas[1] Seavey and others, tend to confirm this, but due to the wording of the old grants and the change in the names used for locations, it is difficult to be sure about the exact location of the land originally owned by William[1] and Thomas[1] Seavey. However, they were both on Seavey Creek, and in a few years when there were third generation members of the Seavey families, there were so many in the area that a very old resident living in the area at this time (1985) said it was Seavey town.

The date of 1652 for the acquisition of the William[1] Berry land by William[1] Seavey is selected because it was in 1652 that William[1] Berry received a grant of land in what is now Rye. His original grant was in January 1649, and the presumption is that he sold this to William[1] Seavey when he obtained the new grant in 1652. Sylvia Fitts Getchell in her *Marden Family Genealogy*, page 16, says that this later Berry grant, with others at a later date, went undivided until 1719.

William[1] acquired substantial land holdings during the later years of his life. He also acted as administrator for estates at various times. In 1660, he had a deed from Joseph Mason of the Ralph Gee estate which he had administered in 1645.[7] The house on the Berry property was built originally by Richard Tucker according to depositions in a court case in 1686.[7] William[1] had had business relations with Richard Tucker in 1668 and 1669, and on February 26, 1679 William[1] was ordered to supply Mrs. Margaret Tucker, the widow of Richard, as she was then in "want."

A review of some of the legal actions against William and those initiated by him, gives us a concept of the scope of his activities. In addition, it tells us something about the man.

The accounts that follow are taken from the book, *The Ancestry of Elisha Porter Seavey, 1838–1913.*[6]

Upon complaints made to the "great enquest" at Saco, June 25, 1640, by Philip Swaddon of Piscataqua that "William Sevey about ten days last past, did pull down all the rafters of the stage that Mr. John Beaple fisht in this place" and by Nicholas Frost that "Steeven Crafford partener with the said William Sevey, did uruinate the flakes, short and long layers, with other things belonging to the fishing Craft," they were "by a warrant from the Court directed to Mr. Thomas Wannerton to be warned not to offend any more in that kind" (*Me. Prov. & Ct. Rec.*, I, 51–53).

He was several times a party in litigation, usually over fishing stages at the Isles of Shoals. He was successful as plaintiff in 1660 against Stephen Ford, in 1661 against William Seeley and John Diamont, Sr., again in 1662 against Diamont, and in 1663 against John Diamont, Jr.; but in 1669 Roger Kelly had judgment against "William Seve for not protiqueting his Attechment" (*Me. Prov. & Ct. Rec.*, I, II). In 1671 he owed fourteen pounds eight shillings to the estate of John Croad of Salem (*Essex Quart. Cts.*, IV, 402).

In the early cases, he seems to have been the aggressor and in the later ones the plaintiff. These accounts show that he was active as a fisherman until 1669 at least, at which time he was sixty-eight years of age.

William Seavey also had a mill on Seavey Creek in Rye. Although no information has been found about it, the assumption can be made that it was for the grinding of grain, but it could have been a sawmill. It could have been powered by water, either from the rise and fall of the tides, or the fall of the water from higher land to the level of the tidal part of Seavey Creek. The old maps show Seavey Creek and the site of the mill.

One activity or business connection of William Seavey might be very interesting if we could get more information about it. He was the agent for the widow of Ambrose Lane.[6] That sounds innocent enough. However, when we start to study the information about Ambrose Lane and his brothers we begin to wonder about just what went on in those years long ago. Richard was one brother and Sampson was another. Sampson seems to have been a character of the type about whom books are written. The Lanes were from Devon, England. Ambrose[9] was at Strawberry Banke or Portsmouth at an early date. He was a merchant, owned a sawmill, built ships, attached property of his brother Sampson at Isles of Shoals worth 400 pounds in 1651 and the prize (meaning a captured ship) the Sarah. He was associated in dealings with the Cutts and Tucker who seemed to be in everything in the area. The widow of Ambrose, whom William Seavey represented, seems to have been a second wife and she was in England when he was her agent. Only a part of the information on Sampson will be included here. He is listed[10] as

> . . .a merchant, shipmaster and privateer under Belgium and Spain by letter of marque from Archduke Leopold made at Brussels 22 April 1648. He had just arrived at Boston 3 August 1648, master of the Neptune of Dartmouth (Devon, England) with wines from Teneriffe (Canary Islands); first found at Strawberry Banke 5 July 1648 where he had an interest in Wannerton's Great House. Then March 24, 1649 he gave Ambrose his brother a power of attorney to sue the Cutts and is of record at intervals of dealing principally with the Cuttses and his brother. The Massachusetts Governor and Council, 1 August 1650, ordered Sampson Lane, "an Englishman, a stranger in this jurisdiction and an inhabitant of Spain by his own confession" to take down bills he had posted inviting volunteers on a ship of war against French ships. In 1651, before the General Court, after taking the Frenchman LaTour's ship he declared himself a subject of the King of Spain.

There is nothing in the records to show that William Seavey engaged in unlawful activities or anything like that. However, he was active in local business and had contact and business relations with some of the leading people of the area, including some of questionable reputation. The Great House just mentioned, was built by Humphrey Chadbourne for Captain Mason about 1624, on a site that is now in Portmouth. It was occupied up to 1644 by Thomas Wannerton, who was assistant to Governor Williams and both were appointees of Captain Mason. When Wannerton left, he took arms and other property belonging

to Captain Mason and shipped them to Port Royal, Nova Scotia, and went along himself. He was killed there soon after his arrival. When Sampson Lane left the great house, he turned it over to Richard Cutts who occupied it to his death when it went to his brother and later a nephew.

William[1] Seavey was active in community affairs and took positions on current problems of the area. As previously mentioned, on April 17, 1644 he was sworn as a freeman at Portsmouth. The term means that he was a free citizen and usually was applied only to the owners of property. In 1648 he was elected as one of the three selectmen for Portsmouth. The selectmen were the counterpart of our town or city council members. In 1652, he was treasurer of Portsmouth. In 1655, he was selectman and constable for the "Yles of Shoals" and again in 1653, was selectman for Portsmouth. Constables in those days were the law enforcement officers for the area with some of the power of a judge. Considering the number and type of people on the Isles of Shoals, it was quite a responsibility to be constable. The fishermen were a rough, lawless and independent group. They resented authority of any kind. The Isles of Shoals was, in their opinion, their own little kingdom. As far as they were concerned, they did not want help from anyone and did not get it, so they did not want anyone trying to tell them what to do. Above all, they resented taxation of any kind. At one time, most of them moved over to the islands belonging to New Hampshire as Maine levied some taxes that they resented. There are records where William[1] served on juries and grand juries at various times. He was also a member of an inquest commission to investigate the drowning of Robert Marshall and Jeremiah Dolley.

While a selectman for Portsmouth, William[1] Seavey had charge of the erection of Old South Church.[6] There are records showing that he contributed to the support of the minister, the Reverend Joshua Moody, in 1659, 1666, 1671, 1677, and 1678.

Three more paragraphs from *The Ancestry of Elisha Porter Seavey*[6] show William took various positions over the years about government control of the Piscataqua area.

> "Praying to be freed from the Jurisdiction of the Massachusetts" in vain hope that King Charles II might instead "joyne them to the province of Mayne," William Seavey was one of the signers of the petition of Abraham Corbett to the Royal Commissioners, July 26, 1665, for which Corbett was forthwith jailed at Boston; but in 1676 he deposed as above mentioned against Captain Mason's heir, and on October 22, 1677 he signed the petition in favor of the Massachusetts government, in which, it was said shrewdly to the king,
>
> > wee rest fully satisfied and contented. Wee are men that desire to fear the Lord and the King and not to meddle with them that are given to Change, as well knowing what confusions, distractions and Damage Changes of Governments are not unusually attended with (*N. H. Prov. Papers*, XVII, 512, 526).
>
> Finally, by the commission of September 18, 1679, establishing a president and council, New Hampshire was constituted a royal province.

In the paragraphs that follow, we have most of the information that is known about William's family and his financial situation. This material is from *The Ancestry of Elisha Porter Seavey*.[11]

Without mention of his wife, presumably then dead, on October 29, 1679 William Seavey executed, and on July 6, 1680 acknowledged, a deed of gift granting and confirming to his son William "my now dwelling house together with all other outhouses as also my upland and marsh and Mill on this side the Creeke that my Mill now stands on, foure acres only excepted of marsh. . . As also all the Cattle which said William Seavey now enjoyeth as his proper owne," upon the condition that he pay to his brothers John and Stephen and married sister Elizabeth Odiorne the sum of ten pounds each (N.H. Hist. Soc., Province Deeds, vol. 3, p. 157a).

William Seavey, Sr., deposed in February 1682/3 that he first knew Thomas Walford over forty-five years before that date.

His name appeared for the last time on the tax list for Greenland and Sandy Beach (Rye), August 25, 1684. His son was recorded as 'junior' on July 20, 1686, but was not called 'junior' in 1687, when he served on a jury. Parsons (*Hist. Rye*, ,p. 526) says that he died about 1688.

Children:

4 i. William, c. 1648–1732.

ii. Elizabeth, b. 1652; m. before 1679 Philip Odiorne, adm. December 3, 1703. Son: Nathaniel Odiorne, m. Jane Haskins.

iii. John, b. 1654, inventory at Bradford, Mass., March 4, 1709; m. July 29, 1686, Hannah (Philbrook) Walker, b. September 26, 1651, d. s. p. October 27, 1738.

iv. Capt. Stephen, b. 1656, taxed at Bloody Point (now Newington), N. H., 1677, living 1679.

Apparently William Seavey died in late 1686 or early 1687. If so he was eighty-five or eighty-six years of age. There is no record of the name of his wife. Her first or given name was probably Elizabeth as her only daughter was given that name, but her name appears as Mary in some places. William Richard Cutter[12] makes the following very definite statement: "He left a widow Elizabeth." However, this does not agree with Libby[1] and others. So we don't know her name or whether he was married more than once. William's[1] mother was Helen and they did not use that name for their only daughter. His wife was probably someone he had brought over from England some time after he arrived or the daughter of one of the very early arrivals. Their first child, William[2] was born in 1648 (Parsons says 1640) when William,[1] the father, was forty-seven years of age. His wife does not appear to have been living in 1679. The youngest child was born in 1656.

After his arrival in the Piscataqua area, William[1] accumulated considerable property and money. The inventory of his estate is reported by Libby[13] as being 631 pounds. This is a very substantial sum for that period in time and for a new settlement in a new land. Information as to the taxes paid by William[1] has not been found. However, William[2], after sharing his father's estate with his sister and two brothers, was by a wide margin the largest taxpayer on the list. The tax list for Newcastle for 1701 shows William[2] as paying three pounds and six shillings. The second largest tax payment was that of John Brackett, one of the original settlers, and a neighbor, who paid two pounds and ten shillings.

Since William[1] Seavey is not a direct ancestor, only general information will be presented about his children, grandchildren and some of the third generation of his line. The principal reason for including this information is to help us to under-

stand the complicated marriages of Seavey to Seavey to Seavey in the second, third and even later generations of the families of William[1] and Thomas[1].

William,[2] like his father, was active in community affairs. He was a surveyor, served on grand juries, coroner's juries, inquests, as a bondsman, a signer of petitions, etc. He was also a selectman for Newcastle and later for Rye, and a member of the provincial assembly of New Hampshire in 1697. As he was admitted as a freeman in May of 1674, he owned property in his own name at that time. In 1721, William[2] was on the town committee to lay out the common lands. Of sixty-odd years' of rememberance, he deposed at Newcastle May 21, 1679 that had been on the Sheepscot River in Maine before King Phillip's War (1675). When Rye was seeking separation from Newcastle, he was active in the effort over the several years that they sought to be a town of their own. Once their petition was granted in 1776, he was on the first board of selectmen. However, he was then nearing the end of his active career as in 1778 he told the selectmen of his desire to be excused, due to "age and infirmity" from further service in laying out lands.

William[2], was also active in business as it was conducted in those days and with apparent success. His inheritance from his father had been substantial, but he seems to have increased his worth considerably. As mentioned earlier in this chapter, his tax payment in the town of Newcastle in 1701 was the largest by a wide margin. Only one other came any where near the same amount. Later, after the separation of Rye, he paid more taxes than anyone in the new community. However, in time, the tax payments of other descendants of William[1] and his nephew, Thomas[1] increased.

Wiliam[2] married Hannah, daughter of Thomas and Hannah (Johnson) Jackson, a widow. She was born about 1663. Her grandfather, James Johnson, according to the *History of New Hampshire* by Everett S. Stackpole, page 19, was born about 1602, and is one of the men on the list of those that are claimed to have been sent over by Captain Mason. In 1643, James Johnson signed a petition from Bloody Point, was a ferryman in 1648 and had a part in the distribution of land in Portsmouth in 1657. One daughter, Hannah, married Thomas Jackson, and the other, Mary, married John Odiorne.

William[2] and Hannah Seavey had nine children:[1] William,[3] Captain Stephen,[3] Thomas,[3] Ebenezer,[3] James,[3] Hannah,[3] Hephsibah,[3] and Mary.[3] The tenth child was not named as it died at birth and was the third of triplets born April 21, 1695, the other two who survived being Thomas[3] and Ebenezer.[3] Elisha Porter Seavey whose biography has been quoted so often, is descended from Ebenezer[3], who was one of the surviving triplets.

The estate left by William[2] was significant for that period of time in one of the earliest settlements in our country. His will was made March 21, 1729, and probated June 18, 1733, so he probably died in April or May of 1733. His wife Hannah was made executrix along with his son William[3]. All members of his numerous family were remembered and some pre-

vious gifts of land and property were confirmed.

One item in his will of 1729, will be mentioned as there have been so many comments in the family of the author about the slave holdings of the various families in his lines of descent. He left his negro woman Ammi to his wife Hannah. When the widow, Hannah, died in 1749, sixteen years later, she bequeathed to the negro woman Ammi, a cow. So William[2] was a slave holder and his slave was transferred to his widow through his will and presumably freed by her. Parsons in his History of Rye tells us that there were nineteen slaves in Rye in 1775, but by 1790 the number had dropped to three. In 1744, William Seavey (presumably William[3]) deeded a boy named Hampshire to his brother Amos. In the 1772–1806 period James Seavey had at least four blacks, two, Titus and Dinah, being baptised September 13, 1772. The account book of Amos Seavey tells of the death of a negro woman–1795. He also owned George, Phillis and Dinah. Parsons also has this interesting item, "Caezer Walles, a black man, alias Caezer Seavey, died November 18, 1821, aged 81 years."

Elizabeth[2] Seavey, only daughter of William[2] and Hannah Seavey, was born in 1652, married Philip Odiorne. He could have been a son of John Odiorne, probably a cousin, who appears as an inhabitant as early as 1657. He married when about forty-five years of age, Mary Johnson, sister of Hannah (Johnson) Jackson who was the mother of the wife of William[1] Seavey. Or Philip Odiorne could have been the Philip Odiorne who lived on the Isles of Shoals at an early date and who was a brother of John. Still another possible is that the husband of Elizabeth[2] Seavey was a son of the Philip of the Isles of Shoals.

Very little has been found about Elizabeth[2] Seavey Odiorne. Her estate was administered December 3, 1703. It is believed that she had one son, Nathaniel, who married Jane Harkins. If there were other children, no record of them has been found.

John[2] Seavey, born in 1654 (Parsons in his History of Rye says 1650), married July 29, 1686 Hannah (Philbrook) Walker. She was the daughter of John Philbrook of Hampton and widow of Joseph Walker. Parsons says that John[2] and Hannah were married July 29, 1680. He also lists two sons for the couple, Thomas and Nathaniel, but Libby definitely lists John[2] and Hannah as dying without heirs. John[2] was a blacksmith and left records of public service and property transfers. In 1703, he sold the former William[1] Berry place (presumably the home where his father lived) to his brother William[2] Seavey. He then moved to Bradford, New Hampshire where he died. His estate was administered, by his widow, Mary, indicating that he had a second wife by that time. She died at the home of Eldal Chevey in Bradford October 27, 1738. Incidentally, on page 527 of the History of Rye, Parsons lists Thomas Seavey as a son of John[2] Seavey. He then lists children for Thomas, but these children are those of Thomas[1] Seavey the second Seavey emigrant. The listing of Thomas as a son of John[2] is therefore in error.

For Stephen, the son of William[1], there does not seem to be any information ex-

cept that he was taxed at Bloody Point in 1677 and that he was living in 1679[1]. However, William[2] had a son Stephen[3], sometimes designated as Captain Stephen, and there is considerable about him that belongs in this account. It is interesting and shows the extent of the pervasiveness of the members of the Seavey family in the early days of the area around the mouth of the Piscataqua River. It pertains particularly to the second Seavey Island—the one in the Piscataqua River at Portsmouth. Information on Seavey Island, one of the Isles of Shoals, has already been supplied.

The following is from *A History of the U.S. Naval Prison at Portsmouth, New Hampshire.*[14]

> . . . . the islands presently constituting the Portsmouth Naval Base were known as the Puddington Islands, after George Puddington, who, living there, used them as a place to repair nets and cure fish. According to most authorities, he was the first permanent settler.
>
> In 1631, Reginald Fernald came to Strawberry Banke (the original name for Portsmouth) from Bristol, England. It is thought that he was a surgeon in the British Navy who resigned his post to come to America, though he is frequently mentioned in the records by the title of Lieutenant and Captain. He was clerk of the court, commissioner, surveyor, at the time of his death, town clerk, and what is now Pierce's Island was then called Doctor's Island after Fernald who died there in 1660. Fernald married Joanna Warburton, who in due time, gave birth to seven children, the eldest of whom, Thomas, was born in 1633. The mother herself died in 1660. On May 3, 1645, Richard Vines, an agent for Sir Ferdenand de Gorges, gave a perpetual lease of the islands to Thomas Fernald for the yearly rent of two shillings and six pence, this lease being to all intents a gift to the twelve year old son of Dr. Fernald. It was recorded in the York County Record as follows:
>
> These present, witness that a, Richard Vines, Steward General of the Province of Wayne, leave given and granted unto Tho Furnell, the son of Renald Fernald of Piscataqua River, Chieurgeon for and on behalf of Sir Fernando Gorges Knt. and propietor of Sd. Province of Wayne, two islands lying and being on the north east side of the Piscataqua River aforesaid, commonly called or known by the name of Puddington Islands The said Thomas Fernell yielding and paying in to the Sd. Farden Georges, his heirs and assigns two shillings and six pence yearly. Given under my hand this third day of May 1645 Richard Vines.

The account that has been quoted goes on to tell of the marriage of Thomas Fernald, son of Renald, to Temperance Washington of Virginia whose parents came to Virginia from England in 1630. Thomas died in 1679 and Temperance in 1688. They had ten children. Eight lived to share the division of their estate which included islands other than the two that were later joined and are known today as Seavey Island. Thomas seems to have inherited most of it including the personal property of his mother and her home on Pierce's Island. The Pierce (Pearce) name will come up again in Chapters V and X.

Thomas and his wife built a home on the largest island which became known as Fernald Island.

Elizabeth, the youngest daughter of Renald Fernald, married Capt. Stephen Eastwicke and she inherited the part of the largest island where the former Naval Hospital stands. Her grave has been found to be one of five marbled graves in a little

cemetery on a point of land occupied by the former prison. The inscription reads:

"Here lyes ye Body of Elizabeth Eastwicke Wife Stephen Eastwicke Aged 31 years 2 months & 20ds
Died April ye 16th 1714"

The inscription was surmounted by skull, cross-bones, hour glass flanked by a conventional design with a weeping-willow tree motif.

Before continuing to quote from the *Naval Prison History*, some essential information needs to be included. The Stephen Seavey mentioned in the following quotation is Captain Stephen[3], and he married Anne Fernald, a granddaughter of Thomas and Temperance (Washington) Fernald. More about him will be included after the quotation.

The grandchildren of Thomas and Temperance Fernald began the disposal of the island in 1721, when Stephen Seavey bought from Mary Kelley, daughter of Patience Fernald, sixteen and a half acres, and Johnny Henderson, son of Sarah Fernald, conveyed sixteen acres more. This property included the present Henderson Point on the Prison reservation.

Stephen Seavey was the first Seavey to own land on the Island and the first time in records that the Island was called "Seavey's" was in a conveyance of land on November 14, 1796 by Stephen Sevey, Jr. (Stephen[4] son of Captain Stephen[3]) to Joseah Davis—the condition being that ". . . . . said Davis should furnish him (Seavey) with meat, drink, lodging and apparel, etc., during life".

It is hard to conceive of a property, or even a part of a property, as valuable as Seavey Island is today, being sold for a subsistence for a few years. Stephen[4] must have really been in bad financial condition at the time. He was born after 1712[1]. Nothing else has been found about him.

Captain Stephen[3], the son of William[2] and Hannah (Jackson) Seavey was born 1686[15]. In 1711, he married Anne Fernald. March 17, 1730, he married second Mary (Carpenter) Dearing and in 1736 he married third wife Mary True, who was the widow of Obediah True. He had a total of nine children. They were by first wife Anne: Stephen, Michael, Nicholas and Hannah. The other children were: John, Elizabeth, Joshua, David and Mary. Evidently, all of these children were minors when Capt. Stephen[3] died in 1742. Mary (True) Seavey was made administrator of the estate September 6, 1742 and also guardian for John and Elizabeth. They were probably her children. Capt. Stephen[4] was made guardian for Joshua, David and Mary, which seems to indicate that they were children of Mary (Carpenter) (Dearing) Seavey.

Before leaving Captain Stephen[3] and the Seavey Island that carries his name, a paragraph or two about shipbuilding in the Portsmouth area may be in order. It will add to our understanding of the part that this area has had in the development of our country. The earliest arrivals in the area were impressed with the seemingly limitless supply of very tall, straight trees. In addition to using them for firewood, they also used them to repair their ships. As the trees they found were far superior to anything in England or on the continent for masts for ships and lumber for shipbuilding and for construction generally, they were soon sending timber back

to England and the continent. From the beginning, they built the small boats, or shallops, that went out from the larger fishing ships to cast the nets and bring in the fish. Soon larger vessels were being built and the Postsmouth area was the shipbuilding center of the colonies. The Falkland, the first ship constructed in this country for the Royal English Navy, was built in Portsmouth in 1649. The first ship built at Portsmouth for the rebelling colonies was the Raleigh, which was completed in May of 1776. A year later, the Ranger, later commanded by John Paul Jones of Portsmouth, slid down the ways and soon gained the distinction of being the first American ship to receive the Salute to the flag from a foreign power. While the Falkland, Raleigh and Ranger were not built on Seavey Island, they were constructed on nearby islands, and it was not long before naval construction was started on Seavey Island. It has since been an important base for our Navy. While its period of greatest importance may have passed, the remaining operations and structures are impressive. When the Navy became a separate service in 1789, the first Secretary of the Navy, Benjamin Stoddard, initiated a shipbuilding program and settled on Portsmouth as the location for a Navy Yard. In 1800, with the purchase of Seavey Island, the Portsmouth Navy Yard had its beginning. The present Seavey Island is made up of the fifty-eight acre Fernald or Dennett's Island enlarged to sixty-four and the larger Jenkin's or Trefethen's Island of 105 acres. As far as the author has been able to determine, Captain Stephen[3] Seavey at one time owned all of this land through the inheritance of his wife and purchases.

Before closing this chapter, mention will be made on one more child of William[2] Seavey, as some confusion has been encountered concerning her. Hannah[3] married Samuel Wallis and died before 1741, so she could not be the Hannah Seavey who married Samuel Seavey[3], the grandson of Thomas[1] in 1734, who will be discussed in a later chapter. Her husband did not die until 1741.

With William[1] Seavey, we have another instance of what happened with great frequency in all of the original colonies—a young man who came here with little or nothing and in his lifetime by industry and his own capabilities made a place for himself, accumulating considerable in the way of worldly goods in the process. Thereby, making a significant contribution to the building of this country.

NOTES

1. *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire* by Sybil Noyes, Charles Thornton Libby and Walter Goodwin Davis, pages 618 and 619. And *The Ancestry of Elisha Porter Seavey, 1838–1913*, page 6.
2. Same as above but page 170, Noyes, Libby and Davis
3. The Ancestry of Elisha Porter Seavey, 1838–1913, page 9.
4. Same as No. 1 above, but page 619. Also, *Genealogical and Personal Memoirs Relating to the Families of Boston and Eastern Mass.* by William Richard Cutter, A.M. 1908, Lewis Historical Publishing Company.

5. Same as No. 1 above.
6. Same as No. 3 but pages 7 and 8.
7. Same as No. 4.
8. Same as No. 6.
9. Same as No. 1, but pages 410 and 411.
10. Same as No. 1, but page 312.
11. Same as No. 3, but pages 8 and 9.
12. *Genealogical and Personal Memoirs*, by William Richard Cutter, A.M., 1908. Volume II, page 789.
13. Same as No. 3, but pages 8 and 9.
14. By Lt. Robert J. Verge. U.S. Naval Reserve, Education and Training Officer.
15. Same as No. 3, but pages 10 and 11.

CHAPTER V

Thomas Seavey

The direct ancestor of Fannie Collins Harrison is Thomas[1] Seavey. Unfortunately, less information has been found for him than for William[1] Seavey of the previous chapter. William Richard Cutter in his book, *Genealogical and Personal Memoirs*[1] says "Thomas was a fisherman, a quiet citizen, not much in evidence on the public records." This is true but before this chapter is finished, it will be seen that we have more information about him than is available for most first generation settlers of an equally early period in our history.

In Chapter IV Thomas[1] was identified, with reasonable certainty, as the son of Thomas Zevie who was baptized in Stokeinteignhead, Devon, England on December 4, 1594. His father was an older brother of William[1] of Chapter IV and both were sons of Henry and Helen (Baron) Zevie. Helen (spelled Hellen in some accounts) Baron was probably a daughter of Edward and Joan Baron who were married September 25, 1592.

As with William[1] Seavey, we have no recorded date of birth for Thomas[1] Seavey. In making various depositions, which have survived, he gave his age. Subtracting these from the date of the deposition we get years of birth as 1627, 1628 and 1630. James T. M. Seavey in his book[2] uses the date of 1627. This is the date that will be used in this book. With 1627 as the date of birth of Thomas,[1] he was twenty six years younger than his uncle William,[1] who came over to the Isles of Shoals to live.

As yet an exact date has not been found for the arrival of Thomas[1] at the Isles of Shoals. However, there are enough records to establish an approximate date. In 1672, he deposed that he was at the Shoals when Thomas Turpin's wife and daughter came over.[3] As Thomas Turpin, with Richard Cummings, bought a plantation at Salt Creek on the mainland in 1645,[4] it seems reasonable to assume that the wife and daughter of Thomas Turpin came over at about this time and the property was bought in connection with their planned or actual arrival. Most of the unmarried fishermen lived in huts or make-shift quarters on the Isles of Shoals. In later years some of those living on the islands had wives with them, but, in general, they seemed to move to the mainland when married.

In 1645, Thomas[1] Seavey was eighteen years of age and he could have been on the Isles of Shoals for several years. As has been mentioned in an earlier chapter, it was not uncommon for boys to go to sea at an early age, sometimes as young as

House dating back to about 1700 on the site of the Thomas[1] Seavey home.

twelve years of age. While there is no documentary proof, the following could have been the situation. In the late 1630's, William[1] was nearing forty years of age. He had established himself in New England so, he decided to do something about his family situation. There is nothing that indicates that he had had a wife with him in America up to this time. The earliest arrivals on the Isles of Shoals did not have wives with them and did not take wives until they moved over to the mainland. Since William[1] had probably gone to sea all his life, he probably had never had a wife. If so, he had left her in England, The supposition of the author is that he went to England with a cargo of fish, picked up his wife, if he had one, and if he did not, he found one. He then returned to New Hampshire with her.

As his operations had expanded and were on a sound basis, he brought back with his wife, his nephew Thomas, who was then about thirteen years of age.

William[1] Seavey must have had a wife in 1642 because he adopted as his own, Susan, the oldest child of his partner who was lost at sea in 1642. Although the adopted child did not live, he was commended by the court for his handling of the estate and the children. On April 17, 1644, he was sworn as a freeman at Ports-

Seavey Creek.

mouth where he had a town lot before 1646. James T. M. Seavey in *The Ancestry of Elisha Porter Seavey, 1838–1913* gives 1648 as the year of birth for his first son William. Considering all of these things, Thomas[1] Seavey probably did come over with William[1] Seavey when returning from England or alone in the time period of 1639–1644 when his age would have been between twelve and seventeen years of age. It seems reasonable, therefore, to assume that Thomas[1] arrived at the Isles of Shoals to make his home in 1640 or within a year or two of that date.

The first record of land ownership that has been found of Thomas[1] Seavey is in the *Marden Family Genealogy*[5]. On page 290 there is the following statement in this carefully researched book, "Thomas[1] Seavey has settled before 1648 at Seavey's Creek and was a fisherman. He was perhaps a nephew of William[1] Seavey also an early settler on the opposite shore of Seavey's Creek in Portsmouth, New Hampshire." Unfortunately, the source of this information is not given. As it is the nearest that we have for the first record of the presence of Thomas[1] in this country, the complications in connection with the Thomas[1] and William[1] land on Seavey Creek need to be explained. It seems that William[1] bought some land with a house from William Berry some time before his sudden death in 1654. He evidently paid for it but did not get a deed. This is explained in *Marden Family Genealogy*,[5] page 16.

Rockland County History, page 647 states that "The first deed ever given of land included within the limits of the Town of Rye was given by Jane Drake, widow of William Berry, in 1669, to William Seavey, Sr. of house, land, and marsh on the south side of brook that runs between land then owned by William Seavey and Thomas Seavey. It appears that William Seavey paid for this land before the death of William Berry, but failed to get a deed for it." This probably meant that William Berry died suddenly, presumably in 1654.

There will be more about William Berry and his family later as his daughter, Mary, married John Foss whose granddaughter, Abagail Foss, married Samuel[3] Seavey (Samuel,[2] Thomas[1]) a grandson of Thomas[1] so they are of the direct line of Fannie C. Harrison.

It is possible that the purchase of the land by William[1] Seavey could have been in 1652 or even a little earlier and that William Berry died in 1654 and that William[1] Seavey was still without a deed

in 1669, as business transactions were very informal in those days and as confirming them in writing and having the transaction recorded was a major undertaking. However, we cannot be sure that William[1] was living on Seavey Creek quite as early as 1648. It is even less certain that Thomas[1] Seavey was there at that time. Thomas did purchase the Puddington home place next to the William Berry place in Little Harbor (Rye) in June 1655.[3] He had received a land grant in 1652 and received other grants at later dates.[3] It is possible that he could have bought more land along with William[1] as early as 1648 or that he even lived with him without owning any land in his own name. He did witness the belated deed granted William[1] in 1669.

Just as there is uncertainty about the exact year of arrival of Thomas[1] Seavey and about his first purchase of land, there is also much that we do not know about his wife. We do not have a family name for her nor do we know exactly when he married her. Her given name was Tamsen (Tomasine in some records) and according to a deposition she gave in 1711 when she was seventy years of age, more or less, she was born in 1641.[3] She was married to Thomas[1] by 1667.[3] It could be that they were married in 1655, or shortly after that, as he purchased a home in 1655 but Tamsen would have been only fifteen years of age at that time. Another thing that is not known is whether he brought her over from England or whether she was a local girl. Tamsen is a name that appears frequently among people in the southwest of England at that time. It is probable that Thomas[1] brought Tamsen over from England by going back on one of the ships loaded with fish, marrying her over there and returning to New England the next spring. Also he could have arranged for her to come over on one of the fishing vessels and then married her in this country. There were not many women in the Portsmouth-Rye-Hampton area in the early days and by 1650 to 1660 there were still very few locally born girls that had reached an age for marriage.

As mentioned in the predeeding paragraph, Tamsen made a deposition in 1711 when she was seventy years of age more or less. This deposition concerned her "son Henry[2] and family."[3] Presumably the family mentioned was that of Henry so in 1711 he old enough to be married at that time and to have a family. As he was probably her second child, a likely date of marriage for Tamsen and Thomas[1] would be some time prior to 1667.

Some sources list six children for Thomas[1] and Tamsen Seavey and others only five. Six is probably the correct number. As dates of birth are not known for all of the children they will be listed in what may be the probable order of birth.

1. Samuel[2]
   As he is the direct line being followed in this book, Samuel will be discussed in a later chapter.
2. Henry[2]
3. Benjamin[2]
4. Rebecca[2] (Rebekah)
5. Demaris[2]
6. Nathaniel[2]

The only date of birth for these six children found to date is 1672 as the approx-

imate date of birth for Samuel[2] in *Genealogical and Personal Memoirs* of William Richard Cutter.[1] Although Samuel[2] is listed first, he may have been one of the younger children. Some of the very limited amount of information that has been found on the other children will be related, primarily because of later marriages of Seavey to Seavey or Seavey descendants. Also to tie certain landmarks and people to the early Seavey family members.

Henry married Sarah Pierce or Pearce (both spellings appear in the records) (Jones) Mattone in 1681[7] or shortly after that date. With time to do the research and space to print the results, we could have a very interesting account of this branch of the family. Only a small part of it will be included here. John Pearce of Noodles Island (near Kittery, Maine) was granted 100 acres of land by Francis Champernowne sometime prior to 1648 when mention is made of it in a deed. The area where the land was located later became known as Pearce's Neck. His wife was Eleanor. One child was Joseph[7], who was lost at sea. Although not married, he left a will giving all of his property to his intended bride, Margery Bray of Kittery. After his death, she married William[2] Pepperrell a son of William[1] Pepperrell who was a young immigrant from Cornwall, England who settled on Appledore Island, one of the Isles of Shoals, in 1676[8]. He specialized in curing fish the Appledore way—dunning—and was very successful. His son William[2] was born at Kittery Point, Maine in 1696. The account that follows is from the *Islands of Maine*[8].

> His son, another William, was born at Kittery Point in 1696 and grew up to lead 3000 Maine men in battle, to storm and capture the French fortress of Louisberg, on Cape Breton, in March 1745. He became a hero and was invited to sail to England for a hero's welcome, where he was the first American to be created a baronet by the King of England. The boy from the Isles of Shoals was made Sir William Pepperrell by King George II. For a hundred years the Pepperrells prospered in Kittery, amassing a great fortune. Col. William Pepperrell built the Pepperrell mansion in 1682. Lady Pepperrell built her house in 1760.
>
> In the American Revolution the Pepperrells lost their wealth, estates and deer parks in America because they picked the wrong side and stayed loyal to King George III of England, largely because the king's father had made their grandfather the first baronet in the New World.

The bride to be of Joseph Pearce, who married William Pepperrell, never received her inheritance. Joseph had designated his sister Sarah as executrix and she successfully contested the will and retained the property. There will be more about her as she married Henry[2] Seavey, son of Thomas[1] Seavey.[7]

But to get on with our story, John and Eleanor Pearce had two daughters, Mary and Sarah of the preceding paragraph. The following is from *Old Kittery and Her Families*, page 41:

> . . . . Sarah who married, first (Alexander?) Jones, second Hughbert Mattone in June, 1673, and third, Henry, son of Thomas Seavey of Portsmouth. Mattone deposed that "Sary" married him when she knew that her first husband was alive and then sailed away to Barbados. She declared in 1681 that Mattone had threatened her life and deserted her "above these seven years." They were divorced. By her third mar-

riage she had a son, Joseph Seavey, who with wife Hannah, sold, 10 May 1710, a portion of John Pearce's homestead in Kittery to Dominicus Jordan.

Henry[2] and Sarah (Pierce) (Jones) (Mattone) Seavey each died before 1697. Their only surviving child and heir was Joseph[3] of Portsmouth[3].

Joseph[3] Seavey married Hannah—[6]. They had a daughter Joanna[4] (Joannah) born August 31, 1712. A second daughter Hannah[4] was born June 5, 1713. There was also a son, Joseph, a daughter Sarah and a son Henry according to the notes of Ruth Seavey of Portsmouth[6]. Daughter Hannah[4] married, November 6, 1734, Samuel[4] Seavey (Samuel[3], Samuel[2], Thomas[1]). They were second cousins and there will be more about them in a later chapter. Joanna[4] married, March 8, 1733, Joseph Fuller and they had twelve children, but several died when very young. There will also be more about this couple and their children because Solomon[5] Seavey found a wife or possible two in his family. And, in addition, Ithamar[4] Seavey, an older brother of Samuel[4] Seavey married an older sister of Joseph Fuller who married Joanna[4] Seavey whose younger sister married Samuel[4] Seavey. As we shall see as our story progresses, inter-marriage among families is not something that took place only in the southern states. It very definitely was common in all sections of our country in the early day and for the same reason. The number of families in a given area was not large, but those families were large with many children so several marriages between families in a single generation and area was common.

Benjamin[2] married first Abagail[3]—but the date of marriage is not known. His second wife was Mary Wallis and N.H. Vital Records gives their date of marriage as October 23, 1712. She was probably a daughter of Ralph Wallis, a son of George Wallis, who arrived from London on the ship Abagail in 1635 with a son, Ralph.

In 1708, Thomas[1] Seavey deeded his property to Benjamin with the deed to be fully effective after his death and that of his wife[3]. However, the deed stipulated that he make payments to his sister Damaris, his brother Samuel and his nephew Joseph (the son of Henry). Appendix A has more about this most unusual document. The fact that Thomas[1] deeded his property to his son Benjamin[2] probably means that he was the oldest son living at the time of the deed which was 1708.

Rebecca[2] (Rebekah) married John Shute, but the date is not known. He was deeded eight acres of land in 1687 by Thomas[1] Seavey.[3] At the time, he was living with his wife, Rebecca, in a house on Smuttynose, one of the Isles of Shoals[9] that he had bought in 1675. It is believed that the Shutes moved to a house on the eight acres that they had been given. For some reason, John Shute deeded this land back to Benjamin Seavey, his brother-in-law in 1708. He was a freeman and a blacksmith. They had several children, but it is difficult to trace them from the meagre information in the Genealogical Dictionary.[9]

Damaris[2] married Daniel O'Shaw[10] who was twenty-eight in 1677 and lived in Newcastle. He served on grand juries and was a road surveyor for several years. His father was Dermon O'Shaw[11] who died in

1690 at the age of ninety-three. He had been a servant to Joseph Morse for fifteen years. Daniel and Damaris (Seavey) O'Shaw appear to have had six children.[11] John, a cordwainer or leather worker, who seems to have married first Joan, and second Mary, Margaret who married Reuben Mace, Catherine who was "infirm," in 1715, Mary married Henry Tredieck, Sarah who married Thomas Marden, an unnamed daughter who married William Samors, and Joan[2] who married Edward Hales. All of the children of Daniel O'Shaw were beneficiaries of his estate.[11]

Very little is known about Nathaniel. He joined with his father Thomas and brother Benjamin in paying one tax in 1681 and worked on the highway in 1683. When Col. Pepperrell sued Henry and Sarah Seavey for the Joseph Pearce estate, Nathaniel was named. It is believed that he was killed when there was a massacre in Sandy Beach by the Indians September 29, 1691. At least twenty persons were killed or missing. Several writers consider that Nathaniel was one of them.

Although William Richard Cutter[1] is quoted in the first paragraph of this chapter as saying that Thomas[1] Seavey was not much in evidence in the public records, he did render some public service. Thomas[1] Seavey was constable for the Isles of Shoals in 1663.[3] As has been pointed out in an earlier chapter, a constable in the early days of the colonies was quite a responsible position with some judicial as well as law enforcement responsibilities. And with the fishermen population of the Isles of Shoals, it was probably quite a difficult position to fill. In the earliest days, the constable was the only official and there was very little in the way of laws or support. William[1] Seavey was constable in 1655, which was during the period when the Shoals was attempting to get the Massachusetts Bay Colony to constitute them as a township. Thomas[1] Seavey served as constable soon after they had been granted the right to be a township. Some of the problems of the constables are covered briefly in Chapter II.

Libby[3] has one interesting, but only partially explained statement. In 1685, Nicholas Hodge was bound over for beating him (presumably Thomas[1] Seavey). Hodge seems to have been a trouble maker.[10] He was a fisherman and is listed as living at Little Harbor. His wife, Seaborn Reynolds, was from a good family of Maine with means, but she was the adopted daughter of Richard and Margaret Tucker. She is reported as having trouble with Frances Rand, one of the original settlers, in 1684. In 1685, Hodge tore down a fence that had been set up by John[2] Seavey, son of William[1] Seavey, and beat Nathaniel[2] Seavey in a dispute over a house in the possession of William[1] Seavey for twenty-eight years according to the testimony of William[1] Seavey. He, additionally, testified that widow Margaret Tucker in October, 1678 was at the house and begged that her grandchildren might stay there a few years after her death. Others said that the place was William[1] Berry's at one time and that Richard Tucker built it. Later Hodge is reported as kicking Rebecca[2] (Seavey) Shute, daughter of Thomas[1] Seavey and pushing the latter down.[10]

Incidents of the type included in the previous paragraph and elsewhere in this account are included, not because they are of great interest to us after over 300 years but, for several reasons. One is to show that people in the colonial period were much the same as they are today. Also, to show that they lived in a small world of a few people even though their principal source of income was the great expanse of ocean at their door. Then, too, Nicholas Hodge apparently just plain did not like the Seaveys for reasons that are not known.

Thomas died March 15, 1708[6] in Newcastle. As he lived in Rye which earlier was known as Little Harbor he must have been living with one of his children at the time of his death. We have no date of death for Tamsen but she made a deposition as late as 1711. There is also some question about the date and place of death of Thomas[1] Seavey as the same date and place is given for the death of another Thomas Seavey. If the date of birth that we have used is correct, and the date of death was 1708; he was eighty-one years of age when he died. Not many lived to that age at that time.

Thomas[1] Seavey, like his Uncle, William[1] Seavey, made a contribution to the early history of our country of which his descendants can be proud.

NOTES

1. *Genealogical and Personal Memoirs* by William Richard Cutter, A.M., Volume III, Lewis Historical Publishing Company, New York, 1908, page 1233.
2. *The Ancestry of Elisha Porter Seavey, 1838–1913* by James T.M. Seavey, M.A., L.L.M., S.J.D., 1958.
3. *Genealogical dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire*, by Noyes, Libby and Davis, pages 618 and 619.
4. Same as 3 above, but page 700.
5. *Marden Family Genealogy* by Sylvia Fitts Getchell, 1974.
6. *Rye Families—Seavey* a loose-leaf notebook that is one of a series in the Public Library of Rye, New Hampshire. Compiled by the Rye Historical Society, principally Mrs. Louise H. Tallman.
7. *Old Kittery and Her Families* by Stackpole, pages 40 and 41.
8. *Islands of Maine, Where America Really Began* by Bill Caldwell. Guy Gannett Publishing Co., Portland, Maine, 1981, pages 67 and 68.
9. Same as No. 3, but page 633.
10. Same as No. 3, but pages 341 and 633.
11. Same as No. 3, but page 520.

CHAPTER VI

Samuel[2] Seavey

Very little is known about Samuel[2] Seavey. William Richard Cutter[1] says that he was born in Rye, New Hampshire or vicinity about 1672. He also says that he was a farmer in the Rye area and gives as his children the following:

Thomas[3], settled in Portsmouth and married Mary _____.

Henry[3], settled in Portsmouth and married Mary _____.

Samuel[3], will be the subject of a later chapter.

This is also the list compiled by Harold L. Hanson of Kennebunkport, Maine, a Seavey descendant who has more Seavey information than anyone the writer has found to date. However, in some of his later work he calls attention to a possible fourth child, Mary, who is mentioned in the Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire.[2] Although the genealogy given in this book is hard to follow at times, it is the interpretation of the writer that they say that Samuel[2] Seavey had nine children. It is possible that they had Samuel[3] Seavey in mind when they mention nine children as he did have nine children. However, the compilers go on to mention three in addition to the three listed earlier in this chapter. They are: Mary (previously mentioned), Abagail and Hannah. Samuel[3] Seavey did have daughters with the names of Mary and Abagail, but none with the name of Hannah according to available data.

Since all that we know about Mary comes from the Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire, page 618, it will probably be best to quote it. "Mary daughter of Samuel accused Richard Swain in 1717 and perhaps married him." The account for Richard Swain on Pages 668 and 669 gives a qualified confirmation of this as follows: "Mary Seavey who accused him in 1717 was possibly the wife Mary who died before 10 Nov. 1728 when children John, Mary and Richard were baptized (South Church)." This Mary could not have been Mary the daughter of his son Samuel[3] as she was not born until 1721 and she married Joseph Connor June 25, 1738.[4] Additional information on this family has not been found.

In addition, there is this information about an Abagail Seavey[2].[3] Henry Paine, possibly the son of Henry Paine of Newcastle, where both were taxed in 1720, married Abagail Seavey in Greenland March 4, 1722. Here again, this would have to be Abagail the daughter of Samuel[2] and not Abagail the daughter of Samuel[3] as she was not born until 1723 and married Abraham Clifford in May of 1746. No other Abagail Seavey of an age to be

married has been found in the 1722 period.

Also this: ". . . . and Hannah, 2nd wife of William (8 Jr.) [our designation William[3], grandson of William[1] the emigrant who was an Uncle of Thomas[1]] who may not have been a widow Seavey when she married him." Evidently some records show the second wife as being a widow of a Seavey when she married William[3], but the compilers of the Genealogical dictionary think that she was a daughter of Samuel[2] Seavey. If so, and the Genealogical dictionary has an excellent record of accuracy for its genealogy, it is very interesting and is the only instance in this time period that the writer has found where descendants of William[1] and Thomas[1] married.

Henry[3] and Mary had a son Henry[4], who was baptized at home January 27, 1719 according to the records of the South Church of Portsmouth. It is believed that Henry[3] died before his son Henry[4] was baptized.

So far we have identified six children for Samuel[2] Seavey and presented some information on five of them. There will be a chapter on Samuel[3]. If there were really nine, the others could have died young, as was quite common in those days, or it could be that there are simply no identifiable records for them.

In 1713[2] a Samuel, Sr. and Samuel, Jr. subscribed for a Mr. Emerson—probably a minister, and the two Samuels were probably Samuel[2] and Samuel[3].

Mrs. Elton S. Perkins of Tamworth, N.H. a descendant of Thomas[1] Seavey, found copies of some very interesting deeds made by Samuel[2] and Samuel[3] at Exeter, N.H., the county seat of Rockingham County, N.H. Rye, Portsmouth and the other communities in the area are in Rockingham County. She has made copies of them available.

By means of one deed, Samuel[2] Seavey sold one half of six acres of salt and fresh marsh to Phillip Paine for eighteen pounds, current money. The date is May 6, 1713. While the copy of the original document is difficult to read Mrs. Perkins has supplied a typed copy prepared from the original in the record book and the essential information of the document is obtainable from it. Both are in appendix A.

There is no release from a wife of Samuel[2] nor any mention of a wife so his wife must not have been living at that time. The most important thing we learn from the document is definite, written, confirmation that Samuel[2] Seavey was a son of Thomas[1]. In describing the property, the deed says: ". . . and unto the one halfe of six acares of sault & fresh marsh be it more or less; as it was given once by deed of gift by my Father Thomas Seavey as by deed of gift on the Province records reference therfo being had will explain the separation my cousin Joseph Seavey having the other half." Thus we have definite confirmation of the relationship of Samuel[2] and Thomas[1] Seavey. The Joseph Seavey mentioned as a cousin could be, and probably was, Joseph[3] the son of his brother Henry[2], but he would really be a nephew and not a cousin. However, Thomas[1] in his deed of land to his son Benjamin[2] provided for the distribution of some of his land to Joseph[3], nephew of

Benjamin[2], as Henry[2], the brother of Thomas,[2] was not living at the time that the deed was made.

The deed of Samuel[2] goes on "It being butted . . . on the northerly side by Benj. Seavey land; . . ." This ties in with the deed mentioned above in which Thomas[1] made before his death through which he gave his land to his son Benjamin with instructions to divide it with his other living children and the heirs of some of his children that were no longer living.

The Phillip Paine who purchased the land from Samuel[2] cannot be definitely identified. He could not be a son of Abagail[3], daughter of Samuel[2], who married Henry Paine because they did not marry until March 4, 1722. Philip was probably the Philip Paine who bought land in the vicinity in 1712–13[5] as this period corresponds with that of the deed being considered. He might have been a brother of a relative of Henry Paine the father of the Henry who married Abagail Seavey in 1722. The account for Philip says that he was from Jersey with out specifying whether it was Jersey, England or New Jersey, but probably the first. He was a mariner and Henry was a fisherman. Philip was "sued in 1700 by Dr. Labourne who had cured his leg."[5]

The second document supplied by Mrs. Perkins is even more helpful. It is a deed made by Samuel[2] and found in Volume 23, page 85 at Exeter. The deed was made May 19, 1735, acknowledged May 24, 1735 and filed December 27, 1737. It seems logical to assume that Samuel[2] died a few days before December 27, 1737. In making this deed Samuel[2] followed his father, Thomas[1], when he deeded his estate to his son,, Benjamin[2], brother of Samuel.[2] It was apparently made in lieu of a will.

The document gives considerable interesting information. First, there is no mention of a wife so she probably was not living. As there was no release by a wife when the 1713 deed was made, she had probably been dead for some time. Samuel[2] by this deed gives his entire estate ". . . for & in consideration of natural love & affection that I have & do bear unto my beloved son Samuel Seavey, Jun. of ye same Parish & Pro. above, yoeman have given, grant. . ." see appendix A. Only Samuel[3] is mentioned so Samuel[2] had probably taken care of his other children or their heirs if they had died.

Starting at the bottom of the page on which the May 19, 1731 deed of Samuel[2] is recorded, there is a release from Richard Jeness and his wife Mary. Samuel[2] Seavey pays them eighty pounds for a tract of land adjoining land of Samuel[2] and containing twenty acres. He evidently wanted to increase the acerage of his land holdings before passing it on to his children.

This deed of gift gives us additional valuable information in that it establishes December of 1737 as the time of death of Samuel[2] Seavey. The date most frequently found is 1731, which has probably been taken from this document. However, 1735 appears twice in it and can readily be taken for 1731. The date of recording is ". . . ye 27th of Dec. 1737" and it is very clearly written. At this late date we cannot be sure that the date of "Record" of Dec. 27, 1737 is just after the death of Samuel[2]

Seavey but other events tend to confirm this.

On August 18, 1731 Samuel[2] Seavey caused a warrant to be served by the sheriff of Rockland County on his brother Benjamin[2] Seavey. In it he claims that Pounds was due him under the deed of gift made in 1708 when his father Thomas[1] Seavey gave his entire estate to Benjamin[2] with the stipulation that he share it with his siblings or their children if any should be deceased. This warrant again ties Samuel[2], Benjamin[2] and others to Thomas[1] and definite tracts of land. Either Benjamin[2] made a settlement satisfactory to Samuel[2] or the case was dismissed as no additional record has been found. However, Benjamin incurred costs of two pounds, one shilling and six pence. This probably indicates that he had to settle with Samuel[2]. Anyway, on October 27, 1731 he caused a court order to be issued to Samuel[2] in an effort to collect the amount of the costs of the earlier court action.

One interesting observation can be made. When Samuel[2] gave all of his estate to his son Samuel[3] he did not require that he share with his siblings or their descendants. He probably took care of them before giving Samuel[3] the deed-gift for the residue of his estate.

Records have been found that Samuel[2] Seavey was an active member of the community and worked with his neighbors on projects of general interest. For example, when the inhabitants of what is now Rye decided in 1721 that they should have self-governing community of their own,[6] he joined with them. The first settlement in the area, at the mouth of the Piscataqua River was in 1623 and was known as Pannaway. It was actually in what is now Rye. To the north and in the harbor was Great Island which was settled later and became known as Newcastle. Farther up the river and on its south or southwest bank is the area known as Strawberry Banke and it became Portsmouth in time. As the settlers moved down into the present Rye, they had farther and farther to go to their churches and the center of the community—up to six miles according to their first petition. Travel was made more difficult as they had to take a ferry to get to Newcastle or Portsmouth. The present Rye area, known originally as Sandy Beach and part as Little Harbor was first considered as part of Strawberry Bank or Portsmouth. When Newcastle was incorporated or set apart as a separate community, Sandy Beach with Little Harbor were included. The settlers still had their long distances and the ferry to get to their churches and their town.

The first petition for separation was filed in 1721. It is an interesting document not only for its quaint wording but for the reasons that they gave for their need for a community of their own. The petition is being quoted in full. Distance from the church and the necessity for the use of the ferry seem to be the principal concern of the petitioners.

It was in 1721 that the first move of the residents of Sandy Beach toward securing a separation of their district from Newcastle was made, a petition to that effect being presented to the provincial authorities that year. The petition and the signers thereof were as follows:

To his Excellency Samuel Shute Esq[r] Capt Gen[l] & Governor in chief in and over his Maj[ties]

Province of New Hampshire &c.—To the Hon[ble] the Council & House of Representatives. Now conven'd in Gen[l] Assembly in & in and for s[d] Province:

The humble Petition of Sundry the Inhabitants living about Sandy Beach, partly in New Castle, Hampton and Porstmouth humbly sheweth:

That Your Petitioners, the subscribers hereof, have for these many Years past lived under great inconveniencies as to their having the free benefit of the gospell, most of us Living at great Distances from our respective Meeting Houses, especially those belonging to New-Castle; for that besides the great distance *wee* live from thence, there is great Inconvenience of a Ferry, by the Reasons of which for neare half the yeare, Wee the Masters of families that are best able cannot but now and then attend upon the Publick worship of God (as in duty we are bound) and when we doe, It is many times late within Night e're wee can reach our habitations; And besides this great inconvenience to ourselves, there is a much greater happens to the greatest part of our families (viz) our Women and Children, Who can rarely attend at all or not above two or three times in the Yeare—and then but those that are grown to years; for our Younger children that should imbibe in the precepts of the gospell with their milk, Cannot attend until grown to some years; Wee having four, five & some more than six miles besides the Ferry; And we can now count amongst us above two hundred and forty souls and not one third Capeable to attend as wee are now circumstanced; And we think ourselves Capeable to maintain a Minister of the Gospel, and to give a Competent Liveing, as our neighboring Pa'shes & precincts do:—

Therefore wee, Your humble Petitioners prays that we may be set off a p'ticular precinct (from Mr William Seaveys and West ward by the Sea-side as far towards Hampton as the little Boars head or Little River, And back into the Country about three miles & a halfe or soe far as in Your wisdom shall see meet) and that we may be impowered to make and raise all our own taxes & gather them; So prays Your humble Petitioners:

John Locke	Samuel Rand
William Wallis	Samuel Brackett
John Brackett	Joseph Seavey
Thomas Rand	Francis Locke
Joshua Foss	John Knowles
Edward Locke	John Jennes
Benjamin Sevey	Richard Jannes
Willial Lock	Nathaniel Rand
Nicolas Hodge	William Sevey Jun
James Fowler	Thomas Rand
Samuel Seavey	Benjamin Seavy Jun
Joseph Brown	Moses Seavey
Stephen Beary	William Marden
Thos Jennes	Nemiah Beary
Samuel Seavy	Nathaniel Beary
Joseph Locke	William Beary
Samuel Wallis	Samuel Beary
Samuel Locke	Samuel Dovost
Isack Libe	James Marden
Jacob Libe	Richard Goss
James Locke	Ebenezer Berry
John Garland	Jethro Locke
Ebenezer Philbrick	Hezekia Jennes
William Seavey	Chris : Palmer
James Seavey	John Locke Jr
Phillip Pain	Samuel Dovst (Dowst)

This petition proved ineffective, and the Sandy Beach people continued to suffer through being a long way from any church, and separated by an arm of the sea from the one at Newcastle; and in 1724 another petition was drawn up and presented as follows:

The petition states that ". . . we can now count amongst us above two hundred and forty souls. . . ." there were fifty-two signers of the petition and nine had the name Seavey. Samuel[2], who was then about forty-nine years of age, and Samuel[3], his

son who was thirty-one years of age were signers. Other descendants of Thomas[1] signed as did descendants of William[1] Seavey.

The governor, the council and the House of Representatives refused to grant the petition. It was not until 1726 after three more petitions were presented that there was favorable action, but then they were granted only a part of their request. It was not until after the Revolutionary War that Rye became a completely independent town. The total number of signers for the later petitions were sixty-three, sixty-four and fifty nine. Signers with the name Seavey were nine, five and six. Samuel[2] and Samuel[3] signed in each case except for the first 1725 petition only Samuel[2] is listed.

William[2] Seavey, son of William[1] was a selectman for Rye the first year of its existence as a separate entity. Samuel[2] lived to see his son Samuel[3] elected a selectman in 1730.

Parson's History of Rye[7] has a few tables showing taxes paid both before and after Rye became a separate community. The tax list of 1701 for Newcastle includes Samuel[2] Seavey as does the one for 1724. In 1728 there were two tax lists, one for Rye and a second for Province Taxes. The listing for Province taxes are Samuel and son, presumably Samuel[2] and Samuel[3]. The same is the case for Parish taxes.

There are several pages in Parson's History of Rye[8] with the heading "SOME STORIES." One of them concerns Samuel[2] Seavey.

> During Walter Barefoots' administration in 1684, the governor on a certain occasion struck Samuel Seavey, and someone remarked that it was well for the governor that Seavey's mother was not there, for if she had been there would have been bloody work for him. Samuel's mother must therefore have been, if not a virago a pretty spunky damsel. [at that time Tamsen Seavey was forty-three years of age.]

While we are still without a name for the wife of Samuel[2] we do have his date of death within a few days and know that he left all of his property that he had as of 1737 to his son Samuel[3]. As shall be seen in the next chapter, Samuel[3] was a wealthy man for his time when he died.

NOTES

1. *Genealogical and Personal memoirs, Relating to the Families of Boston and Eastern Massachusetts* by William Richard Cutter, A.M., Vol. III, page 1233.
2. *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire* by Noyes, Libby and Davis, page 618.
3. Ibid. except page 523.
4. Ibid. but page 160.
5. Ibid. but page 524.
6. *History of Rye* N.H. by Laugdon B. Parsons, pages 20–37 inclusive.
7. Ibid. but pages 134–148 inclusive.
8. Ibid. but page 225.

CHAPTER VII

Berry

As we have the name of the wife of Samuel[3] Seavey who is next in the direct, Seavey line, we will pick up the line of this wife before going ahead.

Samuel[3] Seavey married Abagail[3] Foss. She was the great granddaughter of William[1] Berry and his wife Jane (Hermins) Berry, the granddaughter of John[1] Foss whose wife was Mary[2] Berry and the daughter of John[2] Foss. There is, however, some question as to whether she was the daughter of the first or second wife of John[2] Foss.

William[1] Berry arrived at the Piscataqua settlement in 1631 as one of the settlers sent over by Captain John Mason.[1] He is on the famous list: "The Names of Stewards and Servants sent by John Mason, Esq. into the Province of New Hampshire." The fact that William[1] Berry was sent over by Mason has not been contested by anyone as far as the author of this account knows. However, we must allow that he may have come over several years before 1631 or even a little later. As has been mentioned in earlier chapters, the list was produced many years after 1631 to justify claims in litigation by the heirs of Captain John. It has been established that not all eighty of those mentioned on the list were sent over by Mason, that not all arrived at the same time and that there were other early settlers, some probably sent by Mason, who are not on the list. Regardless, there seems to be little doubt that William[1] Berry arrived in 1631 or about that time and that he was sent by Mason.

William[1] Berry is believed to have come from Norfolk in the east of England, north of London.[1] However, John Robert Locke of San Andreas, Calif., a Berry descendant, is of the opinion that he came from Yorkshire. Captain John Mason also came from Norfolk county or shire according to Mr. Cutter.[1] We do not have a date of birth for William[1]. He died in 1654. Several accounts speculate that he died suddenly as he did not leave a will and he

A house designated by the Rye Historical Society as the William Berry Home dating back to 1700.

left several transactions incomplete. It is not known whether he was drowned or was killed by Indians or died of natural causes.

During the few years, only twenty-three if we accept 1631 as the year of his arrival in America, William[1] Berry was a busy man. He evidently had lived at Strawberry Banke, now Portsmouth, at an early date. In a deposition given in 1686, his widow Jane deposed that they were living here before Francis Williams, the governor, came. This could have been as early as 1636 for Williams received his grant of 6000 acres of land in the area in 1635 and brought with him eleven persons. The Genealogical Dictionary[2] mentions land that William Berry owned in Strawberry Banke as early as 1645. This adjoined the land of Turpin and Cummings. He sold this land July 10, 1648 to Anthony Ellins. In Parsons[10] we find this: "January 1649 at a town meeting held at Strawberry Banke 'Granted that William Berry shall have a lot upon the neck of land on the south side of the Little River at Sandy Beach." This is the land that he later sold to William[1] Seavey, probably in 1652 when he received a grant for forty acres of land in what is now Rye, New Hampshire. The land of the original 1649 grant was on the south side of a creek that became known as Seavey Creek. The portion of this creek above tide water came to be known as Berry Creek.

As has been mentioned elsewhere William[1] Seavey paid for the land sold him, but William[1] Berry did not give him a deed for it before he died in 1654. The formal deed was granted by Jane Hermins Berry in 1669[3] after she was married to Nathaniel Drake. Several accounts say that this was the first deed given for the transfer of property in Rye, New Hampshire.

William[1] Berry was selectman for Strawberry Banke in 1646[2] and constable for the lower part of the settlement in 1650. He also served on the grand jury that year.

Jane Hermins Berry was appointed administrator for the estate of her husband June 28, 1654.[3]

The forty acre tract in Rye granted in 1652 was the home of William[1] Berry until his death and for some of his children and grandchildren until divided in 1719.

The wife of William[1] Berry was Jane Hermins. The spelling differs slightly from that by William Richard Cutter[1] and also on the William[1] Berry family sheet on file in the Rye Public Library.[3] The William[1] Berry account in the Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire does not give the name of a wife for him. Cutter[1] says that John[2] a son of William[1] and Jane Hermins Berry was born in England in 1630. If so, this means that they were married in England. However, this is probably not true, certainly at this early date. In 1686, Jane (Hermins) (Berry) Drake in a deposition gave her age as 67 so by her own statement she was born in 1619. If she had had a son in 1630, she would have been only eleven years of age. John[2] Berry in a deposition given in 1680 gave his age as 43 so he, by his own statement, was born in 1637.

The data sheet on William[1] Berry in the public library in Rye gives 1636 as the date of marriage of William[2] and Jane

Hermins and the place of the marriage as Porstmouth, England. The source for this is not identified, but as it is handwritten on a sheet that is typed, and the handwriting is the same as the listing in the Locke Newsletter as a source of information, it probably comes from it. It is possible, and even quite probable, that they were married in England. Ships were going back and forth all of the time, and in 1636 there were not many young unmarried women in the area. She could have been one of the twenty-two women that Captain John Mason is supposed to have brought over, but in searching for material for this account, no information has been found as to what happened to any of these women.

James Savage[6] in his book says that a William Berry was in Newbury, Massachusetts in 1635. A history of Newbury[5] places him there in the general period of 1636 to 1642. Newbury is only about twenty miles from Porstmouth-Rye area. It could be that William[1] Berry found Jane Hermins there and married her.

We do know, however, that William[1] Berry was back in Strawberry Banke or Porstmouth on the Piscataqua on May 25, 1640. On that date[9] he was one of twenty signers of a "Grant of the Glebe by the inhabitants of the lower end of the Poscataqualk." The other signers were: Francis Williams, Governor; Ambrose Gibbons, Assistant Governor; William Jones; Renald Fernald; John Crowther; Anthony Bracket; Michael Chatterton; Jno. Wall; Robert Buddington; Mathew Cole; Henry Sherburne; John Lander; Henry Tuler; Jno. Jones; Jno. Pickering; Jno. Billing; Jno. Walton; Nicholos Row and William Palmer. The names of several of these appear elsewhere in this account. The fifty acres of Glebe land was in two parcels, one in the town and the other just outside of it. The records that have been preserved disclose that a chapel and a parsonage had already been built on one of the sites by the signers of the grant and others. The grant was to Henry Sherburne and Thomas Walford as wardens and their successors forever.

Although it is a digression some additional information from *Annals of Portsmouth* will be quoted:

> The chapel was furnished with one great bible, twelve service books, one pewter flagon, one communion cup and cover of silver, two fine tablecloths and two napkins, which had been sent over by Mason. The people were not puritanical in their religious sentiments but retained their attachment to the Church of England. . . . They made choice of Richard Gibson, an Episcopal clergyman, for their first parson and their worship was conducted agreeably to the ritual of the English Church.

No information has been found as to what William[1] Berry did for a living. However, he seems to have prospered and had no trouble obtaining land grants. He was certainly an accepted member of the community or he would not have been included in the group that signed the glebe compact in 1640. His service as a selectman and or a constable also gives some indication of his standing in the community.

Jane Hermins Berry married Nathaniel[2] Drake, son of Robert[1] some time before

the deed was granted to William[1] Seavey December 6, 1670. He signed the deed along with his wife and her children. A date of death for Jane Hermins (Berry) has not been found nor is there any record of any children of her second marriage. She was only thirty-five years of age when William[1] Berry died if we accept 1619 as the date for her birth.

William[1] and Jane Hermins Berry are genrally credited with seven children. The information available about them follows. It comes from the sources listed in the notes for this chapter. As usual for a very early period, some essential information is missing and some that is available is conflicting. Their children were:

John[2], b. 1637, m. Susannah—, (est. 1658), living at Sandy Beach (Rye) 1703, d. before 1717. Children: John, b. Jan. 14, 1660, m. Mary Souther (da. of John of Hampton); William, b. 1663, m. Dec 19, 1689 Sabrina Lock (born on the Ocean), she m. 2nd Dec. 8, 1710 Abraham Lewis and 3rd March 7, 1717 John Philbrick and d. 1761 at age of 95; and Hannah, m. 1699 Daniel Allen.

Joseph[2], b. about 1639, m. Rachel—, d. before 1717. Five children by Rachel: Nathaniel, m. Elizabeth Philbrook; Rachel, m. Abraham Lewis; Jane m. Jan. 5, 1693 Robert Goss; Deliverance, m. Feb. 14 1698 Richard Pomeroy; and Joseph. By Mary seven children but only Elisha, Joseph and Thomas are named.[2]

Elizabeth[2], m. Cap't. John Locke, settler, about 1652. Living in 1708.

Mary[2], b. probably 1641.[8] m. John Foss. The next chapter is devoted to John and Mary (Berry) Foss.

James[2] b. 1650,[8] m. Eleanor Wallis (da. of George). Children: George, b. 1674, m. Deliverance Haley (da. of Andrew); James, b. 1676, m. July 4, 1700 Eleanor Jenness (da. of Francis); Samuel, m. Abagail (Webster) Marden (widow of James); Ebenezer, m. 1st Sept. 14, 1714, Keziah Knowles and 2nd Nov. 14, 1727, Mary Kingman (widow); Rachel, m. 1st Richard Goss, of Rye, 2nd Job Chapman. d. 1798 at age 97.

Rachel[2], b. 1648,[8] m. John Marden about 1666.[8] Seven children. A daughter m. possibly John Conner; James; Thomas; John; William; Elizabeth m. Nathaniel Brand and Mary m. William Jones.

William[2], d. before 1708, m. Judith Locke (sister of John who m. his older sister Elizabeth.) July 8, 1678, children: Elizabeth b. Oct. 15, 1686, m. July 24, 1705 Christopher Palmer; Nathaniel, b. Feb. 13, 1689, m. Esther Wallis; Stephen b. Jan. 18, 1691, m. Jan. 4, 1716 Anna Philbrook (da. of Thomas); William, b. Nov. 18, 1693, m. Dec. 21, 1721 Sara Lane (da. of William). He died Oct. 8, 1786 and she died Jan. 3, 1776; Jeremiah, b. Mar. 8, 1696, killed by fall from tree May 8, 1719; Frederica, b. Jan. 15, 1698, m. 1st Samuel Huggins and 2nd Philip Bahb, Jr.; Abagail, b. Mar. 15, 1700 and Jene, b. Jan. 26, 1702. Judith Locke Berry, m. 2nd in 1708 Nathaniel Huggins.

The information about the Berry children and grandchildren has been obtained from the *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire*, the William[1] Berry family sheet in the Rye Public Library and the *Marden Family Genealogy* by Getchell and the *Berrys by the Beach* by the same author.

The next chapter will be devoted to Mary[2] Berry who married John[1] Foss. They are the seventh great-grandparents of Fannie C. Harrison. The parents of Mary[1] Berry are, therefore, the eighth great grandparents.

Mrs. Sylvia Fitts Getchell of Newmarket, New Hampshire who is a descendant of Rachel[2] Berry and John Marden has written a very unusual account of Rachel[2]

Berry Marden and her family. Although written primarily for children of elementary school age it is sound genealogically. It is illustrated with her own drawings. With her permission a portion of the booklet is reproduced in Appendix B. Her direct ancestor, Rachel, is the principal character in the story. The older sister, Mary, who is mentioned is the direct ancestor of Fannie C. Harrison. The Seaveys mentioned are William[1] and Thomas[1], the latter being another direct ancestor of Fannie C. Harrison.

At least one very old Berry home is standing and is still a beautiful place. The story of it is not known, but the author took the photograph used in this chapter in August of 1982.

NOTES

1. *Genealogical and Personal Memoirs Relating to the Families of Boston and Eastern Massachusetts* by William Richard Cutter. Lewis National Publishing Company, New York, 1908, Vol. III, page 944.
2. *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire* by Noyes, Libby and Davis, page 90.
3. *Marden Family Genealogy* by Sylvia Fitts Getchell, 1974, pages 12, 13, 15, 16, 18, 22, 23, and 24.
4. *Rye Families—Strawberry Banke*, a collection of loose leaf notebooks in the Rye Public Libraries with the genealogy of the early families of Rye compiled by the Historical Society of Rye, probably Mrs. Louise H. Tallman collected most of the information. Sources of information given are: *History of Rye, N.H.* by Parsons, *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire* by Noyes, Libby and Davis and *Locke Newsletter*, Fall 1981, research, Salt Lake City. The author used the first two of these sources, but not the last. In addition, he used the five other sources listed in the notes for this chapter.
5. *A Sketch of the History of Newbury, Newburyport and West Newbury* by J. Coffin Randall, 1977 (1845), page 292.
6. *A Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England* by James Savage, Vol. I, pages 170 and 171.
7. *The Berrys by the Beach*, One of New Hampshire's First Families by Sylvia Fitts Getchell, page 30.
8. Ibid. but page 3.
9. *History of New Hampshire*, Volume I, by Everett Stackpole, page 30. Also, *Annals of Porstmouth* by Nathaniel Adams, pages 26 and 27.
10. *History of Rye, New Hampshire* by Langdon B. Parsons 1905, p. 296.

CHAPTER VIII

Foss

The connecting line of Foss is one of the most interesting lines found in searching out the genealogy of the Seavey family. This chapter will furnish the best information that has been found to date. In addition, there will be included a partial account of how some of it has been obtained, along with some of the incorrect and false information encountered in the course of searching. Some of it appears to have been deliberate fabrications.

Several sources of Seavey family information gave the wife of Samuel[3] Seavey (Samuel[2] Thomas[1]) as Abagail Foss. At this point the search was directed to the Foss family and some information was found in the Library of Historical Society of New Hampshire in Concord, N.H. To find all of this information so quickly seemed to be too good to be true. Time proved this to be the case, but one letter that was filed with this material so that anyone searching for Foss family information would find it, proved to be the key that made possible the final reasonably complete and true account that is presented in this chapter.

The first discovery was a poorly organized, typed manuscript entitled: *History and Genealogy of the Foss Family of America* by Guy Scoby Rix of Concord, N.H. It had a date of January 1917. A quick check indicated that it was most interesting and probably a complete answer to the quest for information on the early generations of the Foss family. It picked up the line in Denmark, told of a Norway origin for the family and carried it to England, then to this country at a very early date and on down to Abagail Foss and even later generations.

The Rix account was found to be full of errors and some parts seem to be deliberate fabrications to make a good story. In spite of this, some information concerning it will be given because it is interesting, even though not true. Additionally, it shows the problems that are encountered from time-to-time when seeking to put together a family history. Excerpts from the Rix account follow:

A very old Foss home on Washington Road. Although partially destroyed by fire recently the present owners have restored it.

The compiler had searched the world to learn the ancestors and birthplace of John Foss, the immigrant, and from a correspondent in St. Croix, Danish West Indies Islands, he received information that if he would write to the secretary of the Genealogical Institute of Copenhagen, Denmark, he would probably obtain the information required, and in reply the following, which establishes without a doubt, together with what Jacob Daniel Foss said to his son Charles A. Foss in a letter of 1850, the parentage of John Foss.

Translated from the Danish language for this work.

The Foss family belonged to the Norwegian nobility.

The first one of the name coming to Denmark, was David Lauritzon Foss, who was born in Norway in 1604. He married September 10, 1637 Auna Jensdatter Hundevad, born February 16, 1620, daughter of Jens Sorensen and Catherine (Hansdater) Hundevard. He settled in Ribe, Denmark where he died August 21, 1659. His wife died September 18, 1684. He was a student at Steffing in 1625, and at Helmstadt in 1628, and at Kjobenhaun in 1634, Rector at Kolding 1636 to 1639, pastor 1648 of St. Catherines Church in Ribe, and later provost, equivalent of a bishop.

Children—All born in Ribe, Denmark

1. Karine, b. July 23, 1638; d. at Pest June 30, 1659.

Washington Road looking toward the Atlantic. The Foss Cemetery is on the left just before the area of the picture which was taken in 1900.

Old Foss Cemetery on Washington Road looking southeast toward the Atlantic.

2. Johan (John), b. July 23, 1638. Twin of Karine. He went to England and from thence came to New England.

3. Lawritz, b. Oct. 27, 1639; d. July 15, 1640.

4. Agatha, b. April 9, 1641; m. Archer Morgensen.

5. Magdalena, b. August 9, 1642; m. Jorgen Laritsen Fog.

6. Lawritz Davidsen, b. August 14, 1643. He was the ancestor of the St. Croix correspondent. Some of his descendants are in Richmond, Virginia and North Carolina today.

7. Jens, b. February 11, 1645; d. 1661.

8. Anthonius, b. March 1, 1646; m. Margrete Lange. She died November 5, 1675. He died April 29, 1696. He had one son, name not given.

9. Peder (Peter), b. August 31, 1647. He went to England with his brother John and remained there, and has descendants there to this day.

10. Inger, b._____ (date not given).

Johan (John) Foss, son of Laurity Davidson Foss was born in Rebe, Denmark, July 23, 1638. He went to England with his brother Peder and from there came to New England.

Foss Beach.

> A tradition exists that he came to Boston in a British war vessel, landed in Boston by jumping overboard, swimming ashore, escaping further service.
>
> He lived for a short time at a place called Ried's Temple, near Boston . . . He married first Mary Chadbourn, born in Boston in 1644, daughter of William and Mary Chadbourn.

The account goes on to tell something of the Chadbourns who were very early arrivals in the Portsmouth area. It also lists thirteen children for John[1] and Mary (Chadbourn) Foss. Some were actually children of John[1] Foss and the woman that he did marry. Others were children of a man whom Rix confused with John[1] Foss.

Before the two major flaws in the Rix account were cleared there were two incidents of interest. While they are not a part of the history of the family lines being told, they do seem to warrant being included in this account.

In searching for information to expand on the Chadbourn connection, my wife and I went to the library of the Strawberry Banke (Portsmouth) Restoration. The acting librarian, Nicole Osborne, who by her own statement, was not a librarian, welcomed us warmly and took us back into an improvised office-work area. Although their collection of old books lacked the usual type of library index system, she took an interest in our problem and worked diligently to find something for us. After a few hours, we left for lunch at a nearby restaurant in the Restoration area. When we returned after lunch, at her request, we found her holding in her office a woman who was a direct desdendant of William Chadbourn, emigrant of the line and the father of Mary, who, as far as we knew at the time, had married John[1] Foss. She was the retired postmaster of a small village in Maine. With her there was her daughter who was also a retired business woman, and a granddaughter. They, also, were seeking Chadbourne information and Nicole held them for our return. All three were attractive and interesting people. We would have been pleased to have them as kinfolks, and Nicole Osborne was very much pleased that she had been able to bring us together.

The other coincidence occurred several years later, but before the Danish-Norwegian connection of John[1] Foss had been discovered to be pure fiction.

In the winter 1980–81, our daughter Delia Ann Granger (Mrs. Edward B.) had an A.F.S. (American Foreign Service) student living with her. She was from Tampere, Finland and her name was Minnalisa Tasanen. On a winter afternoon she and another A.F.S. student, who was living with a family in Ohio but was visiting her for the weekend, took a long walk through the fields and woods of our place and then stopped at

the house for a visit. He was from New Zealand, a handsome young fellow and an excellent conversationalist. As we had visited New Zealand a few years earlier, liked it very much and had visited many of the cities and towns including his hometown, we had a good, long talk. As he left we asked that he write down his name and home address in New Zealand. When we noticed that his family name was Foss, we immediately started to question him about his family. Unlike youngsters of his age in this country, he knew something about his family. Several generations back he thought that they had come from Denmark and before that from Norway. He said that Peter was a name that was frequently used in the family and he was quite certain that the ancestor who had come to England from Denmark was Peter Foss. Family charts mailed after he returned to Ohio tended to confirm this although they did not go all the way back to a Peter who came to England from Denmark. A more complete genealogy that Craig Foss offered to send upon his return to New Zealand has not yet been received.

An interesting observation can be added to this unusual discovery. Craig was obviously very fond of Minnalisa, the very attractive and interesting young blonde from Finland, but she did not seem to respond to the same degree. At the time we thought that the romance of a boy from New Zealand with a blonde from Finland, two countries that are about as far apart as any two countries on this earth can be, was interesting. However, with a little more thought, we realized that as far as origins are concerned they did not start out so far apart even though the people of Norway and those of Finland are entirely different ethnically.

Now we know that John Foss did not come from Denmark. However, it is the present belief that his family was from Yorkshire or Norfolk, England. Many of the old families in that area are descendants of Viking raiders from Norway and Denmark that came to England over a period of many years, married and remained there. So maybe there was some affinity going back hundreds of years.

When the Rix account was studied closely, it did not seem to fit together properly. An appeal to John Robert Locke of San Andreas, California, whose letter of May 31, 1981 was the one filed in the library of the New Hampshire Historical Society with the Rix account, brought a prompt and most helpful reply. He is a descendant of Capt. John Locke, one of the very earliest settlers in the Portsmouth-Piscataqua area. Also, he is a descendant of the Berry, Foss, Marden and other families that arrived in the area in the very beginning of the period of settlement. His family for generations has accumulated information on their family lines. He is an eighth generation descendant of John[1] Foss, a seventh generation descendant of two of his sons, Samuel[2] and Joshua[2], since the wife of John[1] Foss was Mary[2] Berry, he is a ninth generation descendant of her father, William[1] Berry.

Mr. Locke explained that Guy Scoby Rix, in preparing his account confused John[1] Foss with a John Fost of Dover, N.H. He went on to explain that John[1] Foss, soon after his arrival married Mary[2] Berry, daughter of William[1] Berry of Rye, N.H.

There will be more about that later. As a result of this new and substantiated data, we lost the Chadbourn connection to our regret. However, it was soon realized that we had a most acceptable substitute in the Berry line.

In the summer of 1985, the first draft of this chapter on the Foss line was prepared. It was re-written in early 1986 to include additional information. Then in February of 1986, a two page type-written lettr plus a two page typed bulletin was received from J. Robert Locke. In a few paragraphs he completely discredits the Danish-Norwegian connection for John[1] Foss. The following are from his letter and bulletin:

> My brother, Dick and his wife, went over to Denmark last year to visit an old Army friend of WW II, who happens to be genealogically minded, as well as superintendent of schools in Ribe, Denmark. They, together, researched the whole story and found that Guy Scoby Rix was up to his old tricks again. There never was any John Foss who was a son of David Lorityen Foss of Ribe, Denmark! Rix substituted the name of John, using the same birth date for him as for Karine (daughter of David L. foss) 23 July 1638. It so happens that Karine and Inger Foss were twins so Rix just slipped the name of John into the family in the place of Inger. He also said that John went to England with his brother Peter—the fact is that Peter never left Denmark. I now have a complete list of all of the offspring of David L. Foss, who was the first assistant pastor of St. Catherine's Church, later pastor, and all the children are correctly accounted for. Not only that, I have an 8 × 10 [inch] photograph of the family tomb within the church, which has the family history on the face of it, written by Rev. David prior to his death. I had it translated by a friend here in San Andreas, who is a native Dane and a student of early Danish language. There is no John anywhere on it.

This effectively discredits the claimed Danish-Norwegian origin of John Foss, the emigrant. Mr. Locke in his letter goes on to say that he has in his files two letters from the Dansk Genealogisk Institut confirming that the claims made by Rix are false.

The Danish-Norwegian origin of the emigrant John Foss made a good story. It is unfortunate that it is not true. Incidentally, the fabrication of a family line to suit the desires of a researcher is not uncommon. Such a deliberate fabrication was found in the Harrison line of the author. It seems to have been deliberate. Fortunately, it was easy to discredit, but, unfortunately, an old bible in which it was entered has been lost. With it there was supposed to have been a copy of the bill of sale given at the time of purchase. With this as a starting point, the story of one of the mysterious early members of the family in this country might have been put together.

But to return to the Foss family. What we have left is a caulker who went overboard from a ship of the Royal Navy at night in Boston Harbor. For this there is substantiation. The story of the departure of John[1] Foss from the British warship and his arrival in Rye, N.H. was told in writing in 1854 by Jacob[5] D. Foss who was a grandson of Joshua[3] Foss who in turn was a grandson of John[1] Foss.[1] This letter was written to be read at the celebration of the 102nd birthday of Lydia (Foss) Locke

who was the widow of Simon Locke. She may have been the daughter of Joshua[3] Foss whose wife was Lydia Rand. They had eight children.

As mentioned earlier, John[1] Foss may have come from Yorkshire, England. In a letter dated March, 1986, John Robert Locke of San Andreas, Calif. supplies this information:

> I recently came across the location in Scotland from whence the Locke (Loch) family originated back in the 1200's. It is Roxburgh County on the English border where the River Tweed enters the North Sea. Family tradition has it that the Lochs migrated south to Yorkshire about 1248, and spread from there to other locations. Tradition also says that Thomas and Christina (French) Locke came from Yorkshire to London shortly after 1600 and their sons, John and Nathaniel born 1627 and 1629, migrated to America from there.
>
> Also, William Berry of Sandy Beach or Rye as did his wife Jane Hermines. Nathaniel Locke's wife was Judith Hermines, a niece of Jane Hermines Berry.
>
> I am coming to believe that John[1] Foss may have been another Yorkshireman. He lost no time getting north from Boston to marry Mary Berry when he jumped ship way back then.

But we are getting ahead of our story. John[1] Foss evidently was not apprehended when he jumped ship in Boston Harbor. He seems to have made his way north along the shore, probably traveling by night. In time, he arrived in the Rye, New Hampshire area—a distance of a little over fifty miles. According to tradition he stopped at the house of William[1] Berry where he was given shelter or work or both. The date of his arrival there is not known but it was probably after the death of William[1] Berry, most likely about 1658 or 1659. At that time he would have been twenty or twenty-one years of age. The widow of William[1] Berry probably had only a few of her younger children living at home with her and needed a man to help with the work. The older children, two boys and Elizabeth, were probably married and had left home. John[1] Foss seems to have fitted into the family for he remained with them. Although we do not have a date it was not long before John Foss and Mary Berry were married. The date was probably in late 1658 or in 1659. Their first child, John[2], was in 1659 or 1660.

John[1] Foss soon started to make a place for himself in the community. He appears in the records in connection with the division of some land in 1661 with 1667 records.[2] This was probably Berry land and he was acting on behalf of his wife. In 1668, he bought John Warren's stake in the Shrewsbury Patent[2] and in 1675 defended it in a suit against Richard Morgan. In 1675, 1678, 1681 and 1692 John[1] Foss served on the grand jury.[2] And in 1694–98 there is a record that he was an innkeeper. Also John[1] was a selectman in 1698.

According to the *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire*[2] John and Mary (Berry) Foss raised twelve children but the author was able to find only ten. A family group record from J. Robert Locke of San Andreas, California who is a descendant of the William[1] Berry and John[1] Locke and has studied the Foss family, lists eleven children. They are:

1. John[2], b. 1660; m. 1st Mary_____, 2nd Susannah_____.

2. Elisabeth, b. 1666; m. Nathaniel Batchelder.
3. Samuel[2], m. Mary Hinkson by December 1693.
4. Martha[2], m. Richard Goss by December 1693.
5. Thomas[2], m. Abagail Cole, February 2, 1696.
6. William[2], m. Sarah Boswell, November 29, 1700.
7. Joshua[2], m. Sara Wallis.
8. Zachariah[2], m. Joanna_____.
9. Hannah[2], m. John Jenness, June 25, 1702.
10. Richard[2], m. Sarah_____.
11. Nathan[2].

The dates of death for John Foss and his wife Mary Berry Foss are not known. However, John[1] did make a deed-will[2] September 13, 1710. In it he mentioned by name only his sons John, Joshua and Zachariah. It is quite possible that his wife, Mary, was not living at the time. However, some or even most of, the other children were living and John[1] had made gifts to them or had instructed the sons mentioned in the deed-will to make payments to them.

John[2] Foss was born 1660 if we can accept his statement in a deposition that he was sixty-nine in 1729.[2] He served on juries in Greenland, New Hampshire, in 1694, 1697 and 1702. According to the Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire[2] he died in Greenland in 1752 at the age of ninety-five. This does not check out with a birth date of 1660 but a variation of a year or so is quite common where dates are reckoned from ages given at the time of a deposition.

It seems that John[2] was married twice. His first wife was Mary Thadburn. Unfortunately, I failed to record the source of the marriage record giving the name of Mary Thadburn but it was probably a Greenland Church record. By 1719, John[2] Foss had a second wife Susannah but her family name is not known. Susannah was a member of the Greenland Church before 1712. There are seven known children but as there are no recorded birth dates and only two baptismal dates it is difficult to allot the children to the two wives. The children are as follows:[2-3]

1. Josiah, bapt. Nov. 13, 1709; m. April 19, 1733, Elizabeth Weeks. They had eight children.
2. Mercy, bapt. 1713; m. March 2, 1732, James Locke.
3. Joseph, m. Oct. 23, 1750. Abagail Tibbetts in Scarborough, Maine. He died before May 30, 1754.
4. Thomas.
5. Abagail, m. Samuel[3] Seavey, Oct. 25, 1711.[2]
6. Mary, m. John Rackley, Jan. 10, 1714.
7. Susannah, m. Joseph Grant, Nov. 20, 1723.

From the few dates above it appears that Josiah, Mercy, Abagail and Mary might be the children of Mary (Thadburn) Foss. This would leave Joseph and Susannah as children of Susannah Foss. And there is no basis for even a guess about Thomas.

One quaint record[4] deserves to be recorded here. On March 13, 1694, John[1] Foss was alloted a seat in the meeting house in Portsmouth. There was also this "The room over the women's stairs is for ye persons undernamed to set, viz: John Foss, Sr. and wife." Nathaniel[3] Berry also had a seat in this section. He was a first cousin of John[2] Foss.

John[2] Foss, according to available records,[2] spent most of his life in Greenland, New Hampshire. He served on juries there in 1694, 1697, and 1702. Really, we know very little about him.

Earlier in the chapter mention was made that John[1] Foss was an "innholder" in the 1694–1698 period. Two accounts have been found in connection with Foss run inns that deserve mention. The first one probably is about the inn of John[1] Foss but it could be about the inn run by his son Zachariah or grandson Zacharias at a later date. The second account is definitely about Zachariah, the grandson and his inn.

In *Rambles About Portsmouth*[5] there is the following:

> We since learn that a century ago, when there were but a few families beyond where the North Mill bridge now is, there were several who were strict adherents of Puritan principles, while others were more loose in their habits and sometimes might be found late at night at the Foss Tavern enjoying their flip, and cracking jokes. When the hour for parting arrived, "Well we must leave for Christian Shore" was frequently the jocose remark; and from it that part of Portsmouth took its name. In the town books, that part of town 200 years ago was designated as ". . . the land on the other side of Strawberry Creek."

The second item about a Foss Tavern is in the book, "*They Came to Fish.*"[6] The sub-title reads "*A Brief Look at Portsmouth's 350 years of History . . . Through the Eyes of a Reporter.*"

> Col. Zachariah Foss was described as an innholder as early as 1759. The site where he kept his tavern is now occupied by the Franklin Block. Earlier in life Foss apparently followed the sea because in 1772 he was voted 15 pounds by the Assembly for his services as pilot of the sloop Abagail in the 1744 expedition against Louisburg. Foss married Sarah Waterhouse, daughter of the family with extensive land at what is now Freeman's Point. Foss at one time was so far down on his financial luck that hs wife sold some cloth and with the money started a small place of refreshment. From that tiny start they expanded into one of the town's biggest taverns. One of the daughters married Captain John Cochran, the defender of Fort William and Mary [at the entrance to the harbor of Portsmouth]; from still another came down the Dennett family which is still with us. Another daughter, Margaret, became the wife of Captain David Cullam. Cullam's first wife, a Miss Currier, died in August of 1774 and, even though he had a young daughter, William gave up housekeeping and moved into the Foss Tavern. There he met Margaret and married her. He [Cullam] served under John Paul Jones and made a fortune in prize money. His daughter was brought up by the Daniel Ridge family when too many observed the abuse of her by her stepmother.

From another source we learn that Captain Cochran, who married one of the daughters, decided to cast his lot with England. When hostilities started he moved to St. Johns, New Brunswick, Canada and spent the rest of his life there.

No attempt will be made to follow the various Foss lines. They had large families. Parson's *History of Rye* has 240 Foss names in the index. However, in searching for information I did notice that many of the descendants of John[1] Foss did make out well in life. An engraving of one early Foss that I cannot place in the line is shown. As all of them descended from one common ancestor, John[1] Foss, he has to be a cousin of some degree.

NOTES

1. *N.H. Genealogical Records*, Vol. III, p. 93.
2. *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire* by Sybil Noyes, Charles Thornton Libby and Walter Goodwin Davis, page 240.
3. *Family Group Record* from J. Robert Locke of San Andreas, California, who is a Berry and Locke descendant.
4. *New Hampshire Genealogical Records*, Vol. III, pages 174 and 176.
5. *Rambles About Portsmouth* by Charles W. Brewster, Vol. II, page 96.
6. *They Came to Fish* by Raymond A. Brighton, 1973, page 57.

CHAPTER IX

Samuel[3] Seavey

For Samuel[3] Seavey, (Samuel[2], Thomas[1]) we have more essential information than we have had for any family member to this point with the possible exception of Thomas[1]. The same is also true of his son, Samuel[4] who is next in the direct line of Fannie C. Harrison. However, there is much information about these two that is missing, and in addition, ther is considerable conflict and confusion. The absence of information and confusion extends to the generation of Samuel[5] and Solomon[5] and the period of the Revolutionary War. All available material will be given and a sincere effort will be made present the story of these family members as it really happened.

Samuel[3] Seavey was the third generation, the son of Samuel[2] and grandson of Thomas[1] Seavey. Neither the family name nor even the given name of his mother is known. His grandmother was Tamsen or Thomasine but her family name is not known. The deeds referred to in Chapter VI identify Samuel[2] as a yeoman or a small land owner and they show that he did own land. In one document he is described as a farmer. Nothing has been found to indicate that his father was a fisherman or a mariner or engaged in trade as was his great Uncle William[1] Seavey.

Samuel[3] Seavey was born in Rye in 1690.[1] Actually he was born at Sandy Beach. It became Newcastle in 1693 and did not become Rye until 1726. He was probably the youngest of the three known sons of Samuel[2] but older than some of the three daughters. Nothing is known about his early life.

October 25, 1711[2–4] Samuel[3] Seavey married Abagail Foss, daughter of John[2] and Mary (Thadburn) Foss. The minister was Mr. Allen who twenty-three years later married their son Samuel[4] and Hannah[4] Seavey. They had ten children. Of this number, one died young, but another child was given the same name when he was born several years later. Their children were:

1. Ithamar[4]
   b. Jan. 27, 1712[1–3]
   m. Nov. 22, 1733 Mary Fuller[5]
   d. At Rochester, N.H. between 1781 and 1790

2. Samuel[4]
   b. May 18, 1714[1–3] (Note: N.H. Gen. Records has two listings that are identical except one is for 1714 and other for 1715)
   m. Nov. 6, 1734, Hannah[4] Seavey[6]
   d. Prior to Sept. 30, 1761[7]

3. Sarah[4]
   b. Nov. 30, 1716[1]
   m. _____Sanborn
   d. Sept. 4, 1739
4. Henry[4]
   b. April 23, 1719[1]
   m. Sept. 15, 1740, Mary Kingman
5. Mary[4]
   b. April 25, 1721[1]
   m. Jan. 25, 1738, Joseph Connor[8]
6. Abagail[4]
   b. Feb. 25, 1723[1]
   m. May, 1746, Abraham Clifford
7. Moses[4]
   b. No date found
   d. Sept. 4, 1730
   NOTE: The assumption being made here is that a son named Moses was born at some date between Feb. 25, 1723 and Oct. 21, 1729—a six-year period. This child died Sept. 4, 1730. Later another son was born and given the name of Moses. This was common practice in the days of large families and high incidence of death for very young children and where there was a strong desire in the family to have a child with name given the deceased one.
8. Mehitable[4]
   b. Oct. 21, 1729[1]
   m. 1st Jan. 6, 1745 Joshua Atwood; 2nd Edward Blue[1–7]
9. Jonathan[4]
   b. Feb. 2, 1732[10]
   m. 1755 (est.)_____Stevens of Greenland, N.H.[11]
10. Moses[4]
    b. Jan. 30, 1735[10]
    m. 1761 Hulda Locke[12]

Samuel[3] Seavey made a will April 1, 1760. Apparently it was presented to the court September 30, 1761 and an appraisal of his estate was authorized that day. It can be presumed that he had died just a few days earlier.

As the will tells us as much about Samuel[3] as anything found to date, it is being quoted in full.

In the name of God amen the first day of Aprail, one thousand Seven Hundred and Sixty I Samuel Sevey of Rye in the Province of New Hampshire Husbandman Being Very Sick & Week in Body • • •

Imprimis I Give & Bequeath to my well Beloved wife Abagail Sevey one cow and all my house hold Goods to her dispose amongst my Children for Ever also one third of all the income y Estate and one third of my house with fire wood Conveant for her to be found by my Executor for and duering her Life time

Itam I Give and Bequeath to my well beloved Son Ithamy Sevey the one halfe of my Right of Land in Jenness town to him & to his Heirs and assigns for Ever

Itham I Give and Bequeath to my well beloved Son Samuel Sevey Ju[r] that house & Barn where he now Lives also the Land he improves by Said house also the one halfe of my Land in Jennes town to him & to his heirs & assigns for Ever.

Itham I Give and Bequeath to my well beloved Son Henry Sevey the one halfe of my Land in the town Ship of Epsom to him and to his Heirs and assigns for Ever

Itham I Give and Bequeath to my well beloved Son Jonathan Sevey the one halfe of my Land in the township of Epsom to him and his Heirs and Assigns for ever also one hundred pounds new tenor bills to be paid him by my Executore

Itham I Give and Bequeath to my well beloved Son Moses Sevey and to his Heirs and assigns for Ever all my Estate Real & Persnal where So Ever & what So Ever not other ways Disposed of in this my Last Will

Itham I Give to my Grandson Sam[l] Sandborn ten pounds New tenor to be paid him by my Executor when he is twenty one years old & if he Should dye befor then to be paid his Brother Nathaniel Sandborn

Itham I Give and Bequeath to my Grand Son Nathaniel Sandborn ten pounds New tenor to be paid him by My Executore when he Comes to the age of twenty one years and if he Shall dye before he Comes to the age of twenty one years then to be paid to his Brother Sam[l] Sandborn

Itham I Give unto my three Daughters twenty Pounds New tenor Bill Each of them namely Abagail Clifford, Mary Connor and Mehetable Blue to be paid them by My Executor with in one mounth after my Decease

Lastly I do by these Presents Constitute and appoint my Son Moses Sevey to be my Sole Executor ***

Samuel
his + Marke
Sevey

[Witnesses] Francis Lock, Henry Dow, Rich[d] Jenness 3d [Proved Sept. 30, 1761.]
[Warrant, Sept. 30, 1761, authorizing Francis Locke and Samuel Jenness, both of Rye, yoemen, to appraise the estate.]

The will mentions each of his five sons and three of his daughters. The two grandsons mentioned were children of his daughter Sarah who had married a Sandborn. His wife Abagail is mentioned so she was living on April 1, 1760. However, no date for her death has been found nor has a will been found. By mentioning the married names of his three living daughters, and the family name of his two grandsons, we have confirmation of their marriages.

The report of the inventory of the estate was not filed until Nov. 5, 1761. It amounted to £ 7,720. A professional genealogist and researcher who assisted in the searching in 1979 made this remark concerning the estate ". . . left quite a sizeable inventory." In part, its value might have been due to land that he had acquired. The will shows that he had lived in Jennesstown which was a new community that was established in 1735. In 1749, the land in it was granted to seventy-nine men, mostly residents of Rye and Newcastle. So many of them had the name Jenness that it was called Jennesstown. However, Samuel[3] Seavey seems to have been included. By his will he gave half of his land to his son Ithamar[4] and half to Samuel[4]. In Epsom Township, about thirty miles west and a little north from Rye, he evidently had additional land. He gave half of this to his son Henry[4] and half to son Jonathan[4].

Mrs. Perkins of Tamworth, N.H. has supplied a copy of an interesting document that she found in the files in Exeter, N.H. It is a deed of sale from Samuel[3] Seavey to Andrew Mack Clarry for sixty-six acres of land in the Town of Epsom. The date is Sept. 1, 1756 and it was recorded Sept. 8, 1756. He received 450 pounds (Old Tenor) for the land. This is a considerable sum for that period of time. He probably sold this in order to have money to get gifts of money to members of his family. His wife Abagail also signed the deed. As was quite common in those days, each signed by making a mark which means that they did not write.

As was mentioned in Chapter VI, Samuel[3] Seavey signed all of the four petitions prepared in the effort to separate Rye from Newcastle. He is also listed as a taxpayer in 1728. Also, he served as a selectman for the new community of Rye in 1730 and 1731. Unfortunately, there is very lit-

tle more that has been learned about him. He described himself as a yeoman or small land owner in the 1756 deed of sale.

So much time was consumed in seeking information on the direct line that there was very little left to devote to the search for information on the siblings. Ithamar[4] moved to Rochester, N.H. some time before 1746. They had seven children: Mary, b. Dec. 23, 1734; Elizabeth, b. June 10, 1737; Comfort; Mehitabel; Abagail; Jane; and Samuel, b. 1747, m. Rebecca Tasker, d. 1826. He was a Revolutionary War soldier and there will be more about him in a later chapter.

Sarah[4] died when quite young, but left the two sons mentioned in the will of her father, Samuel and Nathaniel. A Samuel Sanborn is mentioned in Parsons[14] with Mary Barnes as a wife and son Nathan, b. 1768 and daughter Sarah, b. 1770. From the coincidence of names and dates, it seems safe to assume that this is the family of Sarah[4] (Seavey) Sanborn. This Samuel Sanborn was one of the recipients of Glebe Land when it was distributed in either 1750 or 1760 (Parsons indicates that the correct date for the distribution was not known to him).

Henry[4] Seavey married Mary Kingman Sept. 15, 1740 (Parsons says Sept. 18, 1740 on page 402). She was a sister of William Kingman who had lived in Rye, moved to Barrington, N.H. from which he was driven back by Indians, but returned there after a few years, and Parson's says that he ". . . found everything just as it had been left." The children of Henry[4] and Mary were: John, bp. 1741; Elijah b. 1742; Ruth b. 1742; Hannah, b. 1750.

The only information found for Mary[4] (Seavey) Connor and her husband Joseph is a listing of their children.[16] They were: Samuel bp. May 24, 1741; Sarah bp. June 10, 1744 and Benjamin bp. Sept. 13, 1747.

Abraham Clifford who married Abagail Seavey served in what Parsons[17] believes to have been the first company organized in Rye to serve in the Revolution. This was in May of 1775. Joseph Parsons raised the company and William Seavey, a descendant of William[1] Seavey served as 1st Lieutenant. They were stationed at Fort William and Mary at the mouth of the Piscataqua River to protect the harbor. The company remained there during the summer and into the fall of that year. In later service, for which no specific listing has been found, Abraham Clifford was shot and lost his life. It may be that either Samuel[4] Seavey or his son Samuel[5] also lost his life at that time.

Joshua Atwood, the first husband of Mehitable[4] Seavey, was from Bradford. No information has been found for either of them.

Edward Blue, second husband of Mehitable[4] Seavey probably served in the Revolution but no record has been found. Their son, Jonathan, did serve. He is recorded[18] as having been in a company of Captain Parsons in 1781 which marched to No. 4 Charlestown. They only served one of the three months for which they enlisted. The children of Edward and Mehitable (Seavey) Blue were Jonathan, bp. Jan. 1755 and Edward, bp. May, 1757.

Jonathan[4] Seavey married _____Stevens.[19] He lived in Greenland, N.H. but moved north to Bartlett, N.H. Their chil-

dren were: Comfort, b. 1756 who married Ellen Trasker; Jonathan[5], b. 1758; Levi b. 1760; Joseph and Simon, married Polly Randall of Conway. The line of Jana-than[6], Jonathan[7] and Jonathan[8] is also given.[19] This is the line of Bessie I. (Seavey) Perkins (Mrs. Elton) of South Tamworth, N.H., who has been most helpful in supplying information on the early Seavey family for this book.

With Moses[4] Seavey there are some problems. As shown in the list of children of Samuel[3] and Abagail (Foss) Seavey, a child given the name of Moses was born to them some time prior to Sept. 4, 1730 when its death is listed. As was done frequently in the days of large families and a high death rate among young children, a later child was given the same name. The second Moses was born Jan. 30, 1735 and was the tenth and last child for Samuel and Abagail Seavey.

Benjamin[2] Seavey, a brother of Samuel[2] Seavey, the father of Samuel[3], had a son with the name of Moses[3]. Benjamin[2] married a second wife in 1712 when he was about thirty years of age, and he lived until about 1729. He had nine children by his two wives, so if his Moses[3] was the last he could have been only six years older than Moses[4] the son of Samuel[3]. This is brought out as Parsons[20] in one place says that Moses[3], the grandson of Benjamin,[2] married Huldah Locke. The siblings in this statement are all known descendants of Benjamin[2]. In another place there is a definite statement that Huldah Locke, daughter of Elijah, and granddaughter of William, married Moses Seavey and that they moved to Deerfield in 1762. They had six children and gave them names used in their respective families; Samuel, Hudah, Levi, Moses, Abagail and Elijah. Since no other Huldah Locke of the right age has been found, it is the considered opinion of the author that we do not have a name for the wife of Moses[4], and that Huldah Locke was the wife of Moses[3], (Benjamin[2], Thomas[1]).

Moses[4], son of Samuel[3], was made executor of the estate of his father. This indicates, but does not definitely prove, that he was living in Rye. A Moses Seavey is listed as a taxpayer for various years and served in the militia one or more times during the Revolution. A Moses, also, was a recipient of a share of the Glebe lands when they were distributed.

NOTES

1. *Genealogical and Personal Memoirs* by William Richard Cutter, A.M. Vol. III, p. 1233.
2. *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire* by Sybil Noyes, Charles Thornton Libby and Walter Goodwin Davis, page 240.
3. *New Hampshire Genealogical Record* 1904, Rye Town Records 1:35 to 1:41.
4. *Vital Records of Greenland (1710–1851)* compiled by Priscilla Hammond, 1936, page 38.
5. *Genealogy of Some Descendants of Capt. Matthew Fuller* by William H. Fuller.
6. Same as No. 4 above except p. 346.

7. *N.H. State Papers* Vol. VI, p. 541.
8. *N.E. Historical & Genealogical Record*, Vol. XXVII, p. 11.
9. Ibid. but p.10.
10. Ibid. but p. 13.
11. Two typed pages Rye Families—Seavey Rye, N.H. Public Library. Source of information not listed.
12. *History of Rye, N.H.* by Laugdon B. Parsons, p. 424.
13. Same as 2 but p. 160.
14. Same as 12 but p. 522.
15. Ibid. but p. 160.
16. Ibid. but p. 327.
17. Ibid. but pages 153, 255, 257, 264, 268.
18. Ibid. but pages 267 and 307.
19. Ibid. but pages 533 and 534.
20. Ibid. 424 and 536–7.

CHAPTER X

Hannah[4] Seavey

Samuel[4] Seavey, son of Samuel[3] and Abagail[3] (Foss) Seavey married Hannah[4] Sevey November 6, 1734[1] with a Mr. Allen as the minister. Before starting the account of Samuel[4], the line of Hannah will be picked up and brought down to the time of their marriage.

Samuel[4] Seavey and Hannah[4] Seavey were second cousins. However, that is just one of the complications that we now encounter. Hannah had an older sister who married a Fuller and Fuller had a sister who married Ithamar[4], an older brother of Samuel[4]. Just to add to the already mixed-up family situation, a daughter of the Fuller—Seavey marriage married Solomon[5], a son of the Samuel[4]—Hannah[4] (Fuller) Seavey marriage. Actually, Solomon[5] may have married for his second wife, a sister of his first Fuller wife.

In Chapter V when giving brief information on the children of Thomas[1] Seavey, we told of the marriage of Henry[2], one of his sons, to Sarah (Pearce) (Jones) Mattone.[3] At that time we gave some information on her and her family. Her father John had a deed from Francis Champernoune, one of the original settlers, for 100 acres of land that later became known as Pearce's Neck.

Henry[2] and Sarah Seavey probably had several children, but only one son, Joseph[3], is known to have survived. He was the sole heir of his parents. A date of birth for him has not been found. He was married to Hannah, for whom we do not have a family name, before 1712.

They lived briefly at Rye. And, as mentioned in Chapter V, they sold a portion of the Pearce homestead in Kittery, Maine in 1710.

The children of Joseph[3] and Hannah Seavey follow:[4]

Joannah[4] (Joanna)
b. Aug. 21, 1712
m. Mar 8, 1733 to Joseph Fuller
d. —

Hannah[4]
b. June 5, 1713
m. Nov. 6, 1734, to Samuel[4] Seavey by Mr. Allen
d. —

Joseph[4]
b. 1715 (est.)
m. 1st before 1741 to Hannah _____ 2nd Nov. 22, 1744 to Sarah Scott
d. —

Sarah[4]
b. Nov. 20, 1716
m. —
d. —

Henry[4]
b. —
m. 1st 1740 (est.) to _____ Smith. 2nd Apr. 28, 1745 to Elizabeth Fuller
d. 1803

The Elizabeth Fuller listed above as the second wife of Henry Seavey was a younger sister of Mary Fuller who married Ithamar[4] Seavey, an older brother of Samuel[4] Seavey.

NOTES

1. *Vital Records of Greenland, N.H.* compiled by Priscilla Hammond, 1938, page 46.
2. *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire* by Noyes, Libby and Davis, page 618.
3. *Old Kittery and Her Families* by Everett S. Stackpole, pages 35, 36, 40, 41 and 42.
4. *Rye Families*, a loose leaf notebook in the Rye Public Library with sheets on Rye families including many Seavey families.

CHAPTER XI

Samuel[4] Seavey and the Revolutionary War Period

As brought out in the previous chapter and earlier in Chapter IX, Samuel[4] Seavey (Samuel[3], Samuel[2] and Thomas[1]), who was born May 18, 1714, married his second cousin Hannah[4] Seavey (Joseph[3], Henry[2] and Thomas[1]). The marriage of cousins in those days was not uncommon for reasons that have been mentioned.

Samuel[4] and Hannah[4] were married by Mr. Allen November 6, 1734.[1–3] He was twenty years of age and she was twenty-one. Their children:

1. Solomon[5]
   b. Feb. 26, 1736[2]
   m. March 30, 1758, Mary Fuller[3]
   d. Date not known
2. Deborah[5]
   b. Nov. 4, 1737, bapt. Jan 1, 1738[2]
   m. Joseph Rand of Chester (?)[4]
   d. Date not known
3. Samuel[5]
   b. Sept. 17, 1739[2]
   m. 9/19/1761, Mary Lear (Leer) ?[5]
   d. Date not known
4. Hannah[5]
   b. June 4, 1741[2]
   m. July 13, 1768, Samuel Hutchins[6]
   d. Date not known

There is some doubt as to whether Hannah[5] was the daughter of Hannah[4] (Seavey) Seavey. The family information sheet for Samuel[4] Seavey on file in the Rye Public Library lists a birth date of April 5, 1747 for her. Since this is eight years after the birth of Samuel[5], the conclusion of the compiler of the family sheet, at the library in Rye, is that she was the daughter of a second wife. A genealogical record searcher working for the author reports a birth date of June 4, 1741 for her, and gives the source of her information as N.H. Genealogical Record, Rye Town Records 1:39. Harold L. Hanson, who has probably done more Seavey family research than any living family member, also has the same date. This information supported by her name Hannah, justifies, in the opinion of this author, the acceptance of the June 4, 1741 date, and Hannah[4] (Seavey) Seavey as her mother, thus making her a child of the first marriage. It is further assumed, that during the eight years between June 4, 1741 and Jan. 30, 1749, when Isaac was baptized, that Samuel[4] did marry for a second time. Unfortunately, the identity of this wife is a complete mystery. The children listed in the Rye Public Library list, less Hannah[5], who is now assigned to the first marriage, are:

5. Isaac[5]
   bp. Jan. 30, 1749
   d. Before 1752

6. Margaret[5]
   bp. Feb. 4, 1750
   m. Oct. 22, 1769, Samuel Marden[7]
   d. Date not known
7. Isaac[5]
   bp. April 12, 1752
   m. April 6, 1785 Abagail Gardiner of Portsmouth (Genealogy of N.H. has husband as Ab. Worcester)
   d. Date not known
8. William[5]
   bp. June 9, 1754
   m. No information
   d. Date not known
9. Sarah[5]
   bp. Feb. 1756
   m. Nov. 11, 1787, Nathaniel Rand
   d. Dat3 not known

At this point, on the family sheet of Samuel[4] Seavey in the Rye Public Library, there is another gap of eight years before any more children are listed. Then two more children, born March 11, 1764 and July 13, 1766, are listed. The compiler of the list points out that following the July 13, 1766 birth it is seven years before the next one is born Nov. 14, 1773. The final birth is listed for Oct. 2, 1778.

The Rye Public Library list is probably the work of Louise Tallman, who is a dedicated, thorough researcher, who is not a Seavey descendant, with no other motive than to present a true picture of the family. She acknowledges that she is unable to satisfactorily explain the family of Samuel[4] Seavey: The following notes appear on the list:

> The family lived at Rye, N.H. To account for the incredible collection of children—with two long gaps of dates [there are actually three]—if they are all of the same Samuel—the only solution is three marriages.
>
> It is possible that Ruth [Tarleton] is the third wife—marriage estimated 1773. Her date would help this.
>
> It may be that Ruth Tarleton gets the third marriage instead of the second. It is also a possibility that the final group are a separate generation—children of Samuel[5], born 1739.

Based on all of the material found to date, with a large amount of assumption, the position of this book is going to be that Hannah[5] Seavey was a daughter of Hannah[4] (Seavey) Seavey. Also, that Ruth Tarleton was the second wife and the mother of Isaac, Margaret, William and Sarah. The third position is that Deborah, Ruth T., Henry Dow and Benjamin Seavey were the children of Samuel[5] Seavey, and a wife is not known to us. Harold L. Hanson in his notes says that she might be Mary Lear (Leer). There was a Lear (Leer) family in the area, but he does not give his reasons for believing that a Samuel Seavey married a Mary Lear (Leer) some time in the 1762–3 period.

For the generation of Samuel[4] Seavey; his sons, Samuel[5] and Solomon[5], his grandson William[6] and even down to his great grandson Solomon[7], we are in a never-never land of missing records. In addition, the little information that has been found embodies many conflicting statements. First, there was the Revolutionary War and then the movement of the later generations across New Hampshire and Vermont into Clinton County in the northern part of the state of New York.

An attempt to determine the exact part of the generations of Samuel[4] Seavey and his sons in the Revolutionary War results in the same uncertainty and confusion that

is found in trying to obtain full accurate family data. Never-the-less, an attempt will be made to tell about what seems to be their part in the Revolution.

Before starting on the Revolutionary War, mention will be made of the troubles with the Indians. The surrender of Fort William Henry near present day Lake George, N.Y. on August 3, 1757 to the French and Indians under General Montcalm, resulted in the brutal massacre of the retreating colonials who were supposed to have safe escort to Fort Edward. Out of 200 in the fort, eighty were brutally killed or taken prisoner. The people of the colonies were frightened and concerned. New Hampshire immediately raised 250 men which were organized into five companies. In one of these companies which was stationed at Fort William and Mary in the Portsmouth-Rye area, there was Solomon, Samuel and Moses Seavey. Solomon was undoubtedly Solomon,[5], son of Samuel.[4] Moses could have been Moses[4], youngest son of Samuel[3]. As he was born in 1735, he was just one year older than his nephew Solomon[5] Seavey. The Samuel could have been Samuel[4] or his son Samuel[5] Seavey. There will be more about these Seaveys and this event in a later chapter.

Before going ahead with this account, another Samuel[5] Seavey will be brought into it. As mentioned in Chapter IX, Ithamar[4], oldest child and son of Samuel[3] Seavey, moved to Rochester, N.H., a distance of approximately twenty-five miles. His youngest child was Samuel[5] born in 1747. This Samuel[5] of Rochester was a nephew of Samuel[4] of Rye and a first cousin of his son Samuel[5] of Rye. As all three were of an age that they could have participated in the Revolutionary War, it is difficult, if not impossible, to determine which Samuel is involved when a record is found for service by a Samuel Seavey.

One of the first sets of records in connection with the Revolution is lists of the signers of a declaration of willingness to oppose "The Hostile proceedings of the British Fleets, and Armies against the United American Colonies."

The committee of Safety of the Colony of New Hampshire, under the date of April 12, 1776, sent out the following notice:

> In order to carry the underwritten RESOLVE of the Hon'ble Continental Congress into Execution, you are requested to desire all Males above Twenty one years of Age (Lunaticks, Idiots and negros excepted) to sign to the DECLARATION on this paper; and when so done, to make Return hereof, together with the name or Names of all who shall refuse to sign the same, to the GENERAL/ASSEMBLY or committee of Safety of this Colony.
>
> M. Weare, Chairman

> IN CONGRESS, March 14, 1776
>
> Resolved, that it be recommended to the several Assemblies, Conventions, and Councils or Committees of Safety of the United Colonies, immediately to cause all persons to be disarmed, within their Respective Colonies, who are notoriously disaffected to the Cause of AMERICA, or who have not associated, and refuse to associate, to defend by ARMS, The United Colonies, against the Hostile Attempts of the British Fleet and Armies.
>
> Extract from the Minutes
> Charles Thompson, Sec'ry

The declaration to be signed was worded as follows:

In consequence of the resolution of the Honorable Continental Congress, and to show our determination in joining with our American brethern in defending the lives, liberties and properties of the inhabitants of the United Colonies.

We, the subscribers do hereby solomly engage and promise that we will to the utmost of our power, at the risk of our live and fortunes, with armies, oppose the hostile proceedings of the British fleets and armies, against the United American Colonies.

In the Town of Rochester, N.H., 199 signed signifying their willingness to serve. Twenty-two refused to sign and twenty-two others declared themselves to be of the Society of Friends (Quaker) and refused to sign. Among those declaring their willingness to serve was Ithamar[4] Seavey and his son Samuel[5] Seavey. It was returned Oct. 15, 1776.

For the Town of Rye, eighty-one signed the oath. Unfortunately, the copy available as this is being written does not have the names of those who refused to sign and those who claimed to be members of the Society of Friends. Samuel Seavey and Samuel Seavey, Jr. signed. Also, Moses Seavey. As Samuel[3] Seavey (1690–1761) was not living in 1776, the Samuel who signed had to be Samuel[4], and Samuel Jr. had to be Samuel[5], his son, for there were no other Samuels in Rye that were over twenty-one years of age or anywhere near that age. Moses was undoubtedly a brother of Samuel[4] Seavey. Also, on the Rye list there was Joseph Seavey, probably Joseph[4] (Joseph[3], Henry[2] and Thomas[1]) and Paul, a descendant of William[1] Seavey.

Through these lists we definitely establish that Samuel[4] and Samuel[5] Seavey of Rye and Samuel[5] of Rochester signified their willingness to bear arms in the cause of the United Colonies. We have also definitely established that Samuel[4] was living in the fall of 1776. He was then sixty-two years of age.

From a study of several sources[8] information has been found on three different N.H. Militia expeditions in which there was a Samuel Seavey. They were:

1. Poor's Second New Hampshire Regiment, Company of Capt. Henry Elkins; May 29—Aug. 8, 1775. The exact mission of this group was not discovered.

2. Tash's (2) New Hampshire Regiment, Col. William Whipple. Enlisted Sept. 23, 1776. The stated purpose for enlisting these seventy-four men as stated on the Master Roll dated Portsmouth, September 1776 was: ". . . for men, including officers, enlisted by Col. William Whipple by order of the Gen'l Court for the State of New Hampshire, to reinforce the army at New York.

Elsewhere in the account for this unit is the following interesting statement:

These may certify that at the request of Col. William Whipple I mustered & paid off these 74 Men specified in this Roll agreeable to the same & Ordered them to Hartford in Connecticut & that they were able bodied Effective men & well Equipt with fire arms.

Portsmouth Sept. 1776.

Joshua Wentworth, Muster Master

It seems that these men were brought together and then turned over to a unit of the Continental Line for actual service. In spite of the repeated attempts to get additional information from the National Archives, nothing more has been learned

about the service of these men. It is not known where they served and how long they were in the service. They were probably included in one of the three regiments called for from New Hampshire. The regiments of the Continental Line were entirely different from Militia units that were called from time-to-time for short periods of service when there was an emergency of some nature.

3. Senter's Regiment, Cap't Joseph Parsons Company raised by the State of New Hampshire and marched to the State of Rhode Island 1777. Enlisted July 11, 1777, discharged January 6, 1778, serving 5 months and 27 days.

Samuel[5] Seavey of Rochester (Ithamar[4], Samuel[3], Samuel[2], Thomas[1]) seems to have been much better about getting his activities recorded for history than his uncle and cousin of Rye, Samuel[4] and Samuel[5] Seavey. The following has been found concerning him:[9]

Samuel, youngest son of Ithamar and Mary (Fuller) Seavey, b. Rochester m. 1747 and died 1826, age 79. He was a Revolutionary War soldier, enlisting May 29, 1775. His name appears on the payroll of Capt. Henry Elkin's Company of Col. Enoch Poor's Regiment August 1, 1775. He also served in Captain Parson's Company. In 1801 he married Rebecca Tasker (b. 1769, d. 1852 age 83). Their children were: Samuel F., Jonathan T., and Mary Ann.

As the above statement is in an accepted work there is no basis for contesting it. There is no choice but to assign the 1775 service with Col. Poor and Captain Elkins to Samuel[5] Seavey of Rochester.

The service with Captain Parsons is not definitely identified and Captain Parsons had many different expeditions. Some started as early as 1774 and he continued to raise companies and lead them until hostilities ended in 1780 or 1781. Only one expedition has been found when Parsons was the captain and Seavey served under him. That is the Rhode Island expedition of Col. Senter and Captain Parsons, July 11, 1777—January 6, 1778. A Samuel Seavey served as a corporal. It seems reasonable, therefore, to assume that this was Samuel[5] Seavey of Rochester. It may be that a Samuel Seavey served in some of the other units raised by Capt. Pasons as he was from Rye and, as mentioned, he organized many different units over a period of about seven years. However, a careful study of all records found failed to produce a Samuel Seavey. There was mention of several units led by Capt. Parsons where the list of those serving under him has been lost.

Before discussing the third period of service that included a Samuel Seavey, namely, that of the seventy-four men enlisted by Col. William Whipple in 1776, some additional information will be introduced. It involves the generally unknown, but very extensive and effective activities of privateers. They went out from all of the colonies with Atlantic coast ports. However, New England port cities furnished most of them, and New Hampshire with only a few miles of coast line probably furnished as many as any other state.

Unfortunately, as soon as the decision is made to tell about the privateers, two related, but also contradictory situations

are encountered. While the privateers of the Revolutionary War were licensed by their colony and the Continental Congress with a bond posted, they were still pirates. They had no desire to record their activities in detail and even if there had been a desire to do so they were not the type to make records. Also, their ships with all aboard were often lost at sea or in conflict. But there is some information, and while very little that is needed for this account has been found, there is so much of it that is interesting that it is only with difficulty that it can be included in one chapter.

Excerpts from Chapter 8 of *Revolutionary New Hampshire* will be quoted liberally to give some concept of this little known phase of the struggle for independence.

> The naval situation at the opening of the Revolution was preponderantly favorable to Great Britain. With the largest navy in the world, with a national economy based increasingly upon the idea of commercial and naval supremacy, she looked upon the sea as her natural domain and ruled it by no other standard than expediency. In 1775 the British navy had embarked upon a campaign of blockade, bombardment, and impressment of seamen along the American coast. Colonial shipping was quickly swept from the seas; the New England fishing industry was utterly destroyed.
>
> Against the British leviathan of the ocean what hope did the American Revolutionists have? They had one hundred and fifty years of experience in the shipbuilding and carrying trade but no naval background except for privateering during the colonial wars. It was quickly realized in Revolutionary councils that the only logical target for American naval enterprize was Britain's most vulnerable point—her far flung, seagoing commerce. It would have been a waste of time for the small colonial vessels to attack British warships of the first line only to be smashed by a splintering gunfire. To prey upon British commerce the first proposals in the Continental Congress contemplated a Continental navy. There were several reasons why such a project was not entirely feasible, not the least among which was the cost of construction. Within the few short years in which the Revolutionary struggle might be decided the number of war vessels which could be constructed would be inconsequential. But even were they constructed, there would be great difficulty in manning them. Most of the experienced American naval men who had a taste for seafaring were already in the British service. Thus a Continental navy could probably never reach formidable proportions.
>
> The Congress eventually determined upon the only practicable alternative—privateering. On November 25, 1775, certain tentative rules on the subject were recommended to the states for enactment into law. It was further resolved that no privateer should cruise against the enemy without the permission of the Congress. All British ships and all vessels carrying contraband to the British were designated as legal prizes. All prizes were to be brought into port for trial before condemnation. For the trial of prize cases the Congress urged the states to establish admiralty courts from whose decision appeal should be allowed to the Congress itself. Advisory rules for the division of prize money were also drawn up. Finally on March 23, 1776, the Congress resolved "that the inhabitants of these colonies be permitted to fit out armed vessels to cruize on the enemies of these United Colonies." This was the final step necessary to bring into existence a "marine militia"—"a volunteer navy." On April 3 blank commissions for privately owned vessels and letters of marque and reprisal, all signed by the President, were forwarded to the states by the Congress. All owners of privateers, before receiving commissions and letters, were required to post bond for the faithful observance of international maritime law—$5,000 for vessels under 100 tons, $10,000 for larger vessels. These bonds were to

be payable to the President of the Congress in case of forfeiture and to be held in trust by the states during good behavior of the privateers.

In New Hampshire an early interest had been manifested in privateering, especially in Portsmouth. Many of its old sea dogs remembered handsome profits made from such enterprize in the halcyon days of King George's War. As early as January 24, 1776, the state legislature had authorized Captain Daniel Jackson of the *Enterprise*, a Portsmouth schooner, to prey on British shipping upon depositing a bond of £1,000 with the state for the observance of maritime law.

On July 3, 1776, the state enacted into law the recommendations of the Continental Congress concerning privateering. This law legalized as prizes all ships aiding the British, all British naval vessels, and all British ships of any other character. To the Council was delegated the duty of receiving the privateers' bonds and issuing the commissions as instructed by the Congress. All prizes were to be brought into port and libeled before a maritime court. In New Hampshire the court was established to sit in Portsmouth.

Was patriotism or profit the motive for privateering? It must be admitted that by reason of the character of the business, pecuniary gain was probably the main incentive. The glory of the United Colonies occupied a secondary position. There were operating out of Portsmouth, New Hampshire, probably around one hundred privateers at one time or another after 1776. These were mostly small ships of eight or ten guns. The average crew ranged from thirty to fifty men. At opposite extremes were the lugger *Betsey* with two guns and a crew of ten and the ship *Amphitrite* with twenty-four guns and a crew of one hundred and sixty. A conservative estimate would indicate that New Hampshire had about 3,000 men engaged in privateering. Who cared to starve in Washington's army or be flogged in the Continental navy when such a profitable occupataion was open? The crews had definite interest in the seizures, as their remuneration was on a contingent basis. They received a fixed proportion of the profits of each cruise. The owners were often among the state's political leaders. John Langdon of Portsmouth, Speaker of the House of Representatives and Continental Agent for New Hampshire, owned at least seven privateers and became rich from the war. Other prominent men to own privateers were the Nichols brothers of Portsmouth, the Gilmans of Exeter, Captain Robert Parker of Portsmouth, George Gains, Jacob Treadwell, the Sheafe brothers, and Supply Clap, also of Portsmouth. Two firms of merchants—Spence & Sherburne Company of Portsmouth and Ladd, Jewett & Osgood of Exeter—were also in the business. The merchants as a class frequently preferrd privateering to foreign trade, as there was less risk, and the profits from sales of cargoes were enormous.

An almost unique privateering organization was that of the owners of the ship *General Sullivan* of Portsmouth. The ten owners drew up rules of proprietorship on November 18, 1777. Each one of them contributed equally to a total capitalization of £10,000. Seven of the proprietors were declared a quorum to do business and vote money. The members of the crew received as pay half of the total prize money for each cruise. They divided this amount into shares out of which the captain received the largest number and the lower officers and crew, a number commensurate with the relative importance of their services. Certificates of these shares circulated, and there was speculation in them based upon the probable success or failure of each cruise. The fact that the members of the crew had a direct interest in the business only served to make them all the more rapacious in their plundering. The *General Sullivan* captured one prize in 1778 which sold for £168,400 and another in 1780 which brought£350,000.

Indeed, the incentive for profit frequently put privateering on a plane not much higher than piracy. Neutral rights were repeatedly violated despite the conscientious efforts of the Continental Congress. In 1778 William Whipple of Portsmouth wrote to Dr. Josiah Bartlett on the subject of privateering, "Those who are actually

engaged in it soon lose every Idea of right & wrong, & for want of an opportunity of gratifying their insatiable avarice with the property of the Enemies of their Country, will, without the least compunction, seize that of her Friends." A flagrant example of this devil-may-care attitude was furnished by a Portsmouth privateer under Captain John Hart, which sailed right into the mouth of the Garonne River in France to capture a British merchantman.

So great was the rage for privateering in New Hampshire that it competed with other more legitimate activities. William Whipple of Portsmouth in a letter to Dr. Josiah Bartlett observed, "Some of the towns in this State have been obliged to give 400 Dolls. Bounty (pr man) to serve 3 or 4 months at Rhoad island, exclusive of what's allow'd by the State; this is wholly owing to privateering. The Farmers cannot hire a laborer for less than 50 or 40 Dolls. pr. month, and in the neighbourhood of this town, 3 or 4 Dolls. pr. day, & very difficult to be had at that. This naturally raises the price of Provision—Indian corn is not to be purchased, under 6 Dolls. pr. Bushel. There is at this time 5 Privateers fitting out here, which I suppose will take 400 men. These must be by far the greater part Countrymen, for the Seamen are chiefly gone, & most of them in the Hallifax Goal. Besides all this, you may depend no public ship will ever be manned while there is a privateer fitting out."

Among the more successful New Hampshire privateers were the *McClary*, the *General Sullivan*, the *General Mifflin*, the *Rambler*, and the *Portsmouth*. These vessels cruised along the American coast from Nova Scotia to the West Indies and even carried their activities into the middle Atlantic, the English Channel, and the North Sea. With foxlike prudence they avoided superior strength. They swooped down upon the unarmed, unsuspecting British merchantmen or the suply ships of the British army. Not all privateering, however, resulted in easy plunder. Less fortunate than many was the Portsmouth privateer *Hampden* under the adventurous Captain Thomas Pickering. Pickering took command of the *Hampden*, a vessel of 400 tons and 22 guns, for a single cruise off the coast of England in 1779. On Sunday, March 7 at 10 A.M., Lat. 47° 13′ N., Long. 28° 30′ W., the *Hampden* sighted a sail at two leagues distance and gave chase. The strange ship took flight, and the race lasted until day break on Monday, when the *Hampden* crept up on its prey, only to discover it to be an East Indiaman of 800 tons armed with 34 guns. At 7 A.M., Pickering debonairly sailed his smaller vessel into close quarters and opened fire. General action continued at broadside for two hours. But as Captain Pickering was preparing to lead a boarding party he was killed. Finally, with three masts splintered, sails and rigging in shreds and ammunition nearly exhausted, the *Hampden* was forced to draw off, leaving her foe a blood-soaked, smoking hulk. Two months later she limped into Portsmouth harbor with flag at half-mast. The casualties of the engagement had been "Captain Pickering, killed; Mr. Peltier, a Frenchman, killed; Samuel Shortridge, so badly wounded that he died in two hours after; John Bunten, both legs shot away, but lived nine days; John Tanner, master's mate, left arm shot off; Michael Blaisdell, left hand shot off; Peter Derrick, his mouth shot to pieces; and twelve others wounded, but not dangerous."

Death or life-long disfigurement were not the only liabilities of privateering. Thousands of American privateersmen were captured, impressed into the British navy, or imprisoned in foul jails. Life on the sea was no safer than in an African jungle as the experience of Hugh Hunter of Portsmouth well demonstrated. In January, 1775, before hostilities, Hunter shipped for the West Indies and London under Captain Alexander Nate. Upon his arrival in London he was seized and impressed onto a British man-of-war. After fourteen months' service he contrived to desert. Under an assumed name he signed as first mate on board a British brigantine bound from London to Halifax, hoping to get back to Portsmouth. During the transatlantic voyage, however, a storm came up and forced the ship off its course. Near the West Indies it

was captured by an American privateer the *Fanna* and taken into Martinique, a French colony, where the crew was discharged. Hunter next offered to navigate the schooner *Betsey* from Martinique to Halifax. Halfway to its destination the *Betsey* was seized by the American privateer *Friends Adventure* out of Portsmouth under Captain Kinsman Peverly. Hunter finally returned home in June, 1778, after three years of perilous knocking about.

Imprisonment was perhaps the fate most dreaded by all privateersmen. The British navy captured no less than 216 American privateers and their crews during the course of the Revolution. In America the British deposited most of the captured seamen either in the dreaded "Halifax Gaol" or at Newport, Rhode island. Those taken near England generally found themselves inside gloomy, grim Dartmoor Prison. In the close confinement of loathsome cells, especially at unfavorable seasons of the year, hundreds slowly died. They were "not only Exposed to Penury & Want, but to the Ravages of Putrid Fevers, & Infectious Distempers." In 1778 the crews of two Portsmouth privateers—the *Portsmouth* and the *McClary*—were captured and thrown into the Halifax Gaol. Only after many months in their dreary and unhealthy surroundings were they released under the terms of a cartel for the exchange of prisoners, negotiated by New Hampshire with the British naval authorities. Such was the life of a privateersman.

In contrast the Continental navy was never more than a shadow of the vast swarm of privateers. The total number of privateers for all the colonies probably numbered around 2,000 with crews totaling 30,000. But the Continental navy at its peak early in the war included only 21 vessels and a personnel of barely 3,000 men. Before the end of the war most of its ships had been destroyed or sunk by the British.

The construction of three Continental naval vessels was allotted to the Portsmouth shipyards during the Revolution. The first warship to be launched was the *Raleigh* of 32 guns which left its ways on May 21, 1776. It was commissioned in 1777 under Captain Thomas Thompson but was captured in 1778. Later in 1776 was launched the *Ranger* of 18 guns. This small frigate was commissioned under John Paul Jones and was the first warship to carry an American flag. It was destroyed by the British in the harbor of Charleston, South Carolina, in 1780. The largest ship to be constructed by the Continental navy was the *America* of 74 guns which was launched at Portsmouth on November 5, 1782. It was presented to the French navy to compensate for the loss of their first line warship, the *Magnifique*, which had been wrecked on the American coast.

John Paul Jones operated from Portsmouth and his home has been preserved. It is one of the historic sites in the restored area of old downtown Portsmouth.

Now back to Samuel[4] Seavey and his son Samuel[5]. The great grandfather of Samuel[4] was Thomas[1] who was a fisherman and a seaman. He had come from Devon, England about 1640, but had probably sailed on over-seas fishing expeditions before coming over to America to live. His uncle William[1] had arrived in 1632 and each was a descendant of sailors and fishermen. There are even records of early members of their family being authorized by the rulers of England to engage in piracy against the enemies of England. With Thomas[1] Seavey having lived to 1708 and Samuel[4] having been born in 1714 he undoubtedly heard through his grandfather Samuel[2], who got his information from his father, many tales of the sea and exploits of early members of the family and others who had followed the sea. In addition to his seafaring ancestry, Samuel[4] and Samuel[5] Seavey lived within a few miles of Portsmouth harbor with its ship-

ping and shipbuilding. It is only natural, therefore, for a Seavey who had fighting to do to prefer to do it at sea. There is also another consideration that would incline one or both of the Samuels of Rye to join with others in privateering ventures. They had money, probably enough to have a substantial financial interest in a privateering venture.

There are several records that definitely establish that either Samuel[4] or Samuel[5] of Rye went to sea as privateers. These references do not tell all that we would like to know, but they do establish one or both of them as having participated in this form of defense for their country.

In the *History of Rye, N.H.* by Parsons:

> Jonathan Goss, son of Jonathan (3) born 1743; married, Feb. 16, 1769, Elizabeth Brown. Was in the Revolutionary War under Captain Parsons and he sailed in the privateer *Portsmouth* with Samuel Seavey, and was captured, and died of smallpox in Dartmoor prison.

Unfortunately, the Samuel Seavey of this account is not definitely identified, but he had to be Samuel[4] or Samuel[5] of Rye. It is also in error as far as the prison is concerned. Dartmoor prison was in Devon, England, but it did not receive prisoners from the Revolutionary War. The first prisoners sent there were from France in 1813 and from our War of 1812 with England.

There is some reason to believe that there was a Samuel Seavey who served on a privateer in the War of 1812. His ship sunk off the Canary Islands. If he was saved he could have been sent to Dartmoor Prison in England. Such a Samuel Seavey could be Samuel[5] but he would be seventy-five years of age. Jonathan Goss would be about the same age. In searching for information for this book no attempt had been made to explore records from the War of 1812–14.

Then there is this additional account:[12]

> Jonathan sailed in the privateer *Portsmouth* under Capt. Sam Seavey, was captured and died of Smallpox in Dartmoor Prison.

The account quoted earlier from *Revolutionary New Hampshire* by Richard Francis Upton gives 1778 as the date for the voyage of the *Portsmouth* on which it was captured. It also identifies the prison as the *Halifax Goal* in Nova Scotia. This is undoubtedly correct.

Harold L. Hanson, from his files, probably information obtained from the files of Mrs. A.C. Hall of about 1905, says that the *Portsmouth* sailed on its last voyage in February of 1778. It had probably made other voyages at earlier dates. The *Portsmouth* did sail in February of 1778, but according to the *History of Rockingham County, N.H.*[13] there was another sailing in April of that year. A Thomas Roach (Roche) is listed as captain for each. An earlier sailing is listed for Feb. of 1777 with another Captain.

Unfortunately, no record has been found for a date of death for either Samuel[4] or Samuel[5] Seavey. Interestingly there is not a Samuel Seavey on the 1782 tax list of Rye. They could have moved or died by that time. Furthermore, there is no record of a will for either of them. However, there is one thing that is known. A Samuel

Seavey was a casualty of the War for Independence. In the *History of Rye, N.H.*[14] neither of the two accounts gives any indication as to whether it was Samuel[4] or Samuel[5] Seavey. There is this following statement:

> We quote again from Rev. H. Porter's interesting and valuable New Century discourse: "In the late American Revolutionary War, or war with Great Britain, this town experienced the loss of thirty-eight of its inhabitants, partly by sea and the rest by land; most of them young men, dear to their friends, and for whom the tears of affection and condolences have yet scarcely ceased to flow." And his list of the lost, the only one in existence so far (1905) as is known, is as follows:

In the list, in addition to Samuel Seavey, there is Aaron Seavey, a second cousin of Samuel[4] and a second cousin once removed of Samuel.[5] Abraham Clifford, husband of Abagail[4] Seavey and, therefore, a brother-in-law of Samuel[4] and an uncle by marriage of Samuel[5]. The list also includes a Job Foss and a William Foss. They were probably second cousins of our Samuel and second cousins once removed of the other. With adequate family data, it could probably be established that at least four or five or more of the casualties were closely related to the two Samuels. In all, a fourth to a fifth of the list were Seavey family members. One very interesting additional factor is established by the Parson's quotation: "Some of the casualties were from warfare at sea." Also, the loss of a Seavey from Rye establishes that the Samuel Seavey of Rochester was not the only Seavey to serve. He survived and lived until 1826. At least one Samuel Seavey from Rye served in the Revolution and one was lost in it.

This chapter on Samuel[4] Seavey will have to be brought to a close with many questions unanswered. Many records normally available, even in this period, have not been found. Either they were not made or have been lost. Even where information has been found there is the problem of deciding whether Samuel[3], Samuel[4] and Samuel[5] of Rye or Samuel[5] of Rochester is the Seavey involved. Since additional searching cannot be conducted, a few additional bits of information will be presented without being able to place them properly in this text.

Samuel[4] Seavey definitely served more in the armed forces of the Colony of New Hampshire than was realized by the author when preparing the first part of this chapter. It is also his belief that he served in the Revolutionary War and that he is the Samuel Seavey who was killed during the course of that conflict. As yet it has not been possible to determine whether he lost his life in service with the Continental line, the militia or while serving on a privateer or after such service while in prison.

Additionally, it is the belief of the author that Samuel[5] of Rye, son of Samuel[4] also of Rye, survived the Revolutionary War. While not conclusive, some interesting information has been found but there has not been a chance to check it thoroughly. A Samuel Seavey of Epsom in Rockingham County on April 10, 1806 sold 60 acres of land for $300.00. This could be land that had been owned by Samuel[3] and willed to Samuel[4] and from

him went to Samuel[5] his son. The later would have been only sixty-nine years of age at the time.

Other information that has become available but has not been fully evaluated indicates that Samuel[4] and Samuel[5] had financial and other problems in the general period of the war for independence. On September 18, 1761, Samuel[4] Seavey gave a note for £276 and 16 shillings to Thomas Parker. In addition, he purchased £20:10:0 of merchandise on credit. On May 20, 1762, a warrant was issued and served for him to pay £100 on the note as no payments had been made. Some payment seems to have been made but on March 5, 1764 another warrant was issued for Samuel[4] Seavey to pay £150 on a note for £373 on a note to the same Thomas Parker dated Nov. 20, 1762. This time the sheriff put Samuel[4] in jail. Nothing has been found to tell us the final outcome. As the first note was so near the date of death of his father it could be that he borrowed the money in anticipation of receiving his share of the estate. He was remembered by his father but maybe not to the extent that he anticipated.

There is one other incident that will be mentioned as it confirms the belief that Samuel[4] or Samuel[5] Seavey was having some problems. On Sept. 15, 1763 the constable of Hampton was asked by the selectmen of the community to order Samuel Seavey and his wife to leave the community. Apparently they were living there at the time and there was some concern that they might become public charges. This confirms that a Samuel Seavey was not in Rye at this time. As this information was received near the end of the period of searching for material for this book no effort has been made to check the Hampton area for additional information. The same is true for the Epsom area. We do know that Samuel[4] and Samuel[5] were in Rye in 1775–6 because he signed the oath of allegiance to the colonies.

Much more research needs to be done. It is hoped that someone will do this.

Solomon[5] Seavey will be discussed in Chapter XIII. Isaac[5] has been mentioned as serving in the Revolution. No attempt will be made to supply information on any of the other children credited to Samuel[4] or Samuel[5] Seavey. Such data as is available on Hannah[4] (Seavey) Seavey has already been supplied. As with the children just mentioned, no attempt will be made to furnish anything on a later wife or wives of Samuel[4] and a wife or wives of Samuel[5].

NOTES

1. *Vital Records of Greenland, N.H.* compiled by Priscilla Hamond 1938, p. 46.
2. *N.H. Genealogical Records Vol. 1:39.*
3. *Index of Marriages of Rye, N.H. 1726–1899* from Rye Church Records and Rye Town Records compiled by L.H. Tallman, Rye 1978.
4. *History of Rye, N.H.* by L.B. Parsons, p. 418.
5. Research findings (unpublished) Harold L. Hanson.

6. *Seavey Family Sheets*, Rye Public Library compiled principally by Louise Tullman.
7. *Marden Family Genealogy* by Sylvia Fitts Getchell, 1974, p. 93.
8. *Miscellaneous Revolutionary Documents of New Hampshire*, Vol. 30 State Paper Series; The State of New Hampshire, Rolls of the *Soldiers of The Revolutionary War Volumes I and II* by Isaac W. Hammond, A.M.; and History of Rye, N.H. by Parsons.
9. *Genealogical and Family History of The State of N.H.* Vol. II, p. 813.
10. *Revolutionary New Hampshire* by Richard Francis Upton, Dartmouth College Publications, pages 106 through 117, Chapter 8.
11. *History of Rye*, N.H. by L.B. Parsons, p. 369.
12. *A History and Genealogy of Captain John Locke* by Arthur Locke, A.M. 1979, p. 66.
13. *History of Rockingham County, N.H.* p. 660.
14. *History of Rye*, N.H. by L.B. Parsons, pages 153 and 255.

CHAPTER XII

Emerson and Fuller

Emerson

The next Seavey in the line being followed is Solomon[5]. As he married a Fuller, that line will be picked up and brought down to the date of their marriage. In doing so we will also tell of the Emerson's and Brabanks who are connected by marriage to the Fullers. First, the Emerson line will be discussed.

The temptation is great to write at length about the Emerson family. They arrived early in New England. Their line in England as far back as the thirteenth century is resonably well documented and it is the family of Ralph Waldo Emerson (1803–1882) the celebrated essayist, philosopher and poet. He was the seventh generation in descent from Thomas[1] Emerson of Ipswich, Mass. who came to this country from England in 1635. The principal works of Ralph Waldo Emerson are: *Nature*, 1836; *Essays, 1st Series* 1841; *2nd series* 1844; *Poems*, 1847; *Miscellanies*, 1849; *Representative Men*, 1880; *English Traits*, 1856; *Conduct of Life*, 1860; *May Day and Other Poems*, 1867; *Society and Solitude*, 1869; *Letters and Social Aims*, about 1874; *Poems*, 1875. His works were collected and printed in two volumes in 1870.

Rather than try to present a coherent account of the Emersons of England from the earliest date for which there is information, excerpts will be taken from the summarized account put together by William Richard Cutter.[1]

> The Emerson family, which has been prominent in New England since its first settlement, originated in England and numbers among its members many distinquished and able men. The first to use the name Emerson in England was Johannes Emeryson, of Brancepeth parish, Durham County, who was born before 1300. From him the various branches of the family descended, though the line cannot be traced perfectly. The coat-of-arms of the family was borne by the American branches of the family as well as by the English.
>
> (I) Thomas Emerson was born some time before 1540 in England. He was a resident of Great Dunmow, County Essex, where his three children are registered. He was probably son of Rolf, of Foxton who received arms in 1535. Children:
>
> Robert, mentioned below
> Joan, baptized 1562
> John, baptized 1565
>
> (II) Robert Emerson, son of Thomas Emerson I was born at Great Dunmow and baptized there October 25, 1561. He may be identical with Robert Emerson, of Bishop's Stortford who married there November 24, 1578, Susan Crabb, who was buried there November 20, 1626, aged seventy years. Robert was buried at Bishop's Stortford, January 6, 1620. Children:

Alice baptized at Bishop's Stortford Nov. 22, 1579.
Margaret, baptized Feb. 21, 1582.
Thomas, baptized July 26, 1584, mentioned below.
Anne
Robert, baptized April 12, 1596
John.

(III) Thomas Emerson, the emigrant to America, was son of Robert Emerson (II), baptized at Bishop's Stortford, July 26, 1584. In the church wardens' book of St. Michael's he is recorded as collector for the poor in 1636. The year probably that he came to America. [Tradition[2] says that he came from England, in the ship "Elizabeth Ann," in 1635. The date conflicts with the information supplied by Cutter] He married, at Bishop's Stortford, July 1, 1611 Elizabeth Brewster, and the genealogists of the English Emersons suggest that she was the daughter of the postmaster of Scrooby, the elder of the colony at Plymouth in New England. Emerson was in Ipswich as early as 1638, when his name appears on the list of proprietors of that town and he was a selectman in 1646. Late in life he conveyed to his son John, for a yearly rental during the lives of himself and wife Elizabeth, the homestead on which he lived making many stipulations of interest. He died May 1666 in Ipswich, Mass. His will, dated May 31, 1653, with codicil January 4, 1660 proved May 10, 1666, named his wife Elizabeth as Executrix, and bequeathed also to sons Joseph, John and Nathaniel, daughters Elizabeth Fuller and Susan Emerson; to son James "if he shall come over to this country;" and to wife Elizabeth. Children, all baptized in St. Michael's Church, Bishop's Stortford:

Robert, May 24, 1612
Benjamin, Oct. 2, 1614
Ralfe, Oct. 19, 1615, killed June 1626 by falling tree.
James, Feb. 2, 1617, never emigrated.
Joseph, June 25, 1620
Elizabeth, June 14, 1623, married John Fuller.
John, Feb. 26, 1625, settled in Gloucester, Mass.
Thomas, died before 1653
Nathaniel, July 18, 1630.
Susan, March 17, 1632.

Ipswich is about twenty-six miles south of Rye, New Hampshire. There is some discussion in *The Ipswich Emersons*[2] as to whether Thomas[1] Emerson was a baker as some historians have claimed, but it is inconclusive and it does not seem to be necessry to go into it here. The will of Thomas[1] Emerson with its codicil and the inventory of the estate are in Appendix C. They are included because they are very old documents and, additionally, tell us much about life in the first fifty years of the colonists in New England. Elizabeth[2], the daughter who married John Fuller is mentioned in both the will and the codicil.

Returning briefly to Ralph Waldo Emerson (1803–1882). He was descended from Joseph[2], son of Thomas[1]. As was the case with all of the other children, Joseph[2] was born in England. He was a Puritan minister in Ipswich. His grandson, Joseph[4], great grandson William[5] and great great grandson William[6] were all ministers of the gospel. Only one in the line between Ralph Waldo[7] and Joseph[4], Edward, was not a minister of the gospel.

The reference by Cutter to Elizabeth Brewster, wife of Thomas[1] Emerson as the daughter of the postmaster of Scrooby who was the elder of the Plymouth Colony, is most interesting. Not being familiar with the requirements to be considered as a Mayflower descendant, I cannot be sure, but it may be that this makes Fannie C.

Harrison a Mayflower descendant through her Brewster Line. The father of Elizabeth Brewster would be her seventh great grandfather. When this was discovered in the summer of 1986, the decision was made to start a thorough search of record sources to substantiate the qualified opinion of Cutter. It was not believed in the beginning that this would be difficult. However, a quick check of the most likely sources failed to produce a confirmation. In fact, the only confirmation found was a handwritten note in a book in the Mormon Church Library on Elder Brewster saying that Elizabeth Brewster, who married Thomas Emerson, was a child of Elder Brewster. At about this time other research yielded the information that Fannie C. Harrison did have a Mayflower line through a Seavey-Washburn-Jane Mitchell-Francis Cooke line. At this point, the search for proof of the Elder Brewster connection was dropped. However, it is the hope of the author that it can be resumed by some family member. Confirmation of this tie would not only be an important contribution to the history of the family, but it would be of interest in a most unusual way. Sidney Biddles Barrows, dubbed "The Mayflower Madam" by the press in 1985 and 1986 when her operations were uncovered in New York City claims to be a descendant of Elder Brewster of the Plymouth Colony. This would make her a distant cousin of Fannie C. Harrison.

John Fuller

The various branches of the early Fuller families are quite well documented. However, there are some conflicts in the information, and as usual, numerous instances where there is no information at all.

In the book on the Fuller family[3], there is the following statement:

> John[1] Fuller, aged about 15 years, came to America on the ship Abagail, May 4, 1635, from England with his brother William, aged about 25 years.

From another source[4], information that might be conflicting, but is probably confirming, is obtained. According to it, the *Abagail* of London, Richard Hackwell, master, listed passengers for new England from June 4 until July 24, and sailed from Plymouth, England as her last port of departure August 1, with two hundred and twenty persons aboard and many cattle. Among the passengers listed there is William Fuller, age 25, Joseph Fuller, age 15, and John Emerson, age 15, and two others, in what appears to be a group traveling together. The last four are indented from William Fuller and the five are listed together with space between them and the group ahead and the one that follows. All are listed as having Ipswich as a destination except John Emerson whose destination is listed as Scituate, Mass.

The slight conflict in dates probably is of no significance. It could be that the party arrived at the docks in the port city and had to wait a month before the ship register was opened. The date of May 4 could very well be the date they received permission to leave England or something like that.

Joseph, instead of John, is of some concern, but William Hyslop Fuller[3] in 1914 and Edward F. Everett[5], A.M. in 1899 supplies essentially the same information.

It is interesting that there should be a John Emerson traveling with William and John Fuller. The Fullers are assumed to be sons of Roger Fuller of Topcroft, Norfolk County, England. The Emersons came from Essex County with only Soffolk separating them from Norfolk. Savage[6] indicates that John Emerson came first to Ipswich and then moved to Scituate. He also lists him as a baker, so this may be the source of the confusion about Thomas[1] Emerson, the father of Elizabeth who married John[1] Fuller, being a baker.

William Fuller, according to Pope's *Pioneers of Massachusetts*[3] settled in Ipswich. He owned property as early as 1635 and was appointed gunsmith by the General Court in 1637. In 1639 he married Elizabeth —, sold his house and land and moved to Concord (N.H. or Mass. ? probably the latter.) He is listed as keeper of the mill. In 1640, he was given a grant of land in Hampton, N.H. and apparently moved there, where he was very active for the rest of his life. William served in the grand jury many times, was a selectsman for nine years and a representative, presumably in the legislature of the colony in 1661 and 1667. Court was held in his house in 1663. His wife Elizabeth died July 24, 1642. A daughter Hannah had been born August 8, 1641, but she seems to have died young. A second wife, Frances, died in 1699 when about eighty years of age. Williams deeded before his death, land to his nephew William, son of his younger brother John,[1] and his wife Susannah. He also deeded land to his nephew, John, another son of his brother John.[1]

John[1] Fuller, younger brother of William, of the preceeding paragraphs, settled in Ipswich. According to William Hyslop Fuller[3] he moved to Salisbury about 1639, but returned to Ipswich before 1648. He was the town surveyor in 1663; commissioner in 1664 and owned land near Rocky Hill. He died June 4, 1666 when only forty-six years of age.

John[1] Fuller married Elizabeth Emerson of Iswich, but a date for this marriage has not been found. Their children were:

John[2], b. about 1643

William,[2] b. after 1645; m. Susannah (Perkins) Boswell daughter of Isaac Perkins. One child, Abagail b. Mar. 10, 1690.

James,[2] b. about 1647; m. Mary Ring.

Thomas,[2] b. — ; living with mother and step-father in 1680. He ws granted land in 1685 at Rocky Hill for a shop to make wheels. Thomas died unmarried in 1689. At Probate Court, Sept. 24, 1689 brothers John[2], James[2], William[2], Nathaniel[2] and Joseph[2] appeared as his heirs as he left neither a widow nor children. They paid each living sister, probably four at that time, and divided the remainder among themselves.

Susannah[2], b. Aug. 4, 1650; m. Oct. 26, 1671, William Story.

Elizabeth,[2] b. May 31, 1652; m. Mar. 23, 1672, James King born in England; d. June 30, 1715.

Joseph[2], b. — , 1658; m. Mary Wood daughter of Isaih and Mary (Thompson) Wood. She was born Oct. 31, 1653.

Sarah[2], b. — ; m. Nov. 1679 Nathaniel Hovey.

Nathaniel[2], b. Jan. 1663; m. Mary Jackson.

child, unborn at time of death of John[1].

Elizabeth Emerson Fuller, after the death of John[1], married before 1672, Thomas Perrin. Additional information about her has not been found except that she shared in the estate of her husband John[1] and joined with her son James[2] in the settlement of the estate March 25, 1678.

The will of John[1] left nothing to sons John and William as he said that their uncle, William, had provided for them. And he also stated that daughters Susannah and Elizabeth had been sufficiently provided for by their grandfather, probably Thomas[1] Emerson. His wife Elizabeth Emerson Fuller and son James[2] were named executors. The inventory for the estate was filed Sept. 25, 1666 and was £344.17.0—a considerable sum for that date and for an immigrant who had been in this country for only thirty-one years. It was divided into seven parts and distributed to the Widow Elizabeth and to sons: James, Thomas, Nathaniel and Joseph. Also to daughter Sarah and the child to be born.

Brabrook

Before continuing with the Fuller line, the connecting line of Brabrook will be considered as John[2] married Rachel Brabrook.

As was so often the case in years past when spelling was apt to be on a basis of phonetics, there are several spellings of Brabrook; Braybrook, Broodbrook, Brabrick, etc.

Very little has been found on this family, and as is so often the case, it is conflicting and of questionable accuracy. John Brabrook was probably the immigrant of the line. He is listed as living in Watertown, Mass. in 1640 with Elizabeth as a wife. In 1654 he died. The children of John and Elizabeth Brabrook were:[6] [7]

Elizabeth, b. Nov. 4, 1640; m. David Cummings.

John, b. Apr. 12, 1642.

Thomas, b. May 4, 1643 in Watertown; m. 1669 Abagail Temple.

Samuel, living 1667.

Rebecca, m. in Concord, Mass. Sept 15, 1666 Adam Draper. She turned 21 in Sept. 1669 so she was born in Sept. 1648 and was living in Newbury.

Sarah Rachel, m. Mar. 19, 1677, John[2] Fuller

Note: Rebecca, Sarah and Rachel were minors in 1668.

In the *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire*[7] following the name of John in the listing of the children there is this statement: "will, Newbury, 27 June 1662, names Uncle Henry Short, gives interest in house and land to br. Thomas after mother's death and all estate in England equally to mother, bros. Samuel and Joseph and 4 sist." In 1662 John was only twenty years of age, but this does seem to be his will. His father had died in 1654, and it checks out as far as family is concerned except for a brother Joseph. He did have brothers Thomas and Samuel. Savage[6] mentions a Joseph, but it is not clear whether he is a brother or an uncle of John. The statement about an estate in England tends to prove that John, the father, was the immigrant. It may also mean that John and Elizabeth were married before they came to this country. Also, the mention of Henry Short as an uncle, means that John, the son's mother, Elizabeth, was Elizabeth Short.

John Fuller

Very little information has been found on John[2] Fuller. He married Rachel Brabrook March 19, 1677 when he was thirty-four years of age. He was probably living at that time in Hampton, N.H. His Uncle

William had lived there and he lived with him and was given land by him.[3]

William Hyslop Fuller[3] has this interesting item in his account of John[2] Fuller.

> Vol. 1, Page 415, "Provincial Papers of N.H." mentions John Fuller of Hampton, bound in the sum of £100, that Rachel, his wife, appear on account of Witchcraft, 1680.

Nothing more has been found on this except some indication that it was a case of mistaken identity. It could not have been too serious as Joseph[4], a grandson, named one of his daughters Rachel, presumably for her great grandmother Rachel Brabrook Fuller. John[2] also gave one of his daughters the name of her mother.

The children of John[2] and Rachel (Brabrook) Fuller were:[3]

> John[3], b. Jan. 12, 1678(?); d. Jan. 19, 1715
> Benoni[3], b. Jan. 12, 1678; d. Feb. 25, 1761. Lived in North Hampton and died without heirs.
> James[3], b. Mar. 27, 1679; m. Mary (Brown?)
> Elizabeth,[3] b. — unmarried in 1725
> Rachel[3], b. — m. July 29, 1719 John Bond of Salisbury.
> Thomas,[3] b. Aug. 27, 1695; m. Hannah Chase b. May 10, 1711, m. Oct. 1, 1730 Miller, settled in Sandown.

The will of John[2], of July 9 and December 2, 1719, names five children. This checks with the preceding list as John[3] had died in 1715. The *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire*[7] mentions Benoni[3] who never married and died February 25, 1761'ae 83' d.s.p. (without issue). It then goes on immediately as follows; "In 1760 he had deeded one half of his homestead and livestock to David Batchelder whose purchases from the heirs include Love Wormwood of Epsom, Ithamar and wife Mary Seavey, and Fullers: Tho. of Sandown, Joseph of Chester (married Joanna), John of Epsom, Jeremiah of Portsmouth." At this point there is a period. All of those named, except Thomas, are children of his brother James[3]. Thomas[3] is his brother and nineteen years younger. The account goes on to mention Elizabeth[3] and Rachel[3], but they apparently were not included in the will of their uncle.

James Fuller

James[3] was the son of John[2] and grandson of John[1]. As reported in the previous section, he was born in Hampton March 27, 1679. The Genealogy of the descendants of the various Fullers[3] says that he married Mary, but gives no family name. The *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire*[7] lists "Brown" as a family name for her but follows it with a question mark. The most likely prospect seems to be Mary Brown, daughter of William, a mariner of Boston, Mass. and Scarborough, Me. She was about the right age. Another prospect would be Mary, daughter of John Brown, who was an original settler of Hampton. While she was in the right area, she was too old to be having children in 1704–1721 period as she was born in 1655. No other Brown listed with the given name of Mary seems to be the right one, so we will have to go ahead without a family name for our Mary.

The children of James[3] and Mary (—) Fuller were:[3]

James[4], b. Dec. 2, 1704 in Hampton.

Joseph[4], b. — , in Hampton, m. Joanna Seavey.

Mary[4], b. Aug. 17, 1713 in Hampton; m. Ithamar[4] Seavey and resided in Rochester, N.H. in 1747.

Elizabeth[4], b. June 28, 1715 in Rye, N.H.; m. Henry Seavey and had Joseph[5], baptised 1744, Joseph,[5] 2nd, baptised 1748. 1746, Catherine, b. — , and Olive[5], baptised 1748.

Jeremiah[4], b. Sept. 25, 1717, in Rye, N.H.; m. Mary Scadgel.

Lovey,[4] b. May 14, 1721, in Rye N.H.; m. Oct 26, 1714 William Wormwood.

Joseph[4] Fuller married Joanna[4] Seavey the daughter of Joseph[3] and Hannah (—) Seavey. Joseph[3] Seavey was the son of Henry[2] and Sarah (Pierce) (Jones) (Mattone) Seavey. And Henry[2] was the son of Thomas[1] Seavey. However, the marriages with the Seavey's did not end here. Mary[4] Fuller, a younger sister of Joseph[4] Fuller, married Ithamar[4] Seavey. Mary and Ithamar were second cousins. Her grandfather was Henry[2] Seavey, who was a brother of Samuel[2] Seavey the grandfather of Ithamar Seavey. And for the third intermarriage of this series, Elizabeth[4] Fuller married Henry[4] Seavey (Joseph[3], Henry[2], Thomas[1]), a second cousin of Ithamar[4] Seavey. There are more marriages between the two families. As shall be seen, one or possibly two, daughters of Joseph[4] and Joanna[4] (Seavey) Fuller married Solomon[5] Seavey the son of Samuel[4] and Hannah[4] (Seavey) Seavey.

Following the list of the children of Joseph[4] and Joanna[4] Fuller in *The Genealogy of Some of the Fullers*[3] there is this statement: "That portion of Hampton in which James[4] Fuller settled was later annexed to Rye." This indicates that the Fullers and the Seaveys lived very close to each other.

Joseph Fuller[4]

Joseph[4] Fuller, son of James[3] and Mary (—) Fuller, married Joanna Seavey, March 3, 1733. They had the following eleven children all born in Rye, N.H.:

Elizabeth[5], b. Sept. 14, 1733; d. young.
Joanna[5], b. Dec. 6, 1734; d. young.
Mary[5], b. Aug. 5, 1736.
Joanna[5], b. — , 1737.
Joseph[5], b. Nov. 4, 1738.
Elizabeth[5], b. Sept. 25, 1740.
James[5], b. — , 1743.
Hannah, b. — , 1747.
Rachel[5], b. — , 1749.
David[5], b. — , 1751.
Sarah[5], b. — , 1753.

As mentioned earlier, Solomon[5] Seavey married one of these girls and possibly a second.

As information, other than that already given, has not been found, we will go on to the chapter on Solomon[5] Seavey.

NOTES

1. *Genealogical and Personal Memoirs Relating to the Families of Boston and Eastern Massachusetts* by William Richard Cutter, A.M., page 483–5.

2. *The Ipswich Emersons, AD 1636–1900* by Benjamin Kendall Emerson, page 25.

3. *Genealogy of Some Descendants of Captain Matthew Fuller, John Fuller of Newton, John Fuller of Lynn, John Fuller of Ipswich, Robert Fuller of Dorchester and Dedham* compiled by William Hyslop Fuller, 1914. Pages 175–180 inclusive.
4. *The Planters of The Commonwealth 1620–1640* by Charles Edward Banks. pages 161–164 inclusive.
5. *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register* Vol. LIII, pages 335–341 inclusive.
6. *Savage's Genealogical Dictionary of New England* Vol. II p. 117.
7. *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire* by Noyes, Libby and Davis, page 102 and 249–50.

CHAPTER XIII

Solomon[5] Seavey

With Solomon[5] Seavey (Samuel[4], Samuel[3], Samuel[2], Tomas[1]), the descendants of the direct line of Thomas[1] Seavey that is being followed started to move out of the Rye-Portsmouth area. We also start to encounter a diminishing supply of information. As the family members moved west across New England into unsettled, or sparcely settled area, there was less information recorded. Families often lived at a distance from the settlement where the town clerk was located. Travel was difficult and there was little need to make the trip except at rare intervals. Churches, if they existed, were served by intinerant ministers. If they recorded births, marriages and deaths, they often neglected to transfer them to official records or just lost them. The few vital statistics that were recorded were sometimes lost in fires or became misplaced over the years. Town clerks kept their records in their homes, which were usually cabins and many were consumed by fires. In the investigations for this book, the records for the periods of interest in Grafton Town, Grafton County, N.H. and Georgia Town, Franklin County, Vt. were definitely lost in fires. The same is probably true for other New Hampshire and Vermont towns for which records for the years of interest have not been found. So, as the family members moved across New England for the generations of Solomon[5], William[6], Solomon[7] and connecting lines, there is going to be less and less information from prime sources such as town records, church records, etc.

As recorded in Chapter XI, Solomon[5] Seavey was the son of Samuel[4] and Hannah[4] (Seavey) Seavey. He was born in Rye, N.H. Feb. 26, 1736.[1] He was their oldest child and had at least one brother, Samuel[5] and two sisters, Deborah and Hannah. There may have been two more sisters and two more brothers plus one brother, who died very young, as brought out in Chapter XI.

The first mention of Solomon[5] is when he volunteered for service against the French and Indians in 1757.[2] At that time he was twenty-one years of age. His brother, Samuel[5] who was nineteen years of age at the time or his father Samuel[4] also volunteered. As neither Samuel had a middle name or initial, it is impossible to tell whether it was Samuel[4] or Samuel[5]. Moses Seavey, probably Moses[3] (Benjamin[2], Thomas[1]), who would be a cousin of Solomon[5] and Samuel[5], was in the group that volunteered, but he enlisted and was discharged in the month of August of 1757. Solomon[5] enlisted in May of 1757 and was discharged in October 1757. Samuel en-

listed in May, but was not discharged until November of the same year. They were assigned to Fort William and Mary which was on what was known as the Great Island. Later it became Newcastle and was at the entrance to the Piscataqua River and the harbor of Portsmouth, N.H.

The Indians gave the New England settlers trouble from the very earliest days. The raid or massacre of 1691 at Sandy Beach (later the Rye area) has already been mentioned. The problems increased as the population increased through birth and the arrival of additional settlers. As the population moved across New England, up into Maine and up into New York state, the Indians became alarmed. The same was true of the French along the St. Lawrence River and Canada. They were not colonists and settlers like the English, but the spread of the latter and the displacement of the native Indian population endangered their trading operations. Besides, the French were traditional enemies of the English and they had been fighting off and on in Europe, the British Isles and at sea for hundreds of years. It was only natural that the Indians and the French should join together in an attempt to arrest the spread of the English settlers to the north and the west.

In 1756, the French and Indians under General Montcalm carried out a campaign that had been planned by the Marquis de Vandrevil, Govenor General of Canada, that resulted in the capture of Oswego in New York. This again gave the French control of Lake Ontario. The next year Montcalm led an expedition that moved south along Lake Champlain and on down to the south end of Lake George where he attacked Fort William Henry. Although manned by 2,000 men, the garrison exhausted their supply of powder and lead and agreed on the 3rd of August to surrender. The terms provided for safe conduct with their baggage to Fort Edward, a distance of about fifteen miles. When the colonial troops marched out of the fort, they were immediately attacked by a horde of Indians from the forces of Montcalm. Without ammunition the surrendered troops could not defend themselves and the French and Canadian forces could not, or at least did not, restrain them. They tomahawked, scalped, murdered and robbed the defenseless retreating soldiers. The New Hampshire batallion was in the rear and suffered severely. Out of 200, eight were taken prisoner or killed.

As the news traveled east all of the New England colonies ere alarmed and greatly concerned. Emotions ran high and steps were taken immediately to provide for the defense of the colonies. New Hampshire immediately raised a battalion of 250 men for the defense of Fort Edward to be commanded by Major Thomas Tash of Durham, N.H.. They were posted at the fort at Number Four, now Charlestown, N.H. located in the southwest corner of the state. At this point, the presentation in Potter[2] is not clear. Solomon is listed as being at Fort William and Mary from August to October of 1757, Samuel for the period from August to November and Moses for August only. Samuel Seavey is shown as serving additionally from April 26, 1758 to Nov. 26, 1758 in another company under a different captain. It is not clear

whether they were in the expedition against Louisburg, Nova Scotia or served on the "Western Frontier," which would mean in New York state in the general area of Lake George.

There seems to be no question about a short period of military service for Solomon[5] Seavey. But no information has been found to indicate that he was involved in any combat. Samuel, and it could be either Samuel[4] or Samuel[5], served twice and maybe three times, but again we do not know just where he served and whether he was involved in any actual fighting.

It is also quite possible that Solomon or Samuel, or both, might have participated in the capture of Fort William and Mary before the actual start of the Revolution. The names of the Rye volunteers, who assembled informally on their own and took this fort with its guns and good supply of ammunition, have not been preserved. Since it was a spontaneous action, there may never have been a list of the participants.

The next record found for Solomon is for his marriage. Parsons[3] lists Solomon[5] Seavey as marrying March 30, 1758—Fallen. The Rye church records list the same event with the given name of the bride not legible, but with the family name legible as Fuller. The genealogist retained by the author, by checking birth, baptismal and other records has determined that the bride had to be Mary[5] Fuller, daughter of Joseph[4] and Joanna[4] (Seavey) Fuller. Solomon[5] Seavey was the son of Seavey second cousins, his parents being grandchildren of Samuel[2] and Henry[2] Seavey. The wife of Solomon[5] was a daughter of the sister of his mother so they were first cousins from this relationship. They were third cousins by way of Samuel[2] and Henry[2] Seavey.

As mentioned earlier, the prime data that has been available begins at this point to diminish with Solomon[5] Seavey. The first report from Harold L. Hanson in 1977 lists Solomon[5] as marrying Joanna[5] Fuller a sister of Mary[5]. Joanna, born in 1737, was the second daughter of Joseph[4] and Joanna[4] (Seavey) Fuller with the name Joanna. When the first daughter died at a very young age, a later daughter was given the name of Joanna. Mr. Hanson has not been able to cite a record for this marriage, but it might have taken place with Mary[5], an elder sister of Joanna[5], being the second wife. A town record of Poplin, N.H. (now Fremont) shows Mary as the wife and correspondence in the Hall files, which will be explained later, from a descendant of Edward[6], a son of Solomon[5], says that Mary[5] Fuller was his maternal ancestor.

Parson's[3] lists two children for Solomon[5] Seavey. They are: Joseph, baptized 1759 and a daughter that is not named that was born in 1762.

Solomon[5] Seavey had a total of five children according to information compiled by Harold L. Hanson. It is not known how many were born in Rye and how many were born after he left there. If he actually had two wives we do not know how many were children of the first wife and how many were children of the second wife. We do know that he had a wife Mary and four children when a notice as served on him in Poplin in Chester Town in 1777.

Parsons[3] has a few paragraphs on the distribution of the Glebe lands of Rye on page 160. At the time Parsons was writing his history, he did not know whether the Glebe land was distributed in 1750 or 1760. Neither did he know when the land was set aside and who contributed. Anyway, Solomon[5] Seavey is listed as a recipient of a share of it. He probably inherited this from his father Samuel[4] Seavey. Also, on the list are: William, James, Amos and Moses Seavey. Some are descendants of William[1] and others of Thomas[1] Seavey.

The only tax list for Rye on which Solomon appears is one with the heading: "Taxes about 1777". Solomon is listed under the column designated as "Head" and the column designated "House". Samuel, Jr., probably Samuel[5], is listed under "Head" only, neither seems to have been taxed. A Samuel Seavey is listed, probably Samuel[4], under the headings for "Head" and "House". He paid a tax of £3. While this shows that Samuel[4] and Samuel[5] were both living in 1777, the amount of tax for Samuel[4] is much smaller than expected. His father was a wealthy man for his time and Samuel[4] was one of the beneficiaries for his estate. The highest tax on the list was £92 and quite a few were taxed between £50 and £92. The next tax list given in Parson's is for 1782. Solomon Seavey and both Samuels are missing from it. This is quite significant as has been mentioned in an earlier chapter.

The exact date of the move to Poplin (now Fremont) N.H. is not known, but Solomon and his family were definitely there in 1777. Poplin is only twenty-five miles west of Rye.

In the town records for the area, in which includes Poplin, there was for the date of Jan. 15, 1777 this unusual and interesting entry:

> Paid to Constable Stephen Fellows for Warning out of this Parish Solomon Seavey and Mary his wife and their four children and making return of the same 0 09 80.

This was found on micro-film at the New Hampshire State Library. Fortunately, one of the senior librarians came to the rescue of the author with an explanation. It seems that in the early days when the population started to move to the west, the various communities at their town meeting would vote to ask any individuals or family that they though might become a public charge, to leave the community. It was called "warning out" and the local constable had the responsibility of telling them that they should leave. For this he was paid a fee, in this case, nine shilling and eighty pence. Inability to pay local taxes was one indication that a person or family might need public help.

Solomon[5] Seavey evidently satisfied the local authorities that he would not be a public charge, as he did not leave. He continued to pay taxes regularly, as far as can be determined from the records, until 1804. In that year an abatement of his taxes was paid to Joshua Dugles which may mean that Solomon[5] died during the course of the year and Dugles was handling his estate. In some years, he seems to have paid his tax bill by giving the community a cow, and in others he may have bought a cow someone else used to pay taxes. In 1796 he was paid £1 by the town as a

refund of the poll tax for his son. It appears he paid the tax then convinced them that the son was not twenty-one years of age or had left the area so he received a refund.

There is one possible inconsistency in the town records. The "warning out" says wife and four children, and is dated Jan. 15, 1777. The list that follows show five children with the last born in 1777, but with the month and day not known. This child could have been born later in the year or the oldest son, Joseph, could have left home by this time. He was in Grafton, N.H. in 1790 and was eighteen years of age in 1777 so he was old enough to have left home.

Nothing has been found as to when and where Solomon[5] died and the same is true of Mary[5] Fuller, his wife. One entry in the town records for 1781 mentions a widow Fuller in connection with Solomon[5] Seavey. This would undoubtedly be Joanna[4] (Seavey) Fuller, the mother of Mary the wife of Solomon, as she was born in 1712. She was sixty-nine years of age at the time. The little that has been found in the way of records seems to indicate that Solomon was very poor and that he had a hard time. No record has been found for land ownership so we do not know what he did for a living. His situation probably was not different from that of many others as they migrated across New England. The only land suitable for crops was in the valleys and there was not much of it. Working in the forests or lumbering was about the only other thing to do. It is difficult to understand the seeming complete lack of funds and assets for Solomon. His grandfather Samuel[3] was a wealthy man and his father Samuel[4] inherited a part of his estate. The Fuller family of his wife were also substantial people for their time. However, she was one of nine children and Solomon was one of a larger family regardless of what count is accepted.

As far as is known, Solomon and his wife finished their days in Poplin, N.H. The 1800 census shows them living there with no children remaining at home. What follows comes close to being pure guess work. A Betsy Seavey, age 77, is buried in the Elm Street Cemetery of Montpelier, Vt. As she died in 1842 she was born in 1765. This could be the daughter of Solomon who is listed as having been born in 1762. Mistakes of a few years were often made in stating ages, especially for monuments. Betsy or Elizabeth may never have married, but remained at home with her parents. She then went to Montpelier and died there.

There is another question for which a satisfactory answer has not been found. Solomon[5] Seavey is the logical one in the direct line of Fannie C. Harrison to have served in the Revolutionary War. He was forty years of age in 1776 and forty-six in 1781 when the hostilities ended. His father, Samuel[4] for whom service is being claimed, was sixty-two years of age in 1776 and sixty-eight when hostilities ceased. Solomon did serve earlier in the war with the French and Indians. It is the belief of the writer that he did some service with one or more militia units but that no records have survived. There were frequent calls for militia service and many were for very short periods. Practically all able bodied men in New England served because the

many calls often exhausted the list of available men.

The children of Solomon[5] Seavey follow. It is being assumed that all are children of his wife Mary (Fuller) Seavey although the possibility exists that one or two of them may be children of her sister Joanna who may have been a first wife who died when the first or second child was born in Rye. The gap of eight years between the second and third child would seem to confirm this.

1. Joseph[6]
   b. March 26, 1759[3]
   m. Sarah Hoyt
2. Daughter
   b. March 1762[4]
3. William[6]
   b. 1768[5 6]
   m. 1759 Bethana Buffum[5 6]
   d. 1840 at Ellerburg, Clinton County, N.Y.[5 6]
4. Samuel[6]
   b. 1772
5. Edmund[5 6]
   b. 1777
   m. Elizabeth Smith, b. 1778, d. Oct. 28, 1851
   d. Apr. 6, 1855

Joseph[6] Seavey moved to Grafton, N.H. and is listed there in the 1790 census with one male child under sixteen years of age. He is also listed as being in Grafton in the 1800 census as well as in 1810.

There has already been some speculation about the daughter born in 1762 but for whom we have no name.

William[6] will be discussed in a later chapter as he is the next generation of the direct line being followed.

Edmund seems to have ended up in Woodstock, Vt. which is just a few miles west of White River Junction, Vt. He was in Tunbridge, Vt. in 1800, and Lebanon, N.H. in 1810 with one male under ten years of age. He and his wife are buried at Woodstock, Vt. which is not far from Lebanon, N.H.

NOTES

1. *N.H. Genealogical Records* Vol. 1:39.
2. *The Military History of the State of New Hampshire 1623–1861*, pages 189, 190, 197, 198, 205, 224 and 225. By Chandler E. Potter.
3. *History of Rye, N.H.* Laugdon B. Parsons, 1905, p. 536.
4. *Baptismal Records of Rye, N.H.*
5. *Records of Harold L. Hanson.*
6. *Files of Mrs. A.B. Hall in Archive of M.E. Historic and Genealogical Society*, Boston, Mass.

CHAPTER XIV

Buffum, Pope, Buxton, Osborne and Joslin

When William[6] Seavey, son of Solomon[5] and Mary (Fuller) Seavey, married, he brought into the family the first wife known to be from outside the immediate Portsmouth-Rye, New Hampshire area. She was Bethana Buffum (listed in some records as Bethany). They were married in Grafton, N.H. She was from a family of Quakers who, with members of families of the various Buffum connecting lines, were persecuted and banished to, or forced to move to, Rhode Island. From there, they moved to Richmond, N.H. and then on to Grafton, N.H. The Buffum family and several connecting lines will be traced before telling about William[6], his wife and their large family of children.

Buffum and Ward

To obtain material, facts and lore for a combination family history and genealogy, requires extensive searching in many places—libraries, files of public records, etc. With luck, a bit of information is found in one place, a crumb in some other place and still more elsewhere. This must be put together and reconciled with descrepencies and differences eliminated in so far as practical. At rare intervals, enough material will be found in one place for a page or even two pages of the final product. It is most unusual to find more, but for the Buffum family and connecting lines the author was most fortunate, or at least he thought he was. For them, and their connecting lines, whose existence was not known to him or his wife until he started trying to trace the line of the wife of William[6] Seavey, a thirty-page typed manuscript entitled *Buffum Genealogy* was found. It started with the immigrant Buffum and his wife and carried the line through five generations to the sixth. This was the generation of Bethana who married William[6] Seavey. All connecting lines were accounted for, and they, and the immigrant Buffums, were carried back to England. The name of the author, Fred S. Hammond, Syracuse, N.Y. was given, but no address and there was no date on the manuscript.

The information in the manuscript is quite complete, is documented, identifies tradition where tradition is used and seemed to show thorough and honest research. To date, the author, nor any of his family, has been located and it is not known whether he is living.

Based on this information, this author prepared the manuscript for this chapter and had it typed for the final composing for the book. Before release, I learned of a recently published 616-page book, *Buffum Family*.[1] A copy was obtained without

delay. It contains so much more information than the Hammond account and there are so many changes that the decision has been made to rewrite this chapter completely. It is believed that the information on *Buffum Family* being later, and the work of many family members, should be accepted for this account rather than that used for the previous draft.

In *The Buffum Family* we find this interesting information on pages XIX and XX:

> The reconstructed church of St. Nicholas, Great Yarmouth, Norfolk County, England was the site of many fourteenth and fifteenth century Buffum family events. It was badly damaged by bombing during World War II, but has been rebuilt with the original walls.
>
> About 12 miles to the west in the small village of South Walsham are the remains of the church of St. Lawrence where Robert Thomazin Buffum were married in 1634. The book of records which was written from earlier records . . . . . remains in good condition and can be seen by appointment.

On the facing page there is a photographic copy of the entry in the records for the marriage of Robert and Thomazin. It can be read with careful study.

While the general plan for this work of following the direct family line will be utilized for the Buffum chapter, siblings in each generation will be listed and some general information for some of them will be included. They are such an interesting family and are a part of so much of the history of their period that they cannot be passed over entirely.

It is the recommendation of the author that any reader seriously interested in the Buffums and their connecting lines purchase, or find in a library, a copy of the *Buffum Family*.[1] Those doing so will be well rewarded. They were a remarkable family. The limited information that can be included here is only a small part of what can be found in *Buffum Family*.

Robert[1] Buffum

The following is from *Buffum Family*.[2]

1. Robert Buffum, (son of James and Margery (Raylton) Bougham), born circa 1590, probably in Buffam, Yorkshire, England; died 6 March 1669, buried in First Quaker Burying Ground located on a small hill on the eastern side of Boston Street, just north of the head of Goodhue Street and eventually removed to Harmony Grove Cemetery, Salem, Massachusetts; married first as recorded in the Registry of St. Nicholas Church, Great Yarmouth, Norfolk County, England, 23 August 1613, MARGARET BLESSING: married second at Church of St. Lawrence, South Walsham, Norfolk, England, 11 August 1634, THOMASINE (WARD) THOMPSON (hereafter known as TAMOSON), born England, 1606; d. Salem, Massachusetts, 23 March 1688 at age 82 years; daughter probably of George and Dionis (Burrow) Ward; widow of a Mr. Thompson, probably John Thompson of England.

Children of Robert and Margaret (Blessing) Buffum:

2. Mary Buffum, bap. 21 Aug. 1614
3. Sam (uel) Buffum, bap. 22 Dec. 1616
4. Debora (h) Buffum, bap. 26 Sept. 1619
5. Jos (h)ua Buffum, bap. 25 Aug. 1622 (Joshua?)
6. Abraham Buffum, bap. 17 Aug. 1625
7. Jacob Buffum, bap. 28 Oct. 1627
8. John Buffum, bap. 22 May 1631

Child of probably John and Thomasine (Ward) Thompson:

9. Margaret Thompson (known as Margaret Buffum), b. circa 1633.

Children of Robert and Tamoson (Ward) Thompson Buffum:

10. Joshua Buffum, b. 22 Feb. 1635 (bap. 28 Feb. 1635)
11. Mary Buffum, b. circa 1637 (bap. 2 Feb. 1637)
12. Debora (h) Buffum, b. 1639
13. Damaris Buffum, b. 30 Jan. 1641
14. Robard Buffum, b. 30 Nov. 1634
15. Lydia Buffum, b. 19 Feb. 1644
16. Sarah Buffum, b. circa 1648
17. Caleb Buffum, b. 29 July 1650

"Tamoson Buffum"—This Christian name is a corruption of Thomasine. It is variously spelled in early records. The compiler prefers to concur with Walter N. Buffum, the writer, with the spelling "Tamoson:, because that is the way Joshua Buffum spells the name (his mother's) in his account book . . ."! For the sake of consistency this form, "Tamoson", has been assigned to the wife of Robert Buffum and all bearing the name through the third generation. There after the best evidence is that those who possessed the name used the shorter form, Tamson.

The maiden name of "Ward" is used based on the evidence uncovered through the efforts of Walter N. Buffum, which is more conclusive than the previously common belief that it was Potter.

Persistent and diligent search has been made to discover the place from which Robert[1] Buffum emigrated to Massachusetts Bay Colony, the date of departure and arrival, and the ship on which he traveled, his family genealogy in England, the genealogy of his wife Tamoson, and other related data. In the opinion of the compiler, no one has yet completely solved the problems. However, the following is what this compiler feels to be the best evidence to date (1974).

Robert[1] Buffum came to America of English stock. In a letter dated June 12, 1633, written from Yorkshire, England, stating, "Goodman Choat with his wife and goodman Bowham and goodman Bacon and his good wife of Boxford having divers young children want to go to New England."

He brought with him a "Breeches Bible" from England.

Robert[1] Buffum first appears in the Salem records for August 29, 1638 when he applied for land. His request was not granted until October of 1649 when he was alloted forty acres of upland and five acres of meadow or marsh. He was identified as a "seedman" or farmer. He seems to have specialized in growing crops to produce seed to sell to others. Over the years, he received additional grants of land.

The following are from *Buffum Family*.[3]

Marriage recorded in the Register of St. Nicholas Church, Gre. Yarmouth, County of Norfolk, England.

James Bougham and Margery Raylton
13 Feb. 1589

Marriage recorded in the Register of St. Nicholas Church, Great Yarmouth, County of Norfolk, England

George Ward and Dionis Burrow
28 Jan. 1596

Thomas Mayhew and Margery Buffam (widow of James Bougham) 29 Jan. 1598

Robert Buffum and Margaret Blessing
23 Aug. 1613

Baptisms recorded in the Register of St. Nicholas Church, Great Yarmouth, County of Norfolk, England

Mary Buffham of Robert and Marg:
August 21st, 1614

Sam: Buffham of Robert and Marg:
Dec. 22nd, 1616

Debora Buffum of Robert and Marg:
Sept. 26th, 1619

Baptisms recorded in the Register of St. Nicholas Church, Great Yarmouth, County of Norfolk, England

Josua Buffam of Robert and Marg:
August 25th, 1622

Abraham Buffum of Robert and Marg:
August 17th, 1625

Jacob Buffum of Robert and Marg:
October 28th, 1627

John Buffum of Robert and Marg:
May 22nd, 1631

Burials recorded in the Register of St. Nicholas Church, Great Yarmouth, County of Norfolk, England.

Josua Buffam, 'puer' (boy)
23 Sept. 1631
Jacob Buffum 'infants'
13 Oct. 1631
Abraham Buffam, 'infs'
21 Oct. 1631

Death in England

Margaret Blessing Buffum, first wife of Robert Buffum between 22 May 1631 and 11 Aug. 1634

Marriage recorded in the Register of St. Nicholas Church, Great Yarmouth, County of Norfolk, England.

John Thompson and Thomasine Ward 29 Nov. 1632

Birth in England

Margaret Thompson, daughter of John Thompson and Thomasine Ward 1633 or early 1634

Letter dated June 12, 1633, written from Yorkshire, England, stating, "Goodman Choat with his wife and goodman Bowham and goodman Bacon with his good wife of Boxford having divers young children want to go to New England."

Note: Goodman Bowham (Buffum) knew Goodman Bacon and his good wife (Rebecca Potter Bacon, dau. of Thomas Potter, Esquire, of Coventry, Warwickchire, England) and it is the will of this Rebecca Bacon in 1655 which makes mention of brother Robert Buffum and his sister Buffum.

Marriage recorded in the Registers of the Church of St. Lawrence, South Walsham, Norfolk, England

Robert Bufham (or Buffham, also Buffam) and Thomazin (also Thomasine) Thompson
August 11th, 1634

Emigration excerpt said to have been signed by Robert Buffam:

". . .to be embarqued in ye 'Planter', Nicholas Trarice, master, bound for New England per certificate and attestacon from Sir Thomas Jay and Mr. Simon Muskett, Justices of the Peace, and the men have taken their oath of allegeance and supremacie." 1634

Baptism recorded in the Register of St. Nicholas Church, Great Yarmouth, County of Norfolk, England

Joshua, son of Robert and Thomasin Buffum
28 Feb. 1635

Note: It seems that the baptism of Joshua and subsequent of Mary Buffum were registered at both Great Yarmouth in 1635 and 1637 respectively and also entered in the registers of Salem, Massachusetts.

Marriages recorded in the Register of St. Nicholas Church, Great Yarmouth, County of Norfolk, England.

Adam Mills, of Yarmouth, single and Mary Buffam
6 Dec. 1635

Adam Mills, widower, and Jane Ward, single
27 Dec. 1636

Samuel Buffham and Margaret Greney, both single
10 Jan. 1637 (Greney also interpreted as Brown by some authority)

Baptism recorded in the Register of St. Nicholas Church, Great Yarmouth, County of Norfolk, England.

Mary, daughter of Robert and Thomasin Buffham
2 Feb. 1637

Will recorded in Archdeaconry of Norfolk County, England

Jeffrey Ward of Great Yarmouth who left "100 pounds of Thomosin Buffam, my sister, now or late the wife of Robert Buffam on New England."
1666

From *Buffum Family* we know that Margaret Blessing died in England. While it

is beyond the scope of this account to follow each of the fifteen children of Robert Buffum and the one daughter of his second wife that he raised, and who carried the name of Buffum, a few comments may be in order. Information already given shows that Joshua, Abraham and Jacob, all children of the first marriage, died in England in 1631. Apparently, Mary (b. 1614) married Adam Mills of Yarmouth, England Dec. 6, 1635 but died within a year as an Adam Mills of the same community and a widower is listed as marrying a Jane Ward Dec. 27, 1636. Samuel Buffum married in England Jan. 10, 1637. This leaves only Deborah (b. 1619) and John for whom we have no information as to whether they remained in England or came to this country.

Margaret, the daughter of the second wife by her first marriage did come over here. She was very much a part of the Quaker activities of the various members of the Buffum family.

Of the children of Robert and Tamoson Buffum two were born in England, Joshua Feb. 22, 1635 and Mary who was baptized Feb. 2, 1637. Their birth is not only registered at Great Yarmouth but in Salem, Mass. The other six children were all born in Salem.

The last date of baptism registered in Great Yarmouth and the date of Aug. 29, 1638 when Robert[1] Buffum applied for a grant of land gives a time period for his arrival in this country.

An item previously quoted would seem to indicate that Robert left England in 1634 or 1635, but he probably did not go on ye *Planter* but waited several years or came over here and went back to return at a later date.

Buffum Family has eight pages on the second generation members of the Buffum family before they came to Caleb[2] the direct line that will be followed. Much of it is excerpts from official records about encounters with authorities by various members of the Buffum family and their relatives and their friends over their religious tenents and behavior. There is nothing to indicate that Robert[1] buffum was a Quaker but his wife Tamoson became one. According to some accounts she joined an active group of Quakers because they were persecuted, and sympathizing, she took them into her home for protection. For this she was punished. Her son Joshua[2] Buffum was an active Quaker as was his wife Demaris Pope the daughter of Joseph[1] Pope and his first wife Demaris. Although Joshua[2] was arrested, jailed and fined and put in the "stocks" repeatedly, he seemed to remain in good standing in the community and was repeatedly given public offices and contracts. The Hammond account, mentioned earlier says that Joshua[2], who was a carpenter and builder, constructed the courthouse in Salem. There are also records extant of other building projects of Joshua[2].

While it really belongs in the account of the next generation which follows, one incident will be included here. There are at least two versions of what took place. Each will be related because each is interesting. We have no way of knowing which is the account of what actually hap-

pened. This is just another instance showing how difficult it is to give an actual account of what happened several centuries ago. The following is from the Hammond account.

> He [Joshua[2] Buffum] with many of his relatives and friends was arrested for attending Quaker services at the house of Nicholas Phelps, June 5, 1658. Joshua was then twenty-three or twenty-four years of age. Amongst those arrested were his uncle and aunt, Lawrence and Cassandra Southwick, Josiah Southwick, Samuel Shattuck, and Nicholas Phelps.
>
> They were first confined in Ipswich jail, and later removed to Boston. From Boston jail they issued a petition, and on Oct. 19, they were again brought before the Court, and ordered to depart out of this jurisdiction, which they refused to do. On May 11, 1659, they were sentenced to banishment, and to depart out of this jurisdiction by the 8th of June next on pain of death. Lawrence and Cassandra Southwick went to Shelter Island, [presumably Shelter Island, N.Y. in Peconic Bay] there they soon died. Joshua Buffum went to Rhode Island. Later in the same year he, with Nicholas Phelps, Samuel Shattuck, and Josiah Southwick [a cousin] went to England, and appealed to King Charles II against authorities of Mass. Bay Colony. Their appeal was successful, and a royal edict was issued requireing that the persecutions cease. Their return was very timely, and just in season to prevent the execution of several of their friends who had been sentenced to death.

The account in *Buffum Family* does not agree. It follows

> Salem, 28 July 1658: ". . . Joshua Buffum fined fifteen shillings for one day's presence at a Quaker meeting and one day's absence from public meeting. The above three, for persisting still in their cause as Quakers were committed to the house of correction, there to be kept until they gave security to renounce their opinions or removed themselves from the jurisdiction." Joshua Buffum, eldest son of Robert and Tamoson (Ward) Buffum, was banished from Salem Colony, 11 March 1659, because of his sympathy toward Quakers. He returned to England, laid his case before the King, Richard Cromwell, who ordered him taken back into the colony. Joshua, along with his mother Tamoson (Ward) Buffum, Lawrence and Cassandra (Potter) Southwick, and Providence Southwick, were persecuted as Quakers in Salem, Massachusetts, in 1658.

The inclination of this author is to accept the Hammond account. The *Buffum Family* account has some obvious flaws. Richard Cromwell was never a king of England. He followed Oliver Cromwell in the interregnum period of Jan. 30, 1649 to May 29, 1660. Furthermore, the event in question was in March of 1659. By the time that the Quaker delegation reached England, the monarchy had probably been restored and Charles II was on the throne.

Since each account mention a trip there was undoubtedly a delegation that went to England. Regardless of the details and exactly what happened, it is a most significant and unusual event. They not only went over the heads of all authorities in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, but then made the trip to England to do it, and presented their plea to the reigning King, Charles II. A round trip to England in those days was not something to be taken lightly and was fraught with danger. At the best, it was not a pleasure trip and probably took at least a month each way. The fact that they dared to make the trip and at their own expense and (peril), shows the determination of these people. That

they were successful and accomplished what they set out to do, is further testimony to their capabilities.

Incidentally, from the old accounts of this period, it is difficult to be sure about family relationships. Quakers would often refer to other Quakers as "sister" and "brother" when they were not blood relatives or even relations by marriage. Unless an actual blood relationship can be determined from records or some other source the terms of "sister" and "brother" must be accepted with caution.

One other instance deserves to be related. Deborah[2] Buffum, third child of Robert[1] and Tamoson Buffum was one of the most aggressive in the Quaker tenents in her family. The following is from the account in *The Buffum Family*.[4] A shorter version of this material is in the Hammond manuscript.

Deborah Buffum was a Quaker, but her husband was not.

It was after her brother Joshua's return from banishment and when the persecution of Quakers had almost ceased for a time, this woman, something over twenty years old at the time, having a good husband and at least one child born in 1659, conceived the idea that she wanted "to spy out the nakedness of the land" so not wanting to be too logical and having left just that number of shreads of modesty as could be counted in a nightgown, she appeared on the roads of Salem. The accounts of this affair don't say so, but we may be sure that she did a lot of talking and testimony bearing at the same time.

Manifestly her appearance in this guise, or rather lack of guise, must have astonished the people and made her and her sect ridiculous for a time. It is not difficult to believe that she was heartily condemned by Quakers as well as non-Quakers.

She was arrested, tried, condemned and the sentence was that she should be whipped at the cart's tail through the streets of Salem and stripped to the waist and tied to the cart's tail. This punishment was inflicted.

Her husband Robert Wilson was not a Quaker, like she, but her tender husband followed after clapping his hat sometimes between the whip and her back.

The Quarterly Court record reads "her barbarous & inhuman goeing naked through the Towne is sentenced to be tied at a Carts tayle with her body naked downward to her wast & whipped from Mr. Gidneye's Gate till she come to her owne house, not exceeding 30 stripes & her mother Buffum & her sister Smith, that were abetted to her to be tyed on either side of her at the carts taile naked to their shifts to ye wast & accompany her".

Luckily for Deborah, Daniel Rumbold, the constable who was chief marshall of this procession, "had bowels of compassion" as he didn't lay on with sufficient power to please the authorities. He was chided for this and explained that "he should not care to be whipped as he whipped her".

Deborah was afterwards prosecuted several times as a "turbulent Quaker" until finally she was arrested for "frequently absenting herself from the public ordinances" the magistrate in despair concluded that she was a hopeless case and dismissed the proceedings because "she is disturbed in her head".

(Walter N. Buffum's notes elaborate further about Deborah and her notoriety. OAP)

Still one more set of recorded incidents will be quoted from The *Buffum Family*.[5]

Society of Friends monthly meeting, Salem, Massachusetts, 6 July 1680: "Daniel Southwick and Provided Gaskill is desired by this meeting to go to Joshua Buffum and Damaris Buffum and to Tamoson Buffum, and to Hannah Buffum, to Kathorn King and John Blethen and Jane Blethen, to Mary Trask and Gerthry Pope,

to John Mason and John Hill also to Lidey Hill and to deal with these contrary spirited people for their disorderly walking, and keeping on their hats and continuing seating in the time when friends of the ministry are at prayer to almight God; and other disorderly things which the above said people are guilty of: which is contrary to the truth, and practice of the Lord's people, and so you are desired to return their answer to the next monthly meeting of friends."

Society of Friends monthly meeting, Salem, Massachusetts, 6 Aug. 1680: "Daniel Southwick and Provided Gaskill being called upon as followeth—we have been with Joshua Buffum and Damaris Buffum and Tamoson Buffum and Hannah Buffum and Kathorn King and John Blethen and Jane Blethen and Mary Trask and Gerthry Pope, and John Mason and John Hill and Lydia Hill and have dealt with them according to the desire of the last monthly meeting, for the disorderly walking, and we find them no less inclineable to doing their ungodly practice, nor to joint with the Lord's people, in his comely holy way of order which he hath ordained by his own spirit in the heart of his chosen, for the honor of his own name, and the good and benefit of his own people. We left them very stubborn and objectionable, refusing to give plain answers according to the truth except John Blethen who gave some small satisfaction upon which Josiah Southwick, and Provided Gaskill was desired by the meeting the same time while the meeting said to go to John Blethen for a further satisfaction, and to obtain his answer which was done accordingly."

Robert Buffum died March 6, 1669, as has been stated earlier. Hammond says that his will, made shortly before his death, was refused probate because the witnesses, being Quakers, refused to make oath to it. His account goes on to say that Tamoson, relict of Robert Buffum, was granted a letter of administration on Nov. 15, 1669. She presented an inventory taken by George Gardner and John Ketchen. The amount of the personal estate was £270–19–00 and included garden seeds, scales, weights, measures, etc. He was also the owner of several tracts of land. This was a substantial estate for the time and an immigrant who had been over here only about thirty-one years.

The account of Hammond goes on to tell about the death-bed wishes of Robert[1], trouble from the husbands of four of his daughters and the will of Tamoson.

Gertrude Pope, widow, testified that "Being at ye house of Robert Buffman when he lay on his death bed, Robert Buffum would have me and Elizabeth Kitchen take notice that what he had as to his estate, he would leave to his wife, for she helped get it and ye children were hers." (Exxex Inst. Coll. Vol.2, p.20.)

It appears that the husbands of Robert's daughters were not entirely satisfied with the administration of their mother-in-law, and that they petitioned for redress "To the Honor'd Countie Court now sitting in Salem." Petition of John Hill, Robert Wilson, William Beane, and Jeremiah Neale, children and heirs of Robert Buffum, deceased—humbly sheweth that whereas our father Robert Buffum died intestate, and an inventory of the estate was brought in by his relict Tamosin, and she appointed administratrix etc., who hath since that time diposed of the same according as her fancy or affection led her, or else keepeth the same still in her hand; we your petioners, being children of deceased, humbly conceive that as children we ought according to the law of God and this jurisdiction, each of us to have our share or portion of that which was our right, and therefore do humbly supplicate this Honor'd Court as fathers of the country to take our causes into you pious hands and Christian consideration, and be fathers to us in helping us that we who are children may not be deprived of that which we humbly conceive according to the law of

God and this jurisdiction is our due." There is also a deposition of Mary Buffum, alias Mary Neale, a girl about 30 years taken before Bartho Gedney, Commissioner, Nov. 25, 1678, but no action seems to have been taken, and the widow appears to have managed the estate until her death.

Her [Tamoson's] will date 10–5–1688 was proved in 19–6–1688, showing that her death occurred between these dates. It is found in Suffolk Probate Court N. 1643.

"I, Thammasen Buffum, of Salem, being very aged, and for the better satisfaction of my children and relations, to ye end that they may live in peace and contentment do make and ordain this my last will and testament in manner and form followeth:

First my will is yt and any decent burial and ye paying all my debts and legacies and receiving of all my debts shall be done by my executors hereinafter mentioned except a debt from Thomas Jones which I have otherwise disposed of, and to see this my will performed.

1st. I give to my daughter Sarah Beane all my everyday wearing clothes and two pair of sheets. I give my daughter Lydia Locker my serge petticoat and two pair of sheets.

I give to my daughter Mary Neale my Castor hat and one great iron pot and my mixed large loose coat, and one pair of small Holland sheets marked "M", and one pair of sheets more; and to my three daughters above mentioned all my small linen and shifts to be equally divided amongst them.

I give to ye four children of my daughter Maragret Smith, namely, Mary Nurse, George Smith, Exercise Pope and Tammasen Smith £10 each and £5 to each of the four in money and £5 to each of the four in movable goods as they are prized in the inventory.

I give Deborah Foster, my grandchild, one great brass kettle and £16 and my will is that Deborah Foster shall have the £16 in money which my sons are to pay by an agreement in three years after my decease, or if her brother Robert Wilson be not satisfied then the land that is their part at Caster Hill and ye £16 to be equally divided between them, or if Robert is contended that his sister Deborah shall have the £16, that then the land be wholly Robert Wilson's.

I give to my grandaughter Dammaris Buffum my coverlid.

I give to my grandaughter Sarah Darling an iron kettle.

I give to my grandson Caleb Buffum my second best iron pot.

I give to my grandaughter Tammasen Buffum my silver cup.

I give to my grandaughter Lydia Leonard one of my best pewter platters.

I give to my grandaughter Tammasen Beane one young cow to be kept in the hands of my son Caleb Buffum until she comes of age or her marriage if she survive or if she die then to her brother Robert Beane.

I give to my grandaughter Elizabeth Kellam one pair of sheets more.

I give to my daughter Mary Neale a debt of about 16 or 18 shillings which is due us from Thomas Jones.

I give her son Jeremiah our cow.

I give my son Joshua Buffum 3 acres of fresh meadow which I bought from Nicholas Brown lying near Reading.

I give to my son Caleb Buffum 2 acres of meadow lying near to Samuel Gardiner's farm where Thomas Gould now liveth and also my great pewter basin.

The rest to be divided betwixt my sons and daughters. The last I appoint my two sons Joshua and Caleb to be my executors to perform this my last will and testament. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand this 10th day of May 1688.

Signed Tammasen X Buffum
her
mark

Witnesses.
Edward Flint.
Samuel Shattuck Sr.
Roger Derby.

Quakers, Rhode Island and Roger Williams

At this point the account of the Buffums and their connecting lines will be interrupted to tell about the Quakers in early New England, Roger Williams and the settlement of Rhode Island. However, this interesting part of the history of the Massachusetts Bay Colony is included in most history books used in our schools and more fully recorded in many special histories, encyclopedias etc. Here, there will be included only a brief account to bring the Quakers, Roger Williams and the settlement of Rhode Island into our story of the Buffums and their connecting lines. Michael Kraus[6] in his history tells the story very well and in a few word so it will be quoted.

> The Massachusetts Bay Colony was within a few years, probably the most powerful settlement of Englishmen overseas. Her influence tended to spread all over New England. She annexed New Hampshire for forty years and also added Maine to her territory in 1652 . . . .
>
> The same factors which had prompted migration of Puritans from England—desire for freedom from religious constraints, the urge for economic and social betterment—were likewise operative in the minds of people moving out of Massachusetts Bay . . . . But the Holy Commonwealth would not contain heresy, political or religous, and heretics were forced to leave. Roger Williams was the chief of these.
>
> Williams, then just past thirty years of age, was pastor of the Salem Church in 1631. To his congregation and anyone who would listen he preached doctrines which made him more akin to our times than most of his contemporaries. Civil government, he claimed, had no power over men's religious beliefs; sanctity of conscience was inviolable. Under his doctrine of "soul liberty" churches orthodox or heterodox would be granted equal liberty. So novel a doctrine would blot out hatreds kept virulent by persecution, for they would be erased in a society based on the acceptance of religious differences. Contrary to the practice of men throughout Christendom including Winthrop [govenor of the Massachusetts Bay Colony] and other Puritan leaders, Williams believed in separation of Church and State. "Forced worship stincks in Gods nostrils," he asserted with his ususal vigor, and "there is no other prudent, christian way of preserving peace in the world, but by permission of differing consciences"
>
> It was these deviations of Williams from orthodxy that struck the imagination of later generations who found his ideals congenial to their own thought.
>
> He asserted, too, that whites had wrongfully expropriated land from the natives, and could only gain vital land title from the true owners of the soil, the Indians, by outright purchase. Clearly, Williams was a revolutionary influence in Massachusetts and in the view of its rulers, dangerous to its continued existence. Called upon to denounce his beliefs, Williams refused, declaring himself "ready to be bound and banished and even to die in New England". The authorities decreed that he be exiled from Massachusetts Bay. (It was Artemus Ward who said that Puritans came to this country "to worship God according to their own consciences and to keep other people from worshippin' Him accordin' to theirn.")
>
> Govenor Winthrop less implacable than his colleagues toward Williams, had privately advised him to steer a course for Narragansett Bay, outside the jurisdiction of Massachusetts. "I took his prudent motion," said the outcast, "as an hint and voice from God." Leaving Salem "in winter snow which I feel yet." (he wrote in retrospect thirty-five years after the event), he struck for the saftey of a place without a government, without even a name. "For fourteen weeks, "he recalled, he was lost in a bitter season, not knowing what bread or bed did mean." Often alone, against the freezing night, he wan-

dered through the woods, unwarmed and unfed. The worst of his trials came to an end when he found sanctuary among the Indians who remembered him as their champion.

Williams and a few companions at length found a place to make their settlement. This nameless site he called Providence in gratitude for God's mercy. "I desired," he said, "it might be a shelter for persons of distressed conscience." Putting his beliefs into practice Williams bought the land from the Indians and established his government on democratic principles. . . . . additional exiles from Massachusetts, ... founded there other settlements by 1643. All four were soon brought together in the federated community of Rhode Island.

The path for mutual forbearance was not easy in Rhode Island either. The individualism that stamped its founders bordered close to eccentricity in some, and none was yoked in comfort with another. But they were in agreement that no church establishment should be maintained, that no religious tests should be imposed on voters or office holders, and that the Indians should be treated as fellow human beings. Rhode Island had many idealistic inhabitants with "The root of the matter" in them, as had Roger Williams, and the fruit of the vigorous tree which grew therefrom has been tested by Americans and found good.

The exact dates for the arrival in Rhode Island of the various members of the Buffum family and their various relations and friends have not been found. A study of local records might give this information. It was probably soon after 1660. They settled in the extreme northeast corner of the state, just below the boundary with Massachusetts. The most frequently mentioned locations are Smithfield and North Smithfield but in time family members spread to various parts of the state.

Caleb[2] Buffum

Caleb[2] Buffum (Robert[1]) was born in Salem, Mass. Bay Colony July 29, 1650. He was the youngest of the fifteen children of Robert[1] Buffum. He married March 26, 1672, Hannah Pope, daughter of Joseph Pope and his second wife Gertrude (____). She was baptized Jan. 29 1648 and died prior to 1730. Their children:

Caleb[3] Buffum, b. May 14, 1673.
Robert[3] Buffum, b. April 10, 1675 (other possible dates, Oct. 1 1675 and Dec. 1675)
Hannah[3] Buffum, b. Aug. 10, 1677
Tamoson[3] Buffum, b. 1681
Joseph[3] Buffum, b. 1684
Benjamin[3] Buffum, b. 1686
Jonathan[3] Buffum, b. 1688–89

Caleb was living in Salem as late as 1715. He died Nov. 29, 1731. He owned land in Rhode Island and in New York, but there is no record that he ever lived any place other than Salem. He was a carpenter and cabinet maker, but he did have considerable land which he probably farmed. He died a wealthy man leaving an estate of £ 2000 plus the land in Rhode Island and New York. He is listed as being a freeman. Caleb was a Quaker and gave land to the Quakers for their meeting house and a cemetery and helped them as a builder.

The Buffum Family says that Caleb was violently opposed to the witchcraft hysteria and that he took great risks to help the victims. His property was on the North River. At night he would take coffins that he had built down to the river; cross it with others; go to the hill where the condemned had been hung; bring them back

and give them a decent burial. He and his wife also gave shelter to those from other towns who were accused of witchcraft and brought to Salem for trial. The account, incidentally, makes the statement that no Quakers were tried for witchcraft even though they were persecuted for other reasons.

Benjamin[3] Buffum

Benjamin[3] (Caleb[2], Robert[1]) was probably born in Salem 1686 and died in Smithfield, Rhode Island Jan. 3, 1748. He married Elizabeth Buxton of Salem. There will be more about her and her line later in this chapter. She was born in Salem Nov. 17, 1689 and died in Smithfield, R.I. 1755. She was the daughter of Joseph and Esther (Southwick) Buxton of Salem.

Children of Benjamin[3] and Elizabeth (Buxton) Buffum:

Elizabeth[4] Buffum, b. April 26, 1709 (possibly June)
Hannah[4] Buffum, b. July 1711 (possibly Sept.)
Esther[4] Buffum, b. Sept. 16, 1714
Joseph[4] Buffum, b. July 20, 1717
Lydia[4] Buffum, b. May 26, 1722
Benjamin[4] Buffum, b. Jan. 15, 1725
Rachel[4] Buffum, b. Oct. 24, 1727
Rebecca[4] Buffum, b. about 1729

Benjamin was a blacksmith living in Smithfield, R.I. in 1739 having moved there after his children were born. He was a freeman and a Quaker.

Joseph[4] Buffum

Joseph[4] (Benjamin[3], Caleb[2], Robert[1]) Buffum was born in Salem, Mass. July 20, 1717. He died Sept. 19, 1796. His wife was Margaret Osborn whom he married at Smithfield, R.I. March 29, 1737. She was born in Danver, Mass. Sept. 13, 1719 and died at Smithfield July 8, 1805 and was the daughter of William and Margaret (Derby) Osborne of Danvers.

The children:

Jededeah[5] Buffum, b. Aug. 17, 1737
Jonathan[5] Buffum, b. Dec. 1, 1739
William[5] Buffum, b. Dec. 20, 1741
David[5] Buffum, b. Oct. 17, 1743
Comfort[5] Buffum, b. Dec. 21, 1745
Elizabeth[5] Buffum, b. Apr. 29, 1748
Hannah[5] Buffum, b. Feb. 15, 1749
Anne[5] Buffum, b. Nov. 27, 1751
Joseph[5] Buffum, b. Feb. 25, 1753
Margaret[5] Buffum, b. Nov. 28, 1755
James[5] Buffum, b. Oct. 29, 1757
Abagail[5] Mary Eusta Buffum, b. Mar. 22, 1760
Richard[5] Buffum, b. Mar. 22, 1760
Benjamin[5] Buffum, b. May 10, 1762

All of the children were born at Smithfield, R.I. except for the first two who were born at the house of the parents of Margaret where she had gone to have them.

The *Buffum Family*[7] has some interesting information on this family which will be quoted below:

Tradition says that Margaret (Osborn) Buffum, who weighed over 300 pounds, whipped everyone of her sons after they were 21 years of age.

Joseph Buffum settled in Smithfield, Rhode Island about 1736, he and his immediate descendents being Quakers and large land owners where Slatersville now stands. His descendents were chiefly farmers although to agriculture they added other industries from time to time. Joseph was a person of considerable importance in the community, operating a grist mill, sawmill, forge,

and store. His farm servants and employees formed a part of his household, and besides skilled laborers, he usually had from eight to ten boys and girls who were bound to him as apprentices and were expected to work in and out of the house.

The clothing for this large household was spun, woven, and made on the place, and the family supplies, except for a few groceries were produced on the farm. In such an establishment the management of the household played an important part, and to his wife's executive ability, Joseph Buffum attributed much of his success in life.

Joseph cleared the land about two miles north of the "old bank building" on old Great Road. The Buffums were staunch people, with the character to help the oppressed was such that they sheltered and employed escaped slaves in their Smithfield home.

Margaret attended the Presbyterian Church in Uxbridge, Mass., later on joined the Friends Church. Will, 12 Mar. 1802.

The children of Joseph[4] and Margaret Buffum for whom records have been found did very well in life, several becoming ministers and all good and prosperous citizens. The whippings, extending beyond their twenty-first birthday, apparently did not mar their lives.

Jonathan[5] Buffum

Jonathan[5] (Joseph[4], Benjamin[3], Caleb[2], Robert[1]) was the second child of Joseph[4] and Margaret (Osborne) Buffum. He was born in Smithfield, R.I. Dec. 1, 1739 and died in Grafton, N.H. in 1820. Jonathan married first in Smithfield, R.I. Ruth Joslin March 20, 1762 and second, Sarah (Gaskill) Buffum who was the widow of his cousin Moses Buffum. All of the children were born of the first marriage.

The children:

John[6] Buffum, b. Nov. 5, 1762
Stephen[6] Buffum, b. June 17, 1764
Bethany[6] Buffum, b. Apr. 5, 1766
Orphelia[6] Buffum, b. Jan. 29, 1768
Margaret[6] Buffum, b. Oct. 9, 1769
Joseph[6] Buffum, b. Jan. 20, 1773
Hannah[6] Buffum, b. 1775
Benjamin[6] Buffum, b. 1779
Ruth[6] Buffum, b. 1781
Comfort[6] Buffum, b. 1783

Jonathan[5] Buffum was a farmer and built the first grist mill in Grafton, N.H. according to *Buffum Family*[8] he resided in Smithfield, R.I., Westmoreland, N.H., Richmond, N.H. and Grafton, N.H. His second wife was the widow of Moses[5] Buffum (Benjamin[4], Benjamin[3], Caleb[2], Robert[1]) so her first husband was a first cousin of her second. It is also stated that Jonathan[5] upon arrival in Richmond, N.H. about 1663 made a clearing and built a log-house. He voted in the first town meeting in Richmond along with his older brother Jedediah[5] Buffum.

Jedediah seems to have been more active in community affairs and more successful than his brother Jonathan. Like his mother, he was large, weighing over 300 pounds. At the time of his death, the door casings had to be removed so that the coffin could be taken out of the house. His wife was Sarah Taft, a sister of Nathaniel Taft, and of the family that produced William Howard Taft, president of the United States (1909–1913). Jedediah was town treasurer of Richmond 1773–1803 and selectsman six times. He was a blacksmith but also bought and sold land and loaned

money. In addition, he owned a store which his son William operated. *Buffum Family* goes on to say "He possessed financial and executive ability and was enterprising and active in business; he was one of the more wealthy men in town. . . . He was benevolently disposed as appears from his gift to the Quaker Society of a burial ground."

Bethana[6] Buffum

Bethana[6] was the third child of Jonathan[5] and Ruth (Joslin) Buffum. She is listed as Bethany in *Buffum Family* but in other records and accounts as Bethana. As has been stated, she married William Seavey of Chapter XVII.

Buffum Family Information

As the quoted accounts show, most of the Buffum and many members of the connecting families, moved to Rhode Island. In the generation of Jonathan[5] they started to move to Richmond[17] in the south-east corner of New Hampshire. As told by Hammond, Jonathan[5] married Ruth Joslin in either Smithfield or Cumberland, Rhode Island March 20, 1762. Within a year after their marriage they were in Richmond, New Hampshire. Other members of the Buffum family and connecting line families also moved there. In a few years, they and others moved on to Grafton, New Hampshire and later to several places in Vermont and finally to Clinton County, New York.

Even though this chapter has been confusing, one more quotation will be introduced before closing it. The book, Rhode Island[16] on page 570, tells of the Buffums as a family.

> From Smithfield [Rhode Island] have gone out into the activities of life some strong, forceful characters, men of achievement. They have been Friends or Quakers from the beginning, and quiet unostentatious members of society, several of them ministers in the denomination at Newport, among them David, who was a noted preacher, and the latter's grandson, the late Thomas B. Buffum, of Newport, long one of the leading farmers and also minister of this section. Arnold Buffum, the philanthropist, the plain Quaker Hatter of Providence or vicinity, was of Smithfield birth. It was his privilege to have been a member of the Providence Society for Promoting the Abolition of Slavery, and to be one of the original twelve who met at a call from Garrison in Boston, Jan. 6, 1832, and signed the constitution of the first anti-slavery society, of which Mr. Buffum was made president and commissioned lecturing agent. In this cause he twice visited England. He was a pleasing and forceful speaker. A son of Arnold, Edward Gould Buffum, was a journalist of distinction, for many years. The New york Herald correspondent in Paris, France, an officer in the Mexican War, a member of the California legislature from San Francisco. Then another of the Smithfield family to gain distinction was the Hon. Joseph Buffum, a graduate of Dartmouth, and prominent in the legal profession in New Hampshire, and a member of the United States Congress.

Those named in the preceeding quotation are not mentioned earlier in this chapter as they are of later generations than Robert[1], Caleb[2], Benjamin[3], Joseph[4] and Jonathan[5]. But all are descendants of Robert[1] and Tamoson (Ward) (Thompson) Buffum the emigrants.

Truly, the Seavey descendants of William[6] Seavey who married Bethana Buffum can be proud of their Buffum, Potter, Pope, Buxton, Osborne and Joslin ancestry.

Connecting Lines

To this point in this chapter the procedure of bringing in the wife before going to that of the husband has not been followed completely. Five generations of Buffums have been presented so far with only limited information on connecting lines. Now additional information on these connecting lines obtained from various sources will be presented.

Pope

In his account Fred S. Hammond includes most of the information on Joseph Pope found in Cutter's book.[9] The latter account does give Robert as the name of the father of Joseph[1]. It also list their children as follows.

Damaris, b. Feb. 2, 1643; m. Joshua[2] Buffum.
Hannah, b. May 20, 1645; died young.
Hannah, b. Jan. 26, 1648; m. March 26, 1672, Caleb[2] Buffum.
George, b. May 8, 1649.
Joseph, b. Aug. 27, 1650; d. 1712.
Benjamin, b. Feb. 17, 1653.
Samuel, b. Mar. 18, 1656.
Enos,

According to Cutter,[9] Joseph Pope came from London on the *Mary and John* in 1634. He was admitted as a member of the church in Salem before 1636 and was made a freeman in 1637 and had land granted in that year, and afterwards in that part of Salem known as West Danvers, some of it bordering on the Ipswich River. He seems to have been married twice as Buffum Family[10] says that Demaris[2] Pope who married Joshua[2] Buffum was a half sister of Hannah[2] Pope the daughter of Joseph[1] and Gertrude () Pope who married Caleb[2] Buffum. Joseph[1] may not have been married when he arrived in the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1637 as the first child Demaris[2] was not born until Feb. 2, 1643. Demaris the first wife of Joseph[1] Pope[11] probably died at, or after, the birth of Hannah[2] Pope (the first child with the name Hannah) May 20, 1645.

In 1658, Joseph[1] Pope and his second wife Gertrude were summoned before the court on a charge of attending Quaker meetings, and in 1662 they were dismissed from the church for their adherence to the teachings of the Society of Friends.

Joseph Pope died about 1667 and his will dated Sept. 10, 1666 nominates his wife Gertrude as executrix.[9]

Joseph[2], son of Joseph[1] and Gertrude Pope, the immigrants, married Bethesda, daughter of Peter Folger, one of the first settlers on Nantucket Island, and one of the foremost men in public service in the colonies at the time. Abiah Folger, sister of Bethesda, married Josiah Franklin and they were the parents of Benjamin Franklin of Colonial and Revolutionary War fame.

Just to show the extent of inter-marriage among early families some additional information on this family will be included. A grandson of Joseph and Bethesda Pope, Stephen, married Mary[4] Buffum, daughter of Joshua[3] whose mother was Damaris Pope the grandmother of Mary. Down the line there were at least two marriages to Buxtons. As will be shown, Benjamin[3], son of Caleb[2] Buffum, whose mother was Hannah Pope, married a Buxton.

Buxton

As shown earlier, Benjamin[3] Buffum married Elizabeth Buxton. She was the daughter of John[2] and Elizabeth (Holton) Buxton. John[2] was the third of twelve children of Anthony[1] Buxton who was in Salem at a very early date. He received a grant of five acres of land from the town in 1637. Anthony was born in Wookey, Somerset County, England, Jan. 6, 1610, according to the Buxton account.[12] His wife was Elizabeth but we have no record of her family name. The date of their marriage is not known, but their first child was born in 1642. He was listed as a single person when he made an application for a second grant of land Dec. 25, 1637. Their children were all born in this country.

Much more could be included on the Buxtons. The Buxton account previously mentioned and listed in Note No. 12 for this chapter has 110 pages and it is Volume II. The author does not have Volume I but has learned that all approved information in it has been incorporated in Vol. II. The Buxtons and Buffums married several times, were persecuted together and migrated to the same area in Rhode Island at about the same times. The family is well documented and they have a family association which has reunions in the eastern Massachusetts–Northern Rhode Island area every year.

Osborne, Burton, Haskett and Derby

Joseph[4] Buffum married Margaret Osborne and in so doing brought in some very interesting family lines. The information that follows is from Cutter[13] and supplements that given in the Fred S. Hammond's *Buffum Genealogy* and the Buxton Account.[12]

Osborne

This family is one of the oldest and withal one of the most respectable of the many that became seated in the ancient town of Salem within the ten years next following the landing of the Pilgrims; and in the mother country as well as in New England they who bore the Osborne surname were noted for respectability and high moral character. The Yorkshire Osbornes were also an ancient people, and genealogists have given them great antiquity in countries of Europe. In various records the name is found written Osborne and Osborn in the same general family, the use or disuse of the final letter being merely a matter of taste.

In the records of Essex deeds (iii, p. 292) is found the following conveyance which gives some light in respect to the place of abode of the Osbornes in England:

"May 24, 1670. Bezaliell Osbourne of South Hampton, within the precincts of East Riding of Yorkshire, Eng., attorney to Friswiel Mulford of East Hampton of said riding did in an instrument bearing date May 14, 1670 more fully doth appear) sendeth greeting That said Bezaliel Osborne in consideration of a valuable sum paid by Antipas Newman of Wenham, Mass., preacher of the word of God deed him a farm of 100 acres of upland and 10 of meadow, according to the grant in Salem, many years ago unto William Osborne then husband of the said Friswiel Mulford lying in Wenham, Mass.—with consent of her husband John Mulford—that the said Bezaliel Osbourne by virtue of his power of attorney from Friezwood Mulford his mother and John Mulford her husband has lawful authority to grant, etc.

Thomasin Collacut, Joseph Osbourne wit.
"Signed, BEZALIEL OSBOURNE

(I) William Osborne, of Salem, colony of Massachusetts Bay, Puritan, immigrant ancestor of a notable family, first appears there in 1630, was made freeman May 22, 1639, having been granted on June 4, 1636, with Anamin Concklane, an acre of land each for a household near Strongwater brook; and besides his houselot William Osborne had another grant of ten acres of land.

In speaking of William Osborne, of Salem in his "Genealogical Dictionary," Savage say that by wife called (in Felt's list of church members, 1641) Frezwith or Freesweed, had no children born there, but after his removal to Dorchester the town records there mention that by wife, Frodisword he had Recompentce born May 26, 1644, at six o'clock p.m. The same authority also states that this Recompense Osborne graduated from Harvard College in 1661; that at Braintree he had: Hannah, born August 24, 1646, Bezaliel, born March 8, 1650, "and others afterward in Boston, by wife called in the records Frezswith, and in the Providence records by wife called Freesword, he had Joseph, born April 10, 1652, and Jonathan, born November 16, 1654. Further, says Savage, he was a merchant who died in middle life; that the inventory of the property, made April 29, 1662, shows over two thousand pounds, "well for that time." His widow married John Mulford, of South Hampton, Yorkshire East Riding, and in 1670 to Rev. Antipas Newman, of Wenham, 110 acres granted to Osborne."

From what is stated above it will be seen that William Osborne left Salem sometime after 1642, and lived in Dorchester at the time of birth of his son Recompense; that afterward he was in Braintree, where he had children born, and still later was in Boston, where, it is said, other children may have been born. He ultimately removed to Rhode Island and died there. It may be said, however, that the foregoing record of the immigrant's children cannot be taken as correct in all respects and that at least one of them, William, is not mentioned there. Mr. Austin, author of "One Hundred and Sixty Allied Families," himself an Osborne descent, gives Wapping, England, as the birthplace of William and the date about 1640. It has been asserted that William Osborn, the second, was a son of William and Frizwiel Osborne, but it seems impossible that he could have been born in England about 1640 (or 1644, as some accounts have it) for his father had then been ten years in New England, and his places of abode during the years subsequent to his landing in Salem are satisfactorily shown—therefore the only reasonable assumption is that he was born in Salem or possibly in Dorchester. (See footnote, where Recompense is called eldest).

(II) William Osborne, son of William Osborne, the immigrant, was born about 1640, died in Salem January, 1728–29; will proved February 5, 1730. He married, March 17, 1672, Hannah, born 1640, died about 1721, daughter of Captain John Burton, of Salem, who was a tanner there as early as 1637, and according to well authenticated accounts came from England to New England by way of the Barbadoes, from which it may be assumed that he was transported to the island in one of the ships sent there with political or religious prisoners, and thence made his way to the colonies in New England. Being a sympathizer with the Friends, he evidently found little real comfort or safe refuge from religious persecution, for in 1658, charged with the "heinous" crime of being a Quaker, he and Josiah Southwick were arrested at Dedham while on their way to Rhode Island to provide an abiding place for their families in that locality. They were soon released and went on to Rhode Island, remained there less than two years and then returned to Salem. Children of William and Hannah (Burton) Osborne: 1.Samuel, born April 27, 1675, see forward. 2.John, August 27, 1677. 3.Hannah, October 2, 1679; married November 26, 1701, John Trask, Jr. 4.William,

May 3, 1682; married February 8, 1710, Margaret Derby.

(III) William Osborne, son of William and Hannah (Burton) Osborne, was born May 3, 1682, and died September 29, 1771. He married February 8, 1710, Margaret Derby, born August 14, 1693, died July 11, 1765, daughter of Roger and his second wife, Elizabeth (Haskett) Derby. Children: 1.William, born August 18, 1711, died July 6, 1712. 2.Stephen, October 16, 1712. 3.Elizabeth, December 10, 1714. 4.William, February 12, 1716. 5.Benjamin, May 31, 1718. 6.Margaret, September 13, 1719. 7.Jonathan, about 1722. 8.Richard, died 1765. 9.Abigail, born 1733. 10.Benjamin, June 1735.

NOTE—Probate Court, Suffolk Registry of Deeds, Boston. William Osborne, administration of his estate granted his late wife and relict (26th August, 1662) in behalfe of her selfe and five children. "10 Sept. 1662, on the motion of Mr. Richard Collecott in behalf of Freesweed Osborne widow and her five children it being alleadged that the *oldest* sonne Recompense was brought up in learning and had tooke one degree and therefore, desired that he might have but a single portion with the rest.' The Court allowed that the widow shall, after all debts be payed and satisfied, be allowed one cleere third part of the estate * * * and that the rest of the estate to be divided amongst the five children part and parcel alike. (From "Piousers of Mass" by Pope) (William Osborne, merchant, Hingham, propr 1635). William Osborne Salem propr., town officer, freeman May 22, 1639; went to Braintree to become of the Iron Works; son at Braintree (Recompense) born at Dorchester May ? 1644, being born at the home of his brother.

Neither Cutter[14] nor Hammond gives a family name for Friswiel (Frezwith, Freesweed, Frodisword, etc.) the wife of William[1] Osborne, the immigrant. He was apparently from Yorkshire, England and arrived in Salem about 1730. William[1] died in April of 1662 leaving a large estate to his widow and five children. The oldest was a graduate of Harvard. Friswith married as a second husband John Mulford of South Hampton, Yorkshire, East Riding, England.

William[2] Osborne, son of William[1] and Friswith married Hannah Buxton daughter of Captain John Buxton as told by Hammond. Their son, William[3] married Margaret Derby and Margaret, the daughter of this couple born Sept. 13, 1719 married Joseph[4] Buffum March 12, 1736 in Smithfield, Rhode Island. Earlier in this chapter some most interesting information is recorded for Margaret Osborn and Joseph[4] Buffum.

Joslin

Unfortunately, nothing has been found about the family of Ruth Joslin. Presumably she was a Quaker, but there is nothing to confirm this assumption. A record has been found in Cutter for a Thomas Joslin described as follows: ". . . . immigrant ancestor of the Joslins or Joslyns in America, embarked at London, April 1635, on the ship 'Increase' with his wife Rebecca, each aged forty-three, and their children—Rebecca, aged eighteen; Dorothy, eleven; Nathaniel, eight; Elizabeth, six and Mary, one. Abraham the elder son, does not appear to have come with them, but a short time after; he is here with the family which settled first at Hingham, Mass., of which Thomas[1] was one of the proprietors in 1647." He moved west to Lancaster, Mass. and his descendants went

on to Leominster. The account goes down through Nathaniel, one of the sons for eight generations with nothing to indicate that Ruth Joslin might be a descendant of Thomas[1]. If she is a descendant, it would have to be through Abraham, the only other son. No effort was made to follow this line. This is a project that some interested family member can undertake. It should not be difficult if his life is as well documented as many others of this period. The yield might be very interesting as Thomas[1] Joslin and his descendants through Nathan[2] were active, interesting people.

NOTES

1. *Buffum Family*, compiled by Owen A. Perkins, Historian, 1973–1982, Buffum Family Association, Inc. Copies can be obtained at present from the Buffum Family Association, Inc., 86 Woodland Terrace, Buffalo, N.Y. 14225 for $30.00 delivered.
2. *Buffum Family* pages 1 and 2.
3. Ibid. but pages 3, 4 and 5.
4. Ibid. pages 12 and 13.
5. Ibid. page 10.
6. *The United States to 1865* by Michael Kraus, pages 61–64 incl.
7. *The Buffum Family* p. 44.
8. Ibid. page 87.
9. *Genealogical and Personal Memoirs* Relating to the families of Boston and Eastern Massachusetts by William Richard Cutter, A.M.
10. *The Buffum Family* page 15.
11. Ibid. page 7.
12. *The Buxton Family, Descendants of Anthony[1] Buxton and Elizabeth of Salem Village, Massachusetts Bay Colony, New England 1637 Volume II* by Beatrice F. Buxton 1983–1985.
13. *Genealogical and Personal memoirs* Relating to the families of Boston and Eastern Massachusetts by William Richard Cutter, A.M. pages 2012–13.
14. Ibid. but pages 967–8.
15. Ibid. but pages 291–295.
16. *Rhode Island*, page 71. Unfortunately the full name of the publication and author or compiler was not recorded.
17. *Genealogical and Personal Memoirs* Relating to the families of Boston and Eastern Massachusetts by William Richard Cutter, A.M.

CHAPTER XV

Celia Thaxter

When Solomon[5] Seavey (Samuel[4], Samuel[3], Samuel[2], Thomas[1]) moved from Rye to Poplin (now Fremont) N.H., the Seavey ancestors of Fannie C. Harrison had started their migration across New Hampshire and Vermont to Clinton County, New York. Before going on with their story, one very interesting discovery involving the Isles of Shoals deserves to be told.

As previously mentioned, in late July of 1982 we went to Rye, N.H. to attend the annual luncheon of the Piscataqua Pioneers, an heritage society of the descendants of settlers who arrived in the Piscataqua settlement area (roughly the area within twenty miles of Portsmouth, N.H.) before 1776. Arrangements had also

Celia Thaxter after her marriage

Celia Thaxter and her famous garden in 1890 at the age of fifty-one.

been made to attend a conference on Star Island, one of the Isles of Shoals, for a week. The island is now owned by the Star Island Corporation. Their purpose is religious and educational and it is composed of Unitarian Universalists and members of the United Church of Christ. We signed up for a one week conference because we decided that we would need to be on one of the Isles of Shoals for at least several days to get to know the islands and to understand them. Only by signing for a conference could we stay overnight or even more than the few hours afforded by the daily trips that can be made.

Attendance at the Piscataqua Pioneer luncheon was planned in the hope that we might meet Seavey and connecting line descendants who would have family data to supplement what we had already collected. We had an excellent lunch and a pleasant visit with acquaintances from The Descendants of the Colonial Clergy. Mrs. Estella Johnson, president at that time and Mrs. Barbara Smith, treasurer of Colonial Clergy and others were there. Other than meeting another descendant of Thomas[1] Seavey whose line split off from ours in the third generation, we did not add to our store of family information. However, we did meet some very interesting descendants of Thomas Crockett. He was one of the 1632, or earlier arrivals in the Portsmouth area and over a period of time his descendants moved north and east into Maine. Those that we met had no information on the European background of their ancestor. As he arrived in the Portsmouth area in 1632, he, or earlier members of his family, had to have left France before the Edict of Nantes was revoked in 1685. Of course, the Huguenots had been persecuted for many years before the revocation of the Edict of Nantes. During that time, some members of the Crockett family undoubtedly left France as they were Protestants. Our particular line left France in 1672 and went to England and from there to Ireland.

Before telling about our visit to the Isles of Shoals, some unusual bits of good luck must be brought into our story. As the boat trip for the conferences on the Isles of Shoals in 1982 left in the early afternoon on a Saturday, and the Piscataqua

Cottage of Celia Thaxter on Appledore Island

In this parlor in her cottage of Appledore Island Celia Thaxter was hostess to distinguished guests for twenty-five years

Appledore Island hotels about 1880

Pioneer luncheon was at noon on Saturday July 31st, we had to pick a conference for which the departure from Portsmouth would be on Saturday, August 7th. This meant finding a hotel or motel for about ten days during the busiest period for visitors along the New Hampshire and southern Maine coast line. We picked Portsmouth and Rye as the places to try for accommodations. The local Chamber of Commerce was slow in sending us a list of hotels and motels. When we started calling we soon found that there were no vacancies. Finally, a young couple who were remodeling an old house for a bed and breakfast establishment that they were calling Rock Ledge Manor agreed to take us. When we arrived hot and tired after a two-day trip, they were still working on our room. Only a bed frame and a temporary rug were in place. However, the location was perfect. They were delightful and assured us that the room would be ready by the time that we had told them that we would arrive. We were two hours early. They lived up to their promise. We began a period of friendship which has lasted since then. We were their first guests. Only a two-lane road was between the house and the Atlantic Ocean. When it was clear, the Isles of Shoals could be seen from the house. The room was comfortable and the breakfasts were exceptional.

It was a day or so before we realized the full extent of our good fortune. The land on which we were staying at one time had been owned by members of the Foss family and it backed up to, or very near to, the old Foss family cemetery. The first land owned by John[1] Foss was the portion of the William[1] Berry land that his wife Mary[2] Berry received when the land of William[1] Berry was divided in 1719. No attempt has been made to prove that the land on which Rock Ledge Manor is located was Foss land inherited from William[1] Berry. However, if not, it is very near such land, and it definitely had Foss ownership because the title information in the hands of the present owner proves this.

Since the original 1982 visit to Rock Ledge Manor, we have been back several times. When the year of the 55th anniversary of our wedding came along in 1985, Janice and Norman Marineau, owners and operators of Rock Ledge Manor, agreed to be our hosts. With their then enlarged facilities and the help of a neighbor, they

accommodated seventeen of us for three days and nights. In addition, they staged an old fashioned New England clam bake for the seventeen, plus fifteen other family members who came in for the day. Our seventeen spent one of the days on Star Island, one of the Isles of Shoals group, thus improving their understanding of the area where the first family arrivals from England settled.

Now back to Star Island and our 1982 visit. The author dutifully attended one conference session. But by that time he had found the beautiful little Vaughn Memorial Library. Most of the time after that was spent in the library.

On the fourth day, a cold rain started early in the morning, but I made my way to the library immediately after breakfast. By the time I reached there, I was wet to my knees. Fortunately, someone had started a fire in the wood-burning fireplace in one of the two rooms. To be in that room on a chilly, wet morning with a fire was a delightful experience. Out a picture window I could see the ocean, Lundoner island, Seavey Island and a dim outline of the New Hampshire mainland.

After study of possible sources of Seavey family information, without finding anything of value, I started to check through some of the material about Celia Thaxter. Books by her, and about her, dominated the two rooms of the little library. Celia came to the Isles of Shoals with her parents when only four years of age. Most of her life was spent there. Her friendship with the literary greats of her period and the hotels built and operated by her family contributed in large measure to a new period of greatness for the Isles of Shoals. Although I knew vaguely who she was, I thought that I should learn more about her since I could not find what I was searching for about the early Seavey family.

I had not been going through various books very long before something literally jumped out of the open pages for me—her father was Thomas Bell Laighton (sometimes spelled Layton or Leighton) son of Mark Laighton and Debbie Seavey Laighton. Thus the paternal grandmother of Celia Thaxter was a Seavey. Diligent searching in the Vaughn Library and later at the Portsmouth library and still later at the New Hampshire Historical Society Library in Concord failed to produce much more family information.

The meagre and incomplete information found to date seems to indicate that Thomas Bell Laighton, father of Celia, was a direct descendant of Thomas and Joanna (_____) Laighton who were in Salem, Mass. as early as 1633. Along with several other colonists, they migrated to the Dover, N.H. area where they settled. He arrived in this country with a Captain Wiggin and was a son of Dr. Alexander Laighton, a distinguished theologian. He was also a nephew of Robert Laighton of Glasgow, Scotland. Unfortunately, one generation seems to be missing in the line from Thomas[1] Laighton to Thomas Bell Laighton.

For the Seavey line of Debbie who married Thomas Bell Laighton, I went to Harold L. Hanson who had it in his files. She was born in 1781 and died April 30, 1862 and was the daughter of Captain John[5]

and Deborah (Jones) Seavey (Paul[4], James[3], William[2], William[1]). She was, therefore, of the line of William[1] Seavey the uncle of Thomas[1] Seavey. The common ancestor of her line and that of Fannie C. Harrison would be Henry Zevie of England the father of William[1] and grandfather of Thomas[1] Seavey. This means that Celia Thaxter was a seventh cousin of Solomon[7] of the line of Fannie C. Harrison. Solomon[7] Seavey was the same number of generations removed from Henry Zevie as Celia (Laighton) Thaxter, and he was the great-grandfather of Fannie C. Harrison. So if anyone wants to count the degree of kinship, Celia was a seventh cousin, three generations removed, so she was not a very close relation. However, this chapter will be devoted to her as she was such an important part of the second period in the life of the Isles of Shoals. The first was that of the fishing center of the North Atlantic and the third is the present conference center period.

The wife of Thomas Bell Laighton was Eliza Rymes, daughter of Christopher and Lucy (Walker) Rymes of Newington, N.H. She was born Oct. 10, 1804 and died on Appledore Island Nov. 14, 1877.

Lyman V. Rutledge in The Isles of Shoals in Lore and Legend[1] tells of the Laightons and the move to the Isles of Shoals so well that his book will be quoted in length at this point.

> The Laighton family had long been prominent in Portsmouth business circles. Their ships cruised the coastal waters from Nova Scotia to the West Indies with cargoes of lumber, molasses, rum , fish and general merchandise. They were known as exporters and importers, both wholesale and retail. The father of the family Mark Laighton, was honored among seamen as inventor of the roller block which lightened the toil of every sailor who worked the rigging.
>
> Thomas, the third of ten children, was born on February 2nd, 1805. While in high school he had the reputation of being "one of the best mathematicians in town," but like his contemporary Nathaniel Bowditch, he was denied the privilege of a college education. At the age of thirteen he had a severe attack of typhus fever, which left him lame. Much of his later success was undoubtedly the result of a determined effort to compensate this handicap. He mapped his own course of self-education, and as his fortunes prospered he organized a workingmen's reading club, assuming for some years the responsibility of selecting books. He was elected to the school committee and appointed to study and report on equipment and needs of the high school. Members of his family and others included him as a business partner. In 1832 he and his friends Samuel Tuckerman, Samuel Cleaves, and Ichabod Goodwin organized The Portsmouth Whaling Co., with a capital stock of $25,000, later increased to $100,000. In 1833 he was appointed assistant postmaster under Abner Greenleaf, and later served in the Custom House. In 1836 he and Abner Greenleaf, Jr. were joint editors of the *New Hampshire Gazette*.
>
> During this period, on June 23, 1831, he and Eliza Rymes were married. Their union was said to be ideal and so it proved. Their first child, Helen, died in infancy. Celia was born on June 29th, 1835, and Oscar on June 30th, 1839.
>
> Thomas had resigned as co-editor of the *Gazette*, but continued his political career and became secretary of his party for District No. 1.
>
> Known now as a public-spirited citizen, and "the most eloquent orator in the district," he found the doors of politics open to him. In 1837 he was elected to the State Senate on the "Democratic Republican" ticket. Although he was defeated the next year by Samuel Cleaves, he

was re-elected a year later, and by a singular coincidence, on the very day his second victory at the polls was announced, he was signing the papers for the purchase of four islands—Hog, Smuttynose, Malaga, and Cedar. He was not, as some have said, defeated for governor by John Page. On the contrary, he helped to nominate Page and worked zealously for his election. There is nothing to show that Thomas ever ran or was even mentioned for governor.

Thomas had a long-standing agreement with Postmaster Abner Greenleaf that on his retirement Thomas should take his place. Thus matters stood in the summer of 1839, when the position of lightkeeper at White Island came open, and Thomas gladly accepted the appointment as an interim occupation pending Greenleaf's resignation. It would be an ideal base of operation for his long-cherished plan to revive the fishing industry at the islands. Only a few of his closest friends were aware of these secret hopes and commitments.

The Portsmouth waterfront—the whole city for that matter—had much to gossip about in late September of 1839 when it was noised about that the Honorable Thomas B. Leighton had engaged Captain Falls to take him out to the Isles of Shoals—to live! Here was a young man with a more promising career than any of his contemporaries suddenly accepting the insignificant appointment as Keeper of White Island Light, next door to oblivion! Moreover, he was taking their beloved Eliza and the babies out to live on that desolate rock. There was at the time—and continues to this day—endless speculation as to the underlying motive for this melodramatic action.

Thomas went out first, on September twenty-ninth, to take over the lighthouse and ready-up the keeper's cottage for Eliza and the children. He hoped they would love it. The term was only two years, a mere vacation. Celia's description of the voyage, written thirty years after the event, and published in her classic *Among the Isles of Shoals*, reveals a loving and accurate memory:

"It was at sunset in autumn that we were set ashore on the loneliest, lovely rock, where the lighthouse looked down on us like some tall, black-capped giant, and filled me with awe and wonder. At its base a few goats were grouped on the rock, standing out dark against the red sky as I looked up at them. The stars were beginning to twinkle; the wind blew cold, charged with the seasweetness; the sound of many waters, half bewildered me. Someone began to light the lamps in the tower. Rich red and golden they swung round in mid-air; everything was strange and fascinating and new. We entered the quaint little old stone cottage that was for six years our home.

Thomas and Eliza were agreed in one vital particular—that the new home on White Island should bring to the children only the best from the mainland and leave the worst behind. The children while here must have regular instruction and whatever else lay within the power of devoted parents to give. It could never have occurred to either that they were leading these children through fairyland into an island kingdom where Celia would reign as queen.

Eliza was the guardian angel during those first months and years of uncertainty. It was in her nature to fill the little home with sunshine. She surrounded her babies with a protecting love and care which would mean more to them than all the lessons they would ever learn from books. Nothing is said in regard to the physical energy and moral courage required for this unusual responsibility. She left no diary or correspondence to speak in after years of the loneliness, the dark forebodings when the seas were wild, or the need for help and companionship while Thomas was on his inland journeys. All sense of personal danger or feeling of personal neglect, if such ever entered her mind, was so deeply buried that no one thought to look for it or suggest it might be there. On the contrary, visitors spoke fervently of her cheerful hospitality, radiant spirit, and genial disposition; her wifely devotion and motherly care of the children; her competence, courage and unaffected simplicity;

and her wonderful cooking—especially her wonderful cooking! So strong were these impressions that her guests paid high tribute to her character and ability but seldom commented on her appearance, yet she was known in her youth and long remembered as "exceptionally beautiful." Her crowning glory unconsciously achieved was an aura of loveliness above all physical charm. This her children absorbed and reflected in their several ways later in life.

Nothing finer has fallen from Celia's pen than her memories of childhood in the shadow of the lighthouse. There on that "lovely lonely rock" she was not lonely because she was intimate with the dancing waves, the laughing sky, the rising sun, the soaring gulls, and every living thing. The abundance of her own life, the keenness of all her perceptions, the full response of her nature to the greatness of Nature around her made every object glow as if possessed of some inner illumination. Wild morning-glories, so common to most of us, were radiant in the morning sun, reaching up to her in gladness from clefts in the rocks—rocks that are dull gray to us but glowing as opals to her sensitive eye. She identified herself with the struggle of a blade of grass to reach its freedom in the sea-scented breeze, or with the wild rapture of gulls battling against the savage fury of a storm. It was all so much a part of her that she must "*speak* these things that made life so sweet . . . speak the wind, the cloud, the bird's flight, the sea's murmur . . . in storm or calm, by day or night, the manifold aspects of Nature held me and swayed all my thoughts until it was impossible to be silent any longer, and I was fain to mingle my voice with her myriad voices, only aspiring to be in accord with the Infinite harmony, however feeble and broken the notes might be . . . I felt so much a part of the Lord's universe, I was no more afraid of the dark than the waves or winds."

Celia was only four years of age when the family moved to White Island. Her brother was a baby so she was alone until he could join her in play. Literally, the island was her friend and playmate. She, through necessity, was a creature of her unusual surroundings. The ocean, the wind, all living creatures of the island and all growing things found there were all that she knew as a child.

In her book about her grandmother[2] Rosamand Thaxter, a granddaughter of Celia, has this interesting passage:

> One of Celia's early tasks was the milking of the little cow, Betsy. Later, if the tide was low she would guide her four-footed friend over the stones to tiny Seavey's Island where Betsy found just enough grass to nibble before returning water would leave the animal marooned, which meant a swim home. The cow soon learned to plod back unaided ahead of the tide and chew her cud near the cottage.

Oscar Laighton, younger brother of Celia, tells the story just a little differently.[3]

> Father had secured another flock of hens and imported a cow. No grass was growing on White Island, but there was quite a lot on Seavey's Island that joins White Island at low water, though separated when the tide is full. Our cow soon learned to ford across to Seavey's Island, and sometimes, if no sea was running she would swim back to White Island.

The whole fascinating but unlikely Laighton-Thaxter chapter for the equally unusual Isles of Shoals came about through an unusual combination of factors. First there was the vision, ability and personality of Thomas Bell Laighton. Then there was Eliza Laighton whose uncomplaining devotion and home-making skills supplement the fine qualities of her husband to

make a home which was also, in combination with their unusual surroundings, a school as well as a home. To add to all of this there was Levi Thaxter and the unusual coincidence of a brilliant youth from a wealthy Boston family of education and culture who had been advised to get away from home for a while and ended up on the Isles of Shoals when Thomas Laighton by that time had a small hotel on Smutty-Nose Island. When he and Levi Thaxter found that they had much in common there was money, tutoring for Celia, and introductions to the leading families of Boston. It was these people plus the friends of Thomas Laighton from earlier years that started coming to this modest mid-ocean house on Smutty-Nose that gave the foundation for the hotel complex that was brought into being. Early guests included Levi Woodbury, famous Boston attorney; Franklin Pierce, U.S. Senator from New Hampshire and later president of the United States; Nathaniel Hawthorne; Richard Henry Dana, (*Two Years Before the Mast*); Governor John Page of N.H. and many others.

When Thomas Laighton and Levi Thaxter had built their first hotel on Hog Island, which they re-named Appledore, and after Celia and her ex-tutor were married, she had a cottage near the hotel. This became the gathering place for the culturally elite who visited the hotel, and her garden became famous.

This chapter, which could easily be expanded into a book, will be concluded with a few of the best known of the poems by Celia Thaxter plus a recommendation that *Sandpiper* by Rosamand Thaxter, *The Isles of Shoals in Lore and Legend* by Lyman V. Rutledge and the poems and prose of Celia Thaxter be read. Plus the prose account, *Among the Isles of Shoals* by Celia Thaxter. These should be musts for Seavey descendants for both the slight kinship and the association of the Seavey family with the Isles of Shoals. Also because it is all a most fascinating and unusual situation.

As a critical evaluation of poetry is something beyond the capabilities of the author, the poems of Celia Thaxter will be preceeded by the foreword prepared by Fredrick T. McGill, Jr. for a collection of a few of the Celia Thaxter poems published by the Star Island Corporation.

> At the Isles of Shoals, where Celia Thaxter spend her girlhood and the summers of her maturity, her personality and her poetry still radiate. But elsewhere she is almost unknown. It is ironic that this gracious lady, who a century ago was one of America's best known female poets, rose to fame through reliance on modes that now mark her poetry as old-fashioned. These are the directness of her statements, the conventionality of her verse forms, and her inclination to moralize.
>
> Of course these three traits alone would not have made her a successful poet, even in the Nineteenth Century, when they were highly prized. She had much more to offer. She responded with deep emotion to the natural world and to the friends and family that surrounded her. She had a musical ear. And she had talent.
>
> This booklet is an attempt to justify Celia Thaxter's past reputation and to give new readers the chance to discover her afresh. The poems selected are representative of many types; for although she worked wholly within the tradition, her range was wide. Of these particular pieces, we have chosen some that show pure enjoyment of nature but with awareness that all joys are transient; some that spring from love,

including the elegiac "Impatience," address to her dead mother; some for their music and their appeals to the other physical senses; and one in particular—"The Sandpiper"—to stand for her many verses that addressed the world of childhood.

For a full appreciation of Celia Thaxter as a writer, one should also read her gem of prose, *Among the Isles of Shoals*. Although she produced her poems in the sunset glow of Romanticism, it was in the dawning light of Realism that she depicted in essay form the natives of her beloved islands. Their earthy qualities, against the backdrop of the sea and its legends, inspired one of the best products of the "local color" movement.

But the varied colors of her poems are enough for one volume. We hope that her new readers will return to them again and again, and that some will seek out the earlier, "complete" editions, still available at many of the older libraries.

The first poem of Celia Thaxter to be published, Land-Locked appeared in the Atlantic Monthly. Her granddaughter Rosamond Thaxter tells this story about it in *Shoreliner–Magazine of the Northern New England Coast*, May 1952. After Celia and her husband had been married a few years they spent their winters in a house in Newtonville, Mass., a suburb of Boston.

By Celia's twentieth birthday, although little more than a child herself, she had two babies to care for . . . . Although the summer visits to her family on her dear islands were a great boon to her, the days and months in the little town house with only the River Charles to remind her of the boundless Atlantic, made for many homesick hours. This found expression in a few lines of verse which she scribbled on the back of an old envelope. One evening, setting with her husband over her huge pile of mending, she somewhat timidly handed him the lines for his approval. He said that they were good; and man-like pocketed them. Imagine her surprise and joyful embarrassment, when, on receiving the Atlantic Monthly Magazine a short time later, she opened it and there was: "Land-Locked", in print, placed there by their friend, the editor, James T. Field.

LAND-LOCKED

Black lie the hills; swiftly doth daylight flee;
And, catching gleams of sunset's dying smile,
Through the dusk land for many a changing mile
The river runneth softly to the sea.

O happy river, could I follow thee!
O yearning heart, that never can be still!
O wistful eyes, that watch the steadfast hill,
Longing for level line of solemn sea!

Have patience; here are flowers and songs of birds,
Beauty and fragrance, wealth of sound and sight,
All summer's glory thine from morn till night,
And life too full of joy for uttered words.

Neither am I ungrateful; but I dream
Deliciously how twilight falls to-night
Over the glimmering water, how the light
Dies blissfully away, until I seem

To feel the wind, sea-scented, on my cheek,
To catch the sound of dusky flapping sail
And dip of oars, and voices on the gale
Afar off, calling,–my name they speak!

O Earth! thy summer song of joy may soar
Ringing to heaven in triumph. I but crave
The sad, caressing murmur of the wave
That breaks in tender music on the shore.

Probably the best known of all of the writing of Celia Thaxter is "The Sandpiper". Although written for children it has been popular with all ages for over a century. The author remembers it well from high school days in Missouri before 1920.

It has particular significance for our five daughters as they spent many hours during their early years on the ocean beaches of Long Island at all seasons of the year. In the winter months on cold, windy but bright days we would hike along the deserted beaches gathering driftwood with sandpipers as our only companions.

THE SANDPIPER

Across the narrow beach we flit,
One little sandpiper and I,
And fast I gather, bit by bit,
The scattered driftwood bleached and dry.
The wild waves reach their hands for it,
The wild wind raves, the tide runs high,
As up and down the beach we flit,—
One little sandpiper and I.

Above our heads the sullen clouds
Scud black and swift across the sky;
Like silent ghosts in misty shrouds
Stand out the white lighthouses high.
Almost as far as eye can reach
I see the close-reefed vessels fly,
As fast we flit along the beach,—
One little sandpiper and I.

I watch him as he skims along,
Uttering his sweet and mournful cry.
He starts not at my fitful song,
Or flash of fluttering drapery.
He has no thought of any wrong;
He scans me with a fearless eye.
Stanch friends are we, well tried and strong,
The little sandpiper and I.

Comrade, where wilt thou be to-night
When the loosed storm breaks furiously?
My driftwood fire will burn so bright!
To what warm shelter canst thou fly?
I do not fear for thee, though wroth
The tempest rushes through the sky:
For are we not God's children both,
Thou, little sandpiper, and I?

Several of the accounts about Celia Thaxter tell how, when she was very young and they were still living on White Island, her father would go to the other island in a small boat to supervise his fishing and other activities. Often he would not be back when darkness descended on the islands. Bringing a small boat to a landing on White Island was an exacting task when the sea was calm and there was still light. But a rough sea and darkness made the task very difficult. Often when darkness came and her father still had not returned Celia would take a small lighted lantern and alone go down to a certain rock ledge so that he could follow the light to a safe landing. The poem "Watching" records this.

WATCHING

In childhood's season fair,
On many a balmy, moonless summer night,
While wheeled the lighthouse arms of dark and bright
Far through the humid air;

How patient have I been,
Sitting alone, a happy little maid,
Waiting to see, careless and unafraid,
My father's boat come in;

Close to the water's edge
Holding a tiny spark, that he might steer
(So dangerous the landing, far and near)
Safe past the ragged ledge.

I had no fears,–not one;
The wild, wide waste of water leagues around
Washed ceaselessly; there was no human sound,
And I was all alone.

But Nature was so kind!
Like a dear friend I loved the loneliness;
My heart rose glad, as at some sweet caress,
When passed the wandering wind.

Yet it was joy to hear,
From out of the darkness, sounds grow clear at last,
Of rattling rowlock, and of creaking mast,
And voices drawing near!

"Is't thou, dear father? Say!"
What well-known shout responded in reply,
As loomed the tall sail, smitten suddenly
With the great lighthouse ray!

I will be patient now,
Dear Heavenly Father, waiting here for thee;
I know the darkness holds Thee. Shall I be
Afraid, it is Thou?

On my eternal shore,
In pauses, when Life's Tide is at its prime,
I hear the everlasting rote of Time
Beating for evermore.

Shall I not then rejoice?
Oh, never lost or sad should a child of thine
Sit waiting, fearing lest there come no sign,
No whisper of thy voice!

Yes the Thaxter and Laighton story is very much a part of that of the Isles of Shoals. And they were of the Seavey family from which members of earlier generations were also a part of the Isles of Shoals. Today these Isles are still unique and different and Seavey descendants can be proud of their association with them.

NOTES

1. *The Isles of Shoals in Lore and Legend* by Lyman V. Rutledge, The Star Island Corp. 1971.
2. *Sandpiper, The Life & Letters of Celia Thaxter and Her Home on The Isles of Shoals* by Rosamond Thaxter, 1963. Peter E. Randall Publisher.
3. *Ninety Years at the Isles of Shoals* by Oscar Laighton.

CHAPTER XVI

Harold L. Hanson and Mrs. A.C. Hall

The kind of material in this chapter would normally be in notes, appendices and in a chapter on acknowledgements. However, the information in this case is so important, so crucial for the entire book and became available in such an unusual way that it seems desireable to bring it together in a single chapter at this point.

As will be brought out in a later chapter, the mother of the father of Fannie C. Harrison died when he was just under two years of age. There was a second boy that was just four years of age. George W. and Sophia Sharrow Collins, neighbors and friends, took her father and raised him as their own child. While they never formally adopted him he used the Collins name and the will of George W. Collins acknowledged him as an adopted son and he left his entire estate to him. The brother was raised by another family. The father, George[8] Washington Seavey, married again and moved to another area. As a result my wife and her sister, the only surviving members of the family, when the search for family information started, knew very little about the family of their biological father.

County and town records yielded very little additional information. However, the 1850 census showed three Seavey families in Clinton County, New York; listed all members of those families and showed that the husband and wife of each family had come either from Vermont or New Hampshire. The census for 1840 and 1830 showed a fourth Seavey family. When no more progress could be made on this course, library research yielded information that there were many Seavey families in New Hampshire and Maine. While information on these early families was quickly found the problem still existed of bridging a gap of eight generations. For a long time no progress was made. After several years while visiting relatives of the author in Kennebunk, Maine a check was made of the local telephone directory as our hosts said that the name of Seavey was quite common in the area. After a few telephone calls a Seavey with some family information was found. When he was visited at his house that evening he very quickly determined that the information that he had would not be of assistance. However, he called another Seavey descendant that he knew, Harold L. Hanson, who had done extensive research on the family. I talked to him, and after he obtained his files from another room, he gave me the entire line that I was seeking from the emigrant Seavey to the grandfather of my wife—seven generations. While I did not get to see him on that trip, he later mailed me the entire line. Three typewritten pages were required. From a few

telephone calls, and a later visit to a Seavey all made the same day, the emigrant Seavey of the line was linked to the seventh generation descendant in New York State.

While the material received by mail was quite complete and served my purposes very well, there was still considerable information that was missing. Also sources of the information supplied were not specified. I realized that these would be needed for any application that might be made to hereditary societies and that it should be obtained. Efforts to obtain this information from Harold L. Hanson were not successful.

Searching in the New Hampshire State Library, the library of the New Hampshire Historical Society and the Vermont archives plus the efforts of several professional genealogists produced confirming records for some of the Hanson material. However, after several years of searching and a considerable expenditure of time and money, there was still much for which a source was not known.

In 1982, five years after the first telephone conversation with Harold L. Hanson, he again became interested in his genealogy program which he had put aside about 1972. He advised that his principal source of information was the collected, original files of a Mrs. A.C. Hall, a Seavey descendant, who had planned to write a book on the Seavey family. She never wrote her book, but her files, in some manner, came into the possession of the New England Historic Genealogical Society of Boston. When Mr. Hanson first found them, he was not permitted to make photo copies so he had to copy by hand the essential information that he desired.

On a special trip made in 1982, at the request of the writer, and preceeded by a letter that was sent to the New England Historic Genealogical Society, he was given access to the A.C. Hall Collection. On this trip he was permitted to make photocopies.

Soon after Mr. Hanson disclosed the source of his information an interesting article was found in the library of the New Hampshire Historical Society.[1]

Portions of the Article in the Oct. 1905 issue follow:

BOOK IN PREPERATION

Seavey Genealogy—Mrs. A.C. Hall of Stamford, Ct. is preparing a genealogy of the descendants of William Seavey of Portsmouth, N.H., also the descendants of Thomas Seavey of the same place.

After brief summary information about William and Thomas Seavey the article is concluded as follows:

Mrs. Hall would like for all persons related to the Seavey family, or having Seavey records to correspond with her so that she can secure a complete record of the whole family for publication. She has the work now under way toward completion. Address: Mrs. A.C. Hall Stamford, Conn.

Anna Byrd Hall married her cousin Alvin C. Hall. She used the initials A.B. and A.C. at different times.

The material on file consists of seventy-three, small bound notebooks, ledgers and packets. Many of the notes are scribbled

in pencil. According to Mr. Hanson, the material shows that she received correspondence from many people. In some cases, she took from letters just the information she considered pertinent. In other cases, she copied letters in their entirety. Unfortunately, most of the information about the Seavey line of this book was found in the form of notes made from letters but without full identification of the supplier of the information and their qualifications for its accuracy.

While most of the information in the file of Mrs. A.C. Hall might not satisfy a professional genealogist and a purist as being prime source material, it does have much in its favor. First it was collected in the first years of this century and comes from family records existing at that time and probably no longer available, and from people two generations back who had the facts from their own knowledge of them or from even earlier generations who passed information on to them. Secondly, vital statistics as we know them today were very often not recorded in early day communities in a newly settled area. Births, marriages and deaths just simply were not recorded. So information such as much of that in the Hall file probably was never formally recorded by either civil or religious groups. Third, of the information that was recorded some has been lost through fires, carelessness or just lack of foresight such as the destruction of most of the early records of Portsmouth, N.H. by vote of the selectmen. So it is the considered opinion of the author that the data in the Hall file should be considered acceptable as a substitute for prime data, especially since a considerable portion of it has been verified from what can be considered prime or official sources. Where the information has been found to be incorrect the supplier of it has usually expressed misgivings about it or qualified it in some way.

All of the foregoing is a long way of telling about sources of much of the information on the generations of Solomon[5], William[6], Solomon[7], George[8] Washington and even Lawrence[9] Albert Seavey and some of the connecting lines for these generations. The reference will be "Mrs. A.C. Hall Collection" or "Harold L. Hanson" or both.

NOTE

1. *New Hampshire Genealogical Record*, Vol. III, No. 2, October 1905; p. 92.

CHAPTER XVII

William[6] Seavey

William[6] Seavey son of Solomon[5] (Samuel[4], Samuel[3], Samuel[2], Thomas[1]) was probably born in 1768 in Rye, N.H. However, we cannot be sure as the exact date of removal of the family to Poplin, N.H. is not known. Solomon was still on the tax list of Rye as late as 1777. He does not appear in Poplin records until 1777. The first two children of Solomon are listed in Rye records but not William. The other uncertainty is the identity of his mother. She was probably Mary Fuller, but could have been Joanna Fuller, a younger sister of Mary, with Mary a second wife of Solomon that he married at some later date.

Actually very little is known about William[6] Seavey. However, a careful study of the census records of New Hampshire and Vermont, plus a general knowledge of conditions in New Hampshire and Vermont in the period of his adult life, permit some conclusions that are probably reasonable.

The 1790 census of the Town of Grafton, Grafton County, N.H. lists William[6] with a wife, two male children under sixteen years of age and one female child. The children were Sarah, born 1786; John, born 1787; and Sewell, born 1789.

In Chapter XIV, the 1773 move of Jonathan Buffum from Richmond, N.H. to Grafton, Grafton County, N.H. was mentioned.[1] He was one of the early arrivals there as the first settlement is listed as taking place in 1772.[2] The first settler was Capt. Joseph Hoyt of Poplin, N.H. It is likely that William[6] and his older brother, Joseph[6] Seavey went to Grafton with him or shortly after he left Poplin. The wife of Joseph[6] was Sarah Hoyt and they were in Grafton at the time of the 1790 census and had one male son under ten years of age. A petition for the incorporation of Grafton was presented to the legislature of the state in 1777. There were twenty signers. Jonathan Buffum was one of them. A second petition with twenty-eight signatures was presented the next year and he signed that. William[6] and Joseph[6] Seavey were undoubtedly early arrivals in the new community and Jonathan[5] Buffum was

In Chapter XIV we told of the birth of Bethana Buffum in Richmond, Chester County, N.H., April 5, 1766.[3-4] She was the daughter of Jonathan[5] and Ruth (Joslin) Buffum. William[6] Seavey and Bethana Buffum were married in Grafton, N.H. in 1785. By the time of the 1790 census they had three children. Before the death of Bethana they had a total of twelve. William[6] married Jemima Estabrook as a second wife in Lebanon, Grafton County, N.H. April 13, 1813.[5] This date is undoubtedly correct, but the 1814 date for the death of Bethana (Buffum) Seavey is

probably wrong. It is likely that she died soon after the birth of her twelveth child, Roxanna, June 28, 1807. Some records were found that indicate that Roxanna was raised by another family, possibly relatives.

During the life of his first wife and on to the end of his life William[6] Seavey seems to have been on the move and his family moved with him. The census records show this. It seems safe to assume that he worked in the forests cutting timber for lumber and firewood. In middle and later life he seems to have contracted for surveying forested areas for lumber and then clearing it. In Fairfax, Franklin County, the author stopped at the office of the Town Clerk. She produced a March 27, 1800 deed of which Bill Seavey and son were the grantees. David Farwell was the grantor. Although the boundaries of the sixty acres to be surveyed and sawed out are given, the wording of the document is such that it is not clear whether the work is to go to the grantor or the lumber to go to the grantee. No consideration is included in the deed. He was probably doing the work for a price to be agreed upon after he surveyed the timber in the area under consideration. There is no definite proof that this was the William[6] that is being followed in this account. The mention of a son causes some concern. The oldest son of William[6] was John[7] who was only thirteen years of age. While a boy of thirteen in those days could, and did, do a lot of work it would be unusual to mention one in a legal contract.

But to get back to the wanderings of William[6], it is work such as lumbering or land clearing that could account for his frequent moves. Incidentally, they did not have chain saws in those days so the large trees were felled with a two-man cross-cut saw and cleared of limbs with an axe. Generally, the work was done in the winter when the logs could be dragged out of the woods when the ground was frozen and there was snow. It was real work.

As mentioned, William[6] was in Grafton, N.H. in 1790. For the 1800 census he was in Tunbridge, Orange County, Vt. about seventy miles north and west of Grafton, N.H. The Hanson-Mrs. A.C. Hall data put him in Fairfax, Franklin County, Vt. in 1795 where his son Moses was born. Fairfax is at least seventy miles north of Tunbridge. At this point, he was just getting warmed up on the moving. When the 1810 census was taken he was back in Lebanon, N.H. which is about twenty-five miles south and east from Tunbridge. Then for the 1820 and 1830 census he was over in Hartford, Vt. about fifteen miles south and west from Lebanon, N.H. After 1830 he does not appear in the census, but from information in the file of Mrs. A.C. Hall we know that he died in Ellenburg, Clinton County, N.Y. in either 1840 or 1846. His son Joseph[7] was living there then and as shall be seen, several other sons and a daughter had moved over into Clinton County, N.Y. by that time. His grave has not been found and Clinton County, N.Y. has an excellent record of marked burials. However, monuments with inscriptions were the exception rather than the rule at that period in a recently settled area. Most burials were in little plots on the family farm with only

a field stone to mark the grave, but without any kind of inscription.

The very limited information presented so far is all that has been found on William[6] Seavey. He did move frequently and he and Bethana (Buffum) Seavey raised a large family. They will be listed and such information as has been found will be included. It seems that they turned out well. All were children of Bethana. Most, in the tradition of their father and grandfathers moved on to other areas.

The children of William[6] and Bethana (Buffum) Seavey are listed below. Most of the information about them comes from Harold L. Hanson and from the files of Mrs. A.C. Hall. When there are other sources they will be listed.

1. Sarah
   b. Mar. 24, 1786 at Grafton, N.H.
   m. Freeman Bixby. They lived in Lyme, N.H. which is about 25 miles north and west of Grafton.
   One son, Solomon, b. Sept. 6, 1787.
2. John
   b. Sept. 6, 1787 at Grafton, N.H.
   m. Susan Bean in Vt.
   John moved about 1839 to Chateaugay, N.Y., later to Parishville and Colton all in central, northern New York. In that area there was a town called Sevey which still appears on some maps. His children lived at Sevey, Pulaski and Watertown, N.Y. Had 6 sons and 3 daughters.
3. Sewell
   b. Feb. 17, 1789 at Grafton, N.H.
   m. Mar. 16, 1815, Judith (Ruth) Stearns.
   d. Feb. 26, 1874 at Bristol, N.H. Hanson uses title of Doctor. Lived in Tunbridge, Vt., Danbury, Vt. and Bristol, N.H.
4. Joseph
   b. Feb. 21, 1791.
   m. April 30, 1816 Esther Sleeper
   d. July 29, 1880 at Ellenburg, Clinton County, N.Y. There will be more on Joseph later in this chapter.
5. Mary
   b. Dec. 28, 1793.
   m. 1st.—Peck—one son Aaron Peck. 2nd. in Moira, Franklin County, N.Y. One son Harry Johnson lived in Bush's Mills. Also 2 daughters.
   d.—
6. William
   b. Sept. 14, 1794.
   m. June 1, 1823, Mary E. Spofford (1799–1879), daughter of James and Sophia Spofford.
   d.—
7. Moses
   b. Jan. 1, 1796 at Fairfax, Franklin County, Vt.
   m. Jan. 19, 1824, Zervial Aspinwall (b. 1792, d.—) of Lebanon, N.H.
   d. May 15, 1878.
   In the 1830 census of Mooers, Clinton County, N.Y. Moses Seavey is listed as having a wife and one child under 5 years of age. At the first town meeting of Ellenburg, March 1, 1831, he was elected one of the constables. Two sons: Horace, b. 1826 at Halifax, Vt., d. at Lebanon, N.H. Aug. 1885; Hiram, b. , d. at Lebanon, N.H.; Hiram had a son Fred C. b. at Lebanon, N.H. m. Aug. 11, 1887 Kate L. Barker.[8]
8. Bethana
   b. May 27, 1797
   m. ca 1815 Samuel T.W. Sleeper of Bristol, N.H. He was a school teacher, farmer, Justice of the Peace, town selectman and member of state legislature 2 years.
   d. Dec. 28, 1876. They had 11 children.

9. Benjamin
   b. Mar. 23, 1800.
   m. Lorinda Huntley of Mooers, Clinton County, N.Y.
   d. In Mooers, Clinton Co., N.Y. for 1840 census with 1 male 5–10 and 1 male under 5. Sons Benjamin and Allison died young. Son Charles lived in Santa Clara, Franklin Co., N.Y.
10. George
    b. Sept. 10, 1801.
    m.—
    d.—Will be discussed later in this chapter.
11. Solomon[7]
    b. Nov. 4, 1802.
    m. ca 1827 Sylvia Washburn of Milton, Chittenden County, Vt.
    d. 1846 Buried Saranac Hollow Cemetery, Saranac, Clinton County, N.Y. Chapter XIX will be devoted to Solomon.
12. Roxana
    b. June 28, 1807
    m. Jun. 13, 1828 Ebenezer Wood by Stephen Paine, J.P.[8]

As stated earlier in this chapter most of the information on William[6] Seavey and his family has been obtained from Harold L. Hanson. He, in turn, obtained most of his information from the file of Mrs. A.C. Hall which is stored at the Library of the New England Historic Genealogical Society in Boston. As most of the material from these sources is not available from any other sources more of it has been included in this account than would normally be included under the policy of following the direct line of descent of the principal subject, in this case Fannie Collins Harrison. The departure is being made to help Seavey family researchers who might not be able to gain access to the material in the library in Boston. While not strictly "prime" material, anyone studying the files of Mrs. Hall cannot help but be impressed with the quality of her data. Letters are copied in many cases and notes from identified sources are included in other cases. In many instances recorded information is followed by a question mark and then, probably at a later date, scratched out and something else substantiated.

While considerable data is supplied for each of the twelve children of William[6] Seavey there is more that deserves to be included in this chapter.

Much of the information obtained by Mrs. Hall came from Cutter C. Carpenter of Ellenburg Center, Clinton County, New York. He was the husband of Adaline E. Seavey, the youngest child of Joseph[7] Seavey who was the fourth child of William[6] Seavey. Adaline E. Seavey was born in 1829 and died May 11, 1904. She married Cutter C. Carpenter in 1851. Joseph, the father of Adaline, lived with Adaline and Cutter Carpenter for the last five years of his life after the death of his wife April 16, 1875. And presumably William[6] Seavey lived with Joseph[7] after he moved to Ellenburg, N.Y. He died there in either 1840 or 1846, probably the latter date. So in writing to Mrs. Hall, Cutter Carpenter could draw on information in writing or that he had received orally from his father-in-law and indirectly from the father of his father-in-law. His information, therefore, should be reliable back as far as 1800 or even earlier. Since much of what he supplied gave days and months as well as years he must have had much of it in writing.

For descendants interested in the family of Joseph[7] some additional data will be furnished. His children were:

1. Sarah
   b. 1821.
   m. 1843 Isiaih Hasseltine.
   d. 1900.
2. John R.M.
   b. 1825.
   m. Mary Arno
   d. 1863.
   Children: Laura; Mary Jane, m. Charles Vosburg; George lived in Manchester, N.H.; Joseph, John, Died young.
3. Joseph M.
   b. 1819
   d. 1823
4. Adaline E.
   b. 1829.
   m. 1851 Cutter C. Carpenter
   d. May 11, 1904.
   Children: Amelia, b. 1852, m. W.G. Tolhurst; George W. Carpenter, b. 1855; Alice b. 1853, d. 1874; Monroe Carpenter, b. 1858; and Charles L. Carpenter, b. 1860 Lived Medford, Mass.

Joseph[6] Seavey was one of the earliest settlers in Ellenburg, N.Y. which is about fifteen miles west and slightly south from Rouses Point which was probably the place where early emigrants crossed the upper reaches of Lake Champlain. The first settler arrived in 1803 but by 1823 only a few more had arrived. In that year Harriet Murray through her husband and an agent offered the next ten settlers each 50 acres of land at no cost. The first to arrive was Joseph[6] Seavey. Among the others who arrived there were Samuel Hasseltine and Eli Hasseltine. Two Carpenter brothers arrived a few years later. It will be noticed above that daughters of Joseph Seavey married a Hasseltine and a Carpenter. There was not much choice in those days. It was the boy or girl on the next farm or a nearby farm or stay single. Brothers and sisters of Joseph[6] Seavey followed him over the next ten to fifteen years.

The Hall material that has been copied from the file in the library in Boston has data on the children of Edmund Seavey who was a son of Solomon[5] Seavey and several others are mentioned.

The following is about John[7] Seavey the oldest son of William[6] Seavey. She obtained it from J.J. Seavey of Windfall House, Sevey, N.Y. who says that John[7] Seavey lived in New Hampshire, married Susan Bean and then lived in Franklin County, Vermont until about 1839 when he moved to Chateaugay, N.Y. Later he moved on to Parishville in St. Lawrence County, N.Y. and finally to Colton, N.Y. when he died in 1878 at the age of seventy-one. [Note: There may be something wrong here as he was born in 1787 and this is a correct date. He would have been ninety-one if he died in 1878. Susan Bean Seavey died in 1762. Their children were:

1. Daniel Monroe Seavey, three children: Aaron Mortimier m. Clara _____; Florence, m. Carter (Pulaski) and Flora, m. Wm. Lamb (Pulaski)
2. Jane, m. Green. Three children.
3. Aaron Seavey buried in Vermont.
4. Andrew Seavey buried in Vermont.
5. David Seavey. No children.
6. William. Three children: George, Robert and Allen.
7. Johnson J. Seavey of Sevey, N.Y.
8. Mary.
9. Hannah, m. Eugene Butler. One child.

Fred W. Sevey of Center Point, Texas, a descendant of John Sevey of New York, has been working on his Sevey line for many years. I first learned of him in 1981 through Richard Ward of Plattsburg, N.Y. who has seen his name in the register of the public library there as one interested in receiving Seavey family information. Over the years he has worked deligently in New Hampshire, Vermont, and New York in his search for information. For several years his findings led him to believe that his family line went back from John of New York to William[1] Seavey of the Portsmouth-Rye-Isles of Shoals area. When the Harold Hanson-Mrs. A.B. Hall material was presented to him he found it to be a possible solution for his problem. However, some of it for the generation of John Sevey, son of William[6] Seavey of Hanson-Hall line and his descendants does not agree with what he had found. He is a diligent researcher and in his efforts has found Seavey monuments in cemeteries in several states, talked to and corresponded with many living Seavey descendants in the four or five states where they have lived and studied all of the census and other records he has been able to find. There are conflicts and uncertainties as well as gaps in this information and what he has does not agree with what has been presented in this chapter.

On a recent visit at our home (May 23, 1987) our two sets of information were discussed. Since neither is complete nor entirely accurate the best course to follow at the present time seems to be to present each collection of information. The Hanson-Hall material has already been presented. The information that Fred Sevey has follows:

With some reservations he accepts William[6] Seavey as the father of John. It is his present belief that John the son of William listed in the Hanson-Hall data as having been born at Grafton, Vt. Sept. 6, 1787 died young and the John who has been found in New York was a later child who was given the name of John. Fred Sevey lists a date of birth for him of Sept. 1804 and the place of birth as Popham (Freemont), N.H. As William[6] and Bethana (Buffum) Seavey were not married until some time after he moved to Grafton and as her family lived in Grafton, the place of birth was probably Grafton, N.H. Although Fred Sevey has settled on 1804 as the year of birth, the 1850 and the 1870 census reports each show 1800 as the date of birth. Fred Sevey lists 1876 as the date of death in South Colton, St. Lawrence County, N.Y. The Hall information gives the date of death as 1878 and age at death as seventy-one which would be a date of birth of 1807, so nothing checks. The Hall data lists Benjamin[7] as being born March 23, 1800 but there is a gap of about four and a half years between Solomon[7] (Nov. 4, 1802) and Roxana (June 28, 1807). For the census date of 1807 to be correct there would be a conflict with Roxana who was born that year. Fred Sevey and the author hope that something that can be accepted without reservations will be found.

Fred Sevey accepts Susanna (Susan) Bean as the wife of John Sevey and gives a date of birth of 1803 taken from the 1850 census and June 20, 1864 for date of death in South Colton, N.Y. Her monument

shows 1811 as the date of birth but Fred questions it.

The children listed by Fred Sevey are:

1. Daniel Monroe, b. 1826 in Vermont; m. about 1847, Julia Fray in Pulaski, N.Y.
2. Jane, b. about 1828 in Vermont; m. Joseph Green.
3. Aaron, b. about 1830 in Vermont; drowned in Vt.
4. Andrew, b. about 1831 in Vermont; died from a fall down the stairs.
5. David, b. 1833 Calais, Washington County, Vt; m. 1st Sally Morris, 2nd Cordelia, McKenna d, Jan. 17, 1900 in National Military Home in Ohio.
6. William, b. 1834, Manchester, Bennington County, Vt; m. Lucy Finch at Colton, N.Y. d, Oct. 16, 1879; he died—. She is buried in Sevey Cemetery, Sevey, N.Y.
7. Johnson J., b. Oct. 7, 1838, Manchester, Bennington County, Vt.; m. Betsy A. Parker, Colton, N.Y.; d. July 25, 1907 Sevey, St. Lawrence County, N.Y.
8. Mary, b. 1847 Manchester, Vt.; d. March 12, 1862 at Colton, N.Y.
9. Mary, b. 1847; d. 1856.

NOTE: Fred Sevey so far does not have a reasonable explanation for the two Marys.

10. Hannah, b. 1847 Colton, N.Y.; m. Eugene Butler who shot himself accidently. His wife and child died within a year.

For Daniel Monroe Sevey, Fred Sevey gives the following information:

The father of his wife Julia Fray was Anson Fray and her mother was Irena Burk, b. 1788 in Vermont and d. April 15, 1865.

Their children were:

1. Anson Mortimer, b. March 27, 1848 at Pulaski, N.Y.; m. Alice Chester Warner of Long Pine, Neb. May 26, 1891, d. Jan. 29, 1934 in Pomona, California.
2. Florence, b. about 1849 at Richland, Oswego County, N.Y.; m. 1st Oct. 5, 1906 James M. Wait in South Colton, N.Y.
3. Flora, b. about 1851; m. Walter Lamb.

Fred Sevey is continuing his search for family information. If there is any that can be found, it is the opinion of the writer that he will find it.

Since Joseph[6] Seavey was the first Seavey of the line being followed in this work to move into New York it seems in order to tell briefly about the conditions encountered by the first settlers. As there is no known record from any family member, the experience of the first settler in Chateaugay just over the line in Franklin County will be used. It appeared in the *History of Clinton and Franklin Counties, New York* by Hurd. In this book there are similar accounts for the first settlers in most of the towns back to the west from Lake Champlain. This material is included in the next chapter.

George Washington Sevey

A Pioneer Elder of the Mormon Church. In 1973 which was early in my program to put together the Seavey line of George Washington Seavey, the grandfather of Fannie C. Harrison, I found in the genealogy section of the New York Public Library a listing for a book: *The Genealogy of the Descendants of George Washington Seavey.*[9] I could hardly wait for the library employee to bring it to me. It was about a George Washington Sevey but not the one that I was seeking. The two were about the same age, started out in upstate New York but the subject of the book went to

Salt Lake City, Utah, joined the Mormon Church and was active in their work for the rest of his life carrying out very important assignments for them.

After months of effort, I finally obtained a copy and the address of the surviving one of the two authors. Although we have corresponded off and on since 1974, she and other family members have not been able to supply any information about the ancestry of their George Washington Sevey other than what they included in their 1965 book.

The Genealogy of the Descendants of George Washington Sevey contains this:

> A capable, far-seeing man, financier, organizer and colonizer, George Washington Sevey was born 25 February 1832, in Leroy, Genessee County, New York State, the son of George Sevey and Hannah Libby.

He had a brother, John Franklin Sevey who had a wife, Sarah. Their mother, Hannah Libby Sevey went out to Utah with John Franklin in 1856 or 1857.

It is the opinion of the author that the father, George Sevey is George[7] Sevey who was a son of William[6] Sevey and the brother Solomon[7] Seavey. When Mrs. Hall was collecting her information, all she learned was that George[7] Sevey, born Sept. 10, 1801 went "west". He would be the right age to have a son born in 1832 and to die before that son left for the Gold Rush in 1849.

While no claim is being made that the information that follows is conclusive and can be given the status of "a prime genealogical record" it is interesting.

The picture of George Washington Seavey in the book certainly shows a family resemblance to the one other male Seavey descendant that I have known—Harry Burnham Adams who would be a second great nephew. Also, when going through the book for the first time, I stopped when I reached page 187 and the picture of the now deceased one of the authors, Minerva Elizabeth Sevey (Johnson, Vance). My first thought was "How did they get a picture of Adelia Katherine Collins in their book?" The resemblance even to the expression and the position of the head is such that it could be a picture of Adelia today. Also George Washington, the Mormon, could easily pass as the father of Fannie C. Harrison.

It is the hope of the author that one of the descendants of this George Washington Sevey or of George[8] Washington Sevey of this book will be able to find the necessary records to definitely tie the two lines together.

NOTES

1. *History of the Town of Richmond* page 348.
2. *Town Papers N.H.*, Vol. XII, 1647–1800 @ N.H. State Library.
3. *New Hampshire Vital Statistics.*
4. *Buffum Genealogy*, page 30. On file in library of New Hampshire Historical Society.

5. *Town Records Lebanon, N.H.* Vol. II, p. 74.
6. *History of Clinton and Franklin Counties, N.Y.* by D.H. Hurd 1880 p. 316.
7. *History of the Town of Bristol, N.H.* by R.W. Musgrove, pages 409 & 410.
8. *Vital Records of Vermont.* Some of the notes give Fairfax, Vt. as the place of birth of Moses. In one note Halifax, Vt. is listed for the place of birth for Horace, his first son. Fairfax is in the north, near the crossing point to New York and Halifax is in the extreme south of the state so the former is probably correct.
9. *The Genealogy of the Descendants of George Washington Sevey* Printed by Robert L. Pellett, Needford, Oregon 1965 by Minerva Sevey Vance and Eileen Sevey Cluff. The book is no longer available except from dealers in out of print books. Mrs. Raymond Cluff, 1150 Tollman Creek Road, Ashland, Oregon, 97520, one of the authors may know where there are some copies. It is a most interesting book even though a family tie has not yet been established.

CHAPTER XVIII

New England and Clinton County, N.Y.— 1780–1830

Anyone visiting most any place in New England today, or at any time in this century undoubtedly asks themselves the same question I asked myself after visiting Virginia many years ago. In Virginia, I wondered why my ancestors left such a beautiful state and undertook the long, difficult and dangerous trip to Kentucky and Missouri. New England is beautiful country, so the natural question is, why should anyone want to leave it. The answer is the same for each area. The principal reason was to get more land. The economy in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries was largely agricultural. While there was enough land in the beginning to feed the limited number of people in the earliest days, this was not the case after a few generations. Along the coast line then there was trade, fishing, shipbuilding and very limited lumber manufacturing of a home industry type to supplement farming. After a few years with new arrivals and large families, there were just too many people for the land available.

Travel in the general period of 1870. A surrey without the fringe on top but with rolled up curtains that could be used for protection from rain or cold weather. On the upper road in Village of Saranac with two spirited horses.

Expansion, to the west in New England and to the north above the Mohawk River in New York, was dangerous for a time due to the Indians and the French in Canada who encouraged the Indians to prey on the settlers. Then, about the time the population pressure was to the point where expansion from the coastal areas was essential, the Revolutionary War came along and slowed down the spread to the west and north. Once the fighting was over in 1781, the barriers to expansion in this general area were down, and the people started to move west in New England and north in New York. Many of the young men who had never been more than a few miles from home before the Revolution, had seen some of the country during the war years, and as with young men from the beginning of time, they wanted to get out into new worlds. After all, they were

Bowen and Signor Iron Works, Saranac, N.Y. about 1870. The Saranac River is in the foreground and the Village of Saranac in the background. The building in the insert may be the home of one of the owners or the offices of the forge.

just a generation or so from their forefathers who had dared to cross the wide and turbulent North Atlantic to find a better world.

Solomon[5] Seavey (Samuel[4], Samuel[3], Samuel[2] and Thomas[1]) was the first of the Seavey line being followed to leave Rye. While a list of other Seavey male descendants of Thomas[1] of the generation of Solomon[5] has not been compiled there were at least twenty males of the generation of his father. All were in Rye or the immediate vicinity. There must have been at least forty in the generation of Solomon[5]. As there was not enough land for that number in that day when land was required for almost every family, some had to move. Some went north, or as the local people used to say, "down" to Maine and others north into New Hampshire. Solomon with his wife and two, possibly three, children went west to Poplin (now Freemont), N.H. He did not go very far because Poplin (Freemont) is only about twenty miles from Rye. It is possible that he moved on to some land that his father or grandfather had acquired in some way at an earlier date. Also, he might have been granted some land for serving in one phase of the wars with the Indians. We do know that he was there with a wife and four children in 1777. In a list, "Taxed

about 1777" for Rye, he is also included but no tax is listed for him. Previously he had received some of the Glebe land of Rye when it was distributed.

Solomon and a wife remained in Poplin or Freemont for the rest of their days as far as has been determined. Of their five children, and this was a small family for that period, four were boys. They all needed land. Joseph[6], the oldest, and William[6] went up to Grafton, N.H., a distance of about sixty miles, along with other residents of Poplin. But William[6] was not in Grafton Town very long. For the 1800 census he was in Tunbridge, Orange County, Vermont. When the 1810 census was taken he was in Lebanon, N.H. In 1820 and 1830 he was back in Vermont in Hartford. To the best of our knowledge, he died in Ellenburg, Clinton County, N.Y. During this same period other Seavey family members were moving out to the north into Maine, north into New Hampshire and west into Vermont and New York.

As the families moved north and west, they found some unoccupied land but never enough to take care of the ever increasing number of people. Drive anywhere in Maine, New Hampshire and Vermont today and the small amount of land suitable for agriculture, including grazing, is immediately obvious. Only the valleys can accomodate farms and with few exceptions they are narrow. There was plenty of forest land with good timber but the nature of the economy was such that lumbering and working with forest products provided only limited employment and income.

William[6] covered much of New Hampshire and Vermont in his life and while raising twelve children. Eight of them were sons and five of them, plus one or two of the daughters, ended up in Clinton County, New York by 1840. The population movement in New England from the early settlements along the Atlantic and Long Island Sound, while maybe not as dramatic as that westward from Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia and the Carolinas, was basically the same and for the same reason. The family members of this account were very much a part of it as the Allens, Harrisons and connecting lines were of the westward migration from the Colonies and later the states to the south.

No attempt will be made to describe New Hampshire and Vermont as they were in the time period involved here. Except for the forests that have been cleared from the valleys, the roads, and the buildings in the country, the towns and the cities; the country is undoubtedly much as it was years ago. The early settlers pushing west and north had to make first paths for travel on foot and by horse. These were followed by crude roads in the valleys and over ridges and mountains for wagons drawn by oxen. Water transportation was used wherever practical. Overland travel followed along the rivers and streams until necessary to cross over a ridge or mountain range. The average pioneer had very little to transport.

This account from this point will concentrate on Clinton County, N.Y. and conditions found there by the first settlers penetrating more than a few miles beyond Lake Champlain. Members of the Seavey family were among the first to push into this area. They were pioneer settlers. It

was undoubtedly fortuitous that a full two generations of time elapsed between the departure from Rye and the arrival in northern New York. The Rye-Portsmouth area had been settled for nearly a hundred and fifty years or five generations when the Seavey family members and others started to migrate to the west. They started with the civilization and community type that they brought from England and the continent. New arrivals were coming in all the time and with fish, timber products and other items to offer in trade those already over here could bring in food, cloth, and many of the necessities for living at that time. The farther they moved from the coast with its ports and established communities, the more of this they lost. Ever increasing privation increased their self-reliance and prepared them for the total wilderness for which they were headed.

Although William[6] seems to have spent his last few years in Clinton County, New York, it was really his sons and daughters who were the first settlers. They were grandchildren of Solomon[5] who was the first of the family to move to the west. During this two-generation period, and for the first generation in New York, very few records were generated, and of the few that were, many were lost in fires or through negligence. If there was a town clerk or a county clerk, it might require a day to make the journey to him or her. There were very few churches, and ministers would serve several, visiting each not more often than once a month. Again, few church records were made, and of those made, not all survived.

Even before the colonial period there was exploration, and later limited travel, along the Hudson River and then north through Lake George, Lake Champlain and on north on the Richelieu River to the St. Lawrence River. Samuel Champlain was in the present Clinton County, N.Y. as early as 1609. In time, there were scattered settlements along this route. Colonists from the Netherlands moved north along the Hudson and almost to Lake George. A few hardy pioneers settled along the lakes and the Richelieu River in Canada. The first settler in what is now Clinton County was in the area of the present Town of Chazy. John La Frombois settled there in 1759 but was driven away by the English in 1776.[1] The first settler at Plattsburgh was Count Charles de Fredeuburgh in 1769.[1] He erected a house on the south bank of the Saranac river at Lake Champlain and a saw mill at the falls three miles up the river. However, as late as 1798, there were only two hundred and fifty settlers in what is now Plattsburgh. There were no streets, but only four short wagon roads running out to saw mills, grist mills, etc. At this time, Plattsburgh was the only town for the large three county area that now includes Essex County on the south and Franklin County on the west, in addition to Clinton County.

The population of the present Clinton County increased slowly for a time and tended to be concentrated along Lake Champlain. The population through the period when the members of the Seavey family arrived is shown in Table I.

By 1830, there were less than 20,000

TABLE I

Towns	When Formed	Total Population						
		1790	1800	1810	1814	1820	1825	1830
Altona	1857							
Ausable	1839							
Beekmantown	1820					1,1343	1,511	2,391
Black Brook	1839							
Champlain	1788	578	1,169	1,210	942	1,618	1,824	2,456
Chazy	1804			1,406	1,404	2,313	2,396	3,097
Clinton	1845							
Dannemora	1854							
Ellenburgh	1830							
Mooers	1804			301	272	567	743	1,222
Peru	1792		1,347	1,973	1,755	2,710	3,996	4,949
Plattsburgh	1785	458	1,400	3,102	3,390	3,519	3,753	4,913
Saranac	1824						263	316
Totals		1,036	3,916	8,002	7,763	12,070	14,486	19,344

people in all of Clinton County. Practically all of them were along the lake where much of the heavy forest had been cleared, and what was considered as a road in those days had come into being. A few miles inland there was nothing but impenetrable forests and timber growth. Still farther inland there were mountains and they were covered with timber. The families moving in from the east and the south in the 1820–1830 period found accessible, partially cleared level land along the lake already occupied. There was nothing for them to do but go on through the thin rim of civilization along the lake and out into the forest with all of the woods and the creatures of the woods. This they did with a vengeance.

Rather than try to tell in my own words what the 1820–1830 settlers encountered, selected passages from the History of Clinton and Franklin Counties,[1] New York, will be quoted. It was written in 1880 while some of the very early settlers were still living, so Duane H. Hurd, the compiler, had access to people who remembered the area as it was in the early years of the nineteenth century. The book, 9 × 12 inches, with 500 pages, has an account for each town or township. The early arrivals are listed and some information is given on what they experienced in getting to the area and after their arrival. The accounts given by Hurd will convey a much better picture of the arrival and what was found than this author can supply.

In Hurd's History of Clinton County[2] there is the following interesting item; about an early settlement and settlers in Ellenburgh:

But no great advancements were made in the direction of forming homes and clearing lands till Harriet Murray, through her husband and agent, made an offer of a deed of 50 acres to each of the first ten permanent settlers of the town. Under the stimulus of this offer, in 1823, Benjamin Hinds settled here, building a log house near where C.G. Dominy now lives. Mr. Hinds was followed by Joseph Sevy, Samuel Hasseltine, Pardon Dally, Marshall Perry, W. Jennings, Jr., Mr. French and Eli Hasseltine, all of whom received their homestead free, according to promise. Israel R. and Edward Carpenter, two brothers, came here in the fall and spring of '26 and '27.

Harriet Murray was the wife of John R. Murray and they held a large grant of land in the area. The fact that an offer of free land was the attraction for the first settlers in the area is really the story of the settlement of a large part of our entire country. Free land, and land at a very low, affordable cost, if requested, on a plan for payment over a period of time, was all important in the spread of settlers across the United States.

This account is also the first and only record found for the arrival of a Seavey in New York. Joseph as has been mentioned earlier, was the fourth child of William[6] and Bethana (Buffum) Seavey. He was born Feb. 21, 1791, in the Town of Grafton in New Hampshire. In 1816 he married Esther Sleeper. A daughter of Joseph[7] and Esther (Sleeper) Seavey married a descendant of one of the Carpenters mentioned in this account. It is from him that we have much of our information of the Seavey family of the fifth, sixth and seventh generations due to the work of Mrs. A.C. Hall.

The town of Ellenburgh was not separated from the town of Mooers until 1830. Joseph[7] Seavey, therefore, arrived before the actual establishment of the town.

The accounts about the early settlement of each of the towns in the county tell of the dense, almost unpenetrable forest, the streams and the animals in the forests. One account telling of the travel of a family from Plattsburgh to Chateaugay first over the line in Franklin County is particularly interesting.[3] They had to traverse the entire county. Their general direction was west and north as they ended up just below the Canadian border. The terrain along their course was relatively flat so they did not have to contend with mountains.

The first white settlements in the county were made in the town of Chateaugay, in the year 1796, by Benjamin Roberts, from Ferrisburgh, Vt., and Nathan Beeman, from Plattsburgh. At this time the frontier settlement was in Beekmantown, six miles west of Plattsburgh.

The following account of Mr. Roberts' pioneer journey has been already printed, but is found to be substantially correct, and hence reproduced:

"Having decided upon emigrating far beyond the limits of civilized life, Mr. Roberts left his home in February, 1796, with his family and goods, and arrived safely at Plattsburgh, where he left his family, and attempted to proceed with a portion of his goods to his destination. With the assistance of some of the land proprietors, and others, who felt an interest in the proposed settlement, they proceeded with a number of teams as far as was practicable (about eighteen miles), where they were compelled from the depth of the snows to abandon the undertaking, and leaving their load concealed in the woods with hemlock boughs, they returned to

Plattsburgh. In March, Mr. Roberts, with Levi Trumbull, a young man whom he had hired, set out with an intention of making sugar, and there being a firm crust on the snow, they started with a hand-sled for the place where their load had been deposited, and taking a fire-pail, iron kettle, and an old-fashioned Dutch iron pot, holding about ten gallons, some provisions, an axe, and tapping-gouge, they proceeded with these, drawing them on the sled by hand, to Chateaugay, a distance of twenty-two miles, along a narrow path that had been partly cut through the fall before, in anticipation of a road. Mr. Roberts had also provided a hut the fall previous, which was not covered. They soon fitted up a quantity of basswood troughs, and commenced making sugar. While occupying this camp they were on one occasion visited by an Indian who sold them a moose, the flesh of which they cut up and smoked over their fire as they were making sugar. At the close of the sugar season they left their sugar, smoked meat, and kettles, in their camp, and returned to Plattsburgh.

"In the early part of April Mr. Roberts again started with his family, consisting of a wife and four children, and several hired men. These were Levi Trumbull, Joshua Chamberlain, Kinkade Chamberlain, Ethan A. Roberts, and Jared Munson. Their outfit consisted of a yoke of oxen, and a pair of steers for leaders, attached to a sled containing a few articles of indispensable use, but they had not proceeded more than a mile beyond the house of a Mr. Delong, the last settler in Beekmantown, when one of the oxen gave out from fatigue. He was here unyoked and left to provide for himself, as the spring was just opening, and vegetation had advanced enough to afford a scanty supply of food, and Roberts proposed to his wife to return with her young children to the settlement until another opportunity offered; but with herioc resolution she insisted upon sharing the hardships of the undertaking, and resolved to proceed. The husband having placed in a rude bark saddle such provisions upon the odd ox as he was able conveniently to carry, and suspended from the yoke of the steers a pack containing a few articles of first necessity, he took upon his own back one of his boys, and led the way, driving his cattle before him, and followed by his wife bearing an infant in her arms. His men and two other boys, then mere lads, bearing each burdens as their strength permitted, brought up the rear. What could not be taken was left covered up on the sled. A part of their load was a barrel of rum, which was left, except a copper tea-kettle full which they took along; and this being exhausted to within a quart, the remainder was preserved for Mrs. Roberts. Wherever night overtook them, they encamped in such a place as they might happen to be. They were from Monday until Saturday in performing the journey of about forty miles, and reached their sugar-camp about noon on Saturday, finding all safe. During this toilsome march Mrs. Roberts was often compelled to pause and rest, and, as they ascended the last hill, she inquired despairingly how much farther it was to the end of their journey.

"The remainder of the first day and the next were spent in covering their hut with bark, and they completed this labor just in time to save themselves from a drenching rain. A set of table-furniture was made of wood upon which to eat, consisting of trenchers and forks. To supply the family with provisions, the odd ox was sent once a week to Plattsburgh, with Chamberlain as driver, and with the regularity of the mails this animal performed his weekly trips, bearing upon his back a supply of flour and pork, upon which they relied for support during the first season. The party commenced a clearing on the south bank of Marble River, about half a mile north of the present village of Chateaugay, and during the summer of 1796 about 40 acres were cut and partly cleared. A small patch of potatoes and turnips was got in, the seed of the former being brought on the backs of William Roberts and Nathan Beeman, from Cumberland Head. To economize weight, the seed ends and eyes of the potatoes were only brought. Beeman,

from Plattsburgh, had been on several times during the summer, and having made arrangements for moving, brought on his family in the fall. Mrs. Roberts had been in the settlement three months without seeing the face of any one of her sex until the arrival of Mrs. Beeman."

The children referred to in the foregoing narrative as accompanying their parents on their adventurous journey were William, Samuel, Eliakim, and John Roberts, the latter of whom still resides in town at an advanced age. Alanson Roberts, also an aged citizen of the town, was the first male child born in town. A daughter, Harriet, married Jonathan Thompson, who was a pioneer stage-driver on the old Military Turnpike, and subsequently an influential citizen of the county. Theodorus P. Roberts, another son, resides in town at a good age. Michael was another son. Susan is the wife of Hon. William Andrus, of Malone. Catharine was one of the wives of O. Sunderland, who is an aged citizen of the town.

In 1801, Benjamin Roberts removed with his family to the present town of Clinton, Clinton Co., where he kept hotel for many years on the old turnpike, and where he passed the remainder of his life.

There is so much interesting material in the History of Clinton and Franklin Counties, New York that the temptation to extend this chapter is great. While this cannot be done, a few more items will be included. In the account of the early settlement of the town of Altona, there is this account about a wonderful spring that had been discovered on a hunting trip by an early settler in Plattsburgh:[5]

On these several occassions Simeon Wood had been impressed by the fine character of the country which he had explored. This, added to the fact that his wife was an invalid at Plattsburgh, and that her physician had advised that she be taken where she could obtain pure spring water to drink, induced Wood to move out to that wild country, and to locate himself near the spring in which he had hung the choice bits of the deer which he had shot.

Accordingly, in the year 1800, he transported his wife and nine children to his new home; the former being unable to walk, was drawn on a dray which Wood had himself made. The road from Beekmantown (Then the western-most frontier of Plattsburgh) was so rough that he had to cut his way a great part of the distance. He located his crude log hut near the residence of the Rev. Mr. Prindle, and close by the spring of water that had been the prime object in his coming. The house contained a large fireplace, and two doors stood opposite each other. A horse was led right through the house, in one door and out the other, and by this means huge logs were dragged to the fire for burning. Keeping this going for one season required three acres of timber, and on this land Wood planted his grain, and raised a fine crop of wheat. At this point he remained six years, and two more children were added to his family, making eleven in all, and bearing strong testimony to the favorable medicinal affects of the spring water on Mrs. Wood.

There are far too many accounts about bears, wolves, wildcats, deer and other animals to include all of them. Most are probably true but some are subject to question. Wolves were undoubtedly plentiful but there probably were not as many as accounts surviving indicate.

In the general time period of 1820, the bounty paid for a wolf head and skin was $50.00. This was a lot of money in those days. As might be suspected, such an attractive bounty payment program was abused. In fact, the old history of Clinton County tell of a "Wolf Ring" that resorted to all kinds of strategy to collect bounty

payments, mostly for wolves that none of them ever killed.

Some, however are very much like the stories told about pioneers in other sections of the country. My father used to tell about Davey Crockett using a coon skin to buy drinks for prospective voters when he was running for Congress in Tennessee. The bar at political gatherings, picnics, etc. would be a crude plank between whiskey barrels. He would order the drinks and plunk the coon skin on the bar. While the bartender had his back turned, he would flip it off on the ground from which he would pick it up and use it to buy the next round of drinks. The wolf hunters were supposed to have done the same thing. While the clerk was making out the papers with his back turned, one of them would pick up the head and hide which the clerk had thrown on the floor. By the time the clerk was finished with his forms, the original trophy was ready to be presented for another bounty. Thousands of dollars were supposed to have been paid out for fraudulent bounty claims. Cases were sent to court, and in time, tighter laws were passed.

There were, however, wolves, bears and other large wild animals. They did cause problems for the early settlers when they first built their cabins in the deep woods. The following account is from The History of Clinton and Franklin Counties, New York.[6]

> The early settlers came into a wild and heavily wooded country. Save when small clearings were made by them, or the modest bridle-path wended its way through lines of blazed trees, all was unbroken wilderness, concealing in its shady recesses, or rocky fastnesses, a large number of wild animals . . . It was no pleasing experience for the housewife, when left alone during the working hours of the day to see the expectant face of a gaunt wolf, or a hungry bear, peering in the open door of the humble log hut, and to successfully resist their attacks required the greatest skill and self-possession.
>
> Osiah Howard was a great bear-trapper, but on one occasion paid dearly for his temerity. Having captured a large one in his trap one day, he unloosened the chain which bound the latter to the tree, put it over his shoulder and attempted to drag the bear home by the leg. But the brute, mindful of the effectiveness of an attack in the rear, turned upon him, and seizing him by the hips, lacerated him terribly, so that he was glad to escape with his life from her angry attack.

One more quotation from the old history will be given.[7] J.C. Hubbell of Champlain was admitted to the bar in 1808, just before he was twenty-one years of age. He is quoted as follows:

> It was nearly all a dense wilderness between Champlain and Plattsburgh [a distance of only twenty-three miles] at that time. For several years we used to go on horseback by a bridle-path, usually taking a day to go and another to return. . . .
>
> This section was sparsely settled then and the inhabitants were largely engaged in the business of making potash for the English market, shipping it in summer down the lake and Richelieu River to St. John's and thence overland to Montreal and in winter on sleds all of the way. The timber here was mostly hard wood, and large tracts were cut down and piled into log-heaps and burned for the ashes, to make potash of. Logging-bees were all the fashion in those days, fifteen or twenty neighbors getting together and helping each other by turns. There

used to be plenty of whiskey on hand at these logging-bees, and as a natural consequence considerable fighting followed, and that made litigation brisk, assault and battery cases coming up in abundance, and as I was the only lawyer between Champlain and Plattsburgh it made me plenty of business. . . . Later the business of lumbering for the Quebec market was taken up.

The town of Saranac, formed in 1824, was one of the later towns to be established in Clinton County. However, the history of the area by Hurd has an account about one of the first settlers in the section that is now Saranac.[4]

The first settlement in this town, says Dr. French, in his "Gazetteer," published in 1860, was made by Russell Case and Ezekiel Pierce in 1802. Mrs. Eli Bates, however, in an interview with the editor of the *Plattsburgh Republican*, inclines to the opinion that an eccentric man, known as "Old Taylor (or Tailor) Allen," was the first settler. He lived in a log shanty on the premises subsequently occupied by Nathaniel Lyon. It is said that his wife was in the habit of walking through the woods to the head of Chazy Lake, where trout were so plenty that she could easily catch them in her apron in quantities as large as she wished to carry home.

Other pioneers were Lambert Hopper, a local Methodist minister, who came in 1805, Wright Spaulding, John Chamberlain, John M. Hopper, Sylvanus Smith, Lyman Munly, John Gregory, Lewis and Isaac Ferris, and Isaac and John Lambert.

The following sketch of one of the early settlers, Nathaniel Lyon, and early days in Saranac, is taken from the *Plattsburgh Republican:*

"Nathaniel Lyon moved from Royalton, Vt., about the year 1800, to Moretown, Vt., where he resided until the winter of 1803–4, when, attracted by rumors of the extraordinary fertility of the soil and wonderful resources of the western border of the Champlain Valley, he again moved his little family, this time across Lake Champlain on the ice to Plattsburgh, which was then a thriving town, twenty-eight years old, with several hundred inhabitants. But it was no part of the plan of our pioneer to halt in an old place like this, but rather to push out into the wilderness and make an opening for himself. So putting his little family (among whom was his little girl, six years old, now Mrs. Eli Bates, to whom we are indebted for much of the material in this paper), with his scanty stock of household goods, upon an ox-sled, he made his way in the snow, through the wilderness, up the Saranac River. Starting in the morning, he arrived within about three miles of his destination when night came on, and finding a deserted log cabin, he concluded to occupy it for the night, and did so, the family bringing in their own bedding and making themselves as comfortable as possible, but so open was the roof and walls of the old log hut that in the morning they found several inches of snow upon the beds. Mr. Lyon settled upon a farm about a mile and a half westerly from what is now Saranac village, which was then all a wilderness, no road even extending farther up the river than the little settlement in which Mr. Lyon found himself.

"Mr. Lyon, after living a few years on his first place, moved back some four miles, well up towards the base of Lyon Mountain, where he cleared quite a large farm. Part of his stock was a flock of sheep, and our informant remembers how they used to get the flock up into a high log pen to keep them safe from the wolves, and that one night, when her father was away from home, a large wolf came up boldly and placed his paws on the side of the pen, as if he intended to jump over and help himself to mutton; but he was finally clubbed away by Mrs. Lyon. Mr. Lyon lived here during the remainder of his life under the shadow of the mountain, on which he used to hunt occasionally, which was named after him, and it was an interesting fact, which was noticed in the *Republican* at the time, that the first lady to ascend the summit of Lyon

Mountain, Aug. 8, 1876, was Miss Hattie Lyon, a granddaughter of Nathaniel Lyon, who died in Saranac about thirty-five years ago."

There were but two or three families living in Saranac when Mr. Lyon came. The first female child born in the town was Fanny Lyon, now Widow Curtis, in 1804. During the war of 1812, Mr. Lyon, apprehensive of danger from marauding bands of Indians infesting the country, abandoned his farm and returned to Royalton, Vt., returning to his farm at the close of the war.

Among the early settlers were A. Putnam, E. Smith, Ebenezer Kimball, and George Justin, from Washington County.

Mr. Putnam was called "Put," being a nephew of Israel Putnam, known to fame, and was about as tough a customer to contend with as his honored uncle.

Their mission here was rafting lumber to Elsinore and Cadyville, which business they were acquainted with on the Hudson River. In this way lumbermen depended to ship their lumber from 1825 to 1845, and the amount of lumber thus shipped was immense.

On one of Mr. Kimball's trips down the river in company with Ebin Washburn, a young man of eighteen years, young Washburn took it into his head to dive into the river. Mr. Kimball tried to dissuade him from doing so, but suddenly a plunge was heard—he was a good swimmer, and it was matter of surprise that the young man did not come up. On making search, Washburn was found on the river's bottom, insensible from a severe blow and wound on the head, caused by his striking on a stone. After much labor Mr. Kimball succeeded in bringing him to life, and after a good deal of labor was successful in taking the raft on cribs to Elsinore, when the assistance of Dr. Nelson was obtained, who pronounced the injuries fatal, that his neck was broken; and he died on the following day.

Daniel Dustin moved into Redford in 1832.

Col. Lyman Manley cleared up his farm, and was the first to begin lumbering in the winter season.

Archelaus and Aaron Putnam settled on the land now owned by Abram Lobdell, and made lime and potash. They were succeeded in this business by John and William Frazier, who settled on the tract now occupied by G. W. Bruce.

The late George Parsons came to this town in the year 1824, bringing an invalid wife and five children. Philip Signor moved into town from Peru; he bought the farm owned by Col. Manley; his occupation was farming until 1845, when he, with James Hull, built the Hollow Forge and ran it a few years, when it came into the possession of the late Moss K. Platt."

There is in the foregoing account information beyond that about the country the first settlers found. Fanny Lyon, daughter of Nathaniel Lyon, and the first female child born in Saranac, married an early settler by the name of Levi Curtis. They had a large family, and for that period of time, are quite well documented. Although her name does not appear in any of the records found to date, Delia Anne Curtis who married George[8] Washington Seavey, was the grandmother of Fannie C. Harrison, may have been a daughter of Levi and Fanny (Lyon) Curtis. If not a daughter, she may have been a niece of Levi Curtis who was living with them. There will be more about this in another chapter.

The floating of logs for lumber down the Saranac River was an important part of the life and commerce of the region in the early days. The account from the history was a direct connection to this family history. Ebin Washburn (1820–1840) was the sixth of the ten children of Simeon Washburn (1785–1866). He was a younger brother of Sylvia Washburn who mar-

ried Solomon[7] Seavey in Vermont sometime before 1830.

The account also mentions two of the activities of the area, in addition to farming and lumbering. They are the manufacture of lime and potash. A third, and very important one, the mining of iron ore and the making of iron. It will be the subject of several paragraphs.

Lumbering and the River Drivers

As in many sections of the country, the arrival of settlers was soon followed by the building of the grist mills for grinding grain into flour and meal and saw mills for lumber. The clearing of the timber gave the settlers small fields for bread grains and feed for their livestock, also for gardens. Field and garden crops were for subsistence. The felled trees provided firewood, logs and lumber for houses and barns. Logs for lumber also became a cash crop and the first major one for the settlers. The ashes from the burned brush and logs produced potash which was another cash crop. Potatoes also provided cash starting at an early date. They could not, due to the lack of transportation to market, be sold for food. But they were boiled down and starch was made from them. This could be sold for cash. Next we come to lumbering. In the beginning the houses, and such barns as they had, were made from logs. After a few years there were local saw mills for lumber that was used locally. Without roads, lumber and large logs for lumber could not be taken to market. A few were floated down the Saranac River, assembled into rafts, and converted into lumber, shingles, etc. at Plattsburgh or taken on to Canada. In time, the demand for sawlogs increased. They were cut in large quantities in the mountains in the winter and dragged or hauled on sleds to ponds near the head waters of the Saranac River and its tributaries. These ponds were formed by dams. In the spring, as soon as the ice was out of the river, the dams were opened and the logs pushed out into the river. The drivers known as "River Drivers" then took over. It was their responsibility to get the logs to Lake Champlain, which could mean driving them for a distance of as much as a hundred miles in some cases.

The account that follows is from *The Saranac Valley, Vol. II.*[8]

THE RIVER DRIVERS

The logging operation on the river produced a rugged crew of working men known as the "River Drivers" who spent an amphibious life of nearly four months, Sundays not excepted, riding logs down the river. With cunning and dexterity they maneuvered the drive at great personal risk. The most dangerous trip of the whole drive was at High Falls, [between Saranac Village and Redford] through the chasm known as one of Nature's Wonders, but renamed by them as the "Devil's Hell-Hole." A log jam there often meant blasting and in some instances, lives were lost at this spot.

Their arrival at various hamlets along the river was a time to be noted by the local people. One of their camping grounds is mentioned as being "by a spring about High Falls," and another by the spring at Gougeville. It is also of interest that it took the drive thirteen days to travel from the Falls to Cadyville, so there must have been several other camping grounds.

Older inhabitants recall that the arrival of the "River Boys" created quite a rumble at the local taverns in Cadyville, as they proceeded to

satisfy a thirst that had remained unquenched during their drive throughout the dry town of Saranac. Another memory was the aroma from that big, black pot of beans when the cook sold them a pailful for supper. The following newspaper account makes mention of the drivers, their camping arrangement and those famous "Beans."

"The River Drivers arrived in town last Wednesday having completed their job of taking 175,000 logs from Round Lake between Upper and Lower Saranac Lakes to Plattsburgh, 100 miles or less. They commenced work in Round Lake about the first of May, breaking ice for the first few days, and there have not been many days since probably, that they have not been drenched more or less. How any men can stand ninety successive days of such labor is a mystery, and yet they have experienced but little sickness, and came into Plattsburgh looking as hearty as bucks. They have been under the direction of Mr. Berkley who has had charge of Norton and Co. main drive several years.

August 5, 1876—Plattsburgh Republican"

According to Mr. Charles Gosselin, former resident of the hamlet of Redford:

"The river drivers traveled in thirty-foot boats called 'jammers,' using long pike poles to break the log jams. A log jam at High Falls was dislodged by lowering two men into the chasm with ropes to set the dynamite charges. A man by the name of Pete David was well known to perform this act, while Hermidas Breyette and Pete Fountain were active drivers. Jim Austin, a cook from Morrisonville, served the basic menu of pork and beans, biscuits and black strap molasses. Promptly at ten and again at three, he appeared carrying a yoke arranged with the food and utensils. The drivers left the water only long enough to eat. To the best of my recollection, the last drive was about in 1917, and Pat Coffey, known as 'Roaring Pat' was the foreman."

The recipe for the famous beans,[8] also from the Saranac Valley, Volume II follows. My wife, after nearly eighty years, still remembers the delightful smell of the hot beans as it drifted from the camps of the River-Drivers and their wonderful taste.

A circular hole is dug in the ground two or three feet deep. This is stoned up like a well and a hot fire of hemlock bark kept in it for a considerable time; the beans are first parboiled and then put into a large iron pot with layers of pork freely interspersed; this is shut up with a closely fitted lid and set upon the bed of coals and covered with earth, the heat in the stones and coals being sufficient to cook the whole thoroughly. After being left from 12 to 18 hours, the pit is dug out and its contents are found to be a dish fit to set before a king.

The day of the "River Drivers" has been gone for nearly seventy years. Today, large tractor-trailer rigs can go into the forests at any time of the year, and with very little in the way of roads, to haul saw logs to

the saw-mills. While progress must not be bemoaned, some of the customs and ways of the past had a lot to recommend them.

Iron Ore Mining and Smelting

While very few people today know it, Clinton County, New York, and its neighboring counties of Franklin to the west and Essex to the south, were the Pittsburgh or the iron mining and smelting area of our country in the last seventy years of the nineteenth century. While the complete story of this phase of the history of these counties, and even the part that took place in the Town of Saranac, is beyond the scope of this work, a brief summary will be included.

Out-crops of almost pure iron ore in the area were discovered at a very early date. In fact, the Indian tribes knew of some of these out croppings somewhere in the general area of Burnt Hill between Saranac Village and Peru. They would visit these sites long after the first settlers arrived and come away with ore and other minerals that they used for war paint and as a dye for their hand crafts.

The settlers found out cropping in various places in the Town of Saranac and neighboring towns. As the supply of ore found on the surface was soon exhausted, shaft and tunnel mines were started. Veins of considerable depth, width and length were found all through the Saranac River Valley above the Village of Saranac. As the ore was of high iron content, underground mining was economically practical. Veins of ore were also found in the hills along other streams in the area.

The first forge[9] for converting the iron ore into blooms or blocks of almost pure iron, was built in 1826 at Saranac Hollow, in an area then known as the "Devils' Half-Acre." The following excerpts give some idea of the operation of the forge in Saranac Village. For the members of our family who are familiar with the Village of Saranac, it was on the Saranac River in front of the Collins House and a little to the right when facing the river. Just before crossing the river on the bridge leading to Burnt Hill and the Cromie Home it was immediately on the left.

> Judging from its probable appearance at that time, there may have been some appropriateness in the name; for it must have seemed surprising that any human being should think of locating a forge there. It was in the midst of a vast wilderness. Above it there was only a foot path, below it, where the plank road now runs, was an untraversed swamp. The road from Cadyville followed the ridge of hills a mile or two west of the river, and terminated at the top of a high bluff overlooking the settlement in the Hollow. Here the goods, wares, merchandise, liquors, etc., "broke bulk" and were transferred to a "bunk," made of the crotch of a tree in the form of a dray, and drawn down the hill by oxen.
>
> No iron ore was then know to exist in the Town of Saranac. The nearest deposit known was the Arnold ore-bed. From this bed, over Burnt Hill, a distance of fourteen miles, and a horrid road at that, the ore was drawn.
>
> NOTE: One of the three founders was Samuel Hull who was a brother of Andrew Hull of Saranac Village who married Anne Washburn, a younger sister of Sylvia the wife of Solomon Seavey of Chapter XX.

The iron industry in the Town of Saranac and in Clinton and surrounding

counties grew rapidly for the rest of the century. High water in the Saranac River destroyed some of the early plants. The fortunes of the companies, which were all locally owned in the beginning, would rise and fall with general economic conditions in the rest of the country and in response to changes in the tarrif laws made in Washington, D.C. from time-to-time. There were also frequent changes in ownership. Partnerships would split and new ones would be formed.

In 1880 Clinton and Essex Counties were responsible for at least a quarter of the total iron output of the United States. Reliable statistics are not available, but employment was provided for thousands—woodsmen cutting and hauling timber for the charcoal ovens, miners, teamsters to haul ore and charcoal, the men in the forges and later the mills plus many more in support functions such as the company store. Each company had a store for its employees and such stores, which would accept company "script," were their principal source of supplies.

At this point a few words about the process involved may be helpful. The mined ore was put through a crushing process. A heavy log with a metal plate on one end was suspended so that it could be raised by an eccentric or cam and then dropped on the ore. In this way it was crushed so it would pass through a screen with openings of one-quarter of an inch on each side. The crushed ore was then placed in a cylinder or large can with openings, so it was in effect a sieve. It was suspended from a long pole on a fulcrum so that the cylinder could be moved up and down in a large tank of water. The ore settled to the bottom of the tank and the rock with impurities could be skimmed off the top. The ore then went to the forge.

The forges were really nothing more than large fires in boxes such as blacksmiths used. They were approximately two and a half by three and a half feet with provision for a strong but continuous blast of preheated air to come in through the bottom. The operator of the forge, known as a bloomer, would put ore in a hot fire of charcoal. He would add charcoal and ore working them all the while. In about three hours he would have a mass of iron and other material weighing about 300 pounds and known as a "loupe." This would be worked loose from the forge and lifted out with tongs. It would be put under a giant hammer and worked down into "blooms" or "billets" about five inches square and from two to six feet in length. In the early days of iron making in northern New York the blooms or billets were shipped to purchasers who worked them into the shapes that they needed. However, in time, rolling equipment was installed at the local forges so that the billets could be reheated and rolled into sheets, bar or rods as needed by purchaser. A rolling mill was built in Saranac Hollow in 1878.

The demand for iron increased with time and was very heavy during the Civil War. Extensive deposits of the high iron content ore were found all along Saranac Valley. Then more were found around the base of Lyon Mountain and in the Towns of Black Brook and Ausable. In time, a narrow gauge railroad was built from Plattsburgh to the Lyon Mountain area

and Saranac Hollow or Village was bypassed. This, and other factors, about 1885, led to the closing of the forges and rolling mill in Saranac Hollow. Other operations in Redford, Clayburg and Petersburg continued for a few years and the larger operations in the general area of Lyon Mountain, Dannemora and Chateaugay continued for a few years after the turn of the century. But before the iron ore connected operations were closed down completely, there were operations producing nails, horseshoe nails, tacks and many other iron content products. Before nails of the type we have today, which are made from wire, came into use, nails were cut from sheets of iron. Their manufacturer was quite an industry as were horseshoe nails which were also cut from sheet iron.

The entire iron making industry of the Clinton County area was based on the Catalon forge process. The name goes back to the Province of Catalonia in medieval Spain. However, the process was first developed in the middle east before the days of Christ. With high purity iron ore, a good product could be produced as long as great quantities were not needed and as long as there was highly skilled help available at a very low cost. Unfortunately, everything about the process used in the north country made it a candidate for obsolescence. The cost of the ore increased each year as the mines had to go deeper and farther from the shafts. It became more difficult to find good ore. The readily accessible forests were cut so that it was necessary to travel farther to find timber to burn for charcoal. No part of the process of crushing, washing, forge operations and rolling lent itself to large scale operations. The availability of coal, low cost open pit mining in Minnesota, transportation of ore on the Great Lakes and by railroads, blast furnaces, Bessemer process furnaces and locations near the centers of population, manufacture and use enabled Pittsburgh, Cleveland and Chicago to take over the operations that started in Clinton County. By leaving the modern roads of today, a diligent searcher can find a few old foundations, timbers and other remains of the flourishing business of a century and a half ago when Clinton County was the Pittsburgh-Cleveland-Chicago of iron making. A drive around Clinton and neighboring counties reminds us of the one thing that is constant in our world and that is change.

Members of the Seavey and connecting families, in addition to farming, participated in all of these activities. They worked in the forests as sawyers felling the large trees and as teamsters dragging or hauling them to the river for the river drivers of to the saw mill or to the charcoal ovens. George[8] Washington Seavey did all of these things at one time and was then a bloomer running a forge. May 18, 1877, he replaced Ira Flanders as foreman of the Bower & Signor Forge in Saranac Hollow. This was a large and prosperous operation at that time.

Redford Crown-Glass Works

An account of Clinton County cannot be considered complete, even in an abbreviated form, without some information about Redford Glass.

In 1830, Charles Corning and Gresbolin Cook were searching for a site to

establish a glass-making operation. After exploring several areas including Bloomingdale to the south and west of Clinton County, they decided to locate on the Saranac River at Redford in Clinton County. Apparently, they were acting for the Champlain Glass Company of Burlington, Vermont for this company made the initial purchase of two square miles, possibly even four, of land. Later this was transferred to Corning and Cook. Incidentally, all leases, contracts or deeds of tenements on the land contained a clause forbidding the sale of "ardent spirits" on the premises; however, ale and beer were permitted.

In March of 1831, Cook and Corning arrived at Redford with John S. Foster the glass chemist, formerly with the Champlain Glass Works, who was to be their superintendent. By November, they had constructed a saw mill, grist mill, factory building, shops, a store and a boarding house. The factory building was twelve feet high, eighty feet wide and one hundred and fifty feet long with two giant melting furnaces. The first glass was melted seven months after the principals arrived. During that time they had established an industry and built a small town around it.

The area provided just the right type of sandstone and the wood for the fire "splits" used to heat the furnaces and annealing ovens. Hundreds of jobs were provided. The maximum employment was over 300. The glass blowers were itinerant workers who moved from one glass producer to another.

Management and ownership problems seemed to plague the operation from the very beginning. After a few years, Matthew Lane joined Corning and Cook as a partner. John S. Foster the chemist and technical manager was fired in 1833 after a dispute over compensation. No one knew his formula except a black, Martin Tankard, who was in charge of melting. He took over and continued with the operation until it ceased in 1851. There was a period, 1843 to 1846, when the plant was closed.

The principal product of the factory was flat glass for windows and other uses, but they made dishes, pictures and all sorts of items. The glass became known for its unusual colors—a brilliant aquamarine, more blue than green, and a beautiful sea green. Factory output reached $70,000 annually in 1840. The glass was endorsed by the architect for the National Capitol. The current Encyclopedia Brittanica has several pages showing pieces of Redford glass. One is a sugar bowl credited to the Redford Glass Works or the Redwood Works started by Foster after he left Redford.

Redford glass has become a collectors item. Broken pieces found around the dumps in the old plant site are highly prized. The most desired items are the pieces blown at the close of a day by the blowers from any molten glass left in the last melt of the day. They were permitted to blow anything that they desired. There are several collections in museums in the general area where they have twenty to thirty pieces. There is an account[10] of a piece of Redford window glass that was mounted in an octagonal frame set in a gable window of the Albert Banker home in West Plattsburgh. It had the "bulls-eye" left from the blowing pipe. After over a hundred years, it

was removed and sold for $500.00. Today it is either in the possession of one of the Du Pont families or Delaware or in a museum in that state.

The Redford operation was discontinued, principally because plants that could use coal for their operations could operate at a lower cost.

Redford Picnic

This account would not be complete without something on the Redford Picnic. It has been an institution of the area for twenty-five miles or more around Redford for well over a hundred years, maybe almost a hundred and fifty.

Prior to 1834, there were only about ten Catholics in the area.[11] Their spiritual needs were met by a missionary priest who visited with them at long intervals. A few years later the Rev. Father Drummond came to the area. By 1837, there were a sufficient number of parishioners that permission was requested to hold services in the local school building. When this was refused, a small plot of land was purchased and very small chapel erected. In 1838, Father James Rooney came to Redford. He held services in private homes until the chapel was completed. Father Rooney served the congregation until 1853. As brought out in another chapter, Father Rooney was a great uncle of Jane Irwin, who married Lawrence Albert Collins (really Seavey), so he was the second great uncle of Fannie C. Harrison. The church had its first full-time resident priest in 1869, and a second and larger church was completed and dedicated in December 1870.

Sometime, probably in the period when money was being raised for the second church, the Redford Picnic was started. It has been held each year since then on, or around, the Day of Assumption, which is August 15th. For over a hundred years now, it has been the big event of the summer for an area reaching far beyond Redford. Before automobiles and good roads, people would come from all around on foot, on horseback, in buggies and even in farm wagons—hundreds of them. Former residents would time return visits to friends, old neighbors and relatives so as to be there for the picnic. Every one was present—Protestants and non-church members, as well as, Catholics. There was food, good food, and plenty of it. There were games and picnic-type contests of all types. Then there were the gypsies down below in an area that became known as "jockey lane." They would come great distances each year to trade horses. Usually getting the best of the deal, to tell fortunes and to "do" anyone they could. Most of all, there were people and in days past when they could not get together often, they enjoyed visiting. Fannie remembers the Redford Picnic, how they looked forward to it and how much they enjoyed it.

NOTES

1. *History of Clinton & Franklin Counties, New York 1880* by Duane H. Hurd.
2. Ibid. but pages 312–3.
3. Ibid. but pages 456–7.
4. Ibid. but pages 362–3.
5. Ibid. but pages 199.
6. Ibid. but pages 300–301.
7. Ibid. but page 292.
8. *The Saranac Valley*, Vol. II by Sarah Baker, 1970, pages 4 and 5.
9. *History of Clinton & Franklin Counties, New York 1880* by Duane H. Hurd, pages 359–360.
10. *The Saranac Valley*, Vol. I by Sarah Baker, 1970, page 30.
11. *History of Clinton & Franklin Counties, New York, 1880* by Duane H. Hurd, pages 359–360.

CHAPTER XIX

The Washburn Line

While the Seavey family information obtained from Harold L. Hanson brought the line down to George[8] Washington Seavey, grandfather of Fannie C. Harrison, there was still no information on some members of the line. One, for which there was no information at all, not even a given name, was the wife of Solomon[7] Seavey. He was identified in the Hanson material and a monument for him had previously been found in the Saranac Hollow Cemetery, Saranac, Clinton County, N.Y.

Once the Hanson information was received, the search for a wife of Solomon[7] Seavey was intensified. He was found in the 1830 census for the town of Georgia, Franklin County, Vermont with a wife and a child under five years of age. When the 1840 census was taken, he was in the town of Saranac with a wife and five children. As he had died in 1846, he was not in the 1850 census of Clinton County, N.Y., the one that listed by name each member of the family with their age and the state where they were born. However, four of the five children were discovered in the town of Blackbrook, Clinton County, N.Y. living with the family of Lorenzo Downey. One, Albert, who was the oldest, was also listed with a number of young men who were in a lumbering camp. With all of this there was still no information about a wife for Solomon[7] Seavey.

Although it departs from the procedure followed in the preparation of the work, time is going to be taken to tell how the wife of Solomon[7], the great grandfather, of Fannie C. Harrison was discovered. The search went on for a long time, involved a lot of work, and after the author had pursued every avenue of search known to him, the final break was pure luck that came through the contribution and consideration of a total stranger who was not a family descendant.

The grave of Solomon[7] Seavey in the Saranac Hollow Cemetery is crowded in with the graves of members of the Washburn family. After all other avenues of search had been abandoned a check was made of the monument inscriptions of the various Washburns. The key member of the group seemed to be Simeon Washburn (born 1785, died 1866) and his wife Eunice (born 1790, died 1880). They had a number of children and their children were of an age that one could have been the wife of Solomon[7] Seavey. However, nothing more could be found. These Washburns were in Vermont and in Franklin County prior to coming to Clinton County about 1830. Unfortunately, Simeon and Eunice Washburn were also missing from the 1850 census. According to Fannie and her sister, Adelia, the Washburns were always considered as relatives and were

addressed as aunt, uncle and cousin, but neither knew just how they were related.

No progress was made for a long time. Then about the middle of September of 1979, an undated hand-written note was received from Richard Ward of the Clinton-Essex-Franklin Library in Plattsburgh, Clinton County, New York. The text of it follows:

> I note in the genealogical register in the Plattsburgh Public Library you are interested in George Washington Seavey (Sevey) and his family.
>
> I recently obtained for my private collection (eventually to be made available to the library) the diary of Mrs. Andrew Hull of Saranac Clinton County, from 1855–73.
>
> In her diary she notes as follows: "30th September 1861, Wesley Hull and his uncle Orville Washburn, his cousin George Seavey with a number of others, went to war direct to Alexandria."
>
> I do not know if this would be of any help to you but pass it along in the hope that you will find it useful.
>
> Wesley Hull was the stepson of Mrs. Andrew Hull.
>
> There are no other references to either Seavey or Washburn that I can find in the diary.

This definitely established a daughter of Simeon Washburn (1785–1866) and his wife Eunice as the wife of Solomon Seavey. However, diligent searching failed to yield her name or a date and place of marriage.

Much later, as the time for the writing of the manuscript for this book approached and no additional information had been found, the search for the Washburn connection was turned over to Miss Elaine Washburn of Salt Lake City, Utah. Her name had been selected late in 1979 from a list approximately a hundred accredited genealogists submitted in answer to a request to Genealogical Department of The Church of Jesus Christ of the Latter-Day Saints. The initial assignment was to try to locate information on the great grandmother of the writer after he had failed in his efforts to find anything. Miss Washburn was selected in preference to any of the others in the belief that with the Washburn name she might be particularly helpful if it should become necessary, at a later date, to assign a genealogist to the task of proving the Washburn-Seavey tie and then following the Washburn line back to the first arrival in this country or even back into England. The choice did, in time, prove to be a fortunate one. Although Miss Washburn was not successful with the line of my great grandmother, she did establish the Washburn-Seavey connection when she was given the assignment five years later.

The Solomon[7] Seavey, Simeon Washburn and Lorenzo Downey families were neighbors in the 1830–1850 period in Clinton County. The 1840 census indicates that they were neighbors in the town of Saranac. As has been mentioned, Solomon[7] Seavey died in 1846. The wife of Lorenzo Downey died in the 1840–1846 period, probably soon after the birth of her third child in 1842. Although neither records nor documentary evidence has been found to prove it, there seems to be no doubt that Lorenzo Downey, a widower with boys age eight, ten and eighteen, married the widow of his neighbor, Solomon[7] Seavey who had been left with four children and possibly a fifth. At the time of the 1850 census, they were living to-

gether in the town of Blackbrook which adjoins the town of Saranac on the south. It was the scene of extensive lumbering and iron making operations in 1850. Lorenzo Downey is listed as being a bloomer, which means that he worked at one of the iron forges. In the Downey home, in addition to Downey and his second wife and seven Downey and Seavey children, there were three young men in the twenty-two to thirty age range and a young girl who was fifteen years of age.[1] Two of the young men were listed as being bloomers, which means that they also worked in one of the local iron foundries, and the other was a teamster, so he was probably working in a lumbering operation.

From a study of Vermont and Clinton County, N.Y. census records for the period with which we are concerned and from Family Group Sheets found in the Library in Salt Lake City, Miss Washburn has put together the Washburn line. This information will be presented in chapters that follow.

Having established beyond a reasonable doubt, although certain desirable records are missing, that the wife of Solomon[7] Seavey was Sylvia Washburn, we shall now pick up the Washburn line. For practical reasons there will have to be some deviation from the procedure that has been followed to this point. The Washburn family goes back into the earliest days of England, so all that has been found cannot be used. Secondly, even brief accounts cannot be given on all Washburn connecting lines. Not all of this information is readily available and the time to search out the missing information would delay completion of the manuscript for years. Also, once found, there would be so much of it that a second volume would be necessary.

In transmitting the information on the Washburn line, Elaine Washburn, the accredited genealogist of Salt Lake City, Utah, had the following to say:

> I have the Washburn line on back to the 1200's. The English research was done many years ago by the Vicar of Wichenford. It was first published in 1907. The last page or family that I have sent you with this report is that of John Washburn (1518), which gives his parents as John Washbourne and Emme. Later authors have questioned this last John's tie to the next generation.

Before giving the Washburn line prepared by Elaine Washburn, the earlier line ending with John and Emme Washbourne will be presented. It was obtained from Mrs. W.K. Hearn of Johnson City, Tennessee. She did not give her source, nor did she make any claims as to its authenticity. It is being included here in the belief that it will be of interest in spite of the statement of Elaine Washburn as to the soundness of the connection between John Washburn (1518) and John Washbourne with Emme as a wife and earlier Washburns.

The Washburn line as provided by Mrs. W.K. Hearn is as follows:

1. Tancred, b. 890. A Norse Viking.
2. Rabel de Tancarville.
3. Gerald (Geraldis), Baron of Tancarville.
4. Rabe II.
5. Almaric d' Abitat.
6. Urse d. Abitat, b. ca 1040, d. between 1108–1112(?). He was Earl of Worcestershire.

Knighted by William The Conqueror, married Adeliza 1076.

7. Roger d'Abitat, Viscount of Worcestershire. In disfavor with the king and lived in exile in Wales as Ernold de Powis.

8. William de Estham.

9. Sawson de Estham.

10. Roger, Lord of Washbourn, b. ca 1220, d. ca 1299, m. Joan.

11. Sir John de Dufford, Lord of Washbourne, m. Isabel Casey.

12. Sir John de Washburn of Little Compton and Ashbourne, d. after 1358, m. Margaret.

13. Sir John de Washbourne, m. Isabel.

14. Peter Washbourn, m. Isalde Henley.

15. Sir John Washbourn, on Committee for Peace for County Worcester in 1405, Knight of the Shire, m. Margaret le Pohr (Poor) daughter of John le Pohr of Wickenford.

16. Sir Norman Washbourn, d. ca 1479 or 1480, m. Elizabeth Knewton, daughter of Henry of Derbyshire.

17. Sir John Washbourne, b. ca 1457, m. Joan Mitten daughter of William Mitten, Esq., Lord of Weston, Staffordshire and his wife Margaret Corbet daughter of Thomas Corbet of Lee. John and Joan Washbourne are buried at Wickenford Church, County Worcester. His will dated May 3, 1517.

18. John Washbourne, Bengeworth, near Little Washbourne. His will dated December 27, 1546 and he was buried January 8, 1548. He married Emme. Her will dated May 1, 1547.

19. John Washbourne, 2nd son of John. Died intestate in 1593 and was buried October 13, 1593 in Bengeworth. He married first Joan Bushnell April 21, 1542; married second Joan Whitehead May 5, 1561 who was buried April 23, 1567.

The line as furnished by Miss Washburn of Salt Lake City, picks up with No. 19 above, John Washbourne the second son of John. The information that she furnishes on this generation, and that of Mrs. Hearn, are approximately the same. Miss Washburn gives no date of birth, but does give a date of death. They agree on the names of the wives and the dates of marriage. However, Miss Washburn mentions a third marriage, but does not give a name nor a date.

At this point, we will pick up the Washburn line as supplied by Miss Washburn. The numbering of the line as furnished by Mrs. Hearn will be continued to include John of 1597, the emigrant who will also be given the number of "1" as the emigrant ancestor of the line in America.

19. John Washburn, b. about 1518, Bengeworth, Worcester, England; m. 1st April 21, 1542 Joan Bushnell, 2nd about 1540 Jane Whitehead of Bengeworth. She died April 23, 1567. There was a 3rd wife. This is a second listing for this John Washburn.

20. John Washburn, christened Aug. 1, 1566, Bengeworth Worcester, England; m. July 6, 1596 at Bengeworth Martha Timbrell, b. ca 1572, d. 1625–6. John d. 1624. [Hearn account agrees on baptismal date, gives date of will as Feb. 29, 1624. Also says wife may have been a widow because some records list her as Martha Stevens. Miss Washburn also typed in Stevens then crossed it out. Mrs. Hearn gives date of her will as Sept. 9, 1625 and date of probate as May 9, 1626]

Hearn Elaine Washburn

21. 1. John[1] Washburn, (First of line in America), b. July 2, 1597, Bengeworth, Worcester, England; m. Nov. 23, 1618 Margerey Moore of Bengeworth-Evesham, Eng. (christened Nov. 3, 1588 daughter of Robert and Ellen (Taylor) Moore): d. 1670. Immigrant ancestor of line being followed. (Hearn account essentially the same.)

22. 2. John[2] Washburn, b. Nov. 20, 1620 Bengeworth-Evesham Worcester, England; m. 1645 Elizabeth Mitchell of Duxbury, Mass. (b. 1629, d. - , daughter Experience and Jane (Cooke) Mitchell); John d. Nov. 12, 1686; A

second wife, also Elizabeth) survived him.[2] Jane Cook Mitchell was a daughter of Francis Cooke of the Mayflower.

23. 3. Samuel[3] Washburn, b. 1651 Duxbury, Plymouth, Mass.; m. Deborah Packard (b. 1654 at Hingham, Mass. daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth (Stream ?) (Packard)[2]; d. 1720 at Bridgewater, Plymouth, Mass.

24. 4. Samuel[4] Washburn, b. April 6, 1678 at Bridgewater, Plymouth, Mass.; m. 1st Jan. 9, 1701 Deliverance Leonard b. 1682, d. 1703, da. Isaac Leonard; m. 2nd Abagail Leonard da. Jacob Leonard (a brother of Isaac) b. Nov. 11, 1680, d. Oct. 3, 1760. Abagail was the mother of all 7 children of Samuel.

25. 5. Samuel[5] Washburn, b. June , 1710 at Bridgewater, Plymouth, Mass.; m. Mary - ; d. - . Left Stafford, Tolland County, Conn. about 1761.

26. 6. Reuben[6] Washburn, b. Sept. 28, 1746 at Stafford, Tolland County, Conn.; m, Dorcas -; d. 1810–20 at Milton, Chittendon County, Vt. Dorcas, b. 1751, d. Dec. 14, 1832. Buried Chittendon County, Vt.

27. 7. Simeon[7] Washburn, b. 1785 Milton, Chittendon County, Vt.; m. about 1807 to Eunice Wright da of Isaac of Georgia, Franklin County, Vt.; d. Saranac, Clinton County, N.Y. Sept. 1866. Eunice d. Nov. 1880. Both buried in the Saranac Hollow Cemetery, Saranac, N.Y.

28. 8. Sylvia[8] Washburn, b. 1808 Milton, Chittendon County, Vt. First child of Simeon and Eunice (Wright) Washburn; m. 1st 1827 Solomon Seavey in Vermont; five children; m. 2nd Lorenzo Downey; d. June 22, 1880; buried Saranac Hollow Cemetery.

With the Washburn line now brought down through twenty-eight generations and including eight starting with John[1] Washburn, the emigrant, and their movement from Worcester County, England to Clinton County, New York, we can proceed to supply additional information about them. First there will be a chapter on the Separatist Movement in England, their migration to Holland and the Cooke family. This will be followed by a chapter on John[1] Washburn, the emigrant of the line. Chapters will follow on the connecting Mitchell line, John[2] Washburn, the connecting line of Packard and one on Samuel[3] Washburn. A short chapter will also be devoted to the connecting line of Leonard. In another chapter Samuel[4], Samuel[5] and Reuben[6] will be followed to Connecticut and then on New York and Vermont. Simeon[7] Washburn and Eunice Wright will be covered in two chapters. In all, an interesting history-making period will be covered, and some fascinating, capable people will be introduced. These chapters follow the several participating lines of Fannie C. Harrison through one of the most interesting and important periods in the history of our country and its people from about 1600 to 1800.

Final verification of Sylvia Washburn as the wife of Solomon[7] Seavey was not acheived until September of 1985 and the Washburn line was not put together until the second quarter of 1986. By then, the searching for this work was essentially complete and much of the manuscript had been written. Travel to England to search for additional information on the Washburn family and connecting lines was not practical. Unfortunately, it has not even been practical to spend the time in a good library or libraries in Boston, New York City or elsewhere to seek out such information as may be available in this country. We are limited, therefore, to the information available from Miss Washburn of

Salt Lake City and Mrs. Hearn of Johnson City, Tenn., plus some odd bits that it has been possible to collect through correspondence, and at the very fine history and genealogy section of the Free Public Library of New Castle, PA.

It seems reasonable to assume that the very early Washburns in England were of Norse background and arrived in a Danish invasion of the ninth century. In Worcestershire, where we find them, which is slightly west of the center of the country from east to west and south of the center from north to south, they were in the western part of the area penetrated by the Danes. The original inhabitants had been pushed on to their west. It is interesting to note that the Washburns were accepted by William the Conqueror who invaded England in the eleventh century. The list of Mrs. Hearn show Urse d' Abitat (b. ca 1040) as having been knighted by William the Conqueror.

Information that is available indicates that the Washburns that we are following lived in Worchestershire at the time that John[1] Washburn left England to come to this country. They had been there, or in that general vicinity, for several centuries and many generations. This is probably of some significance because it was in, or, at least very near, the area where the Separatists, who later became known as the Pilgrims, lived. The center of their area was where Yorkshire, Lincolnshire, and Nottinghamshire come together. The church of Elder William Brewster, later of the New England Plymouth Colony, was in Scrooby in Nottinghamshire and that of Governor William Bradford was in Austerfield in Yorkshire. The Washburns could not have been more than fifty miles from the edges of this area. There was some transportation and travel in this part of England at the time. Several accounts mention William Brewster as taking over, from his father, the postoffice at Scrooby in Nottinghamshire. He supervised the stages or coaches that passed through Scrooby and assisted passengers and the movement of mail and cargo.

Nothing has been found to indicate that the Washburns were active in the Separatists Movement, or with the closely related group known as Puritans, who were centered to the east of where they and the Separatists lived.

There is one bit of information that has been found in several places that deserves mention at this point. Mitchell in his *History of Bridgewater, Mass.*[4] says "John Washburn was the first secretary of the Council of Plymouth in England and was succeeded by William Burgers in 1628: whether he had any connection with the family here is not acertained." The Council of Plymouth could have been located in Plymouth on the south coast of England or in London. It could have been the organization that was attempting to colonize New England at about this time. We do not know whether the Separatists or Pilgrims were involved with this group nor do we know if this John Washburn is the John[1] Washburn that we are following. The date of 1628 is very close to the date of departure of John[1] Washburn for America. The earliest reliable record found for John[1] Washburn is in Duxbury, Mass. and it shows that he was there before 1632.

NOTES

1. *Census of Town of Blackbrook of Clinton County, N.Y. for 1850.*
2. It seems that John[2] Washburn married as his second wife the mother of Deborah Packard who was the wife of his son Samuel[3] Washburn.
3. *Descendants of Edward Small of New England and the Allied Families with Tracings of English Ancestry* by Lora Altine Woodbury Underhill, Revised Edition 1934, page 523.
4. *History of the Early Settlement of Bridgewater, in Plymouth County, Massachusetts, Including an Extensive Family Family Register* by Mahum Mitchell, 1840.

CHAPTER XX

The Separatists and the Cooke and Mahieu Lines

Before going ahead with the Washburns, the connecting lines of Cooke and Mahieu will be picked up. Francis Cooke is the Mayflower ancestor of the Washburn line through his daughter Jane who married Experience Mitchell, and their daughter Elizabeth who married John[2] Washburn, who came to this country with his father John[1] Washburn.

Francis Cooke was in Holland as early as 1603, for a record of his marriage in Leyden, Holland, to Hester Mahieu has been found. The translation of the Dutch record is as follows.[1]

> Francis Cooke, Woolcomber, unmarried, from England, accompanied by Philip De Venue and Raphael Roelandt,
>
> with
>
> Hester Mahieu, unmarried, from Canterbury in England, accompanied by Jennie Mahieu, her mother, and Jennie Mahieu, her sister.

This definitely establishes Francis Cooke as having come from England and places him in Leyden, Holland at an early date. Unfortunately, no information has been found on Francis Cooke before this record of his marriage. It does place him in Holland and at Leyden before the earliest date known to the writer for the arrival of Separatists from England which is 1608. They, incidentally, did not come as a single group or party but a few at a time as they could get away from England and journey to Holland. The various churches and groups in England were promoting the removal to Holland so it was an organized effort, but the actual movement to Holland seems to have been on almost an individual or family or small group basis. William Brewster of Scrooby was one of several leaders of the various churches and groups. Mention is made in some accounts of an earlier group who had come to Holland seeking religious freedom. They are identified however, as Puritans and they seem to have had some problems with the people and authorities in Holland. As of this time, we do not know if Francis Cooke had come with this group, or was a very early Separatist arrival or just a young man who had fled England to escape punishment for some reason, or an adventurer or in Holland on business. Bradford[2] has this to say:

> Previous to their removal from England, he and his associates "were not acquainted with trad nor traffique . . . . but had only been used to a plaine country life, & ye innocent trade of husbandry. But these things did not dismay them"

Plymouth 1622. The Francis Cooke house is next to the last on the far side of the lane.

Without the context of the above quotation, is is not possible to tell whether Bradford was referring only to Cooke or the Leyden refugees as a group. It was probably the latter. Cooke from his contributions to the colony in America, and the personal estate that he accumulated there, was obviously a man with many capabilities and considerable experience.

It seems safe to assume that Cooke was not one of the Separatist refugees, but was in Leyden when they arrived. He apparently found that he had much in common with them and, in effect, became one of them.

A date of birth for Francis Cooke is not known. He died April 7, 1663 in Massachusetts. Although there is a statement extant that he was "above eighty"[3] but the account goes on to say that he was probably between seventy-nine and eighty. Using seventy-nine as an age we arrive at 1584 as his date of birth. This means the he was only nineteen years of age when he was married.

Hester Mahieu, as a family member, is an even more interesting discovery, in the opinion of the writer, than Francis Cooke. Edward Winslow, who was governor of the Plymouth Colony for three terms, in attempting to show that there was religious tolerance in his colony toward the Dutch and the French wrote:[4]

> And as for the *French* churches that we held, and do hold communion with them, take notice of our practice at *Leyden*, Viz. That one Samuel Terry was received from the *French* Church there, into communion with us; also the wife of Francis Cooke being a *Walloone*, holds communion with the Church at Plymouth, as she came from

the *French*, to this day by vertue of the Communion of Churche.

Underhill in Genealogy of Edward Small[5] goes on to say:

> That she was from "Canterbury in England" does not in any sense conflict with Winslow's statement, but rather confirms it, since at the time of their marriage, there was a large Walloon church in Canterbury, England, and "the Publication of the Hugnenot society in London, show a large number of baptisms, marriage and deaths of persons by the name of Mahieu;" Yet[6] these records do not contain any reference to Francis Cooke's bride, and she was probably born before her parents removed there.

The current dictionary identification of a Walloon is "a celtic people living in south and southwest Belgium and nearby parts of France and speaking a dialect of French." While this is our concept of a Walloon today, we cannot be sure that Edward Winslow in the seventeenth century had the same concept.

It seems safe to assume that the Mahieu were French Hugnenots who had fled France. In this connection the Edict of Nantes was issued in 1598, and it cut down on the persecution of the Hugnenots by the government of France and the Catholic Church for a short time. However, the persecution gradually increased until the Edict was repealed in 1685. Then the Hugnenots either had to accept the Catholic Church or flee France. Many did manage to get out of the country in spite of vigorous efforts to keep them from leaving. In fact, some left during the period of the Edict of Nantes and even before. The Mahieu family could have gone first to Holland and then to England. Many Hugnenots did go to Holland when they left France. In many cases, they went to any country that they could reach just to get out of France.

With Hester Mahieu, the descendants of John[2] Washburn of Bridgewater, Mass. acquired a French Hugnenot ancestor. They can, and should, in the opinion of the author, treasure this ancestor as he does his Hugnenot lines.

Additional information from the *Genealogy of Edward Small*[7]

> The record of the marriage of Francis Cooke to Hester Mahieu in 1603, which was found in the *Kerkelijke Houwelijksche Proclamatie Boeken*, or the "records of betrothals† of persons belonging to the State Church," at Leyden, appears to be sufficient proof that one or both of them belonged to that church, although there was a "Walloon Church" on the *Breede straat* (Broad Street), the oldest and principal thoroughfare in Leyden.
>
> The note with this passage is as follows: Betrothals were ceremonies of which greater prominence than marriages, and the later were regarded merely as consummating the former.

Francis Cooke and his wife Hester seem to have had much in common with the Separatists after they started to arrive. There were about a hundred of them after a while. Dexter[8] says "that it is not correct to associate all of the English then in Leyden with Pastor Robinson's company but that the major portion of them had some connection with it."

From our school history courses we all know that the expedition as planned for the voyage to America was to have two ships, the *Speedwell* and a large ship which

later became known as the *Mayflower*. Most of us probably remember that the *Speedwell* early in the voyage experienced serious leaks and finally had to be abandoned after putting back into port twice. Interestingly, Francis Cooke started the voyage in the *Speedwell*. Rather than try to tell of this interesting experience in my own words, I am going to quote at length from the *Genealogy of Edward Small*[9] which draws heavily on Bradford's *History of Plimoth Plantation*.

> When it was at last decided, after long deliberation and some dissension among the Pilgrims, to embark on "this waightie vioag [voyage]" to "ye more northerly parts of that countrie, derived out of ye Virginia patente, and wholy secluded from their Governmente, and to be called by another name, viz. New-England, . . . A smale ship of some 60 tune [ton] was bought, & fitted in Holand . . . to help to transport them." This was the *Speedwell*, upon which Francis Cooke and his son John embarked at Delfshaven late in the month of July, 1620. Another ship, "of burden about 9. score," was hired at London, "and all other things gott in readiness" to depart. On reaching Southampton the *Speedwell* was joined by the "bigger ship" from London, later mentioned as the *Mayflower*, "wth all the rest of their company;" and after a few days of unavoidable delay, on Saturday, August 5, they again set sail, in company. But they had not gone far when the master "of ye lesser ship" complained that she was leaking so badly that "he durst not put further to sea till she was mended;" so "they both resolved to put into Dartmouth," where she was "thorowly searcht from steme to sterne, some leaks were found & mended." "After they were gone to sea againe above 100. leagues without the Lands End," the same trouble recurred, and both ships resolved "to bear up backe againe . . . into Plimoth, which accordingly was done." The *Speedwell* being judged unseaworthy, they "tooke out such provission as ye other ship could well stow" and divided the company, sending back to London the "weaker ones . . . and [those] most unfite to beare ye brunte of this hard adventure."*
>
> Finally, on Wednesday, September 6, the *Mayflower* sailed alone from Plymouth on her ever-memorable voyage.

Francis Cooke and his son John were accepted on the larger ship and made the voyage on it. What we don't know is whether Hester and the other three children started on the *Speedwell* and when it was abandoned could not be accommodated on the larger ship. Maybe they planned from the beginning to come to America on a later ship. Had they been on the *Speedwell* and then transferred to the larger ship, as Francis and John did, Washburn family history could be quite different. Jane Cooke would not have had the long ocean voyage with Experience Mitchell who was on the *Ann* with her three years later.

Before going ahead with the Washburns and connecting lines in America, some background information on the Separatists in England and Holland will be given. It will refresh the memories of our school history and go beyond what most of us had.

Separatists or Pilgrims

Rather than try to present this portion of the account in my words, I am going to defer to the introductory paragraphs of *The Plymouth Scrap Book*.[10] There will be other quotations from this interesting book

including the quotations of the author from Bradford's *History of Plimoth Plantation.*

A REVIEW OF BRADFORD'S HISTORY "OF PLIMOUTH PLANTATION"

In order to understand this, one of the greatest books of all history, one must have in mind the stage of human development and outlook which had been reached when "Plimouth Plantation" came into being. After centuries of practical stagnation the Crusades had stirred Europe and sent out streams of pilgrims, with all that followed in their train. While the effects of that stir were still operating among the nations that had taken part in those movements, Columbus' discovery of America and the vast explorations and enrichments of Spain and Portugal had still further aroused the people of all Europe, and led to French, Italian and English voyages and adventures; while all the time Scandinavians had pressed their way athwart icy seas and into many a "Vineland" shore.

Naturally England felt stirred to establish colonies in the New World. Smith, Gosnold, Waymouth, Drake, Gilbert and a host of compeers, at Popham, Jamestown and elsewhere,—such was the state of affairs in a business and state respect as the sixteenth century closed and the seventeenth century began. But another and deeper change had been wrought in the mental and spiritual condition of Europeans. While Spain was gathering and bringing home treasures, England had been enriched with the rediscovered Gospel. Men had learned that the Bible was everybody's property, Jesus everybody's friend; that Christian life was not the prerogative of abbeys and convents, but the light and joy of common homes and ordinary workaday lives. The monopoly claimed by a set of officials with a central ruler at Rome was thrown off openly by a British king and as fully by thousands of people. The Bible translated into the speech of the common folk had fixed a growing language into a noble tongue, and in this clear medium great treasures of uplifting literature had been given to the community. But not without violent and ferocious persecutions would the middle age monopoly of religion resign its victims to the free enjoyment of Christ's free gift. Wave after wave of arrests, burnings, banishments followed. England, after throwing off the authority of Rome, undertook to do the same sort of monopoly and vied with the ancient foe in cruel treatment of harmless, useful, heavenly-minded followers of Jesus. To this Bradford refers in strong language in the opening page of his work, which we here quote:

> It is well knowne unto ye godly and judicious, how ever since ye first breaking out of ye lighte of ye gospell in our Honourable Nation of England, (which was ye first of nations whom ye Lord adorned ther with, affter y^t^ grosse darkness of popery which had covered & overspred ye christian worled,) what warrs & opposissions ever since, Satan hath raised, maintained, and continued against the Saincts, from time to time in one sorte or other. Some times by bloody death and cruell torments; other whiles imprisonments, banishments, & other hard usages; as being loath his kingdom should goe downe, the trueth prevaile, and ye churches reverte to their anciente puritie, and recover their primative order, libertie, & bewtie.

The historian says a good deal along this line; mentions Fox's *Book of Martyrs;* refers to the escape of eight hundred persecuted Christians from England to German and Swiss cities. He thus states the real issue:

> The one side laboured to have ye right worship of God & discipline of Christ established in ye church, according to ye simplicitie of ye gospell, without the mixture of men's inventions, and to have & to be ruled by ye laws of God's word, dispensed in those offices, & by those officers of Pastors, Teachers, & Elders, &c. according to ye Scripturs.

He contrasts this simple claim with the multiplied forms and ceremonies and officials and revenues and courts and power of the other party, who "to cast contempte the more upon

ye sincere servants of God, opprobriously & most injuriously gave unto, & imposed upon them, that name of Puritans, which (it) is said the Novatians out of prid did assume & take unto themselves."

Let no one fail to note that Governor Bradford here distinctly testifies to the fact that *all* those who were teaching and living the simple Gospel were called Puritans. By some strange perversion not a few writers have denied this and tried to distinguish between Puritans and Pilgrims, contrasting the Massachusetts Bay Colony as Puritans with the Plymouth Colony as Separatists. This is absolutely incorrect.

No attempt will be made in this account to resolve the question of whether the Separatists or Pilgrims of the Plymouth Colony were the same as or different from the Puritans of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. However, in reading for background for this book, the impression has been gained that the difference was more in people than in religious beliefs. The Massachusetts Bay Colony leaders impressed me as being more aggressive and domineering than those of the Plymouth Colony. This showed up in the efforts over many years for the Bay Colony to gain control over the Portsmouth, N.H. area and Maine where the settlers were mostly Church of England members and had come here for commercial gain rather than to be able to worship as they desired and not be persecuted.

The Plymouth Scrap Book account continues as follows:

He proceeds to give the history of the church, which we know was that at Scrooby, a little village on the Idle in the north of Notting - hamshire, where William Brewster, postmaster (or master of the station where the coaches on the northern mail route changed horses and refreshed passengers) opened his house and entertained the congregation Sunday after Sunday.

But in this other church (wch must be ye subjecte of our discourse) besids other worthy men, was Mr Richard Clifton, a grave & revered preacher, who by his paines and dilligens had done much good, and undeer God had ben a means of ye conversion of many. And also that famous and worthy man, M^r. John Robinson, who afterwards was their pastor for many years, till ye Lord tooke him away by death. Also M^r. William Brewster, a reverent man, who afterwards was chosen an elder of ye church and lived with them till old age.

But troubles beset them; some were imprisoned, some were insulted, some were driven from their homes; so that after holding together at Scrooby for about a year "by a joynte consente they resolved to goe into ye Low-Countries, wher they heard was freedome of Religion for all men; . . . which was in ye year 1607. & 1608."

The resolution to get away from those who had been persecuting them was not easy to carry into effect. Ports and havens were shut against them, so they had to make private arrangements for the voyage.

They chartered a ship and were allowed to go on board; but the captain betrayed them and let officers from the town of Boston, in Lincolnshire, take them off into open boats, ransack their persons for money, carry them ashore where their books, goods and whatever could be found were taken from them, and they were haled before magistrates. Most of them were imprisoned a month, seven kept till the next term of court. The next spring another attempt was made by some of these and others to get over. While the women and children with the goods were put on board of a small bark to be carried out to a larger vessel which was to take the party on board, and the men went to the

appointed rendezvous, the tide ran out and the bark got aground. The master of the ship was frightened when he saw a sheriff's posse coming across the shore to take the party, and sailed off with only a part of the men, leaving stranded the rest of the men and the whole company and precious cargo of the bark.

Two weeks at sea in stormy weather, and a narrow escape from wreck on the coast of Norway, to which they were driven on the way, made an awful experience for those men, who could learn nothing as to the fate of their families whom the heartless shipmaster had abandoned against their protests and entreaties. But they prayed to God in their distress and calm weather came and they arrived at their Dutch port. On the other side, the women and their few protectors were taken to a justice here and a magistrate there and abominably delayed and bothered; although the constables and judges were convinced that

> to imprison so many women & innocent children for noe other cause but they must goe with their husbands, seemed to be unreasonable and all would crie out of them; and to send them home againe was as difficult, for they aledged, as ye trueth was, they had noe homes to goe to, for they had either sould, or otherwise disposed of their houses & livings.

Bradford did not despair at those griefs which they endured;

> for by these so public troubls, in so many eminente places, their cause became famouss, & occasioned many to looke into ye same; and their godly cariage & christian behaviour was such as left a deep inpression in the minds of many.

To return to the Scrooby party. They settled after many hindrances in Amsterdam; where they began to cope with the language and spend an amount of money which frightened them so that "they saw the grime & grisly face of povertie coming upon them." It was hard to go to a country with strange language and customs; still harder to make a living in that land, whose inhabitants were chiefly engaged in cloth making and other trades of which they were ignorant, and where prices were higher than in England. After they had lived there about a year they saw reasons for making a change of residence, one being the fact that an earlier company of English Puritans had lived there before them and had disagreeable experiences, dissensions, contentions; the Scrooby church had no wish to come into conflict with the remainder of that band or to get into any similar quarrels; so they removed to Leyden—"a fair & beautiful citie, and of a sweete situation, but made more famous by ye universitie wherwith it is adorned."

Here the men learned trades and earned

> a compentente & comforteable living, but with hard and continuall labor. Being thus setled (after many difficulties) they continued many years in a comfortable condition, injoying much sweete & delightefull societie & spiritual comforte togeather in ye wayes of God, under ye able ministrie, and prudent governmente of M^r^. John Robinson, & Mr William Brewster, who was an assitante unto him in ye place of an Elder, unto which he was now called & chosen by the church. So as they grew in knowledge & other gifts & graces of ye spirite of God, & lived togeather in peace, & live, and holines; and many came unto them from diverse parts of England, so as they grew a great congregation. And if at any time any differences, or offences broak out (as it cannot be, but some time ther will, even amongst ye best of men) they were ever so mete with, and then nipt in ye head betims, or otherwise so well composed, as still love, peace, and communion was continued; or els ye church purged of those that were incurable & incorrigible, when, after much patience used, no other means would serve, which seldom came to pass.

Many compliments are paid to Pastor Robinson here and in other parts of the History; his love for his people; his remarkable ability in

religious matters and his sagacity about business and civil matters, all made the church exceedingly fond of him and full of deep respect for his character and eminent qualities. Altogether Bradford is moved to say,

> That such was ye true pietie, ye humble zeale, & fervent love, of this people (whilst they thus lived together) towards God and his waies, and ye single hartednes & sinceir affection one towards another, that they came as near ye primative patterne of ye first churches, as any other church of these later times have done, according to their ranke & qualitie.

Bradford tells us that the congregation became well-reputed in Leyden; that the Dutch bakers and others would "trust" them because they found them conscientious about paying their debts. The pastor's learning and skill as a teacher and debater gained him much esteem, and finally, when they were deliberating on removal to America some leading persons in Holland were desirous to have them join in some one of the Dutch colonies, considering them unusually valuable persons for such adventure.

The eleven years of their residence in Leyden were marked by a truce between the Spanish nation and Holland; so peace reigned where war had prevailed woefully before. Outwardly the Pilgrims were doing fairly well; but they were not contented. Few now came to join them, while not a few removed back to England, weary of foreign life, hoping for some relief from former persecutions. The older people felt age stealing on them and saw little prospect of bettering their condition before the time of feebleness. Their children, the best of them, were overworking and bending prematurely under the weight of labor. Worse than that, some of their beloved youth were being led astray by the examples of bad men and women, and some went to war and others

> tooke upon them farr viages by sea, and other some worse courses, tending to dissolutnes & the danger of their soules, to ye great greefe of their parents and dishonour of God. So that they saw their posteritie would be in danger to degenerate & be corrupted.

But the final reason which Bradford gives for the decision to remove is this:

> Lastly, (and which was not least,) a great hope & inward zeall they had of laying some good foundation, or at least to make some way therunto, for ye propagating & advancing ye gospell of ye kingdom of Christ in these remote parts of ye world; yea, though they should be but even as stepping stones unto others for ye performing of so great a work. . . .
>
> NOTE—At this point the reviewer laid aside his pen, never to resume the task. Incomplete though the sketch may be, its historic portrayal and reverential comment on the "faith of the Puritans" form a fitting background for the fragmentary record of the lives of the "Puritan-Pilgrims" in "Plimouth Plantation."
>
> N. B. P.

The Early Plymouth Colony and Francis Cooke

When we left Francis Cooke and his son John, they were on the *Mayflower* as it finally departed from Plymouth, England on Sept. 16, 1620 for America. No attempt will be made to tell of the sixty-six day stormy voyage as it has been well documented. However, some pertinent information that is not generally known will be presented.

There were 102 passengers aboard plus the crew. Of this number, only forty-one were Separatists, whom will henceforth be called Pilgrims. The rest were from London and were making the trip for various reasons of their own. The planned destination was the area where New York City is today, but the almost continuous storms and the problems of accurate navigation with the equipment available in those days

resulted in the landfall on Cape Cod. Continuing storms and winter weather caused them to abandon an attempt to leave Cape Cod and continue to their original destination. They settled for the Plymouth area so that they could land and start to get established for the winter.

When they realized that they would be living in an area where there was no established authority, and since there was considerable unrest and dissention among the passengers, a covenant was drawn up before they landed. The compact sanctioned, but did not establish, a frame of government, and it bound the signers to obey what ever government might be established. Forty-one men, including all of the adult masters and some servants aboard signed the document on Nov. 21 1620 in the cabin of the *Mayflower*. Francis Cooke was the seventeenth of the signers. This document was in effect the first declaration of authority drawn up in the country and it embodied the basic principles of our national government today. They established a sound foundation. This is such a significant document that it will be quoted in full.

> In the name of God, Amen. We whose names are underwritten, the loyal subjects of our dear sovereign Lord King James, by the Grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, etc. Having undertaken for the Glory of God, the Advancement of the Christian Faith, and the Honour of our King and Country, a Voyage to plant the first colony in the Northern Parts of Virginia; do by these presents, solmenly and mutually in the presence of God and one another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil Body Politick, for our better Ordering and Preservation, and Futherance of the Ends aforesaid; and by Virtue here;- of do exact, constitute and frame, such just and equal Laws, Ordinances, Arts, Constitutions, and Offices, from time to time as shall be thought most meet and convenient for the General Good of the Colony; unto which we promise all due Submission and Obedience. In Witness whereas we have hereunto subscribed our names at Cape Cod the eleventh of November of, in the Reign of our Sovereign Lord King James of England, France, and Ireland the eighteenth and of Scotland the fifty-fourth, Anno Dommo, 1620.

It was not until December 25th that the men went ashore and started to make a place to live. The following is from the *Genealogy of Edward Small.*[11]

> On that day the men "went on shore, some to fell tymber, some to saw, some to riue [rive], and some to carry, so no man rested all that day." Three days later (December 28), in the afternoon, they "measured out the grounds" for the single houses, seven in number, upon lots a half-pole in breadth by three poles in length "to every person." The site selected was the southeasterly slope of a "great hill,"* on the top of which it was purposed "to make a platforme and plant our Ordinance." "A very sweet brooke† runnes vnder the hill side, and many delicate springs of as good water as can be drunke." The company previously had been divided into nineteen families; and it was thought these plots of land would be "large enough at the first, for houses and gardens," since they were "to impale them round." "So Lots were cast where euery man should lie, which was done, and staked out,"‡ as follows:
>
> | "The north side | | The south side |
> |---|---|---|
> | | | Peeter Brown |
> | The Meersteads | | John Goodman |
> | and Garden | | M[r] W[m] Brewster |
> | plotes of [those] | | high way |
> | which came | the streete | John Billington |
> | first layd | | M[r] Isaak Allerton |
> | out 1620 | | Frances Cooke |
> | | | Edward Winslow"§ |

The "streete" is now Leyden Street, near the centre of the present town of Plymouth, and these "small cottages," as Bradford called them, as well as the larger house, were roughly built, with the inside crevices "daubed" with mortar, and covered with roofs of thatch. On January 14, "the house which they had made for a generall randevose by casualty fell afire, and some were faine to retire abord the [*Mayflower*] for shilter. Then the sickness begane to fall sore amongst them, and ye weather so bad." Francis Cooke survived all the terrible experiences that reduced their number by one half, during the next three months, "espetialy in Jan: & February, being ye depth of winter, and wanting houses & other comforts;" so "that of 100. & odd persons, scarce 50 remained."* Still, there is no doubt that he was prematurely aged by the hardships he endured; though for many years following, his services to the community were varied and valuable. In 1651, Bradford wrote of him: "Francis Cooke is still living, a very olde man, and hath seen his childrens children have children;" that is, he had great-grandchildren through his daughter Jane, wife of Experience[1]?? Mitchell, and their daughter Elizabeth[2], wife of John[2] Washburn, Jr. Cooke was then about sixty-seven years of age.

After reaching the shores of New England, Francis Cooke was probably a husbandman, as there is no evidence of his having followed any other occupation; yet he was compelled by the exigency of the situation to assist in felling timber and building the houses, and, later, the fort which was erected on the top of the hill then called Fort Hill. On Friday, the 16th of February, 1620–21, "Captain *Myles Standish* and *Francis Cooke* [were] at worke in the Woods, comming home [they] left their tooles behind them, but before they returned, their tooles were taken away by the Savages." A month later (March 16), Samoset, the friendly Indian, informed them that he had discovered "our tooles," and two days afterward they were returned by Samoset and five other Indians.*

The notes for the above are as follows:

* Burial Hill, one hundred and sixty-five feet above the sea level, was called by the Pilgrims Fort Hill. A rude fort was early built on the summit, and mounted with six guns. In 1675, a strong stockade was erected there.

† The present Town Brook, on whose northern bank they were settling.

‡ *Mourt's Relation*, Dexter's Edition, 1865:66–68.

§ *Plymouth Colony Deeds*, vol. I:2.

* Bradford's *History of Plimoth Plantation*, 1898: 110, 120, 111.

Hester Cooke, wife of Francis arrived in July of 1623 on the *Ann*, the third ship to come to Plymouth. She had with her Jane, Jacob, and Hester. As mentioned previously, it is not known whether she and the children were left in England when it was decided that the *Speedwell* could not make the trip or whether they remained in Holland by plan. Most writers seem to think that the plan was for the father and oldest son to come over, with the rest of the family to follow when they were established. This was the course followed by many of the early arrivals in New England as well as in the other colonies.

No attempt will be made to report on the many activities of Francis Cooke and his various acquisitions of land. The records show that he was without question a true leader and one of the most active men in the colony. He served on juries, laid out roads and was a surveyor. One of his most important acts was active participation in 1627 in the breaking up of the communal property and income plan and substituting individual ownership of land and private enterprise. He was one of twenty-seven colonists who signed an agreement to payoff or buy out the mer-

chant adventurers of London who had the original land grant, and financed the Atlantic crossing and the first few years of the colony. Governor William Bradford, Captain Miles Standish and Experience Mitchell were other signers.

Francis Cooke could have well been the wealthiest man in Plymouth Colony and the area immediately surrounding it. He was living at the time of his death on one of the many grants of land just outside of the area of the first settlement. It was just one of a number that he had received. His sons and sons-in-law had also accumulated land holdings.

The will of Francis Cooke, made four years before his death, was witnessed by John Alden. The inventory of his estate listed eighty items with many made up of several units. Horses, cows, sheep and hogs were included. The land holdings were not listed. His wife Hester was willed all of the land, but the four children drew up a contract for its division after the death of their mother.

The children of Francis and Hester (Mahieu) Cooke were:

1. Jane, Probably the oldest born in Leyden, Holland probably 1609 or 1610, married Experience Mitchell just after May 27, 1627.
2. John, Born, 1612 in Leyden, Holland. He came over on the *Mayflower* with his father. Married, March 28, 1634 Sarah Warren daughter of Richard Warren who came over on the *Mayflower* and was a signer of the Mayflower compact. His wife Elizabeth came over on the *Ann* in 1623 with five daughters. Two sons were born at Plymouth. John Cooke died in Dartmouth, Mass. Nov. 23, 1695 and was the last male survivor of the *Mayflower* passengers. John had large land holdings for that time and area and was one of the leaders in the original as well as the expanded, community. He left four daughters. His wife died at about the same time that he died.
3. Jacob, Born Leyden, Holland. Additional information is not being included in this account.
4. Hester, Born Leyden, Holland. Additional information is not being included in this account.

NOTES

1. *Descendants of Edward Small of New England and the Allied Families with Tracings of English Ancestry* by Lora Altine Woodbury Underhill. Revised Edition 1934, Houghtor Mifflin Company, Boston and New York. Pages 601–603. The record of marriage is in "Kerkelijke Houwelijke" at Leyden, Holland in Liber E. Folio 69, verso.
2. *History of Plimoth Plantation* by William Bradford, 1898 pages 16, 23 and 24. Bradford was the long time governor of the Plymouth Colony and his history is one of the principal sources of information about the colony and their experiences in England, Holland and America. He was from Austerfield, Yorkshire, England.
3. Same as Note No. 1, but page 614.
4. Winslow's *Hyprocrisie Unmasked*, London, 1646, page 96.
5. Same as Note No. 1 but page 602.
6. *The Mayflower Descendants*, Vol. 8, page 49.
7. Same as Note No. 1 above but page 607.

8. Dexter's *England and Holland of the Pilgrims*, 1905, 487–489.
9. Same as Note No. 1 above, but pages 603 and 604. The pertinent footnotes are from Bradford's *History of Plimoth Plantation*, 1898 pages 36, 55, 71, 73, 83, 84.
10. *The Plymouth Scrap Book*, by Charles Henry Pope 1918, page 133.
11. Same as Note No. 1 but pages 605, 606, 607, 608 and 609.

CHAPTER XXI

John[1] Washburn

It seems appropriate to start the account of the various Washburn generations in this country with a quotation from the *History of Bridgewater, Mass.*[1] After giving eleven pages of Washburn genealogy and brief biography for many, the author has the following as the final paragraph for the Washburn section:

> The family of Washburn is so numerous and there are so many of the same christian name, that there may be many mistakes, and some confusion, in the account here given of them.

After going through the four or five generations covered in the eleven pages, the only comment of this author is, amen! Never-the-less, a sincere effort will be made to get them out of the Plymouth area, across Connecticut, north through Vermont into Franklin County and then over to Clinton County in New York.

John[1] Washburn was born in Bengeworth-Evesham, Worcester, England on Shakespeare's River Avon. The date of his birth is believed to be July 2, 1597. He was the son of John Washburn (b. Aug. 1, 1566, d. 1624) and Martha Timbrell (1572 1625). The date of the marriage of his parents has not been found. John[1] had a younger sister, Jane, born Dec. 5, 1599, a brother, William, who was christened Nov. 9, 1601, and a sister, Jone, born April 11, 1604. He died in Bridgewater, Mass. before 1670.

In England, Nov. 23, 1618, John[1] married Margery Moore, daughter of Robert and Ellen (Taylor) Moore. Their children, all born in England, were:

1. Mary christened Oct. 3, 1619.
2. John[2] b. Nov. 20, 1620, m. Dec. 6, 1645. Elizabeth Mitchell, d. Nov. 12, 1686.
3. Phillip[2] b. 1622. Apparently he died as an infant.
4. Phillip[2] b. 1624, m. Elizabeth Irish. No record of his death or that of his wife and no record of any children. His brother John[2] in his will requested his son John[3] to take care of his Uncle Phillip and he posted a bond to do so in 1685. Phillip was still living in 1670.

John Washburn arrived in America at Duxbury, Mass. about 1631. His wife and two sons arrived several years later. The name of the ship on which he arrived and the date of its arrival are not known. No mention has been found to date of the daughter Mary. She was sixteen years of age when her mother and the two sons left to come to this country so she could have been left with family members in England or could have been married with a home of her own.

Duxbury is on the ocean about eight miles north of the site of the original Plimoth Plantation. It was one of the first

settlements started after the Plimoth Plantation. John[1] Washburn had a court action against Edward Daten in 1632. In 1633 he was assessed for taxes, was one of the first "freeman" of the community and in March 1635 he purchased from Edward Bowpasse,

> "his house & palisido [fence] . . . beyond ye creeke called ye Egls-Nost [Eagle's Nest]" the consideration being a "milch goate with one ewe-lambe."[2]

Bridgewater was originally a plantation granted to Duxbury when Marshfield was separated from it. In time, it became a separate entity and still later was divided into East, North, West and South Bridgewater. The first eighty-four pages of the History of Bridgewater[3] are devoted to the early history of the community. In these pages John[1] Washburn is mentioned frequently. He and his son John[2] were among the fifty-four original proprietors of "Duxbury New Plantation," afterwards incorporated as Bridgewater. As early as 1665, John[1] and Phillip[2] were residents in South Bridgewater. John[1] and John[2] each had at first a grant of a house lot of six acres on the town river. This was followed by twenty acres more to each proprietor, in 1651; twenty acres, and two and a half acres of meadow, in 1654; fifty acres, and the second division of meadow, in 1657; ten acres, and the third division of meadow, in 1665; and twenty acres in 1666. These grants of swamp or meadow land, woodland and upland continued for nearly a century later.[4]

Governor William Bradford of the Plymouth Colony, Capt. Myles Standish, Love Brewster, son of Elder William Brewster, and John Alden were original proprietors along with the two Washburns. Experience Mitchell and Solomon Leonard, who will be brought into this account in later sections, were also original proprietors. All were active in the establishment and subsequent growth and expansion of the community as additional settlers arrived and as the population increased through births. John[1] Washburn and his son John[2] were very active all through this period and they are mentioned in the various accounts almost as often as are the better known men with whom they worked. They served on juries, laid out land, laid out and had responsibility for roads, and were participants in the many other activities of a rapidly expanding community. No attempt will be made to list and discuss their specific activities and accomplishments. This can be obtained from the *History of Bridgewater, Mass.*[5] However, one item will be included because it shows the standing in the community. It is from the *Genealogy of Edward Small.*[6]

> According to an order of the General Court, dated June 4, 1650, a jury of twelve men was impanelled, consisting of "John Howland, Francis Cooke, Henery Howland, Tho: Heward [Hayward] Senī, John Washburne, Senī," and seven others, who were "to lay out the way from Joanes Riuer to the Massachusetts Path;" and in a return, dated June 10, following, they stated that "wee haue found out and marked a new way from Joanses Riuier to the massachusetts Path through John Rogers his ground, and we are all agreed that the said way by vs marked out to bee most conuenient and least preduditial."‡

NOTES

1. *History of the Early Settlement of Bridgewater, in Plymouth County, Massachusetts Including Extensive Family Register*, by Mahum Mitchell, 1840, p. 333.
2. *Descendants of Edward Small of New England and the Allied Families with Tracings of English Ancestry*, by Lora Altine Woodbury Underhill, Revised Edition, 1934, page 522.
3. Same as Note No. 1 but pages 1 to 84 inclusive.
4. Same as Note No. 1 but page 522.
5. Same as Note No. 1 but pages 1–84 inclusive and page 322.
6. Same as Note No. 2 but page 612. The note refers to *Plymouth Colony Records, Court Orders*, Vol. 2: 160.

CHAPTER XXII

Experience Mitchell and the Mitchell Line

Mahum Mitchell in his *History of Bridgewater, Mass.*[1] in listing the children of Experience Mitchell makes a very interesting statement:

". . . married ye VJ th [6th] December 1645" to John[2] Washburn, Jr. *eldest son to John[1] Washburn, Sr., the emigrant, — "thus transmitting some of the best blood of the colony to the Washburns". The references are: *Plymouth Colony Records*. Court Orders, Book 2: pt 1: 123 and Hurd's *History of Plymouth County, Massachusetts*:790.

We will, therefore, leave the Washburn line to pick up the connecting line of Mitchell which is a very interesting one.

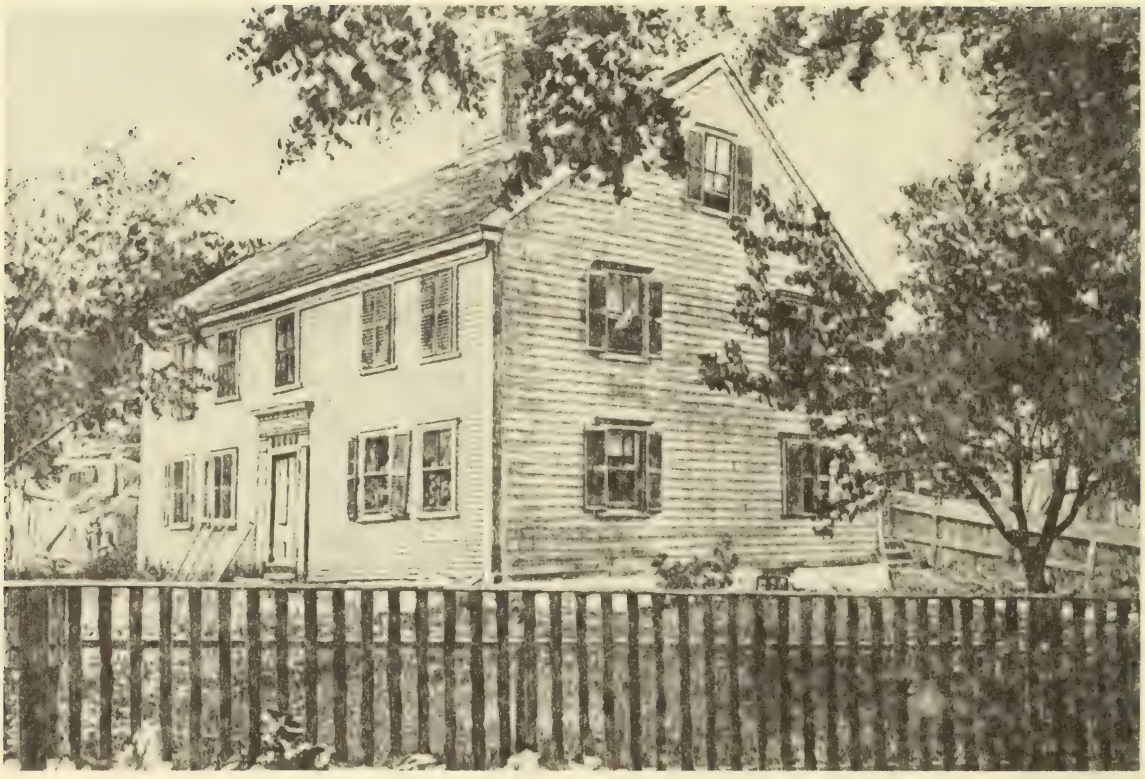
The story of the early Mitchell family is so well told in Genealogy of Edward Small[2] that it will be used extensively in this account:

EXPERIENCE[1] MITCHELL

After the arrival of the *Mayflower*, in 1620, with "aboute a hundred sowls [souls]" on board, and the *Fortune*, a year later, with fewer numbers still, the main question with those at Plymouth was how to provide transportation for those yet remaining at Leyden. A letter "from one of ye cheefe of ye company" of adventurers (their agents in England), dated "ye 9. of Aprill, 1623. writ to ye Govr" of Plymouth, informed him that "We have agreed with 2. marchants for a ship of 140. tunes [tons] caled y^e^ *Anne*, which is to be ready "ye last of this month, to bring 60. passengers & 60. tune of goods, &c." On this ship, about the middle of July, 1623, arrived Experience Mitchell, together with the family of Francis Cook and other "wives and children of shuch as were hear allready . . . some of them being very usefull persons." "These passengers, when they saw their low and poore condition a shore, were much danted and dismayed, and according to their diverse humores were diversely affected; some wished them selves in England againe; others fell a weeping fancying their own misery in what y^ey^ saw now in others; others some pitying the distress they saw their friends had been long in, and still were under; in a word, all were full of sadness. . . . Only some of their old friends rejoysed to see them."*

The difficulties that had confronted the Pilgrims from the first continued to exist, and the colonists were on the verge of actual starvation, for "All [that is, all the provisions] ye company sent at any time was always too short for those people y^t^ came with it." The arrival of the *Little James*, early in August, only served for the same reason to add to their distress. It was soon determined, however, that until the harvest was gathered, those who came in the two ships should subsist upon what they had brought, while the scanty store of the earlier settlers should be reserved for themselves. But their hopes of the coming harvest were nearly shattered by a prolonged drought, which caused them to "sett a parte a solemne day of humiliation, to seek y^e^ Lord by humble & fervente prayer, in this great distresse." It was a midsummer day and very

* From Bradford's History of Plimoth Plantation, 1898: 534, 165–175.



House built by Jacob Mitchell, son of Experience and Jane (Cooke) Mitchell 1666. It was standing and in a good state of preservation in 1934.

hot, with not a cloud to be seen, "yet towards evening it began to be overcast, and shortly after to raine, with shuch sweete and gentle showers, as gave them cause of rejoyceing, & blessing God," and afterwards "seasonable showers . . . caused a fruitfull & liberal harvest." "In stead of famine, now God gave them plentie, and ye face of things was changed . . . so as any generall wante or famine hath not been amongst them since."*

These were the conditions at "New Plimouth" upon the arrival of Experience from his home in Leyden. The statement that he was born in that city in 1609, strongly asserted by some and questioned by others, appears to be quite firmly established by the recent investigations of the Rev. Henry Martin Dexter and his son, Morton Dexter, who think it probable that Experience was the son of Thomas Mitchell, from Cambridge, England, who was a member of the Rev. Francis Johnson's church at Amsterdam in 1597–98. Thomas Mitchell, then a "turner" by trade, and the "widower of Maria," was betrothed, April 15, 1606, to Margaret Uochin (or Digehin), and married May 9, following, in Amsterdam. When the migration from Amsterdam to Leyden was completed, early in May, 1609, Mitchell (the only one of the name in that company) doubtless removed with them. With John Lee he made affidavit, August 15, 1622, in Leyden, as to the good standing of Susanna, widow of Thomas Clark; and his age was at that time given as fifty-six years.* If

* Dexter's Story of the Pilgrim's, 1894: 236–251.

* Dexter's *England and Holland of the Pilgrims* 1905: 504, 610, 625, 626

Thomas Mitchell, born in 1566, went to Holland from Cambridge, England, it would seem to refute the tradition of Scottish origin handed down form one generation to another among some of the descendants of Experience in America.

There is said to have been a brother, Thomas Mitchell, who lived and died in Holland; and in a letter to Experience from his nephew Thomas (son to Thomas), dated "Amsterdam, 24 : 7 : 1662," the younger Thomas wrote: "I do wish my cousin Elizabeth much joy with her D. [daughter] that God has given to her six ss. [sons]."† The Elizabeth alluded to was unmistakably Elizabeth, daughter to Experience Mitchell, and wife of John Washburn, Jr., whose daughter Mary was born in 1661, having six elder brothers.

Experience had also a sister Constant,—a queer transposition of names probably arising from a long sojurn in a foreign country, since Constant was even then considered a masculine name and Experience a feminine one. This sister Constant married John[1] Forbes, of Duxbury, who died in 1661, leaving issue: John[2], Edward[2], Mary[2], Caleb, William[2], Joshua[2], and Elizabeth[2] Forbes. His widow Constant married, in 1662, John Briggs, of Portsmouth, Rhode Island.‡

The Mitchell family based on information from the *Genealogy of Edward Small*[3] is:

> Thomas Mitchell, b. Cambrige England 1566. m. 1st Maria, m. 2nd May 9, 1606 in Amstredam, Holland m. 2nd Margaret Uochin (Digehin). Dates of death for Thomas, Maria and Margaret not known. Children: Experience b. Holland 1609. Child of Margaret Uochin. Another son Thomas who remained in Holland and a daughter Constant who came to America and married John Forbes of Duxbury, Mass. Their children were John, Edward, Mary, Caleb, William, Joshua, and Elizabeth Forbes. Constant m. 2nd in 1662, John Briggs of Portsmouth, RI. The author has not found information as to whether Thomas and Constant were children of Maria or Margaret Uochin.

When he arrived in New England in 1623, Experience Mitchell was only fourteen years of age. However, he seems to have been considered as an adult. With George Morton he was assigned eight acres in the division of land in the drawing of lots among the passengers of the *Anne*. His land was described as being "against the swampe & reedponde."[4] He was also included in the division of livestock. At a public court held May 22, 1627, he was included in the company or group of Francis Cooke and his wife Hester. Also included in the thirteen in the group, were the five children of Francis Cooke. This group was given:[4] "the least of the 4 black Heyfers came in the *Jacob* and two shee goats."

In 1628, when nineteen years of age, Experience Mitchell married Jane Cooke, daughter of Francis Cooke who had been with him on the *Anne* with her mother and brother and sister in 1623. The date of her birth is not known but estimates vary from 1609 or 1610 to 1614. The first is probably the most nearly correct, but girls did marry at a very young age in those days so even 1614 should not be ruled out completely.

Experience and Jane (Cooke) Mitchell lived at first in a section of Plymouth known as Spring Hill. In 1631, it was sold to Samuel Eddy. The following paragraph from

† Mitchell's *History of Bridgewater*, Mass. 1840:322.
‡ Ibid but pages 159, 241, 242, 522.

The Genealogy of Edward Small[5] is quoted as it also gives information on Francis Cooke and other leaders of the Plymouth Colony as they moved from the original area of settlement to Duxbury. Later some of them moved on to one of the Bridgewater communities:

> Not long after the sale of his homestead in Plymouth, Experience Mitchell removed to Duxbury with a number of the most prominent men of the Colony,—the Bradfords, Cushmans, Aldens, Cookes, and Brewsters. These "planters" had found that the soil of Plymouth did not yield good returns; and, in casting about for more fertile fields, they "pitched upon" Duxbury as their garden spot, which was then, as to-day, particularly fine for tillage. Mitchell's homestead was at a place called Bluefish River, and he possessed other land in various parts of the town. In an assignment of hay ground, by order of the General Court, March 20, 1636, "to the Inhabitants of Plymouth, Eele Riuer, & Ducksbury," John[2] Cooke, son to Frances[1], was to have his portion "in some convnyent place about Experience Michells & Henry Howlands grounds." The two latter had evidently for some years been using a spring in common; but, to prevent possible controversy, an agreement was acknowledged by "both parties," March 23, 1652, before Miles Standish and John Alden, which stated that "Henery Howland and Experience Michell . . . having there Lands Joyning together and there habitations neare eich other and the said Henery howland having . . . a spring and smale brooke before his Land for watering of cattle and otherwise, and the said Experience Michell being wholly Defective of the abouesaid," Howland agreed to give him "his way to the abouesaid water" forever, for himself and his heirs.†

The reference in the above account is to Plymouth Colony Deeds.[6]

Experience Mitchell lived until the early months of 1689 when he was eighty years of age. He moved from the original Plymouth Colony settlement to Duxbury and in 1680 to Bridgewater. He was very active in the affairs of the communities for his entire life in many capacities. The recipient of many land grants, he also, in addition, bought and sold property frequently. In 1633 when only twenty-two years of age he was given the sought after and coveted designation of "freeman." This required a certificate of good moral character from his pastor and land ownership. The records show that in 1633 his taxes were just under those paid by Edward Winslow, Elder Brewster, Gov. Bradford and John Alden, with the tax of Miles Standish the same as his. In 1645, he was called a "Planter" in the record; also he was one of the fifty-four original proprietors of Bridgewater when it was formed for Duxbury. Experience served on a "Petty Jury" in 1637, and on many other juries in later years including a coroner's jury. He was often a surveyor of highways and on many commissions to settle disputes between colonists. Other members often were Miles Standish, John Alden, Phillip Delano (Delanoy) among others. No attempt will be made to list the various grants of land received by him nor his many property transactions nor his long and interesting career as it is all well documented. He was definitely a factor in the establishment and spreading of the communities. The following from the *Genealogy of Edward Small*[7] is worth including. He may have been a carpenter by training, but he seems to have

been involved in every phase of community life.

> While it is not recorded that Experience Mitchell was a carpenter,—for in the early Plymouth "Memorand" of sales of land the occupation was rarely given or the deeds written out in full,—yet the mention in the inventory of his personal effects of a "Box with Severall tooles" suggests such a calling; and the sales of houses which he made, with the land upon which they stood, appear to have been strictly business transactions.
>
> It is generally conceded that this "forefather," Experience Mitchell, though not occupying a position of great prominence in the Province of New Plymouth, as a man and a citizen did much toward the upbuilding of the Colony; and his descendants to the present day have been persons of much more than average capacity and enterprise.

The designation of "forefather" has been used for those who came over in the first three ships. The Mayflower was the first. Incidentally, that name for the ship was not used until a number of years after 1620, and the source of the name and its date of first use is not known to the author. The *Anne* on which Experience Mitchell and Hester, the wife of Francis Cooke, and her three children arrived was the third. The *Fortune* was the second ship to arrive.

Experience Mitchell was still a resident of Duxbury as late as 1679 when he was seventy years of age. However, some time after 1680 he moved to Bridgewater where he lived with his son, Edward. His first wife, Jane Cooke Mitchell had died by this time and he had a wife Mary. All of his children are presumed to be from his first marriage. His will was made December 5, 1688, and the inventory of his estate was May 14, 1689 so he died some time between these dates.

The will and inventory of the estate of Experience Mitchell will not be discussed. They are in the records and available. He was living with his son Edward at the time of his death. Edward was the sole executor of his estate. In the will, various children and grandchildren are mentioned, but his daughter Elizabeth who married John[2] Washburn is not mentioned and none of her children are named in the will. When the will was made December 5, 1688, she was not living. John[2] Washburn, her husband, made a will October 30, 1686, and by that time he had a wife Elizabeth but not Elizabeth Mitchell. Undoubtedly, some settlement had been made with Elizabeth (Mitchell) and John[2] Washburn and possibly some of their children before the death of Experience Mitchell.

The temptation is strong to go beyond a listing of the children of Experience and Jane (Cooke) Mitchell and carry them down another generation or two. They are a most interesting family. However, except in a few instances the listing will be limited to a few essential facts for each. They were:[7]

1. Thomas, the only record is of some very confusing land transfers involving his uncle John Cooke, Richard Wright, his younger brother Jacob and his father. According to the Genealogy of Edward Small,[7] there is no additional information available on Thomas.

2. Elizabeth, b. Date of birth not known. Probably 1631. M. Dec 6, 1645 John[2] Washburn. d. Date unknown, but before Oct. 30,

1686 as the wife of John[2] Washburn, there will be more about Elizabeth in Chapter XXIII.

3. Mary, Married December 4, 1652 in Plymouth, James[2] Shaw, son of John[1] Shaw of Plymouth. His mother was probably Alice Phillips. Mary was remembered in the will of her father, Experience Mitchell. They had a son John born in 1654 and two daughters.

4. Sarah, Married John Hayward, son of Thomas Hayward and his wife Susannah. The estate of Thomas Hayward was settled in 1710. Susannah was not living at the time. They had ten children: Sarah, b. 1663; John, b. 1667; Joseph, b. 1669; Mary, b. 1672; Thomas, b. 1674; Benjamin, b. 1667; Susanna, b. 1680; Elizabeth, b. 1683; Benoni, b. 1686; Mercy, b. 1687.

Thomas Hayward, the father of John who married Sarah Mitchell, was from Aylesford, England and arrived in America in 1632. He was in Duxbury before 1638 and was one of the earliest proprietors of Bridgewater when he moved there. He and his wife Susannah had eleven children. Rather than list each of them only the ones who married children of Experience Mitchell will be mentioned. John married Sarah Mitchell. Joseph had as a third wife, Hannah Mitchell. Elesha never married but he lived with Edward Mitchell and willed property to him. Mary married Edward Mitchell. This sort of intermarriage between large families was not uncommon as we have found.

5. Edward, b. about 1643. Married about 1666 Mary, daughter of Thomas and Susannah Hayward. She died about forty years later without having any children. Edward then married August 26, 1708 Alice Bradford, daughter of Mayor John and Mercy (Warren) Bradford. Alice Bradford was a great granddaughter of William Bradford the long time governor of the Plymouth Colony and Mayflower passengers. They had three children: Mary, b. 1709; Alice B. 1714 and Edward, b. 1716 when his father was about seventy-three years of age and only a year or so before his death.

The temptation is great to devote an entire chapter to Edward and his two wives and his children. His unmarried brother-in-law Elesha Hayward, as previously mentioned, lived with him. He willed land and money to his sister Mary and to Edward. He and his wife Mary raised the three children of his younger brother Jacob after his death and that of his wife. He also provided a home for his father Experience and his second wife in their final years. In addition, he was a wealthy man by the standards of his day and involved in far too many activities to even attempt to enumerate them. His daughters Mary and Alice each married sons of Deacon John Hersey of Hingham. And his son Edward had a long illustrious career of public service and left twelve children. His wife was Elizabeth Cushing of the daughter of Elesha Cushing of Hingham.

6. Jacob, Married Susanna, daughter of Thomas and Sarah (Jenney) Pope of Plymouth. Here again pages could be written about this son of Experience Mitchell, his wife and his children. However, only a few items will be mentioned. Jacob seems to have been a carpenter by trade. He built a house before his marriage that was standing as late as 1934 and considered then as one of the most remarkable of the Pilgrim's memorials.[8] In the referenced Genealogy of Edward Small the author points out that the floors of this house were probably trod by many of the Mayflower passengers. Jacob sold it to Jabez Howland, son of John Howland before the latter and his wife died so they were probably there many times. Also John[2] Cooke, an Uncle of Jacob, was living after the house was completed so he was undoubtedly a frequent visitor.

When Jacob Mitchell sold the Plymouth house he moved before 1673 to Dartmouth, Mass. in the section that is now Fairhaven, Mass. He immediately became active in the affairs of the new community. He was the ensign bearer of the local military company and also Constable of Dartmouth.

In 1675 Phillip, son of Massasoit, who had been a friend of the settlers for over fifty years,

decided to make war on the spreading population of the colonists. The following from the Genealogy of Edward Small tells the story:[9]

In June, Phillip's warriors surprised and killed Jacob Mitchell and his wife, Susanna, early in the morning, as they were fleeing on horseback to John Cooke's garrison, where they had sent their children the afternoon before. John Pope, William Palmer, and Dorothy Hayward were with them; the two men were killed but, Dorothy, a young woman of twenty-eight years, was taken captive. Although wounded her life was spared because she had, on a former occasion, shown kindness to an Indian child: her wounds were dressed, and the Indians guarded her until they came within sight of the English.

There is a possible sequel to this account. It is from the same source but on page 534.

It has generally been accepted that Susanna Mitchell lost her life at the same time as her husband and brother, John Pope; but in North Yarmouth, Maine, to which town her son Jacob had removed, a "Susanna Mitchell, wife of Jacob Mitchell," joined the first church of North Yarmouth, November 17, 1736, and William M. Sargent adds in a note: "Think she may have been the mother of the first Jacob Mitchell, of North Yarmouth, though it was supposed she had been killed." Had she been living in 1736, her age would have been eighty-seven years. [The reference would be Jacob the son of Jacob and Susanna Mitchell. The source of this is *Old Times in North Yarmouth*: 742.

The original quotation continues:

The three children, as mentioned earlier were taken by their Uncle Edward Mitchell who then had no children and raised as his own. Their success in life and contributions to the community testify to the love and care devoted to the children of his brother.

The three children were Thomas, born 1667 or 1668; Jacob, born 1672 and Mary, born 1674.

In 1696, the two sons and a daughter of Jacob Mitchell married two daughters and a son of John and Elizabeth Kingman of west Bridgewater, Mass. Double weddings occur from time-to-time but triple weddings (six from two families) are quite rare. The three Kingmans were grandchildren of Henry who was over here before 1636 and his wife Joanna. At least two of the children of these three marriages married a Packard, the significance of this will be in a later chapter. There was also at least one Leonard marriage which will later be explained. All of the children did well and descendants of most served in the Revolution. They are quite thoroughly documented in the Genealogy of Edward Small[10] and History of Bridgewater.[11]

7. John, a weaver by trade; married first Mary Bonney daughter of Thomas and Dorcas (Sampson) Bonney. She died in 1677 and he married second Jan. 24, 1679 Mary Lathrop who died the following year. Third he married Mary Prior. There were two children of the first marriage and three from the third. Experience Mitchell the father of John made substantial land gifts to his son during his life and remembered some of the children of John in his will. Again more information can be found in the two references for Jacob Mitchell.

8. Hannah, married Deacon Joseph Hayward as his third wife. The references for Jacob Mitchell preceeding give more information on Hannah and Deacon Hayward. Like others who have been presented, the Hayward family and the descendants of Deacon Hayward who married Hannah Mitchell seem to have been in everything. The History of Bridgewater devotes nine pages to them.

It is the belief of the author that there is a book on Experience Mitchell and his descendants. It is hoped that a copy of it can be found to be kept in the family to supplement the brief account that it has been practical to include in this account.

NOTES

1. Hurd's *History of Plymouth County, Massachusetts* page 790.
2. Descendants of Edward Small of New England and the Allied Families with Tracings of English Ancestry, by Lora Altine Woodbury Underhill, Revised Edition, 1934, Excerpts starting p. 509 and through 531.
3. Same Note No. 2 but pages 510 and 511.
4. *Plymouth Colony Records, Deeds*, Vol. I: 5, 6 and 9.
5. Same as Note No. 2 but page 513.
6. *Plymouth Colony Deeds*, Book 2:9.
7. Same as Note No. 2 but page 521 thru 529.
8. Same as Note No. 2 but pages 530 thru 541.
9. Same as Note No. 2 but page 533.
10. Same as Note No. 2 but pages 530 through 541.
11. *History of Bridgewater, Mass.* by Mahum Mitchell, pages 216 through 220 and 241 through 247.

CHAPTER XXIII

John[2] Washburn

As we go along our Washburn line gets more and more involved with connecting lines.

John[2] Washburn was the oldest son of John[1] Washburn and came to this country in 1635 on the *Elizabeth and Ann* with his mother. According to information furnished by Elaine Washburn, A.G. of Salt Lake City, he was born in Bengeworth, Worcester, England, Nov. 20, 1620. His mother was Margaret or Margery Moore daughter of Robert and Ellen (Taylor) Moore of Bengeworth—Evesham, Worcester, England. She was forty-nine years of age when she arrived in this country. A younger son, Phillip, also came to this country with her. Phillip was born in 1624. Another son named Phillip was born in 1622, but apparently died as an infant.[1]

He, along with his father, was one of the original proprietors of Bridgewater. This means that he had a house lot of six acres on the town river and many additional grants of land. He also had land with a house that his father gave him at Wreems Harbor, in Duxbury, which he had purchased in 1634. He did not sell this until 1670. John[2] was a tailor by trade. In 1645, he served against the Narraganset Indians being one of the six men furnished by Duxbury under Sargent Samuel Nash.

On Dec. 6, 1645, John[2] Washburn married Elizabeth the second child of Experience and Jane (Cooke) Mitchell. They had the following children:[2]

1. John[3], b. 1646, m. Rebeekah Lapham 1679. They had Josiah 1680, John 1682, Joseph 1683, William 1686, Abagail 1685, Rebekah and perhaps several others. John[3] was dead by 1724 but living in 1719. Abagail m. Josiah Leonard. The Leonards appear later in this account.

2. Thomas[3], b. 1647, m. twice, 1st Abagail Leonard daughter of Jacob and 2nd Deliverance the daughter of Samuel Packard. From his will we have the names of seven children but none are listed on the town records. They are: Nathaniel, Thomas, Timothy, Hepzibah, Patience, Deliverance, and Elizabeth. Hepzibah married John Hutchinson in 1708, Patience left children but the name of her husband is not known, Deliverance married Ephriam Jennings in 1719, Elizabeth married Joseph Conant in 1701.[5] No information has been found on Nathaniel. Thomas married Mary —and had three children: Mary, Elizabeth and Thomas who married first Sarah the daughter of John Leonard in 1708 and second Abagail Herford in 1711.

3. Joseph[3], b. 1649, m. Hannah, daughter of Robert Latham. They had Joseph, Jonathan, Ebenezer, Miles, Ephriam, Edward, Benjamin, Hannah and others.

4. Samuel[3], b. 1651, M. Deborah, daughter of Samuel Packard. As Samuel Washburn is in the direct line being followed Chapter XXV will

be devoted to him and Chapter XXIV to Samuel Packard.

5. Jonathan,[3], b. 1653, m. 1683 Mary Vaughn daughter of George Vaughn. Their children: Elizabeth, Joseph, Benjamin, Ebenezer, Martha, Joanna, Nathan, Jonathan, and Cornelius. He died 1720.

6. Benjamin[3], b. 1655, volunteered to serve in the war against France. Made nuncupative will but never returned. No children and no record of marriage. Died in 1690.

7. Mary[3], b. 1661, m. 1693 Samuel Kinsley, son of Samuel Kinsley and his wife Hannah and grandson of Stephen Kinsley of Braintree. Their children: Samuel, John, Nathan, Benjamin, Mary, Sarah, Bethiah, Susanna and probably others. One of these children, Susanna married a Samuel Packard in 1729. He was a great grandson of Samuel[1] Packard, the emigrant, whose daughter married Samuel[3] Washburn.

8. Elizabeth[3], b. 1663, m. 1686 John Howard (Family Group Sheet from Salt Lake City says John Haward) but Mitchell in History of Bridgewater says James Howard. (p.192 and 322). James, (assuming Mitchell to be correct) was the son of John Howard (Haward) who came to Duxbury in 1643 and was one of the original proprietors of Bridgewater in 1643. He became a protegee of Miles Standish with whom he lived on arrival here. He died in the Canada Expedition of 1690. His widow Elizabeth married second Edward Sealey. They had two sons; Benjamin and John. There were two daughters, Elizabeth and Mercy from the first marriage.

9. Jane[3], b. 1666, m. William Orcutt, son of William and Martha Orcutt. Their children Moses, Caleb, Joanna, Elizabeth, Jane, Deliverance and Martha. Deliverance married Joseph Washburn and second, a Packard, Martha married Solomon Washburn. Joseph Washburn identified as "Captain", was the son of Josiah and grandson of John[2] Washburn and Rebeekah Lapham. Solomon Washburn was the son of Samuel[4] Washburn and his wife Abagail and grandson of Samuel[3] Washburn and his wife Deborah Packard.

10. James, b. 1672. (This date from *Geneaology of Edward Small* by Underhill. The family group sheet from Salt Lake City says 1668). He m. Mary Bowden in 1693. Their children: Mary, Anna, James, Edward, Moses, Gideon, Sarah, Martha and Elizabeth.

11. Sarah, B. 1674, m. Jan. 12, 1697 John Ames a grandson of William who came from Bruton, Somersetshire, England as early as 1640. He received a substantial inheritance from his great Uncle John who had no children. Children of John and Sarah: Elizabeth, John, Sarah, Abagail, Jonathan, Deborah, Daniel, Benjamin and Joshua.

Several accounts mention a letter covering Mary (b. 1661), the first daughter born to John[2] and Elizabeth (Mitchell) Washburn. It is not only interesting but as confirmation of the relationship of several family lines. On July 24, 1662, a Thomas Mitchell in Amsterdam, Holland wrote to Experience Mitchell in America as follows:[3]

> I do wish my cousin Elizabeth much joy with her D. [daughter] that God has given to her SS. [Sons]

The writer of the letter, Thomas Mitchell, was a son of Thomas Mitchell and a brother of Experience Mitchell who had remained in Holland. They were both sons of Thomas Mitchell. Elizabeth Mitchell Washburn and her husband John[2] did have six sons before their first daughter Mary was born. The letter also shows that there was correspondence between the Mitchells in America and in Holland.

Conflicting information has been found about a second wife of John[2] Washburn. *The Geneaology of Edward Small*[4] makes

this statement: "The widow, Elizabeth, was not his first wife, but the widow of Samuel Packard. The date of her death is unknown". The Family Group Sheet submitted from the files in Salt Lake City by Elaine Washburn, A.G. lists the second wife as Elizabeth Stream. We have no date of death for Elizabeth Mitchell his first wife. Her eleventh child was born in 1674. John[2] Washburn died Nov. 12, 1686. Samuel Packard, who will be the subject of the next chapter, died in 1684. This is only two years before the death of John[2] Washburn. The identity of the wife of Samuel Packard has not been found. She did come from England with him and their daughter, and first child, who came with them had the name of Elizabeth. As the first daughter was generally named for the mother, this probably means that her name was Elizabeth. It may be that her family name was Stream and her married name of Packard probably was not copied into the Family Group Sheet which seems to have been typed in 1937. If the second wife of John[2] Washburn was Elizabeth Packard, he married the mother of Deborah Packard, the wife of his son Samuel[3] Washburn who will be the subject of Chapter XXV.

John Washburn named his sons John[3] and Samuel[3] executors of his estate. However, he also designated his "kind friend" John Thomson and his "brother" Edward Mitchell as trustees and overseers in its execution and to take care of his children. Two children and possibly a third were minors at the time of his death. The "brother" Edward was the son of Experience Mitchell and a brother of his first wife Elizabeth Mitchell, the mother of all of his children. He had a considerable estate but there were eleven children to share in the estate.

NOTES

1. From *The American Ancestry of Silence Washburn, wife of Jesse Washburn and Mother of Daniel Washburn Who Escaped the Wyoming [Penna.] Massacre* by W.T. Stauffer.
2. *Descendants of Edward Small of New England and The Allied Families with Tracings of English Ancestry* by Lora Altine Woodbury Underhill, Revised Edition 1934 pages 522 and 523. Also *History of Bridgewater, Mass.* by Mahum Mitchell, 1840, several pages starting with 322.
3. Same sources as Note No. 2 above but pages 511 and 573 of Small and 322 History of Bridgewater.
4. Page 523 of the reference of Note No.
5. See Note No. 3, Chapter XXVI. This information may be incorrect although it comes from page 323 of the *History of Bridgewater* mentioned in Note No. 2 above.

CHAPTER XXIV

Samuel Packard

The next generation of the Washburn line is Samuel[3], son of John[2] and Elizabeth (Mitchell) Washburn. But before going to his story, we will pick up the line of his wife, Deborah Packard.

The limited Packard information that has been found, comes from *History of the Early Settlement of Bridgewater, in Plymouth County, Massachusetts Including an Extensive Family Register*. The account starts on page 253 and runs through page 264. There are, in addition, index references to many other pages in the book.

Samuel[1] Packard with his wife Elizabeth and daughter Elizabeth came from Windham, near Hingham, in England. They arrived on the *Diligent of Ipswich*, John Martin, Master, with 133 passengers in 1638. Upon arrival they settled in Hingham, Mass. Two years later they moved to West Bridgewater.

The name of Samuel[1] Packard is not on the list of the original fifty-four proprietors. However, he was there in 1683, when the land was being laid out. He was assigned one of the seventeen lots in the north section and one in the east section. The latter is the section where John Washburn had two lots. A John Washburn also had a lot in the west section and another in the south section. He was the only proprietor with four lots. Samuel[1] Packard had two, and there were three others with two lots each. All others had only one lot. At the time of distribution, forty-nine persons owned the entire original grant. The first minister, Rev. James Keith of Scotland, was given a proprietor's share, as was Deacon Samuel Edson of Salem who erected the first mill in the town. By the estimate of the author, the total area of the grant was 196 square miles or 125,440 acres.

In 1664, Samuel[1] Packard was a constable. By 1670, he was licensed to keep an ordinary or a tavern. In 1667, a jury (committee) was apppointed to lay out all highways needed by the expanding community of the four Bridgewaters. Samuel[1] Packard was one of the men selected along with thirteen others including two alternates. One was Joseph Alden, son of John Alden. The first military officers of the new settlement appointed in 1660 were, Josiah Standish, son of Capt. Miles, as lieutenant, who soon returned to Duxbury, and Thomas Hayward, Jr., Lieutenant; and John Howard, Ensign, appointed in 1664. When they were promoted in 1689, Samuel[1] Packard was appointed as an ensign.

Samuel Packard died in 1684. The children of Samuel and Elizabeth (Stream ?) Packard were:

The John Frank Harrison family. Seated left to right, Frances McCarthy Harrison, Frances Harrison Peplaw, and Mrs. Peplaw, Sr. Standing, left to right, Anne Harrison, Erik Harrison, John Frank Harrison, David Harrison, Beth Harrison, Russell Peplaw, James Harrison and Stephen Harrison. 1984

1. Elizabeth[2]
   m. Thomas Alger of Easton in 1665.
2. Samuel[2]
   m. Elizabeth Lathrop, daughter of Mark. They had: Samuel, Daniel, Joseph, Elizabeth, Mary and Susanna. His estate settled in 1698.
3. Zacheus[2]
   m. Sarah Howard, daughter of John. Their children were: Israel, Sarah, Jonathan, David, Solomon, James, Zacheus, John and Abul. Zacheus, the father, died in 1723.
4. Thomas[2]
   No information. Probably died young.
5. John[2]
   The only information is that his estate was settled in 1741 by his son, Joseph, and that a widow Packard, presumably his, died in 1764 and is described as "Very aged".
6. Nathaniel[2]
   Nathaniel married probably a daughter of John Kingman. Their children were: Samuel, Zechariah, George, Fearnot, Margaret, Sarah, Lydia, Faithful, Hannah, Deliverance, Elizabeth, Mary and Deborah. Margaret married John[4] Washburn a son of John[3], grandson of John[2] and great grandson of John[1]. Mary married Jas. Leonard.
7. Mary[2]
   married Richard Phillips of Weymouth.
8. Hannah[2]
   married Thomas Randall.

9. Israel[2]
   was appointed a Trooper in 1671, but no other information has been found.
10. Jael[2]
    married John Smith.
11. Deborah[2]
    married Samuel[3] Washburn and they are the subjects of chapter XXV that follows.
12. Deliverance[2]
    married Thomas[3] Washburn who was listed with the children of John[2] Washburn. Deliverance Packard was his second wife.

The Packard family connection is of special interest to the writer. In his second year in Boston while at Massachusetts Institue of Technology, his younger brother, Frank, joined him. Although he had not been trained as an engineer, he found work with the Aberthaw Construction Company of Boston. He worked for them off and on for the rest of his life as they had many large construction projects. After a year or so he met a girl, Dorothy Gertrude Packard, who lived in Somerville, but worked for the John Hancock Life Insurance Company in Boston. Although neither Frank nor Dorothy are now living, I and our family have maintained close contact with their two children, Frank and Peter, and their wives and families, with a total of ten children.

The father of Dorothy was John Packard and he had a brother, Dr. Frank Packard. Her mother was a Wright. When the Packard-Washburn tie was discovered, information covering it was sent to Frank, my nephew. After a quick check of records in Maine, where the family of his father lived, it seems to be quite certain that Dorothy Packard Harrison is a descendant of the Samuel[1] Packard whose daughter, Deborah, married Samuel[3] Washburn. If substantiated, they are eight cousins with a possible removal of one or two generations one way or the other. There are several marriages between the Washburn, Packard, Mitchell, Leonard and other lines, so Fannie C. Harrison and the nephew of the author are several different degrees of cousins.

Dorothy's father lived to be over ninety years of age and worked until shortly before his death. He drove his automobile in the Boston area. He was a sales manager for a coffee distributor for many years. He was small, very quick in his movements and mentally alert and one of the world's finest men. Her mother, I can just barely remember, having met her only once and that not being long before her death. I remember her as being quiet and reserved whereas her husband was an extrovert.

CHAPTER XXV

Samuel[3] Washburn

Samual Washburn[3] was the fourth child of John[2] and Elizabeth (Mitchell) Washburn. He was also the fourth of their six sons born before the birth of a daughter and one of the eleven children.

Samuel[3] was born in Duxbury in 1651 before his parents moved to Bridgewater. The limited information found for Samuel[3] comes from two sources.[1] He is designated as "Sergeant" in the *History of Bridgewater*. In 1675, he married Deborah Packard, daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth Packard of the previous chapter. Their children were:

1. Samuel[4], b. April 6, 1678; m. lst Jan. 9, 1701, Deliverance Leonard, daughter of Issac Leonard; m. 2nd 1703, Abagail Leonard, daughter of Jacob Leonard. The Leonards will be the subject of Chapter XXVI.

2. Noah[4], b. 1682; m. Jan. 1, 1710, Elizabeth Shaw, daughter of Joseph and sister of Rev. John Shaw. Their children: Eleayer and Noah. The father died 1717 and his widow married Isaac Harris in 1719. Eleayer married Anna the daughter of Capt. Ebenezer[4] Alden (Isaac,[3], Joseph[2] and John[1] of the Mayflower, and his wife Priscilla Mullens.

3. Israel[4], b. Feb. 4, 1684; m. Nov. 3, 1708, Waitsill Summer. Their children: Sarah 1709, Deborah 1712, Seth 1714, and Israel. Sarah married Ephriam Keith in 1732. He was the son of Joseph and grandson of James Keith of Scotland, the first and long time minister of the Bridgewater settlement. Israel, the father, died and his widow married Ebenezer Pratt in 1720. Sarah and Deborah were minors.

4. Nehemiah[4], b. 1686; m. March 26, 1713 Jane Howard, daughter of Ephriam Howard. Their children were: Silence 1713, Jane 1715. His wife died 1715. He was employed by the town for many years and its representative in 1730 to the General Court of Mass. He is designated as "Captain" in the *History of Bridgewater*.

6. Hannah[4], b.1690; m. April 18, 1711, John Keith a son of James Keith of Scotland, who was the first pastor of the church in Bridgewater. He was an uncle of Ephriam Keith who married Sarah a daughter of Israel, an older brother of Hannah. The children of Hannah and John Keith were: John 1712, James 1716, Israel 1719, Hannah 1721, Keyiah 1723, Daniel 1725, Susanna 1727, Zephaniah 1730, Joseph and Mary. John the father died in 1761 and Hannah in 1766.

Additional information on Samuel[3] Washburn has not been found. However, The Family Group Sheet supplied by Elaine Washburn, A. G. of Salt Lake City does confirm that the mother of Deborah Packard was Elizabeth Stream. This was stated as a possibility in an earlier chapter. Unfortunately, additional information has not been found. As Samuel Packard was married when he arrived in this country he undoubtedly had her as a wife when he arrived from England so the search for her

family would have to be made in England records, as the town in England from which they came is known, a search could be started.

NOTES

1. The two sources are:
   a. *History of the Early Settlement of Bridgewater in Plymouth County, Massachusetts Including an Extensive Family Register* by Mahum Mittchell, 1840, page 323 and others that can be located through the alphabetical arrangement of sketches.
   b. *Family Group Sheets* from the files of the Mormon Church supplied by Elaine Washburn, A. G.

CHAPTER XXVI

The Leonards

The Leonards are the last of the early families of Plymouth County for which we have records and that are connected by marriage to the Washburns being followed. They are another interesting line and with them we get into some very complicated intermarriages of families. Some of these marriages have already been mentioned. The author is not sure that he has found his way through this maze of marriages, but please be assured that he has tried very hard to present them correctly.

Solomon[1] Leonard (sometimes Leonardson, Lennerson, or Lenner but the family always used Leonard) was born in Monmouthshire, England about 1610.[1] He came from Leyden, Holland to Plymouth, Mass. at a very early date, but the exact date is not known. He first appears in Duxbury, Mass.[2] where he was an original proprietor and he was also an early settler in Bridgewater. He seems to have drawn land in the south settlement area. John[1] Washburn or John[2], had land here but they also had lots in two other sections of the area.

The wife of Solomon[1] Leonard was Sarah Chandler according to a Family Group Sheet supplied by Elaine Washburn, A. G. of Salt Lake City, however, this family sheet which is based on *Leonard Family*, B 12, B 3, p. 33 by Anna R. Leonard has Mary — as a wife. It has been scratched out. Sarah Chandler is written in ink. Children:[2]

1. Samuel[2] settled the estate of his father in 1686. It was the first estate to be recorded in Plymouth Probate Court. It is believed that he moved to Worcester. He married Abagail Wood (possibly Atwood). A boy, Samuel Leonardson and probably a son of Samuel and a grandson of Solomon, was taken by the Indians, March 15, 1697. He escaped and was allowed twelve pounds and ten shillings for escaping about 1700 and killing several of them. This is in Massachusetts official records.
2. John[2], married Sarah Chandler (?). Their children John, Enoch, Moses, Josiah, Joseph and Sarah. He died 1699. Sarah m. Thomas[5] Washburn.
    a. John[3]. Children: Seth 1733, Orpah 1737. He moved to Sutton 1741.
    b. Enoch[3], m. Elizabeth (probably the daughter of John) Hooper 1707 and had Enoch 1707 and Elizabeth 1719. Elizabeth the wife of Enoch probably m. 2nd, James Washburn 1720.
    c. Josiah[3], m. Marjorium Washburn 1699 and had John, Josiah, Ezekiel, Samuel, Nathan, Elizabeth, Mary and Margene. He m. 2nd, Abagail, daughter of John[3] Washburn 1717. His will 1743. Mary m. Daniel Harrington of Marlborough 1733. Margene m. a Pratt.
    d. Joseph m. Hannah da. Richard Jennings 1712 and had Joseph and Hannah 1713, Moses, 1714, Seth

1715, Timothy 1718, Rebecca 1721, Mehitabel 1724, Thankful 1726 and Ebenezer 1728.

3. Jacob. His will of 1716 mention Susanna (King ?) as his present wife indicating that there may have been an earlier wife. The first wife may have been Phoebe Chandler. The children were:
   a. Abagail b. in Weymouth in 1680 m. Thomas[3] Washburn (John[2] and John[1]) who m. 2nd Deliverance the daughter of Samuel Packard. The children are located in Chapter XXIII under Thomas [3] Washburn[3]. Note: Other accounts say that Abagail was the 2nd wife of Samuel[4] Washburn.
   b. Susanna b. at Weymouth Dec. 24, 1683, Married March 22, 1714, Ebenezer Hill. They had: Ebenezer 1715, Jacob 1717, Israel 1719, Eleazer 1730. Susanna died Nov. 19, 1764. Ebenezer died 1760.
   c. Experience, b. about 1685, d. April 20, 1733.
   d. Mary, b. about 1690, married Benjamin Willes Nov. 27, 1719. They had one son Benjamin.
   e. Sarah b. at Bridgewater June 11, 1699 married 1721 William Orcutt. They had one son Jacob. William was son of William. If so his mother was Jane the daughter of John[2] Washburn. But he may have been the son of John Orcutt another son of William and a brother of the William who married Jane Washburn.
   f. Solomon listed as "Captain". Born about 1693 and married Elizabeth Perkins the daughter of David. He died May 29, 1761. their children: Experience b. 1732 m. Oliver Alden in 1765. He was son of Captain Seth Alden, grandson of Deacon Joseph, great grandson of Joseph and 2nd great grandson of John Alden.
   Solomon 1733, m. 1756 Joanna the daughter of Capt. Joseph[5] Washburn (Joseah[4], John[3], John[2], John[1]). Elizabeth m. Hezekiah Hooper in 1758. Their children: Elizabeth, Winslow, Joseph and Hezekiah.
   Elizabeth, the mother, died in 1799 at the age of 62. He married 2nd Hannah (Blackman) Conant. Hezekiah the fourth child graduated from Harvard University in 1789 and entered the ministery and never married.
   Susanna married Samuel Whiteman in 1761. Their children were: Lucinda, Silvia, Susanna, Freelove, and Chloe.
   Lucinda married Joseph Tilson in 1794. Silvia married David Conant in 1783, and afterwards, Azariah Hayward in 1798. There is some confusion about her which cannot be clarified with the information available to the author. Samuel Whitman was lost at sea and she died in 1778. Freelove was drowned.
   g. Jacob, born June 13, 1703, d. Dec. 6, 1722. Unmarried. Jacob Leonard seems to have had some problems during the course of his life. He lived in Weymouth and Worcester as well as Bridgewater at different times. He was "Warned Out" of one of these places which means that he was asked to leave. His will was made in 1716 and mentioned his present wife susanna. However, the account about Jacob the son of Solomon is confusing.
4. Isaac and his wife Deliverance had: Isaac 1676, Hannah 1680, Deliverance 1682, Joseph 1684, and Benjamin 1692. Isaac married Mary Barley April 16, 1701. Deliverance married Samuel[4] Washburn (Samuel[3], John[2], and John[1]) Jan. 9, 1701 and they will be the subject of Chapter XXVII. Isaac the father conveyed his homestead to his son

Joseph in 1717. There is no information on him. The father probably moved to Worcester. Unfortunately, a family name for Deliverance the mother has not been found.

5. Solomon. No information has been found.
6. Mary married John Pollard in 1673 but no other information has been found.

In presenting the Leonard family, from which the Washburns took two wives, a sincere effort has been made to offer it correctly. However, some of the source information is confusing and some information is missing. For example, the *History of Bridgewater* gives the widow of Solomon as Mary, but the *Leonard Family* by Anna M. Leonard says that his wife was Sarah Chandler.

The intermarriage in the families of Cooke, Mitchell, Packard, Leonard and Washburn over a period of five generations in a small community involves unbelievable complications. Then, too, there were marriages with several generations of other families of the area. However, after the Leonards of this chapter, and Samuel[4] Washburn of the next chapter, we go for three generations without a family name for a wife. In fact, very little except census information is available on the three generations that moved from Bridgewater to Franklin County, Vermont.

NOTES

1. *Directory of Ancestral Heads of New England Families* by Frank R. Holmes, 1973.
2. *History of the Early Settlement of Bridgewater in Plymouth County, Massachusetts Including an Extensive Family Register* by Mahum Mitchell, 1840. Mostly page 233 but other pages by use of the alphabetical arrangements of biographies.
3. This information from the *History of Bridgewater* listed in Note 2, above but page 323. However, Family Group Sheets for Solomon Leonard and his son Jacob supplied by Elaine Washburn A. G. of Salt Lake City with other information from *Leonard Family* by Anna R. Leonard of Boston, Mass. show that Abagail, the daughter of Jacob Leonard, was the second wife of Samuel[4] Washburn and not the first wife of Thomas[3] Washburn (John[2], John[1]) who was an uncle of Samuel[4] Washburn. This is all very confusing and not enough information is available to the writer to be sure of just what is correct.

CHAPTER XXVII

Samuel,[4] Samuel,[5] and Reuben[6] Washburn

With this chapter and Samuel[4] Washburn we enter the three-generation period where there is very little information.

Samuel[4] Washburn (Samuel,[3] John,[2] John[1]) was born April 6, 1678, in Bridgewater, Mass. He was the first child of Samuel[3] Washburn and his wife Deborah Packard. We know nothing of him until his marriage Jan. 9 1701 to Deliverance Leonard daughter of Isaac and Deliverance (—) Leonard. From the list of children of Samuel[4] Washburn, it can be assumed that they had no children, as the first child listed, David, was born April 30, 1704. Deliverance died in 1703. Samuel[4] next married Abagail Leonard, a first cousin of his first wife. She was the oldest child of Jacob Leonard and was born Nov. 11,1680. She was two years younger than her cousin Deliverance. There is some disagreement whether she was a daughter of a possible first wife of Jacob Leonard, Phoebe Chandler, or the wife who survived him, Susanna King, the daughter of Samuel and Experience (Phillips) King. The children of Samuel[4] Washburn were:

1. David[5] Washburn
   b. April 30, 1704
   d. Oct. 19, 1777
2. Deliverance[5] Washburn
   b. Oct. 7, 1706
   m. Feb. 8, 1740 Joseph Bolton
   Children: Joseph and Phillip.
3. Solomon[5] Washburn
   b. Oct. 1, 1708
   m. Jan. 13, 1732 Martha Orcutt a granddaughter of Jane Washburn, daughter of John[2] Washburn.
   d. Mar. 6, 1780
   Children: Lydia, Solomon 1735 and Tabitha 1738.
4. Samuel[5] Washburn
   b. June 2, 1710
   m. Mary
   Samuel[5] will be discussed later in this chapter.
5. Abagail[5] Washburn
   b. March 3, 1712
   No other information has been found.
6. Susanna[5] Washburn
   b. March 13, 1714
   m. March 18, 1736 Timothy Perkins.
   d. Before Oct. 7, 1753
   Children: Nathaniel who married Mary the daughter of Joseph Alger in 1775.
7. Tabitha[5] Washburn
   b. Aug. 28, 1716
   m. April 14, 1736 Solomon Leach
   d. 1736. No. children.

Other than what has been given to this point we really know very little about Samuel[4] Washburn. So far, a record of the date and place of his death has not been found. His second wife Abagail died in Stafford, Tolland County, Conn., Oct. 3, 1760, when she lacked just a few days

more than a month of being eighty years of age. Sons David[5] and Solomon[5] also died in Stafford, Conn. Samuel[4] probably died there, as records have been found of land transactions by a Solomon Washburn as early as 1737. There are various records of the purchase and sale of land over a period of years. Although some specify "Junior" others do not and there is no sure way to be certain that the transactions involve Samuel[4] (b. 1678) or to Samuel[5] (b. 1710).

Tolland is a large county in Connecticut. Stafford is located in the north part of it just below the Massachusetts line and about half way across the county from east to west. The land transactions could be Samuel[5], for in 1737, the date of the first purchase for which a record has been found, he was twenty-seven years of age. However, the early transactions were probably by his father, Samuel[4] as he was only fifty-nine in 1737. There seems to be no doubt that the Samuel[4] and Samuel[5] of Bridgewater and Stafford are the same family.

SAMUEL[5] WASHBURN

Since we have no family name for the wife of Samuel[5] Washburn we can proceed to present the little information that we have concerning him. As previously brought out, he was born in Bridgewater, Mass., June 2, 1710, and was the son of Samuel[4] and Abagail (Leonard) Washburn.

The children of Samuel[5] and Mary Washburn were:[1]

1. Rueben[6] Washburn
   b. Sept. 28, 1746, Stafford, Conn.
   m. about 1777.
   There will be more about Rueben later in this chapter.
2. Samuel[6] Washburn
   b. April 29, 1748, Stafford Conn.
   m. about 1781.
3. Josiah[6] Washburn
   b. Dec. 11, 1750, Stafford, Conn.
   m. about 1773.
4. Calvin[6] Washburn
   Christened April 3, 1757 Stafford, Conn.
   died, July 31, 1758.
5. Andana or Dordona[6] Washburn
   b. May 5, 1760, Stafford, Conn.

No other information has been found for Samuel[5] or Mary. Rueben will be covered next.

REUBEN[6] WASHBURN

For Reuben[6] Washburn, we again, have no family name for his wife. Her given name was Dorcas. The children of Rueben[6] and Dorcas Washburn were:[2]

1. Samuel[7] Washburn
   b. about 1780.
2. Unnamed child
   b. about 1782.
3. Simeon[7] Washburn
   b. about 1784-5
   m. Eunice Wright of Franklin County, Vt.
   d. Sept. 1866, Saranac, Clinton County, N.Y.
4. Sylvanus[7] Washburn
   b. about 1785-6
   m. Saloma Mansfield.
   d. June 17, 1866-7 at age 81 years, 4 months and 28 days.
6. Unnamed child
   b. about 1791
7. Rueben[7] Washburn
   b. about 1794
   m. Betsy

8. John[7] Washburn (perhaps ?)
   b. about 1796
9. Phillip[7] Washburn
   b. about 1798.

Some of these children may have been born in Connecticut, but probably all were born in Vermont. Nothing has been found to fix the date of the move from Connecticut. They seem to have gone over into New York before ending up in Milton, Chittenden County, Vt. In fact, numerous members of the Washburn family went into New York and continued to live there with their children going on west. Once the family grew beyond the population capacity of the Plymouth colony area, they seemed to go in every direction. Many, for example, went down into Maine, others up into New Hampshire and still others across Massachusetts. While the Washburns that went across Connecticut and on into Vermont, with a possible excursion into the state of New York for a while, did not leave records that are in books such as are recorded in The*History of Bridgewater*, they undoubtedly left some records as they went along. Dedicated and thorough searching in Tolland County, Conn. and Chittenden County, Vt. and points in between, might yield some interesting material. However, it has not been practical to take the time out for this type of searching and any interesting incidents found would add length to this account. In general, the family members of the three or four generations that migrated from Plymouth County in Massachusetts to Northern Vermont and on over into the state of New York seem to have suffered economically and culturally. They, like the Seavey family members who also moved from the coastal New Hampshire across New England to New York, became poorer and poorer as they went along and received less and less in the way of education. It was quite different for those who went from Pennsylvania, Virginia, the Carolinas and bordering states to Kentucky, Ohio, Indiana, Illinois and Missouri. They made the move in one generation, often in a few months, and prospered economically within a short time. Schools and cultural opportunities took a little longer, but not as long as in New England and New York State.

The Washburn family members that remained behind seemed to do better. For example, Emory Washburn, born in 1800, was governor of Massachusetts in 1853-1854. He was also author of *Judicial History of Massachsetts 1630-1675* and a *Treatise on the American Law of Real Property*. Israel[7] Washburn, a descendant of Samuel[3] of the line we have been following, lived in Maine. His seven children included a son who was a member of Congress from Maine and a governor of Maine; another was a merchant in Boston and later a banker in Maine; still another was a long time member of Congress, Minister Plenipotentiary to France and published his memoirs for his service in France; still another was governor of Wisconsin; Charles A. went to California and was minister to Paraguay afterwards writing a two volume history of that country, and finally Samuel was a ship master in the Merchant Marine and in the lumber trade in Minnesota. Those were eighth generation members of the family. Those being followed in this

account did not begin to prosper economically and improve culturally for several more generations.

Elaine Washburn of Salt Lake City made a thorough search of census reports for Connecticut, Vermont, and New York through 1840. She found that Rueben[6] lived in New York at least from 1785 to 1800, and possibly longer. His brother Samuel[6] was also in New York. In 1800, he was in Greenfield, Saratoga, N.Y.; 1810 in Milton, Chittenden County, Vt. and in 1820 in Greenwich, Washington County, N.Y. There was evidently considerable moving around during this period. Undoubtedly the war of 1812-1814 had something to do with it as the British came down from Canada several times and continued south on Lake Champlain and along its shores. No attempt will be made to work the war into this account although it certainly had some influence on the movement of the people moving west across New England.

NOTES

1. Miss Washburn gives the following information as to the sources of her information about the children of Samuel[6] and Mary Washburn.

   First Congregational Church records which start about 1757 supply the information on Calvin[6] and Dordona[6].

   The International Genealogical Index gives information on Rueben[6], Samuel[6], Josiah[6] and Aredona (Please note difference between the name they use and that in the church record.)

2. The sources given by Miss Washburn are:

   Vermont Vital Records for information on Dorcas, Sylvanus and Salona.

   International Genealogical Index for the birth date of Reuben[6].

   Census reports for 1800 through 1860.

CHAPTER XXVIII

Eunice and the Wrights

With Simeon[7] Washburn (Rueben[6], Samuel[5], Samuel[4], Samuel[3], John[2], and John[1]) who comes next in our line, we again have a wife whose full name we know and for whom we have at least a little background. Simeon married Eunice Wright of Georgia, Franklin County, Vermont. She was the daughter, one of eight children, of Isaac and Jerusa Wright.

Elaine Washburn of Salt Lake City discovered that Eunice the wife of Simeon[7] Washburn was a Wright almost by accident. She was searching for land transfer documents in Vermont records to assist her in putting the Washburn line together. In the course of this she ran across a copy of a grantor deed where Simeon Washburn and his wife Eunice sold the one eighth share of the land her father Isaac, after a third had been set aside for her mother. This proved the marriage of Simeon and Eunice but, additionally made it possible for her to find more information. Unfortunately, there has not been an opportunity to extend the searching for earlier generations of the Wrights and connecting lines. This is a project for the future and someone else. It might yield some very interesting results.

A portion of the deed will be quoted as it is seldom that a single document is found that furnishes so much information. It is from the Georgia, Franklin County, Vt. Deeds, Vol. 1, p. 182.

> Simeon Washburn and Eunice Washburn of Georgia the County of Franklin and the state of Vermont for and in consideration of thirty dollars to us in hand paid before this delivery hereof by Bernice Snow of Georgia . . . . . convey and confirm unto the said Bernice Snow his heirs . . . . . a certain priece or parcel of land lying and being in Georgia and being eighth in part of the home formerly belonging to Isaac after the widow of the said Isaac's Wright's third or share is taken out of the said farm.
>
> The date is March 3, 1812.

Aside from confirming the Washburn-Wright marriage, establishing them in Georgia and Franklin County and giving us the date, other interesting things are learned. Since Eunice had an eighth of the farm, there were probably eight children. This has been found to be the case. Also, and probably quite significant, the land was sold to Bernice Snow who had adjoining land. While the connection has not been established, Bernard Snow is listed as the heir (as used in the Mormon Church and not an heir for property) of John[1] and John[2] in the records of the Mormon Temple. Theresa Snow Hill of Logan, Utah, is listed as the person supplying the in-

formation to the Temple. The dates were 1934, 1936, 1937, and 1938. Bernard is listed as the 5th great grandson of John[1] Washburn. This seems to indicate that Bernice Snow who lived adjoining the property of Isaac Wright was related in some way to the Washburns.

Isaac Wright was born in Vermont in the general period from 1755-1765, probably near the early date because his first child was born in 1781. The fact that he was born in Vermont is interesting because there were not many people in Vermont in this period.

CHAPTER XXIX

Simeon[7] Washburn

With Eunice Wright in the family, we can now go ahead with Simeon[7] and Eunice (Wright) Washburn and their family.

From a study of Vermont and Clinton County, New York census records for the period with which we are concerned and information on file in the Family Registry, Genealogical Dept. of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints that Miss Washburn has put together, we can offer information which follows about the family of Simeon[7] Washburn:

Simeon[7] Washburn
b. 1785 in New York
m. ca. 1807 Eunice Wright in Vermont
d. Sept. 1866 in Saranac, Clinton County, N.Y.

and

Eunice Wright
b. 1790 in Vermont
d. Nov. 1880 in Saranac, N.Y.

Children:

1. Sylvia, b. 1808 Milton, Chittenden County, Vt. M. 1st, Solomon[7] Seavey ca. 1827, in Vermont; five children; m. 2nd, Lorenzo Downey ca. 1846-50; d. June 22, 1880. Buried Saranac Hollow Cemetery, Saranac N.Y. as Sylvia, wife of Lorenzo Downey.

2. Anne, b. Dec. 17, 1811 Milton, Chittenden County, Vt. m. ca. 1832 Andrew Hull; d. Jan. 23, 1854; two children in 1850 census; Mary and Samuel Wesley.

3. Bernice, b. 1814, Milton, Chittenden County, Vt.; m. ca. 1838 Harriet — ; d. May 4, 1887. Five children 1850 census: James H., Charlotte, Eliza A, Eunice and Lacy.

4. Amasa, b. 1816 Milton, Chittenden County, Vt. m. ca. 1845 Hepsy - ; two children in 1850 census: Eunice and Betsy.

5. Sophia, b. Oct. 25, 1818 Milton, Chittenden County, Vt.; m. ca. 1839 Edward J. Paige; d. April 15, 1896 buried Shelters Cemetery, Clinton County, N.Y.; four children in 1850 census: James J., William G., Andrew H., Charles H.

6. Eber, b. 1820 Plattsburgh, Clinton Co. N.Y.; d. July 11, 1840.

7. Lydia, b. Dec. 8, 1822 Plattsburgh, Clinton County, N.Y.; m. ca. 1855 Samuel C. Coon; d. Jan. 11, 1885 buried Douglas Cemetery, Altoona, Clinton County, N.Y.

8. Orpha, b. 1825 Plattsburgh, Clinton Co. N.Y.

9. Simeon, b. 1828 Plattsburgh, Clinton County, N.Y.; m. ca. 1853 Melissa — ; d. Aug. 11, 1890;

10. Orville, b. 1834 Saranac, N.Y.; d. Jan. 30, 1913.

In the absence of definite and complete information about Simeon and Eunice (Wright) Washburn and their families in Vermont, all that can be done is to make some assumptions based on the meager data available. When the 1810 census was taken in Chittenden County, Vt., Rueben[6] Washburn was living in or near Milton with a wife and six children. Nearby was Samuel[6], undoubtedly his brother, with a wife and three children. Also, in or near,

Milton, was Simeon Washburn, with a wife and a female child under ten years of age. It is believed that Simeon Washburn and Eunice Wright were married in 1807. Milton is only about three miles below the line of Franklin County and the line of the town of Georgia. The family of Eunice lived there so they were not far away, probably less than ten miles. They lived near the lake as the property that Simeon and Eunice sold in 1812 after the death of her father had the lake for one boundary. Also, in the town of Georgia in 1810, there was Isaiah Washburn. There was undoubtedly visiting back and forth as Isaiah had three sons about the same age as Simeon. During some of these visits Si meon and Eunice became acquainted.

The 1820 census of the town of Plattsburgh in Clinton County lists Simeon[7] Washburn as living there with a wife and five children. In connection with this, it must be remembered that the town of Saranac was not established from the town of Plattsburgh until 1824. Simeon Washburn and his family could have well been in what is now Saranac even though listed as being in Plattsburgh. Since the very first settlers did not come into the area that is now Saranac until around 1803-5, the Washburns can be considered very early settlers.

Simeon and Eunice acquired land soon after their arrival which must have been between November of 1818 and 1820. Sophia Washburn was born October 25, 1818 in Vermont. Eber or Eben was born in Clinton County in 1820, and is not listed in the 1820 census so he must have been born early in the year before the census was taken. The other four children were all born in Clinton County.

Simeon[7] Washburn is listed as a shoemaker and in the 1820 census shows him under the heading of manufacturers. He probably also carried on some farming as most people in, or near, small towns, did in that area.

All through the writing of this account there have been two conditions that occur. There is either not enough material or too much. With the Washburns it is too much. Should we carry our account through the children and grandchildren of Simeon and Eunice Washburn and their connections by marriage we would have many of the people known to the children of Lawrence Albert and Jennie (Irwin) Collins (Seavey) when they were living in Saranac. In addition, we would have quite a large percentage of the population of Saranac at that time. Due to the time that would be required for searching and writing, plus the cost of reproduction, it seems desirable to compromise. Some information will be presented on the children and a lesser amount on the grandchildren. The information that follows supplements what has already been furnished on the children of Simeon and Eunice.

1. Sylvia, As the wife of Solomon Seavey all available information on Sylvia and her descendants is being given. It will be in the next chapter.

2. Ann, Andrew Hull, her husband, was a merchant. He was born in Vermont. No information has been found on Mary. Samuel Wesley who is mentioned in the diary of his stepmother enlisted Sept. 22, 1861 in the 16th N.Y.

infantry, Co.C. He was wounded before Richmond, taken prisoner and is supposed to have died in Libbey Prison Aug. 1862.

3. Bernice, enlisted April 25, 1861 in N.Y. 16th Infantry, Co.C. Promoted to Sargeant Aug. 19, 1861. Discharged June 6, 1863. Re-enlisted July 7, 1863 in 83rd N.Y. Volunteers, Co. E. Was wounded and later assigned to three different units. His name, Bernice, being the same as the family name of the Vermont neighbor of his mother who purchased the land that she inherited may indicate a Wright—Bernice relationship. He is listed as a sawyer so he worked in the woods or lumber mill.

4. Amasa, no additional information available except that he was listed as a sawyer.

5. Sophia, her husband, Edward J. Page was born in England. He was a gate tender, presumably on the old plank road.

6. Eber or Eben, in 1840 when twenty years of age, he participated in a log drive down the Saranac River. He was thrown in the water and drowned.

7. Lydia, her husband Samuel C. Coon is listed as a day laborer.

8. Orpha, no additional information.

9. Simeon, enlisted in 16th N.Y. Infantry Aug. 24, 1864 as a private. His wife Melissa lived until 1929 and was well known to Fannie and her family.

10. Orville, enlisted Sept. 26, 1861 in N.Y. 16th Infantry Company C. He was wounded at Gaines Mill, Va. June 28, 1862, captured, but was back to his own lines July 27, 1862.

CHAPTER XXX

Solomon[7] Seavey

Solomon[7] Seavey (William[6], Solomon[5], Samuel[4], Samuel[3], Samuel[2], Thomas[1]) is another of three generations for which very little information is available. He is the son of William[6] and Bethana[6] (Buffum) Seavey. Being the eleventh and the next to the last child, he was born near the end of the life of his mother. His parents were in Tunbridge, Vermont for the census in 1800, but were in Lebanon, N.H. for the 1810 census so having been born Nov. 4, 1802, his home state could either be Vermont or New Hampshire.

No records for Solomon[7] have been found until he appears in the census of 1830. At the time he was in Georgia, Franklin County, Vermont with a wife and a child under five years of age. His father at that time was in the town of Hartland in Windsor County, Vt.

New Hampshire records are centralized in Concord and those for Vermont in Montpelier. However, a diligent search failed to yield anything about the marriage of Solomon or the date or the name of his wife. Also no record was found for the birth of his first child. Since Solomon was in the town of Georgia in Franklin County when the first child was less than five years of age, a trip was made there in the hope that some local records might be found that had not been fed into the centralized records for the entire state. The first record book for the town was in excellent condition and contained just the kind of information being sought. Unfortunately, when I was within a year or so of the period I wanted, I ran out of book. When the next book was requested, I was told that it had been lost in a fire many years ago and that it contained all records for the period that it covered. The third book picked up after the period for which information was being sought.

Solomon[7] Seavey must have moved across the northern end of Lake Cham-

The center monument of the five in the foreground is that of Solomon[7] Seavey. The other four in the foreground are for members of the Washburn Family. Saranac Hollow Cemetery.

plain into Clinton County, New York soon after the 1830 census. He appears in the 1840 census of Clinton County, New York, in the town of Mooers. At that time, he and his wife were in the thirty-to-forty years of age bracket. They had two males in the ten-to-fifteen age bracket, one female in the five-to-ten age bracket and one male and one female under five years of age. At the time of this census they were living in the town of Mooers.

Solomon[7] died March 28, 1846 and was buried in the Saranac Hollow Cemetery in the village of Saranac. His grave, with a monument, is between graves of two members of the Washburn family.

With Solomon gone, the family as such does not appear in the 1850 census of Clinton County. However, in the town of Blackbrook, four of the five children were found living with the family of Lorenzo Downey. The 1850 census listing which carries the date of Oct. 14, 1850 is as follows:

Lorenzo, Downey, Age 43, Bloomer, Born, Vt.
Sylvia, Downey, Age 42, Born Vt.
Thomas, Downey, Age 18, Bloomer, Born N.Y.
John, Downey, Age 10, Born N.Y.
Lorenzo, Downey, Age 8, Born N.Y.
Albert, Seavey, Age 22, Sawyer, Born N.Y.
Lucius, Seavey, Age 20, Teamster, Born N.Y.
Sarah A., Seavey, Age 16, Born N.Y.
George, Seavey, Age 13, Born N.Y.
George, Thomaston, Age 25, Bloomer, Born N.Y.
George, Keyson, Age 22, Bloomer, Born N.Y.
Joseph, Evers, Age 30, Teamster, Born Eng.
William, Wells, Age 23, Teamster, Born N.Y.
Mary, Darancy (?), Age 15, Born N.Y.

No identifiable record was found in the 1850 census of the youngest female child of the 1840 census who was not identified by name in that census. The presumption, therefore, has to be that she had either not surv ived or, if living, had moved away or was married.

The identity of the wife of Solomon[7] was not known until September of 1985, when Miss Elaine Washburn, Accredited Genealogist, of Salt Lake City, Utah, put all the pieces together and definitley identified her. The burial of Solomon[7] Seavey with the Washburns on all sides of his grave was the first clue to his wife. The rest of the story has already been told in chapter XIX, so it will not be repeated here.

Miss Washburn the genealogist in Salt Lake City found that Solomon[7] Seavey married Sylvia Washburn in the town of Georgia in Franklin County, Vermont, about 1827. She was the oldest child of Simeon and Eunice Washburn and was born in the town of Milton in Chittenden County, Vermont in 1808. Sometime between March 28, 1846, when Solomon[7] Seavey died, and in 1850 when the next census was taken, she married her neighbor, Lorenzo Downey, whose wife had died sometime after the birth of their last child, Lorenzo in 1842. The 1840 census numbering system indicates that Solomon Seavey was living near Simeon Washburn, the father of Sylvia (Washburn) Seavey and Lorenzo Downey was also living very near him. Bernice Washburn, a son of Simeon, was in the neighborhood as was Andrew Hull whose first wife, Anna was a daughter of Simeon Washburn. This all

ties together and is supported by the burial of Solomon Seavey in the Washburn cemetery plot, the residence of his children at the Downey home after his death, and the difficulty of finding the widow of Solomon Seavey. Unfortunateley, the marriage records for Georgia, Franklin County, Vt. have not survived and the same is true for a record of birth for Albert, the first child of Solomon and Sylvia Seavey. So far no record has been found for the marriage of Sylvia and Lorenzo Downey. The fact that Fannie C. Harrison and her sisters and brother always considered the Washburns and Downeys as kinfolk also fits into the picture.

Lorenzo Downey is buried in the Saranac Hollow Cemetery in Saranac, N.Y. He died July 19, 1868, and his age is given on the monument as sixty-two. Sylvia, wife of Lorenzo Downey, is also buried in the same cemetary. She died June 27, 1880, at age seventy-one. Downey sons, Thomas and Lorenzo are also buried in the Saranac Hollow Cemetery.

The Washburn line of Sylvia and her father, Simeon, has been covered in Chapter XVIII.

Solomon[7] Seavey was definitely in the Saranac area the last few years of his life. In the period from Nov. 4, 1844 to June 10, 1845, he purchased merchandise from a local store for a total of $9.32. For the period of August 27, through October 22, 1845, he made additional purchases in the amount of $4.43. The first purchases are marked as having been paid but not the second list. Albert, the oldest son of Solomon[7], made purchases in the period from Dec. 22, 1854 through March 22, 1855 for a total of $119.10. This information was found in an old account book that Mrs. Harold Cromie found in an old house that she renovated and remodeled a number of years ago.

Solomon and Sylvia (Washburn) Seavey had five children:

1. Albert
   b. 1829 in Georgia, Franklin Co. Vt.
   m.
   d. In Civil War
   Children: Clara White, Ella White, George Seavey. All of Troy, N.Y. ca. 1900.
2. Lucius
   b. ca. 1830 in Clinton Co., N.Y.
   m.
   d.
   The only information found in this statement: "Went West".
3. Sarah A.
   b. 1834 in Clinton Co., N.Y.
   m.
   d.
   Absolutely no information.
4. George[8] Washington
   b. 1837 in Clinton County, N.Y.
   m. Delia Anne Curtis 1859 or 1860.
   d. Nov. 29, 1906 at Soldiers Home, Bath, N.Y.
5. Un-named daughter listed 1840 census as being under five years of age. No other information.

Except for George[8] Washington, there is no information on any of the children of Solomon other than the little that is given above. Something might be learned about Albert[8] Seavey by checking the National Archives. If his widow applied for a pension, there might be a file, and if so, it might yield considerable information. George[8] Washington will be the subject

of Chapter XXXII and such information has been found and will be included in it. For Sarah A. Seavey and the youngest daughter, for whom we do not even have a name, it is doubtful that anything can be found. Diligent searching might produce something, but if so, it would be sheer luck.

Really very little is known about Solomon[7] Seavey. He probably worked in lumbering operations for part of the year and did small scale farming for himself or others. No record of land ownership has been found in Clinton County and no effort has been made to find a record of property in Vermont. Since neither a will nor deeds of his father, William[6], have been found, those sources of information fail us. He was only forty-three years of age when he died, so he was still a relatively young man.

CHAPTER XXXI

Curtis

When the Saranac Hollow Cemetery is entered from the upper road, and you go through the area where the earliest burials were made, and are about half way through the cemetery, there is one on the right or south a small monument. It is in old style stone and, although recently cleaned and well maintained, it has obviously been there a long time. On it there is this inscription:

DELIA A.
WIFE OF
GEORGE SEVEY
DIED
SEPT. 1 1868
AE. 26 Y'RS

Not far away is a smaller monument with the following:

ELLEN A.
DAUGHTER OF
GEORGE W. AND DELIA A.
SEVEY
DIED
JULY 25, 1862
AGE 11 MONTHS AND 27D'S

A third small monument nearby has this inscription:

GEORGE L. SEVEY
BORN APRIL 10, 1864
DIED JUNE 2, 1892

The information that has just been given is about all that we have on Delia A., the first wife of George[8] Washington Seavey, and the grandmother of Fannie C. Harrison. Her family name was Curtis. The only record that has been found showing her family name is the April 25, 1900 application for a license for Lawrence Collins and Jennie Erwin to marry. The name of the mother of the groom is given as Dealian Curtis. The 1860 census for the town of Saranac, Clinton County, N.Y. lists George Seva, age 23, and Delian Seva, age 17, as having been married "with in the year". Depending on the exact date that the original information was obtained by the census taker, they could have been married any time from early in 1859 to late in 1860. And related to this, she could have been born at any time from early in 1842 to late in 1843.

We also know that before she died Delia A. Seavey had a third child, Lawrence Albert, born October 30, 1866. The certificate of death for which the widow, Mrs. L.A. Cross, gave the information, states that the date of birth was October 30, 1866. She gives the name of his mother Adelia Curtis.

According to Jane (Jennie) Irwin Collins Cross, the wife of Lawrence Albert Collins, and the mother of Fannie and her

Delia Anne Curtis Seavey

sisters and brother, George W. Collins and his wife, Sophia L. Sharrow Collins, visited the house of George W. Seavey after the death of his wife. Little Lawrence Albert Seavey was playing on the floor. He was then just two months less than two years of age. Mrs. Collins had lost a son who was only two years and four months of age not quite five years earlier. Her other child was a son then about nine and a half, but badly crippled and they probably realized that he might not live many years. He did die about nine years later.

George and Sophia (Sharrow) Collins took young Lawrence home with them. They reared him as their own child. More about this will be in a later chapter. So far, no information has been obtained on George L. Sevey. He was almost four and a half when his mother died. His father soon married a second wife who lived until 1880.

The information for this book has been collected over a period of eighteen years. More time and effort has been devoted to the search for data on Delia Anne Curtis Seavey than any other person. To date, nothing has been found. We do not know when or where she was born, the names of her parents and whether she had brothers or sisters. All we know is that before she reached the age of twenty-seven she had married, had three children, one of whom died before she was one year of age. All of this took place during the period of the Civil War. We do not know whether she lived alone or with someone during this period. The records show that her husband, George[8] Washington Seavey, was in the army and away from home from a few days before September 23, 1861, to a few days after May 23, 1863. He was gone again from a few days before September 1, 1864, to a few days after June 29, 1865. In the period of approximately eight years of their marriage, they were together less

than five years. They probably lived some where in the town of Saranac, but we have no idea whether they had a cabin or house of their own or lived with someone else. We know that the father of George W. Seavey died in 1846 and Sylvia his widow, married Lorenzo Downey sometime before 1850. A Lorenzo Downey served in the war, but it could have been a son of Lorenzo by his first wife. George W. Collins who raised Lawrence[9] Albert Sevey after the death of Delia Anne Seavey, his mother, probably lived nearby. He served in the war in the same units as George W. Seavey, and for the same periods of time. His wife Sophia (Sharrow) Collins, who was a second wife, was approximately eight years older than Delia Anne Seavey. As has been mentioned, she had lost a child and had a crippled son who was a few years older than the children of Delia Anne Seavey.

While it will never earn this account high marks from historians and genealogists, some speculation is going to be included as to the family of Delia Anne Curtis. The principal reason for doing this is that it may help any family member who may want to extend the searching that has been done to date. It is hoped that someone will do this.

One of the very first settlers in the Town of Saranac was Nathaniel Lyon who came form Royalton, Vermont in 1803. He has been mentioned earlier as bringing his family and settling between what is now Saranac Village and Lyon Mountain. His daughter Fannie was the first white female child to be born in Saranac. She married Levi Curtis. Nathaniel Lyon and Levi Curtis were descendants of very early settlers in New England. Their lines can probably be traced but no effort has been made to date to do so. Levi and Fannie (Lyon) Curtis had five sons and a daughter that we know about and who were born between 1826 and 1841. The daughter, Maravada, was born in either 1835 or 1837, and she married a man by the name of Bull. Delia Anne was of the right age to be a daughter of this Curtis family, but they did not list her for the 1850 census nor the 1860 census. However, by the time of the latter census, the Delia Anne we are following was married. There is also the possibility that Delia Anne could have been the daughter of a male relative of Levi Curtis who came to live with them after the 1850 census was taken. Her parents could have died or gone further west leaving her with relatives until they could become settled.

From the History of Clinton and Franklin Counties, N.Y. 1880 by Hurd we learn this:

> Another house located on Varnum Brook, lately occupied by the Curtis family, was used for entertaining travelers.

Levi Curtis died in 1867 but Fannie lived until 1900. The house mentioned would be between Saranac Village and Blackbrook and the general area where George W. Seavey was living with the Downey family at the time of the 1850 census. Delia Anne could have been a daughter of this family.

In the Saranac Hollow Cemetery, there are side-by-side graves for Lenora (b. 1824, d. 1838) and Silvester (b.1822, d. 1844)

Curtis. If they were husband and wife, he could have married again after the death of his first wife, had a daughter Delia Anne, born about 1842, and then died himself in 1844. He could have been a nephew or cousin of Levi Curtis. On the other hand, these two could be children of Levi and Fannie (Lyon) Curtis. Lenora was only fourteen when she died, but girls did marry young in those days. Comparison of the 1840 and 1850 census listings seem to indicate that they were not children of Levi and Fannie.

A careful study of census records for 1800, 1810, 1820, 1830, and 1840, plus such other records as have been found, show that there were a number of Curtis families and single males that arrived in that period. There was a Zerah Curtis in the Town of Champlain as early as 1796, and he was a trustee of the first school that was organized there. A Captain Z. Curtis in 1833, was one of the first settlers in the Town of Malone in Franklin County, but no date is given, nor is there anything to tell us if this is the same Zerah Curtis who was in Champlain at an earlier date. A Crosby Curtis is listed as the first trustee of a school district that lay in Chazy and Beekmantown. This was in 1813. An Enoch E. Curtis served various Methodist Churches in the area at about the right time to be the father of Delia Anne. A Curtis Tavern was located in the 1830–1850 period a mile south of Silver Lake in the Town of Blackbrook. This was an area near where George W. Seavey was living and working in 1850. Others with the name Curtis also came in this period into Essex County to the south of Clinton and Franklin to the west. Some of the early arrivals came from Vermont and New Hampshire, others as far south as New York City and New Jersey. However, in the time available for searching on various visits to Clinton County, nothing was found to tie Delia Anne Curtis to any of these early settlers. As has been mentioned several times, not many records were made prior to 1850 in this part of the country, and some that were made have been lost or destroyed in fires.

Levi and Fannie (Lyon) Curtis have been tentatively ruled out as parents of Delia Anne. However, their youngest son Benjamin Newell Curtis, born 1841, died Feb. 23, 1938. He was living with a son in Ferrisburg, Vt. His obituary listed him as the sole surviving member of the Walter A. Benedict Post of the Grand Army of the Republic of Clinton County. He always returned to Clinton County for G.A.R. reunions. He was survived by two daughters, a Miss Florence Curtis of Troy, N.Y. and Mrs. Ernest R. Collins of Turnpike Road, Clinton County. He is buried in the West Plattsburgh Union Cemetery along with several of his children and his wife who was Clara Collins (1846–1921).

For a time, a petition filed with the Surrogate Court of Clinton County in 1899 seemed to hold some promise. A Mary A. Allen was filing to administer the estate of her unmarried sister Ellen M. Curtis. She listed two other sisters and three brothers, mostly desceased along with eight of their children and three widows. She had addresses for most of them. They were mostly in the New York City and northern New Jersey area, but some were in Denver,

Col. area. The seven siblings covered by the petition were of an age that they could have been brothers and sisters of Delia Anne. Unfortuntely, no way has been found to prove or disprove this. The situation is recorded here as it shows how families can move on and get scattered without leaving adequate records. There was a William Curtis, 39, with a wife Phoebe Sarah, 31, in the 1850 census for the Town of Saranac. They had four children: Sarah, 8; Eliza, 7; Walter, 5; and Mary, 2. Sarah and Mary are mentioned in the petition. However, there is no Delia Anne in the census, and she should have been there as she would have been between seven and nine years of age at the time of the census.

One other possibility will be mentioned. Miss Elaine Washburn, A.G., the genealogist in Salt Lake City, found in the 1850 census for the Town of Jay in Essex County which borders the Town of Blackbrook in Clinton County, a Thomas Curtis, age 46, with a wife, Philena, age 43. They had a son, Abner, twenty-two, a daughter, Amaryllis, age sixteen, a daughter, Ella, age 9, and a daughter, Jane, age seven. After searching the vast resources of the records of the Mormon Church complex, she has reported that this daughter, Ella is the most likely prospect that she could find for our Delia Anne Curtis. She points out that George W. Seavey was in the general area just prior to 1860. She also reminds me that people often gave nick-names for children rather than the actual name, and in some cases, that the census taker, knowing the children by nickname; took it on themselves to use it. There is one possible justification for her conclusion. Delia Anne Seavey named her first child, a daughter, Ellen A. Seavey. She may have used Ellen because she liked that better than Delia and the "A" was for the Anne of her own name. Thomas the father was from Vermont, Philena, the mother, was from New Hampshire and as Abner the oldest child, is listed as having been born in New York. They arrived sometime before 1828.

Before leaving Delia Anne, there are a few more items that need to be included in this chapter. In the application for a marriage license in 1900, Lawrence[9] A. Seavey (Collins) stated that his mother was born in the United States. This eliminates the possibility that she was born in Canada or abroad and came here with her parents. They were in this country when she was born.

As has been stated, a lot of Curtis genealogy and family history has been checked to find the line of Delia Anne. All through the various families the names of Delia, Adelia, and even Delia Anne appear now and then. This is true of the families that came across New England, those that went down into Maine and the ones that went down into the state of New York and then came north into central and northern New York. Delian and Dealian does not appear, but allowances have to be made for variations in spelling. George Washington Seavey or a parent of Delia Anne undoubtedly give the information for the 1860 census. However, George was literate and could write and presumably spell, but his name appears as Seva. He usually spelled it Sevey. The monument for Delia Anne

(Curtis) Seavey was undoubtedly ordered by her son, Lawrence Albert, about 1892. However, in making out the application for a license to marry, and it is in his own handwriting, he listed his mother as Delian Curtis. Maybe he was a little nervous that day. It is also interesting that he signed for his bride-to-be so she may have also been nervous. Her parents seem to have signed their own names, but the photocopy is so poor that is difficult to be sure.

The author of this account hopes that someone will be able to learn more about Delia Anne Curtis. It is his belief that some of the fine traits of her descendants come from her. Information about her and her parents might well prove to be a most valuable addition to the account of the families contained in this book.

CHAPTER XXXII

George Washington Seavey

George[8] Washington Seavey (he spelled his name Sevey) (Solomon[7], William[6], Solomon[5], Samuel[4], Samuel[3], Samuel[2], Thomas[1]) was born in Clinton County, New York in 1836. There is no official, church, or even family record of the date or place of his birth. The date of 1836 is derived from the age that he gave when making out documents over a period of years. As brought out in an earlier chapter, he was the third son of Solomon[7] and Sylvia (Washburn) Seavey and one of five children.

Our first identifiable record for him is the 1850 census of Clinton County, New York. At that time, he was living in the Town of Blackbrook with Lorenzo Downey who had married his mother after the death of his father. His age was given as thirteen. It is not known when Lorenzo Downey moved to Blackbrook. The census of 1840 shows that he had previously lived in the Town of Saranac and in the same neighborhood as Solomon[7] Seavey and the Washburns. We do not even know when Lorenzo Downey and Sylvia, the widow of Solomon[7] Seavey, were married.

The 1850 census lists Lorenzo Downey as a bloomer so he was working at one of the iron forges. There were several in the Town of Blackbrook at that time as well as in other towns in the area. A son of his, Thomas, who was eighteen years of age, is also listed as a bloomer. Albert, the oldest child of Solomon[7] and Sylvia (Washburn) Seavey, who was then twenty-two years of age, was identified as a sawyer. He evidently was working in a saw mill or in the forests cutting timber. Lucius, the second child of Solomon[7], age twenty, was listed as a teamster. He could have been working out in the woods hauling out timber, hauling charcoal to the forges, hauling iron billets to the lake or bringing in provisions. Sarah, the third child, age sixteen, was not listed as having any occupation. This was also the case for George Washington who was thirteen years of age.

A total of fourteen people are listed as living in the Downey home. Lorenzo, his wife Sylvia and three of their children accounted for five of the total number. Then there were the four Seavey children. In addition, there were four young men ranging in age from twenty-two to thirty and presumably unmarried. Two were bloomers and two were teamsters. The one who was thirty years of age listed himself as being from England while all of the others had been born in New York. The final member of the crowded household was a Mary Davancy, age fifteen. She could have been the youngest child of Solomon and Sylvia Seavey. The family name on the

original census record was difficult to read on the microfilm. It could have been Sevey. The age is within acceptable limits as she was under five years of age at the time of the 1840 census.

George Washington Seavey was born in Clinton County several years after his parents moved over from Vermont. They probably did not move to the Town of Saranac immediately on their arrival, but may have been there by the time that George was born. We have no information as to how long and where he went to school. There was a school in Saranac Hollow from a very early date, but no date for the first school has been found. He probably attended until the death of his father and later removal to Blackbrook where he attended whatever school was available. The first school in the town was established in 1835, and a second one was established in the community of Silver Lake in 1840. This was probably nearer where he lived. He might have even gone to school in Claybrook or Redford. We know that he could read and write as he signed his various petitions for pensions.

As has been reported in an earlier chapter, George W. Seavey was listed in the 1860 census as living in the Town of Saranac. Delian Seavey was listed and each is checked in the column headed "married within the year". This probably means that they were married in the year of 1860, but it could mean within a year of the time the census enumerator visited them. In this case, they could have been married anytime from early 1859 to late 1861.

The next record for George W. Seavey is his enlistment for service in the Civil War. Along with many young men in the Town of Saranac, he volunteered for service and was assigned to Company C, Infantry, of the 16th Regiment of New York as a private. He was mustered into service September 21, 1861 in Plattsburgh and his age was stated to be twenty-four.

The entry in the diary of Mrs. Andrew Hull of Saranac for September 30, 1861, has already been quoted in Chapter XIX. We know that he enlisted at the same time as his uncle, Orville Washburn and his cousin Wesley Hull. It is also probable that George W. Collins of Saranac traveled with them when they went to enlist. It is quite possible that they were friends, neighbors and even worked together. George W. Collins was about six years older and listed his occupation as a bloomer. Nothing has been found to show what George W. Seavey was doing when he enlisted. They each served two enlistments in the same unit and were friends and probably neighbors for a long time after the war. It was George W. Collins and his wife who gave Lawrence Albert Seavey a home after his mother died in 1868.

Others, who were related or were neighbors of the family, and volunteered and were inducted in September of 1861 were: Lorenzo Downey, probably a son of the Lorenzo Downey who married the mother of George W. Seavey; Simeon and Bernice Washburn, who were cousins of George W. Seavey. All were assigned to Company C of the 16th Regiment of volunteer infantry. Another was Luther R. Curtis. Orville Washburn and Wesley Hull have already been mentioned.

A total of 421 are listed in the *History of Clinton and Franklin Counties*, New York as having served from the town of Saranac alone. The total of population of the town was only 3,644 in 1860. Almost every young man, in the town must have volunteered whether married or single. And they did so promptly. The attack on Fort Sumter was April 15, 1861. Lincoln first asked for 75,000 men. In May, he called for another 42,000 and in July requested another 400,000. It must have been to the latter call that Saranac men responded. In this connection we must take into account the absence of any means for the prompt dissemination of news. Of course, there were no television nor radio in Saranac not even telegraph facilities much less telephones. Possibly a newspaper arrived by mail now and then and a few people could get down to Plattsburgh, but with a good riding horse and no wagon or buggy, this required a full day for the round trip.

Volunteers responded promptly to the calls of President Lincoln, but organizing fighting units and training them proved to be a greater problem. The Union Army had a problem bringing together trained officers. There was only a limited supply in 1861 and many of them went over to the Confederacy. Somewhere close to half of the West Point Military Academy graduates were from the states that became the Confederacy. And probably more than half of the men who gained experience in the Mexican War were from states that were a part of the Confederacy. Many of the men who were selected or appointed officers in the army that President Lincoln had to organize had absolutely no military training or even experience. He had men and equipment but tremendous problems of training and organization.

At this point, it may be well to break into the account with some background information and explanations. As all members of our family know, the author was born in Missouri in a section where most of the residents were from Virginia, either directly or with a stop of generation or so in Kentucky. All of his family were from Virginia with those of the family of his father coming directly to Missouri and his mother after a generation or more in Kentucky. The sympathies of the people of Callaway County, Missouri, their home during the war years, were with the Confederacy, but in general they did not participate in the struggle. One great uncle of mine served in the Confederate Army. On the other hand, Hamilton Rowan Gamble, a second cousin once removed, of my mother, as the governor of Missouri in the early war years, literally worked himself to death in an effort to keep his state from joining the Confederacy and making the Missouri National Guard a unit of the Confederate forces. Very little was included in my book, *The Allens and the Harrisons of the Kingdom of Callaway*, about the war.

And now a word about the name for the war. The most widely used today is "Civil War". However, the *History of Clinton and Franklin Counties, New York* which was published in 1880, frequently calls it "The Great Rebellion". The preferred terminology of those whose sympathies are with the Confederacy is "The War Between the States". Deferring to the

strong opinions of my wife, an effort will be made in this account to use the term "Civil War". However, if "War Between the States" appears from time-to-time, the indulgence of the reader is requested. I spent many hours with my grandmother Allen (Martha Frances (Hampton) Allen) in her later years and she lived to be eighty-four years of age. Her father was a wealthy man for his time, but he lost thousands of acres of land, many slaves and everything he had. She was in a private boarding school or academy during the war. A group of mounted marauders or "bush-whackers" came through the area, robbed all of the inhabitants of the then small town of Danville and burned the courthouse. The girls and the teaching staff spent the night hiding in the woods. To her last day, Yankee was always a hyphenated word, generally, "damned-Yankee" or "blue bellied-Yankee".

George Washington Seavey served two enlistments—one of a year and eight months and a second of eight months for a total service of two years and four months. This was just over half of the total period of the war which was four years and two months. No attempt will be made to follow the paticipation of his units. They were in much of the heaviest fighting from the beginning of the war to the end. So much has been written about the war and the various campaigns that this could be done, but a great amount of time would be required for the research. Even if obtained and included, it is not believed that this would contribute materially to the purpose of this account which is to follow the various family lines of Fannie C. Harrison.

After some training in Albany the unit with Saranac volunteers, with others, transferred to the Washington, D.C. area. The 16th Regiment along with other units had withdrawn to Camp Franklin on the Potomac where they remained until March of 1862. The Saranac volunteers were sent there to replace losses incurred in the first battle of Bull Run.

Company C of the 16th Regiment was a part of the expeditionary force under Gen. McClelland that left the general area of Washington by ships in early May of 1862 to go down the Potomac and south in Chesapeake Bay to the Peninsula just north of Richmond. When within a few miles of Richmond, the battles of Hanover Courthouse, Fair Oaks and Seven Pines were fought. At this point, they were only four miles from Richmond. Gen. McClelland then changed his supply base to the James River. On June 27th superior Confederate forces attacked and after a fiercely fought battle, McClelland retreated and then withdrew to the general area of Fortress Monroe. The 16th Regiment was in fierce fighting of the various Peninsular Campaign battles. They suffered heavy casualties in dead, wounded and missing. Wesley Hull and Orville Washburn from Saranac were among the wounded.

After being withdrawn from the Peninsula, Company C and the 16th Regiment were in a series of bloody engagements in Maryland and northern Virginia including Fredricksburg and Antietam. In

the latter battle, the total losses were the highest of any battle of the war and in history to this date.

On May 10, 1863, the 16th Regiment with the three-year term of enlistment of its men being completed, was mustered out of service. They arrived in Albany, N.Y. on May 14th. Only 350 men were mustered out. Over 587 had been killed, wounded or missing.

On May 14, 1864, George W. Seavey filed a claim for a pension as an invalid. He cited an accident on the 19th of August in 1862 in which he was thrown from the wagon that he was driving at night near Harrison Landing on the James River between Richmond and Jamestown. The front wheels went into a deep hole while going down hill and he was thrown from the wagon and landed on his left side. He stated that he had since been troubled with shortness of breath and at times would spit blood. One witness signing the petition was Lorenzo Downey with whom he had lived after the death of his father Solomon[7] Seavey. The petition was not granted.

In 1883, on September 14th, George W. Seavey filed a claim for a pension based on a gunshot wound on his left hip at the Battle of Gaines Mill on August 2, 1862. The government agencies concerned made an effort to verify his wound, but as he had not been admitted to a hospital and there was no record and by his own statement, the doctor who treated him was no longer living, his claim was finally denied.

After his disability claim of May 14, 1864 was refused, George W. Seavey on September 3, 1864, re-enlisted for a year. He was assigned to Company I of the 16th New York Calvary. As an account of the activities of this unit have not been found in the History of Clinton and Franklin Counties, New York, and no other record of them has been found, we do not know just what they did. He was probably in Company C and not Company I. The handwriting on some of the of documents obtained from the National Archives could be Company C instead of Company I. They were probably in the campaign of General Grant that led to the end of the war.

The only record found to date is a copy of a document dated September 24, 1887 from Adjutant General's Office of the War Department and addressed to the Commissioner of Pensions. It was probably prepared in connection with an application for a pension other than the ones previously mentioned and made in 1864 and 1883. It pertains to service during the second enlistment only. The substance of it is as follows:

> . . . On roll of Co. for Sept. & Oct. 1864 Present Nov. & Dec. 1864 present sick Jan. & Feb. and Mar. & April 1865 present. He was mustered out with Det. (detachment ?) June 13, 1865 at Washington, D.C.
>
> The name George W. Seavey was not borne Co. Morning Reports show him Dec. 27, 1864 "From D to S (Duty to Sick?)" Jan. 18, 1865, "From S to D", March 7, 1865. "From D to S" March 12, 1865, "From sick to Duty" name does not appear on Regtal Hospital Records.
>
> The records of this office furnish no further evidence of disability.

Still another attempt was made to obtain a pension in 1898. A copy of one

sheet has been obtained. It is not signed but may be in the handwriting of George W. Seavey.

The final application was made November 30, 1906 by Ellen (Lamkin) (Collins) Seavey. She was his third wife and his widow. This application was approved.

No record has been found for land ownership by George W. Seavey. He was living in the Town of Saranac, not necessarily the Village of Saranac, when he was married and when he first enlisted for war service in 1861. In 1864 when he first applied for pension, he listed himself as being in Saranac. In 1883 he gave Redford as an address. This was in the Town of Saranac but several miles from the village of Saranac. By 1898, he was in Chateaugay which is just over the line in Franklin County. He evidently lived there until he went to the New York State Soldier's and S ailor's Home in Bath, N.Y. December 23, 1905. He died there November 24, 1906 at the age of seventy.

As has been stated, George W. Seavey married Delia Anne Curtis in 1860 or within a year of the date of that year on which the data in their area was taken. In the census her given name was listed as Delian and his family name as Seva. In a pension claim dated January 4, 1898, and probably in his handwriting, he gives her name as Delia A. Curtis and says he married her in Clintonville, Clinton County, N.Y. Curiously, he does not list his second marriage, but skips to his third, and then wife, Ellen Lamkins without giving the name of her first husband. By this time, the monument was probably in Saranac Hollow Cemetary for his first wife and giving her name as Delia A. The final application for pension by his widow has with it an affadavit by James Slavin, age 67, of Brighton, Franklin County, N.Y. He says that he had known George W. Seavey since they were children. The following is from his statement.

> I was acquainted with George W. Seavey when we were children. I know that he was not married until he married Delia Ann (Curtis) Sevey. I remember when she died. I remember when he married Annie (Owens) Sevey—his second wife. I remember when she died. Also when he married Ellen (Collins) Sevey, his widow the above said claimant.

George W. and Delia Anne (Curtis) Seavey had the following children:

1. Ellen A. Sevey
   b. Ca. June 28, 1861
   d. July 25, 1862
   buried Saranac Hollow Cemetery.
2. George L. Sevey
   b. April 10, 1864
   m. — Alice — .
   d. June 2, 1892.
   buried Saranac Hollow Cemetery.
3. Lawrence Albert Sevey (used the name Collins of the family that raised him)
   b. Oct. 30, 1866
   m. Jane (Jennie) Irwin April 25, 1900
   d. Nov. 5, 1915
   buried Saranac Hollow Cemetery.

The first child Ellen A. Seavey was only a few months of age when her father went into the service for the first time. The mother, only nineteen years of age, was, therefore, left alone with a young daughter. The child died while her father was away. At that time Delia Anne was only twenty years of age. The natural question

is, how did she live? Did she have parents or other close family with whom she could stay? What did she do for money? Army privates were paid very little money and there were no provisions, as far as the author knows, whereby the government would send part of the pay directly to the family. Soldiers probably did not have bank accounts so that they could transfer money and currency probably could not be sent through the mail. There was no telegraph office in the Town of Saranac so money could not be telegraphed. Young wives left at home with children must have had a hard time.

The second child, George, was born in a period between the two enlistments of his father. No information has been found on this son. He was only twenty-eight years of age when he died. Someone undoubtedly took him into their home. He was just over four years of age when his mother died. His father married again and it was not long before he had two children by his second wife. Evidently, George L. Seavey was married because in 1892 on the 24th of June, the same month of his death, Lawrence Albert Sevey (using the name Collins), his younger brother, along with Alice Sevey purchased a cemetery lot in the Saranac Hollow Cemetery. This was probably his widow. The cost for the lot, incidentally, was $15.00. Later, before his own death in 1915, Lawrence Albert Sevey (Collins) deeded this lot to his wife.

Lawrence[9] Albert Seavey (Collins) will be the subject of a later chapter.

George[8] W. Seavey was probably working in one of the iron forges in the area at the time of the death of his first wife. Possibly he was with another forge as far away as Crown Point or Ticonderoga, New York. His second wife, Annie W. Owen was from a family that was living in that area or at least, were from it. Her father, C.F. Owen, was a bloomer as was her brother Datus Byron Owen.

The date and place of marriage for Annie W. Owen and George W. Seavey is not known as this is being written. They had two children that lived and possibly a third that died in 1881, but this child could have been one of the children of her sister Diana (?). Annie (Owen) Seavey died March 27, 1880 when her age was thirty-two years, eleven months and twenty-seven days. She was, therefore, born in March of 1847 and was about eleven years younger than her husband. They were probably married about 1870. Their known children were:

Charles Seavey, b. 1874; d. June 1914.
Katherine Seavey, b. June 5, 1886; d. Dec. 19, 1961.

Both children were quite young when their mother died. Charles Seavey, the son, at the time that the 1880 census was taken, which was probably several months after the death of his mother, was living at the house of her brother, Datus Byron Owen, in Ironville or Crown Point, N.Y. This uncle probably raised him as he later named his son Datus. Charles served in the Spainish American War in Cuba and contracted Malaria. At that time there was no complete cure for severe cases of malaria. His would come back from time-to-time and he suffered greatly from recurring

attacks. Many years later, when he was a guard at the N.Y. prison in Dannemora he took his own life with his revolver while suffering from an attack. This was June 19, 1914. Fannie and Adelia have no record of Datus. He was raised by his Aunt Katherine Seavey Adams and was killed in an accident later in the West. His mother was Amelia — . She died in 1915.

Katherine was raised by a sister of her mother, Katherine (Owen) Burnham, who later lived in Dannemora, N.Y. Fannie can remember her as she had a millinery shop and her father would take her there from time-to-time, when she was very young, to buy a hat. Katherine was named by her mother and for her sister Katherine. There was a third sister, Diana (Owen) McFarlin who lived in Saranac about this time.

Katherine (Seavey) Adams

Katherine Seavey married Henry W. Adams, a pharmacist, of Dannemora. They moved to Jacksonville, Florida late in life. She died there Dec. 19, 1961 and he also died in Jacksonville Dec. 16, 1965. They are buried in the Greenlawn Cemetary there.

Henry W. and Katherine (Seavey) Adams had one son, H. Burnham Adams, born 1915. He is a half first cousin of Fannie (Collins) Harrison. Burnham or Bernie started in radio in its very earliest days. He was widely known in northern New York for his program. Later, he was active in the very earliest days of television and as he says, "We had to work out our problems as we went along and learned from our own mistakes".

The quoted article appeared in the May 5, 1979 issue of *Consolidators*, a publication for and about city employees of Jacksonville, Florida.

A household word in local radio and television circles in their earliest days, Bernie Adams was master of ceremonies of several TV Shows including Charade Parade. He is shown here interviewing a Navy couple who appeared as contestants.

ADAMS RECALLS RADIO-TV EARLY DAYS; Broadcasting Pioneer Has No Regrets

By Gordon Robbie
Editor

A look at the past brings a burst of pride to Bernie Adams. It was a life of public acclaim and instant recognition.

When he walked into a room people knew who he was. His name was a household word.

Adams is now parts Supervisor with the Communications Division with the Department of Central Services and is nearing 23 years of City service.

But for about the same number of years he was a radio and television performer in New York State, Massachusetts, Georgia and Jacksonville.

"I was more fortunate than many who go through the same thing," he said. "When I gave up the public life of a performer it didn't bother me too much. I was on a veritable treadmill, had little time to myself or with my wife, so I wanted out. It (leaving) was strictly voluntary."

When Adams came to Jacksonville to accept a job as a radio announcer at station WPDQ, there were only three other stations here - WMBR, WJAX, and WJHP. This was in the early 1940s.

Adams came to a station struggling in the market. "Bob Feagin (station manager) was trying to get a bigger share of the listening audience, WJAX, WMBR and WJHP were older and more established outlets. My job was a challenge but I guess my work, and that of my fellow employees, were successful. We got a good share of that market,"he said.

Much of radio in those halocyon days was live. Only a relatively small portion contained "canned" or recorded music. Bernie was one of Jacksonville's first disc jockeys holding forth on the "Musical Clock" six days a week from 6 to 8 a.m. "We didn't call them disc jockeys in those days." Adams points out.

Adams worked his way to program director before leaving for duty with the Air Force in World War II. He did aerial reconnaisance work in Europe.

He returned to work at WPDQ after the war and went to work for WMBR. It was there that fate dealt him another fortunate stroke. The licensees of the radio station obtained a commercial television license, only the second one in Florida. That was the beginning of Channel 4, WMBR-TV (now WJXT). Adams was on the ground floor.

"We operated out of Quonset hut in those early days. And no one had TV experience so we "flew blind" much of the time. Many of our 'experiments' didn't work. But, obviously, many of them did."

One 'experiment' that worked was Adam's early show with local performer Virginia Atter Keys. It was a 9 to 9:45 a.m. variety show dubbed "Shopper's Guide" Adams said it was the forerunner of today's midday show.

Channel 4 at the time was the only television station for more than 100 miles. It carried programs of CBS, NBC and ABC. "We had the pick," Adams said.

One of Adams' duties was to travel to surrounding cities to promote television viewing. TV distributors and retail stores would sponsor a program with Bernie interviewing local people in such places as Palatka, St. Augustine, Gainesville and Lake City. "We hoped it would spur TV set sales. There was no sense in us telecasting if there wasn't anyone out there watching us."

Bernie subsequently left Channel 4 and went to Savannah to help put that city's first TV outlet, Channel 11, on the air.

After a stint there, he returned to his first love, radio, and to Jacksonville. He went to work for city-owned WJAX.

Eventually tiring of the life he was leading, Bernie accepted a job with the city Signal Bureau, putting his announcing ability to work as a dispatcher. "It was across the way from WJAX so I still felt at home." And for awhile he worked part-time at WKTX and at stereo 90 (WJCT).

He has fond memories of many famous per-

sonalities he met. One instance he enjoys telling about was when the late Drew Pearson was engaged with a verbal and written battle with the Ku Klux Klan. Georgia Klan members "invited" Pearson to do a radio show in Georgia.

But his show's format required an announcer. Pearson could not find one Georgia radio announcer to do his show. Familiar with Adams through previous connections, Pearson asked him to do the announcing.

"I didn't really know any better, so I accepted. The show was done live on the steps of the Georgia state capitol in Atlanta. A huge, mostly hostile crowd was there and police were all over the place," Adams said.

"As soon as I was through introducing Pearson, I ran behind one of those large white columns on the capitol building. I thought no one could see me - I thought someone might shoot - but in the paper the next day an enterprising photographer got a shot of me. I wasn't hiding quite enough."

Amatuer shows, a staple of early radio and TV, were favorites of Bernie.

Bernie capitalized on the Major Bowes craze of the 1930s. He went from town-to-town in New York and New England conducting amateur shows, "I had a friend who owned a radio station in Plattsburgh, N.Y. He gave me the chance to put the winner of each amateur show on the air. This was how I started in broadcasting," he said.

And that is how he met his wife, Beverly.

"We were both in show business. I was doing the amateur hour things and she was producing trade shows and such." They married soon after meeting and will celebrate their 42nd anniversary on October 1.

"I have not regretted coming to Jacksonville nor have I regretted leaving broadcasting. My time wasn't my own then. I knew there was more to life than working day and night with hardly a vacation." And adulation? "That's not where personal happiness can really be found."

Burnham Adams is now retired. He and his wife Beverly who is also retired, maintain a home in Jacksonville, Florida and another in Spruce Pine, North Carolina in the Blue Ridge Mountains. Several years ago Beverly and Burnham visited us for a few days. Although Fannie and Burnham had not seen each other for at least forty years, each was talking before he could get out of his car and they did not stop until he was back in his car and on his way to Dannemora, N.Y. They had so much in common in appearance, mannerisms, interests and many other things that it was positively uncanny. He is her only known close living Seavey relative except for her sister Adelia Collins.

H. Burnham Adams and his cousin Frannie C. Harrison about 1979.

After the proceeding paragraphs were written, but before the manuscript was ready for the printer, Burnham Adams died. The date of his death was March 29, 1987. There are no children.

Beverley and H. Burnham Adams 1986.

On December 25, 1881, George W. Seavey, married Mrs. Ellen (Lamkins) Collins, a widow. She had three children by her first marriage: James, Lonnie and Belle. They were married in the town of Saranac by the Rev. C.L. Hager. They had two children:

Victor Orville Seavey, born June 5, 1884.
Irene E. Seavey, born May 10, 1889.

So far no information has been obtained about those children and such descendants as they may have. Victor who sometimes went by the name of Orville did contract hauling in the Cateaugay, Franklin County area. Some people in the area to whom we talked were of the opinion that Irene Seavey or Belle Collins went to Florida many years ago and that the mother went with her or followed her there.

Ellen (Lamkins) (Collins) Seavey applied for a pension Nov. 30, 1906 based on the Civil War service of her husband. This application was approved.

George W. Seavey had followed the iron forges to the Chateaugay area as he worked there as a bloomer after he married for the third time. The forges in other parts of the area closed at earlier dates.

We do not know just how long George W. Seavey continued to work. However, on December 23, 1905, when he was sixty-eight years of age, he was admitted to the New York State Soldier's and Sailor's Home in Bath, Steuben County, N.Y. His disability was listed as "loss of vision" and acquired "since war". As he had worked as a bloomer for many years which required watching for hours at a time and breathing the fumes of the charcoal and iron it is no wonder that his vision had failed.

Once in the home, George did not last long. He died November 24, 1906 of acute heart failure. The Soldiers and Sailors Home say they have no record of his burial there so he must have been brought back to Franklin or Clinton County. However, no record of his burial in either of these counties has been found.

The records of the Soldiers and Sailors Home give us some information about this man. His height at sixty-eight was five feet and six inches, complexion was fair and his eyes were hazel. He is listed as being a Protestant and not able to read or write. The latter was undoubtedly due to the loss of his sight as several documents signed by him and one that was probably written by him has been found.

On one of the many trips to Northern New York seeking family information, my wife and I, with the help of her sister Adelia K. Collins, were fortunate to find an

older man who had known George W. Seavey. He was Ray Cooty of Brainardsville, New York. We spent several hours with him at his house on September 8th. He was living alone as his wife was dead. He said that his age was 93, but later said he was the same age as Victor Orville Seavey, son of George W. Seavey. As he was born in 1884 this would make him eighty-nine instead of ninety-three. He probably meant that he was about the same age. He was probably all of ninety-three years of age.

Mr. Cooty came from the Redford area and George W. Seavey was a close friend of his father. He said that he had dark hair and was about my height but "stockier". I was about then five foot seven. He also said he was not afraid of any man but not a trouble maker. He was an older man when he knew him.

There was very little he could tell us about Victor Orville and Irene, the children of George by his third wife. He did know her and her children. He was the one who told us that Belle Collins a daughter of Ellen (Lamkins) (Collins) Seavey by her first husband, went to Orlando, Florida about 1910 and later had her mother come down there. A son was a teamster with his own teams and vehicles and did contract hauling. Later I found a deed signed by Victor Orville Seavey and James Collins who also went by the name Seavey. They were half brothers, both sons of Ellen, one by George and the other by her first husband.

We found Ray Cooty a most interesting man and very sharp in spite of his age. Adelia visited him several times over the next few years. He lived to be almost a hundred years of age.

As is the case with so many family members, it is most unfortunate we were not able to find more information on George W. Seavey. He lived in an interesting period and experienced his share of hardships and opportunities of the last sixty-three years of the nineteenth century in New York. While he did not get to raise the children of his first two wives, he was fortunate to get them into families where they were well raised.

NOTES

1. This date of birth was taken from the cemetery records of the Greenlawn Cemetery of Jacksonville, Florida. It cannot be correct as Annie Owen Seavey, her mother died March 27, 1880, according to the inscription on her monument in Saranac Hollow Cemetery. George W. Seavey married a third wife December 25, 1881 and this comes from the record of Births for the Town of Saranac. The correct date of birth for Katherine Seavey probably is June 5, 1876 which is approximately two years after the date of birth of her brother Charles H. Seavey but it could have been earlier—before her brother was born.

CHAPTER XXXIII

George W. and Sophia (Sharrow) Collins

Although Fannie (Collins) Harrison and her sister Adelia Collins realize, as a result of the search for family information for this book, that their family really is Seavey and not Collins, they still think of themselves as being from a Collins family. They speak of George W. Collins and his wife, Sophia Sharrow Collins, who raised their father, as their grandfather and grandmother.

Two of the most treasured possessions of my wife go back to the Collins. One is a call bell that he had at the hotel. It is a large handheld bell of excellent tone and great volume. Among other uses, it called guests to their meals. The other is a very old reed organ. After it was brought to our Amityville home on Clocks Boulevard, it was refinished by an old time craftsman. Although well over a hundred years old it is a beautiful object and it still has the original reeds and bellows and a beautiful tone.

Because of the great affection and admiration that my wife and her sister have for George W. and Sophia (Sharrow) Collins a departure will be made from the plan of this work to date and from the plan of its companion volume, *The Allens and the Harrison of the Kingdom of Callaway*.

When first starting to search for information and before the actual situation was known to the writer, some information on George W. Collins and his wife was accumulated. My wife and her sister have also supplied some material from their own recollections and some old records have been preserved.

George W. Collins, when he enlisted for war service for the second time in September of 1864, gave his age as thirty-three, so he was born in 1831. He listed Plattsburg, N.Y. as his place of birth. According to the inscription on his monument in the Saranac Hollow Cemetery, he first married Ellen M. Howes. The date and place of this marriage is not known. She did not live long after their marriage as she died Feb. 1, 1854 when she was twenty-one years and eight months of age. Evidently, they were living in the town of Saranac as she is buried in the Saranac Hollow Cemetery.

The second wife of George W. Collins was Sohpia L. Sharrow who was born in 1834. No information about her has been recorded by the author, but there were both Sharrow and Howes families in the Plattsburgh—Town of Saranac area at the period of time being considered. The possibility that Sophia Sharrow may have been related in some way to the family of my wife must not be dismissed entirely. This will be discussed more fully later in this chapter.

George W. Collins first volunteered for

service in September of 1861, at the same time as George W. Seavey. They each listed themselves as bloomers and they were each assigned to Company C of the 16th N.Y. Infantry Regiment. If they did not know each other when they went into service, but they undoubtedly did, they must have soon became acquainted. Each was discharged May 23, 1863.

As with George W. Seavey, George W. Collins applied for a pension in 1864. He claimed disability from malaria contracted to the Chickahominy campaign in May of 1862. His application was not approved. And as with George W. Seavey, George W. Collins enlisted a second time when his application for a pension was denied. He was assigned to Company I, (it could have been Company C) 16th Regiment, New York Calvary and was a private and a teamster. The date of his second enlistment was September 5, 1864, and he was discharged at Lincoln Barracks in the District of Columbia May 26, 1865 after the end of the War. It is likely that George W. Seavey was also in Company I or Company C for his second enlistment, but the records are hard to read. The handwritten "I" could easily be mistaken for a "C".

A copy of the completed enlistment form of George W. Collins is reproduced because it is believed that it will be of interest to many. First, it gives us considerable personal information. He is listed as a "bloomer" so he, too, worked in one of the many iron forges in the area. He was thirty-three years of age at the time, so his birth year of 1831 is confirmed. George W. Collins signed with a mark so he did not write at that time, but anyone who did write at that time was the exception. He had blue eyes, brown hair, a dark complexion and was five feet and ten inches in height. The place of birth is listed as Plattsburgh, N.Y. George W. Church signed the enlistment form as the recruiting officer. While no attempt has been made to identify him, it is possible that he could be of the same Church family as Riley Church who later married Fannie Irwin, the younger sister of Jane (Jennie) Irwin, the mother of Fannie Collins Harrison.

The statements about physical condition, being sober, etc. are most interesting. The physical examination by the examining surgeon was probably not very thorough.

When starting to search for family information, not realizing that the family name should be Seavey, the first efforts were to learn about a Collins family. There were many records for this name and the name of George W. Collins appears on numerous land transactions. Before long it was learned that the search should be for Seavey, and not Collins information, so all efforts were switched over to Seavey and connecting lines.

In the beginning some notes were made on the property acquisitions of George W. Collins. On September 10, 1864, he acquired property from Shepard P. Bowen, Emily J. Bowen, Andrew Williams and Sarah A. Williams for $250.00. It was described as a part of Lot No. 7 of the Old Military Tract of Township No. 4 and contained a half acre. It was bounded on the west by land of John Hunter, on the south by John Lapman, on the east by

VOLUNTEER ENLISTMENT.

STATE OF New York TOWN OF Corrunbury

I, George W Collins, born in Plattsburgh, in the State of New York, aged 33 years, and by occupation a Bloomer, Do hereby acknowledge to have volunteered this 5th day of September, 1864, to serve as a **Soldier** in the **Army of the United States of America,** for the period of ~~THREE~~ ONE YEAR~~S~~ unless sooner discharged by proper authority: Do also agree to accept such bounty, pay, rations, and clothing, as are, or may be, established by law for volunteers. And I, George W Collins do solemnly swear, that I will bear true faith and allegiance to the ***United States of America,*** and that I will serve them honestly and faithfully against all their enemies or opposers whomsoever; and that I will observe and obey the orders of the President of the United States, and the orders of the officers appointed over me, according to the Rules and Articles of War.

Sworn and subscribed to, at Plattsburgh N.Y.
this 5th day of September, 1864 } George W^m^ X Collins
his mark
Before George Clendon Jr.
Capt & Pro Mar
16th D, N.Y.

I CERTIFY, ON HONOR, **That I have carefully examined the above-named Volunteer, agreeably to the General Regulations of the Army, and that, in my opinion, he is free from all bodily defects and mental infirmity, which would in any way disqualify him from performing the duties of a soldier.**

G. Platt Jr
EXAMINING SURGEON.

I CERTIFY, ON HONOR, That I have minutely inspected the Volunteer George W Collins previously to his enlistment, and that he was entirely sober when enlisted; that, to the best of my judgment and belief, he is of lawful age; and that, in accepting him as duly qualified to perform the duties of an able-bodied soldier, I have strictly observed the Regulations which govern the recruiting service. This soldier has Blue eyes, Brown hair, Dark complexion, is 5 feet 10 inches high

George Clendon Jr.
16th Dist N.Y.
Capt & Pro Mar ~~Volunteers~~,
RECRUITING OFFICER.

(A. G. O. No. 71 & 76.)

Mustered into the service of the United States, for ~~three years or during the war~~ one year from date of enlistment, in Company ___ of the 16th Regiment of N.Y. Cav Volunteers, on the 5th day of September, 1864, at Plattsburgh N.Y.
George Clendon Jr
Capt & Pro Mar
16th Dist N.Y.

Robert Weir and on the north by the center line of the highway and known as the Erial S. Cushman house and lot. This purchase was made after his first enlistment and was completed and before he left for his second one. At the time he had his second wife and one young son. His second son had already died. This is assumed to be the house which was the Collins home and hotel, and still later, home and hotel of Fannie's parents.

On September 16, 1867, two years after his return home from the War, George W. Collins purchased form Simeon and Melissa Washburn fifty acres out of Lot No. 6 of the Old Military Tract. He paid $450. It was bounded by the land of A. and C.A. Lamkins. While the relationship is not known, George Washington Seavey married as his third wife an Ellen Lamkins.

On November 3, 1869, four years after returning from the war, George W. Collins bought parts of lots No. 6 and 7 of the Old Military Tract in Township No. 4. He paid $350 and there was six and a half acres. The land was purchased from Charles S. Sharrow and it had been bought in trust for him by his father Lewis Sharrow in 1863. The relationship of Sophia L. Sharrow, wife of George W. Collins, to Charles Sharrow and Lewis Sharrow has not been determined.

A fourth purchase was made November 23, 1869. Fifteen acres was purchased from Simeon and Melissa Washburn for $100.00. This was a part of Lot No. 7 of the Old Military Tract and was described as going to the top of the hill. It was bounded by the land of Alonzo Lamkins, Richard Morgan, Moses Lapman and Beaver Meadows. Together with the fifty acres and possibly one of the other purchases this comprised the land back of the house that was known as the pasture.

A record was not found for the land where Lawrence Albert and Jennie Collins were living when the house burned. It is not known, therefore, whether this farm belonged to George W. Collins or to his adopted son, Lawrence Albert Collins. It is also quite possible that George W. Collins owned other property as the search of the records was never completed.

The fact that George W. Collins made land purchases between September 1864 and the end of 1869 might indicate that he inherited some money during this period. It is doubtful whether he could have saved enough to make these purchases. He was in the army for almost a year of the time.

As stated in his enlistment form, he was a bloomer so he undoubtedly worked at one of the forges in the area. He may have also done some farming. The exact date when he started to operate the home in Saranac Village as a hotel is not known, but it was probably after the various forges in the area started to close, but could have been earlier. There was undoubtedly considerable travel along the road through Saranac Village. It was the principal route from Plattsburgh southwest and served the various communities along the Saranac River where there were forges, the glass factory and related activities such as producers of charcoal, lumber, starch, etc.

The Bowen & Signor Forge and rolling mill in the Village of Saranac ceased op-

erations and closed in 1887. The Redford forge of the same company also closed that year and another at nearby Russia closed in 1887. The Trembloy mine of Bowen & Signor which was across the Saranac River from Redford closed in 1871. Undoubtedly operations at the various forges, mills, etc. slowed down prior to the final closing date. George W. Collins was a bloomer so he must have worked at one of the operations in Saranac Village or near it.

From some records that have survived, he seems to have started operating a hotel at his home in the Village of Saranac in 1884. There may have been a hotel there when he bought it or he may have just started operating the hotel in his home. An old ledger, actually a scrapbook, has survived. It is just over sixteen inches long and nine inches wide. It probably had originally about thirty-six to forty sheets of rough, un-ruled, manila paper in it. The first three and a half sheets or seven pages were ruled after the book was purchased into two columns each and with horizontal lines to serve as an index. Invoices, receipts and assorted papers were attached to each side of the remaining sheets with glue or paste. Where there were enough individual documents from one person or supplier, they were pasted over each other, but in a manner that each could be read. In some cases, one would be attached to another and folded accordian style. Several pages, when all attached documents are unfolded, measure nearly a yard in length.

The earliest date found in the book is 1884, and it apparently was used until about 1890. E.T. Delaney of Plattsburgh was one of the principal suppliers. His invoices show that he supplied Ales, Porter and Lager, also carbonated beverages. He also supplied cigars. "Birch" seems to have been the principal item purchased. Two or more half barrels would be shipped at a time by rail. The empty barrels would be returned the same way. Cigars were ordered regularly. One brand, "Old Abe," cost two cents each and the "Royal Garter" brand was three cents each. Birch was evidently a beer. No records have been found for the purchase of whiskey, brandy or hard liquor. Peanuts were a dollar a bushel. Hay was purchased to feed the horses of travelers so George W. Collins did no farming or at least not enough to take care of his requirements plus those of his guests.

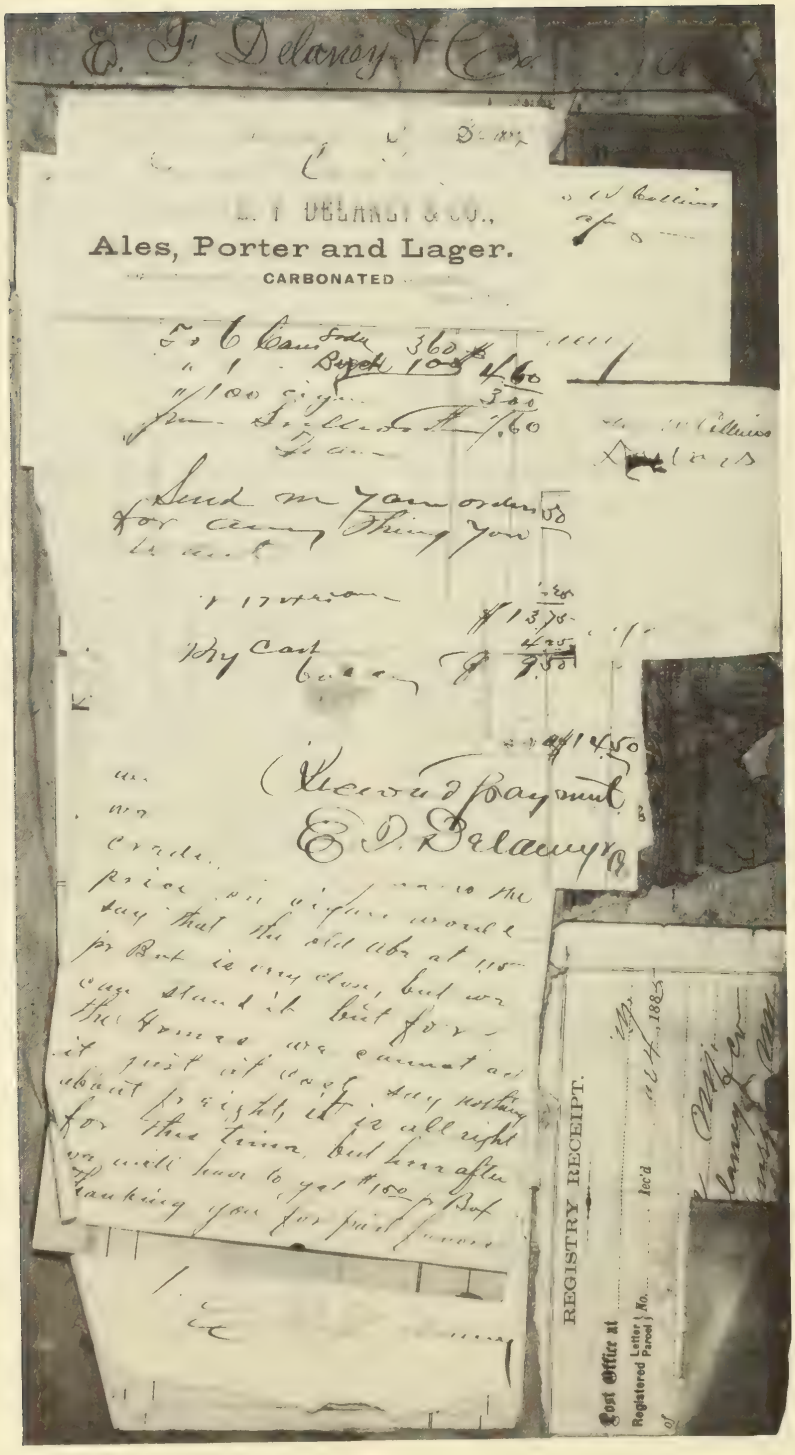
An old register that measures sixteen by ten inches has also survived. It covers the period from Tuesday, December 7, 1896 through May 17, 1920. There was undoubtedly an earlier register or registers. Each page had a printed head at the top as shown below.

Piso's Cure	For Consumption	The Best Cough Medicine Sold by Druggists Everywhere 25 cents per bottle.

COLLINS HOTEL
George W. Collins,
Proprietor.

The Proprietor will not be responsible for Jewelry and other valuable belonging to guests, unless deposited in the safe in the Office.	Guest without baggage are required to pay in advance. Accomadations first class. Rates reasonable.

Starting in 1912, "Geo. W." is scratched out and "L.A." for Lawrence Albert is written over it. The register has five col-



A page from the accounts payable ledger of George W. Collins.

umns—"Horse," "Time," "Room," "Name" and "Residence." Sometimes the number of horses for a guest would be recorded. The time was indicated as S or D or both S and D (probably Supper and Dinner) never in hours and AM or PM. Rooms were seldom recorded. There were only five, I believe.

Pages could be written about the entries in this old register and the old scrap book with invoices, receipts etc. However, only a few that are directly connected to George W. Collins will be mentioned in a later chapter.

There is some evidence that George W. Collins was a good buyer. On January 23, 1885, E.T. Delaney & Co. wrote him about some payments he had made to them. Apparently he took a discount on some cigars. They called his attention to their prices and said they would let him get by this time, but that he would have to pay the full price in the future. Payments were made by registered mail so evidently currency was sent through the mails. There are many receipts for registered mail. Many freight bills of the Chateaugay Railroad Company are pasted in the book. Supplies would come to Russia Station and would have to be hauled down by wagon or on a timber boat or dray much like a sled. George W. Collins received a summons from J.B. Vaughn, Justice of the Peace, to appear to answer a complaint from Nelson Littlejohn, a surveyor. He evidently agreed to pay the plaintiff for he obtained a receipt for $9.00. The Saranac School Tax paid by him for 1883 was $1.97. His adopted son, Lawrence Albert Seavey, evidently helped him because receipts given him for payment that he made for his adopted father are included in the book. George W. Collins was known locally as "King" Collins. Some invoices are made out to "King" Collins.

As has been mentioned, George W. Collins first married Ellen M. Howes. She died September 1, 1854 when only twenty-one years and eight months of age. On July 5, 1858 he married Sophia L. Sharrow in Saranac Village. There is a certificate of marriage that has survived. It is signed by George A. Gold but there is no indication whether he was a minister or a Justice of the Peace. Also there are no signatures of witnesses.

George W. and Sophia (Sharrow) Collins had two sons. Alfred E. was born in 1859 and lived until 1876. He was crippled and never healthy. One of the home-

Sophia Sharrow Collins (Mrs. George W.) with son, Alfred E. Collins.

made crutches that he used is still in our possession. The second son, George M. was born in 1861, but lived only two years.

As has been mentioned, when Delia Anne (Curtis) Seavey, wife of George Washington Seavey died, September 1, 1868, she left two young children, George L. who was just a few months over four years of age and Lawrence Albert who was not quite two years of age. Jennie Irwin Collins, wife of Lawrence Albert Collins (really Seavey by birth) told her daughters many times that George W. Collins and his wife Sophia L. Sharrow Collins went to the home of George Washington Seavey to visit after the death of Delia Anne. Little Lawrence Albert was on the floor. She picked him up and said, "This is my boy." The father permitted her to take him home. She and her husband raised him as their own son. Someone else probably took the older boy, George L. Seavey and raised him. George Washington Seavey married again, but it is not known whether he took care of his son George until then and then his new wife helped him. His second wife did not live long and when she died she left him two more children to raise.

As has been mentioned, there is some possibility that Sophia Sharrow Collins or her husband may have been related in some way to George W. Seavey or his wife, probably the latter, if at all, and by Sophia Sharrow Collins. The men undoubtedly knew each other as they were both bloomers and had served two enlistments in the war. It is also quite likely that Sophia Sharrow Collins being eight years older than Delia Anne Seavey, had helped the young wife while her husband was in the army and away from home. During this period, Delia Anne lost her first child and then had another one to raise. The census records show that they lived in the same general area and possibly were neighbors.

The crippled son of George and Sophia Collins died in 1876 when he was seventeen years of age. At that time, Lawrence Albert Seavey was ten years of age. They raised him as their own child. And he must have responded to their love and kindness as he was a healthy, active, popular boy who respected and obeyed them and helpful with the chores that went with a home in a small village in those days. He lived with them until he married, but did work several years at Hotel Ampersand at Ampersand in Franklin County. This was one of the large Adirondack area hotels of the late nineteenth and early twentieth century period where families would come during the summer season and remain for weeks, even the entire summer.

George W. and Sophia (Sharrow) Collins-still grandfather and grandmother Collins to Fannie and Adelia.

After his marriage in April of 1900, he and his new bride moved to a farm a few miles out of the village. Presumably George and Sophia (Sharrow) Collins continued to run the Collins Hotel and lived there. However, the register has entries in the handwriting of Lawrence A. Collins through June of 1902. After that there are no entries until November of 1911. It seems that George and Sophia Collins did not operate their home as a hotel during this period.

In February of 1908, Lawrence Albert was in the Village of Saranac and found George and Sophia Collins crippled with what they called rheumatism in those days and very much depressed. He convinced them that they should return to the farm and live with him for the rest of the winter. He took them home with him to the farm.

George W. Collins.

At that time, Lawrence Albert and Jennie (Irwin) Collins had three young children—Sophia, age six; Fannie, age four and George, a baby. One very cold morning when the house did not heat up fast enough for George W. Collins, who was then seventy-seven years of age, he opened, unknown to anyone else in the house, the damper on a stove to give it more draft. In a few minutes, the house was in flames. Lawrence Albert was at the barn. The occupants of the house escaped, but the house with its contents was completely destroyed. There will be more about this fire in a later chapter.

The two families moved back down to the home in the Village of Saranac. George W. Collins died May 6, 1908, a few months later, and his wife soon afterwards. They died from natural causes and not from the fire.

The Collins house about 1910.

George W. Collins, probably unknown to his informally adopted son, made a will in which he left everything to his wife, and upon her death, to Lawrence Albert whom he identified as his adopted son. There will be more about this in a later chapter.

Fannie C. Harrison who was not quite four years of age when George W. Collins died can just remember him, but is not sure that she can remember Sophia Sharrow Collins. She and her sister and brother have always considered the Collins as their grandparents. Now that she and Adelia know that their real grandparents were George Washington and Delia Ann (Curtis) Seavey, they still think of themselves as being Collinses and George W. and Sophia (Sharrow) Collins as their grandparents.

CHAPTER XXXIV

Jane Richey and Robert Irwin

With this chapter the account of the Irwin line with the connecting lines of Richey and Robinson will be started. Lawrence[9] Albert Seavey (Collins) married Jane[3] (Jennie) Irwin the daughter of James[2] and Margaret[2] (Robinson) Irwin and the granddaughter of Robert[1] and Jane[1] (Richey) Irwin. The latter two came from Ireland in the first quarter of the nineteenth century. They are the only members in the line of descent of our children who did not arrive in this country prior to the Revolutionary War. As has been seen, the Seavey family and connecting lines all arrived before 1650 and with one line coming in 1620. The Harrison, Allen and connecting lines were also over here before the Revolution, with some arriving as early as 1620 and even earlier with the very early Jamestown settlers.

With Robert[1] Irvin and Jane[1] Richey and her parents arriving in Clinton County early in the 1800's, we have the same problem of paucity of records that we had with the Seavey family and their connecting lines of this period. A few records, with bits of information picked up here and there, make possible the account that follows.

From census reports, a few notes that Fannie made of conversations with her mother, Jane (Irwin) Collins, and considerable very helpful material contributed by Naomi (Irwin) Sherburne, who started to collect family information long before we did, some progress was made. However, a 1975 letter from Phyllis Calderon of Fort Bayard, New Mexico and subsequent correspondence supplied key information that made it possible to begin to really put the story together. She had seen a request for information on Irwin, Richey and other families in Clinton County, N.Y. that I had inserted in the *Genealogical Helper*. Her letter contained the following:

> My great grandmother's name was Nancy Ritchie. She was born in Ireland and married Andrew Gordon who was also born in Ireland and they were perhaps married in Ireland. Nancy had two sisters: Belle who married _____ Tanner and Jane who married _____ Irwin. This could be the Robert Irwin that you inquire about.

The Jane Ritchie that she mentions was indeed the wife of Robert Irwin. With this some of the bits of information already collected started to fit together and the way was opened to sources of additional material that filled out the picture.

One of the first steps taken to put the puzzle together was to check an early land purchase by Robert Irwin that had been brought to my attention earlier by Naomi (Irwin) Sherburne. I found that on May

Site of the old Robert Irwin log home and farm buildings today.

27, 1826, Robert Irwin, acting jointly with Andrew Gordon, purchased 158½ acres of land for $624.00. It was in a section known locally as the "Patent" and was purchased from Elkanah Watson who in turn had secured it from the old and very large, Livingston grant. It was the area known as Lot No. 33. This document tells us that Robert Irwin was in Clinton County in 1826, that he bought in partnership with Andrew Gordon and that he had some part of the $624.00 that was paid for the land. Incidentally, this was quite a sum of money for that time even if it was only about $4.00 an acre.

At the time of the purchase, Robert Irwin was only twenty-one years of age and he had been in New York for only four years. This information was obtained from his application for U.S. citizenship. His application was made June 30, 1840. He was then thirty-five years of age which means he was born in 1805. Upon arrival here in 1822, Robert Irwin was only seventeen years of age and, therefore, a minor. He also stated that he had come from the Parish of Duncliff in County Sligo, Ireland.

Andrew Gordon was about the same age as he was born in 1800, but his date of arrival is not known as he never filed for citizenship. In fact, he was killed in 1836 when a load of logs fell on him. We can only theorize as to how and when Robert Irwin and Andrew Gordon became acquainted. We do not even know how either got to this country. They might have come direct from Ireland together or separately. On the other hand, they might have come through Canada without a stop there, or with a stop of as much as several years in Canada. Many of the early arrivals in northern New York did live in Canada for short periods before moving on into this country. Andrew Gordon was from County Monaghan as was his wife Nancy Richey.

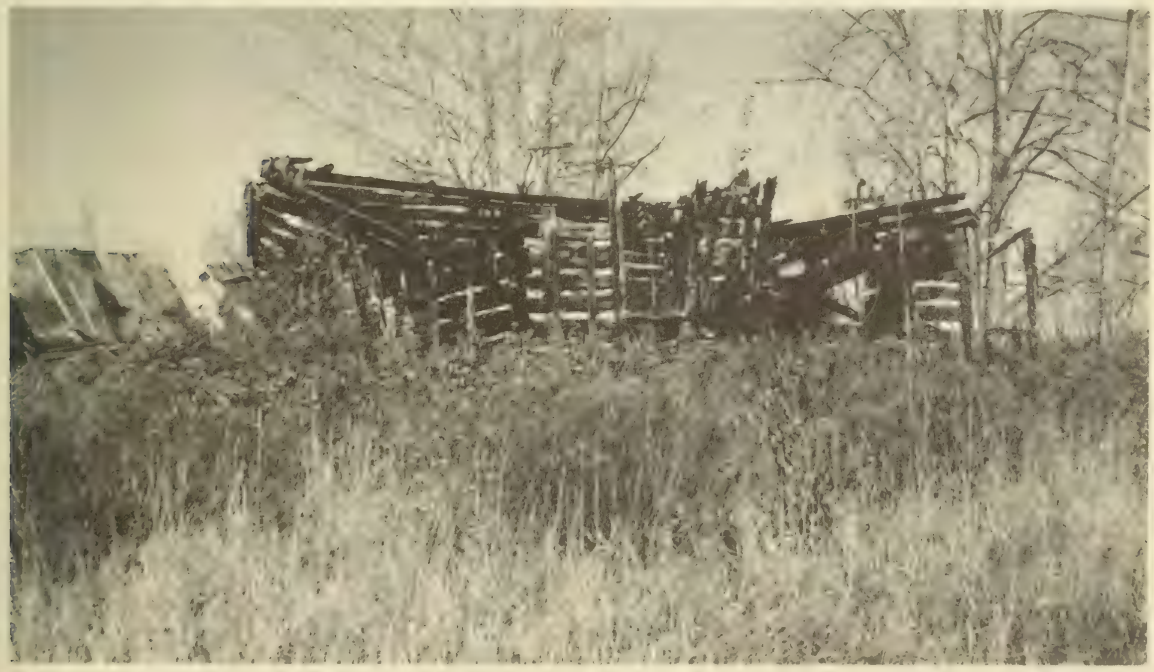
Taking into account all available information, the arrival of Robert Irvin, Andrew Gordon and his wife with her sisters, may have been something like the following. Robert Irwin did not know them in Ireland as County Sligo is on the west of Ireland and County Monaghan is almost all of the way to the east coast. They probably did not meet enroute to this country. Andrew Gordon, his wife Ann and her sisters Isabelle and Jane came over about 1818. This is based on information handed down to Jane Irwin Collins that her grandmother, Jane Richey, was only ten years of age when she came over here. As she was born in 1808, she came here in 1818. Robert Irwin, a seventeen year old boy, arrived four years later and worked for or at least became acquainted with Andrew

Gordon and the Richey girls. As he had several hundred dollars to buy land with Gordon in 1826, it was probably money that he had inherited and brought to this country. He could have hardly accumulated that much money in the four years that he had been here after paying for his transportation from Ireland. The association with Gordon and the Richey girls was probably very close. He may have even lived with the Gordon family.

While the date of marriage for Jane Richey and Robert Irwin is not known, their first child, Elizabeth was born in 1827, so they were probably married in 1825 or 1826, about the time that he purchased the land with Andrew Gordon.

While no record has been found of the activities of Robert Irwin, we can safely assume that he engaged in farming and raised some livestock that he could sell. We do know that he sold firewood and saw timber cut on his place. He undoubtedly worked hard as did his sons. There were seven of them, but at least one died while still in his teens. The original land purchase was probably split in 1836 when Andrew Gordon was killed. As time went on Robert Irwin acquired additional land and in 1866, may have purchased some of the Andrew Gordon share of the property from some of his heirs.

The children of Robert and Jane (Richey) Irwin with the little information found on them, but not in exact order of birth, as dates of birth are not available for several, follows:



Ruins of the Robert Irwin log home. It had several rooms and a two room cellar. One was much deeper than the other and was probably used to store potatoes during the winer for sale in the spring when they would bring a better price.

A meadow on the north side of the site of the Robert Irwin home. It was probably used for potatoes in the past.

1. Elizabeth, b. 1827; m. James Walker; d. 1893

2. James, b. Jan. 3, 1832; d. Apr. 4, 1909. James Irwin will be the subject of Chapter XXXVI.

3. Sarah (Sally), b. 1833; m. Waterman Ormsby.

4. Andrew, b. 1842; m. Isabel Tanner. Two children: a daughter, Mamie and a son, Robbie. Since Belle Richie a sister of Jane Richey married a Tanner, Isabel could have been a first cousin of Andrew Irwin. d. Nov. 18, 1909.

5. Robert, Jr., b. 1847; m. Margaret Boyd.

6. Richard, b. 1852 (date of 1854 also found); m. Rose Banker; d. 1928.

7. Samuel, b. — ; m. Agnes Ball. d. April 12, 1878.

8. William, b. — ; m. Margaret (Dora?) Denton,[1] William moved to Illinois in 1892 or early 1893. At that time he had a wife, a son and three daughters. He died in 1894. There will be more about him and his descendants later in the chapter.

9. Ann, m. William Eells. No other information available.

10. Jane, b. 1838; d. 1890. Buried Peru. Never married. Lived with her sister Ann Irwin Eells late in her life.

11. Mary, b. 1843. Died Feb. 26, 1844 at the age of ten months.

12. Robert, died at the age of nineteen years and six months. Date of death covered by a patch on the monument. Buried near his mother. After his death, another son was given the name of Robert for the father. This was common in the past.

Jane Richey Irwin died March 30, 1873, according to the monument for her in the Peru Cemetery. She was sixty-five years of age. On the monument there is this statement "Native of the Parish of Kelevin, County Monaghan". She must have been proud that she came from Ireland or her husband and children would not have had this information engraved on the monument.

Robert Irwin died April 28, 1876. He is supposed to be buried in the Peru Cemetery, but no monument has been found for him. He was seventy-one years of age.

Robert Irwin left a will. It was made May 20, 1873 or just a little over a month after the death of his wife, Jane. In a strange and new country he prospered in the fifty-one years between the date of his arrival at the age of seventeen and the time that he made his will. There are some interesting items in the will. He remembered his ten living children and two grandchildren. We know that two children were no longer living. In a rather unusual provision he gave Robert, the son of Andrew, $30.00 because he had his name of Robert. He likewise gave his granddaughter Jane, daughter of his son James, and the mother of Fannie C. Harrison, $30.00 because she was named for her grandmother and his wife Jane. For some reason that we do not know, he revoked this gift by a codicil Sept. 12, 1874. In the same codicil he partially revoked a gift to his son.

The orginal gift to him was a farm of 55 acres, $200.00, six sheep and two cows. Only the land remained after the codicil. He had probably helped Samuel in some other way so the money and livestock were taken from the will.

Daughters Jane and Ann were give $2000 and all of the household furniture to be divided between them. Jane never married and she lived with Ann after the death of her parents.

Richard received only a horse. His father had probably helped him at an earlier date. The residue of the estate, real and personal, was left to Richard and William to be divided between them.

The inventory of the estate of Robert Irwin is of sufficient interest to be included. It consisted of:

	Household furniture and goods	$147.56
1	Large cook stove and pipe	25.00
1	Boiler, tea kettle, spider, kettle	3.00
6	Kitchen chairs (quite old)	1.50
	Dishes, plates, knives and forks	12.00
I	Sofa	10.00
	Carpets	10.00
	Beds and bedding	50.00
	Stock, feed, farm equipment	708.00
	Note due April 25, 1876	160.00
	Cash on hand	55.00
	Total	$1082.56

Land is not included. There were several tracts.

The descendants of Robert and Jane (Richey) Irwin have every reason to be proud of their first generation ancestors in this country. They came to America for a better life. But they did not expect anyone to hand it to them. They went to work to make the better life that they came here to have. In addition, they contributed to the development of the area in which they lived and raised ten children who are a credit to them and to this country. The author would like very much to try to learn more about their parents and families in Ireland and Scotland because they did come from Scotland at an earlier date, probably about 1600.

Before closing this chapter, something should be included on William Irwin and his descendants. They really should have a chapter or even several chapters.

It is the belief of the writer, that William married Margaret Denton[1] about 1884, but the source of the information is not known. He left in 1892 for Illinois. At the time, he had three young children. The oldest was Sarah E., who, according to her monument inscription was born in 1885 so she was seven years of age when her father arrived in Illinois. The son, William, was five yers of age when they moved. William the father died in 1894 after having been in Illinois only about two years. This means that his widow was left in a new state, far from her home and family, where they had resided for only two years, with four children as a third girl was born after arrival in Illinois. The oldest girl was only nine years of age, the only boy was seven and the youngest child was just about one year of age. This woman raised the family, and the children, grandchildren and even first and second great grandchildren have prospered and are the kind of people that have made this country what it is today. The widow of William married again and had several children. Information on this marriage obtained to date is not sufficient to try to include it.

The author obtained an address for Hazel Irwin, the widow of the son of William, in 1974, and corresponded with her until her death recently. At one time he visited her at her home in Chatsworth, Ill. The Irwins of Illinois are now a large closely knit and prosperous family. They have, and have had for years, a one-day family reunion. Attendance currently runs in the thirty to forty range. The following brief information on the family will be presented:

Will Irwin, b. N.Y. June 7, 1887; m. Hazel Westervelt March 29, 1911 at Fairbury, Ill. d. 1894. Hazel Irwin died in 1981.

Children:

Milford Charles Irwin, b. Apr. 27, 1912; m. Beryl Thomas Dec. 25, 1937; 6 children. Lives Chatsworth, Ill.

Donald Leland Irwin, b. July 13, 1914; m. Claire Willis (she died 1960); m. 2nd Florence Booker 1967; no children. Live at Joliet, Ill.

Wm. Dale Irwin, b. Dec. 15, 1916; m. Darlene Patton, Aug. 15, 1956. Live at Chatsworth, Ill.

Dora Elizabeth Irwin, b. Dec. 15, 1916 (a twin to Wm. Dale); m. Jay Booker Mar. 3, 1938; two daughters. Live at Sheridan, Ind.

Other children of William Irwin son of Robert and Jane Richey Irwin:

Sarah Irwin, b. July 1885; m. Charles Downs, Jan. 1909; have one living son in Chenoa, Ill.

Elizabeth Irwin, b. May 24, 1890; m. Dell Tarr; one daughter in Florida.

Ethel Irwin, b. Jan 15, 1893; m. Louis Hagner; two children; she lives at Grand Junction, Col.

There is one more item to be included in this chapter even though it has very little to do with the Irwins. In Clinton County in the Peru area there are Allen and Boyd families. Phyllis Calderon is descended from Nancy (Richey) Gordon the sister of Jane Richey. In her line, there were marriages with Boyds and Allens who were from Ireland. When she learned that I have Allen ancestors from Ireland who also married Boyds, she supplied some information on the Boyds and Allens of her family. One family, Thomas and Jane (Boyd) Allen, both from Ireland had thirteen children. The 11th and 12th were twin girls, Emma Etta and Eveline born Sept. 9, 1873. My mother had a younger sister Etta Martha who was born in 1874. Etta is an unusual name and in all of my searching in old records I have seen it only one other time and that was in an Allen family in Pennsylvania. It must be an old Scot name that the Allens used from generation to generation. If the Allen family of my mother and these other two Allen families could be followed in Ireland and Scotland, we would probably find that we would not have to go back many generations before they joined.

NOTES

1. The Illinois branch of the Irwin family say the wife of William Irwin (1853–1894) was Dora Denton. They should know.

CHAPTER XXXV

Robinson and Rooney

James[2] Irwin, the oldest son of Robert[1] and Jane[1] (Richey) Irwin married Elizabeth[2] (Eliza) Robinson April 23, 1864 in Keeseville, Essex County, N. Y. Before going ahead with James and Eliza, the story on Eliza and her parents will be presented to the extent that it has been possible to put it together. It is a most interesting one. If more information could be found and worked into the account, the author is sure that the story would be even more interesting—the sort of situation that could be made into a fascinating historical novel.

The unlikely course of starting with a missionary priest of the Roman Catholic Church will be followed to begin this chapter. The information that follows comes from many sources.[1] Except for a few minor details they are in agreement. However, other than the two newspaper accounts they are from books about the Catholic Church so they are devoted to church connected activities with very little about the family of Father Rooney.

The account by Sister Mary Christine Taylor[1-a] and the Plattsburgh Republican article[1-d] reporting the impending departure of Father Rooney from Plattsburgh identify him as Father James Rooney. Two other accounts give his name as John Rooney and two others as Father Rooney with no given name. Information that will be introduced later in the chapter definitely establishes "James" as the given name.

As has been mentioned in various places in this account, there were very few settlers in the northeastern corner of the state of New York, the present counties of Clinton, Franklin and Essex, prior to the close of the War of 1812–14. However, once the war was over, the settlers started to come into the area in great numbers. Some came across Vermont and New Hampshire. They were principally from the Puritan and Pilgrim settlements of Massachusetts. A few were Church of England followers. Settlers also came up from Connecticut, lower New York State and New Jersey. Many, though, came in from Canada. Some of the latter were French Canadians who were Catholics but many were also Scotch-Irish Protestants and still others were Irish Catholics. The ranking hierarchy of the Catholic Church for New York State and in Montreal, Canada watched all of this and decided to do something about it.

When Bishop John Dubois took over the Diocese of New York October 29, 1826, he realized the necessity of doing some-

Margaret (Rooney) Robinson. There is no date for this picture but it was made in St. Albans, Vermont.

Father James Rooney.

thing about the tremendous potential of the church in the north-eastern part of the state. His first move was to journey up into the general area of Ogdensburg. While there he was successful in getting Canadian, Irish and Indian Catholic groups to work together. Next he went to Montreal where in 1827 he ordained the Reverend Michael Power to work in New York. There is also a record that in 1828 Bishop Lartigue of Montreal appointed Father Victor Dugas to care for the souls in the Champlain Valley. A Father Pierre-Marie Mignault of Chambly was laboring also in Clinton County as a letter of July 22, 1829 has survived telling of taking up residence in Plattsburgh. Other accounts tell of various priests, some young and some old, who worked in the area in the 1820–1830 period. They roamed over the region saying mass in cabins and schools. Mention is also made of a few crude chapels but there were no churches in the area.

Father Rooney seems to have been in Canada at this time and was an ordained priest. He must have been willing to go down into New York. He is mentioned[2] as the second priest in Keeseville, Essex County, New York about 1825, in a church started earlier by a Father Rogers. In 1838[2], he was in Redford, Clinton County, New York as either a full or part time priest. Probably he was dividing his time among several different areas. In Redford he brought together a few Catholics who first had mass in the cabin homes. Later, as

the number increased they were permitted to use a primitive school cabin. When the use of this was denied, Father Rooney worked with them to build a small chapel of their own.

In 1839, Father Rooney was brought to Plattsburgh to take charge after the death of Father George Drummond who had come from Syracuse, New York three years earlier. He had incorporated a church and was raising money for a new church building when he died. The first church in Plattsburgh according to tradition was started by Father McGilligan at the "Old Red Store" on Cumberland Avenue. In the twelve years prior to the arrival of Father Rooney the struggling young church had seven pastors. In Father Rooney they obtained a man of middle age with just the combination of capabilities that they needed and he came into a situation where he had a sleeping giant that he could bring to full potential.

The story of Father Rooney and his achievements is so well told in *A History of the Diocese of Ogdensburg* that it will be quoted in full.[1-a]

> His successor was Father Rooney, whose long adminstration of fifteen years has left his memory fresh and luxuriant with the people of Plattsburgh. He was a medium-sized, rosy, well-knit and choleric Irishman, of good business abilities, and quite able to hold his own against the tricks of the children of Mammon. He was the first priest whose aggressive nature, united with his long stay in Plattsburgh, enabled the congregation to pass from the state of obscure struggling to a firm and respectable place before the world. He was pastor of all the territory north of the mountains, west of the lake and east of Chateaugay, and his whole time was spent in infusing into the scattered parishes a show of the vigorous life which he brought with him. The church begun by Father Drummond was pushed to completion with a vigor that did not always suit the purses of the parishioners. It was a stone edifice, stone is cheap and plentiful in Plattsburgh, perfectly square and able to hold four or five hundred persons. It was dedicated solemnly on Sunday the 25th of September 1842, by Archbishop Hughes, who confirmed many hundred children on the same day, and gave one of his magnificent discourses to a crowded congregation of admiring Catholics and curious Protestants. He was entertained at Father Rooney's residence. It was his first and last visit to the northern limits of his vast diocese. His trip along Lake Champlain convinced him of the need of a new see in New York State, and a few years after his return to New York, Albany was made the see of a new diocese with Bishop M'Closkey, the present cardinal, at its head. The edifice which was thus dedicated served the congregation for over thirty years, and was only given up when the new church was finished. Father Rooney employed the next twelve years in removing the debt which he had contracted to complete the church, and in consolidating his parishes. Bishop M'Closkey made Keeseville an independent parish in 1848 with Au Sable and Black Brook for its dependencies, and some months previous also removed from his charge the feeble missions along the lake which he had looked after on occasions. The French Catholics also withdrew from the church in 1853 and under the charge of the Oblate Fathers formed an independent organization. His territory, however, was still extensive, and the constantly increasing immigration soon made up in part for what the parish had lost. A parish residence was bought, the cemetery and the church improved. Bishop M'Closkey visited the place in 1850. He removed Father Rooney to Albany in 1854. The good priest was then well advanced in years, and did little ministerial work from that time till his death. He left his entire property to the church with a special bequest for Plattsburgh, where his memory is held to this hour in benediction. The work which he accomplished was decidedly beneficial to the

> advancement of the faith in the North. It was, as much as such work can be, largely personal. The priest was popular not only with his people but with his Protestant neighbors, who could appreciate his business skill and natural shrewdness, his courtesy, his learning and his devotion to duty, if not his religious belief.
>
> The baptismal records for the years from 1839 to 1847 show 1013 births as the Catholic quota for all the parishes attached to Plattsburgh. The times were good, and the settlers making money so that the birth-rate stood high, and as capital and immigrants flowed into the mining region together, Plattsburgh began to assume an importance which no one had ever dreamed of.

The article in the April 21, 1855 issue of *The Plattsburgh Republican*[1-d] is most complimentary. As most of it duplicates information already furnished only a few parts will be quoted. "A few years since Father Rooney purchased the farm on Cumberland Avenue which he has highly cultivated and adorned. This avenue has long been a favorite resort of our citizens but they will soon lose one of its chief attractions—the presence of the venerable man who so often and kindly greeted them at the gate and escorted them through the grounds." Later in the article there is this: "We hear that Father Rooney will leave for Albany next week, and that his beautiful estate has been purchased by Messers. Nichols and Lynde of this village and that it is to be thoroughly refitted and occupied by them."

The accounts mention that Father Rooney entertained Archbishop Hughes of New York City at his home when he came to dedicate the new church upon its completion. Mention is also made of a small brick summer house in the garden of the estate of Father Rooney. The estate had fifty acres and is identified as being in the vicinity of the present Elks Home.

The Essex County Republican Annual for 1891[1-b] contains this interesting information:

> Father Rooney was a native of Ireland, and as old age crept on, he desired to return to the home of his youth. But on visiting Ireland in 1854 he found that there were few of the old ties to bind him to his native land. He returned to America and remained with the Bishop of Albany till his death.

Father Rooney filed for citizenship February 3, 1842. At that time he gave his age as forty-eight so he was born in 1794. He gave County Kildare, Ireland as his place of birth. As the first record found for him in this country is about 1825, he was around thirty-one years of age when he arrived in New York. This would be about the right age for a young priest who had been recently ordained. In the 1850 census for Plattsburgh he is listed as being fifty-six years of age and having property valued, for census purposes, at $3000.00.

Census, cemetery and property records show several Rooney families that arrived at about the same time as Father Rooney. A Thomas Rooney, born in 1804 and a wife Catherine, born in 1809 and both from Ireland, came into northern Vermont about 1833 and ten years later were in Beekmantown which adjoins Plattsburgh. There was also a William Rooney, born in 1799 who had a wife, Bridget, also from Ireland. They seem to have arrived about 1830. There were others in the area but no tie has been found to Father Rooney nor to Margaret (Rooney) Robinson

the great grandmother of Fannie C. Harrison.

Robinson

In 1839 or 1840 Hugh and Margaret (Rooney) Robinson came into northern New York from Canada. According to family tradition passed down from the mother of Fannie C. Harrison, Margaret Robinson was Margaret Rooney, a younger sister of Father Rooney. This could be as he was born in 1794 and Margaret (Rooney) Robinson was born in 1810 according to the 1855 census of Essex County, New York. The 1850 census yields a birth date of 1807 but the author considers the 1810 date to be more apt to be correct as we know that she gave the information to the census taker whereas her husband might have given the data for the earlier census.

Fannie's mother should have known the family of Margaret (Rooney) Robinson as she was her grandmother and Elizabeth Robinson, the oldest daughter of Margaret Robinson, was her mother. While the date of death of Margaret (Rooney) Robinson is not known, it is marginally possible that her granddaughter, Jane (Irwin) Collins, remembered conversations with her. Jane was born in 1870 and at ten years of age, which would be in 1880, her grandmother would have been only seventy years of age. In addition, Eliza (Elizabeth), the mother of Jane Irwin lived until 1907, and Jane did not leave home until she was thirty years of age or in 1900. They had many years together. Also, Eliza undoubtedly had many years with her mother, Margaret. There is every reason to believe that the tradition of the relationship of Margaret (Rooney) Robinson and Father James Rooney, can be accepted.

The 1850 census for the Town of Ausable in Clinton County, New York has the following:

Hugh Robinson, 49 (could be 47 as writing is difficult to read), b. Ireland
Margaret, 43, b. Ireland
Hugh, 12 (could be 14), b. Canada
Elizabeth, 8, b. New York
George, 6, b. New York
Fanny, 4, b. New York
Harvey, 1, b. New York

Essex County, New York took an interim census in 1855. We had the good fortune to have the opportunity to work with the original, hand written volume of the census in Elizabethtown, N.Y. The following is from this census:

Margaret Robinson, 45, widow, b. Ireland
Three years in Essex County. Frame house, $300
Hugh, 18, b. Canada
Eliza, 13, b. Clinton County, N.Y.
George, 10, b. Clinton County, N.Y.
Fanny, 8, b. Clinton County, N.Y.
Harvey, 6, b. Clinton County, N.Y.
Stewart, 3, b. Clinton County, N.Y.

As stated earlier, the writer accepts the ages given in the 1855 census. They had to come from the mother and a mother is more likely to know the exact ages of her children than the father. There is the possibility that the father gave the ages for the 1850 census as he was living at that time.

From the census data we know that Hugh and Margaret Robinson arrived in Clinton County, New York between 1837 when

Hugh was born and 1842 when Eliza was born. We also know that they came to Clinton County from Canada.

At this point some assumptions and speculation are necessary. Father James Rooney, by his own statement when applying for citizenship, said that he was from County Kildare in Ireland. It is south and west of Dublin and well out of the area where most of the Scots (Scotch-Irish) were concentrated. It is the belief of the author that the parents of Father Rooney, Margaret and possibly other family members arrived in Canada in the 1820–1830 period when there was heavy migration from Ireland to Canada. If the parents were not in Canada it is possible that Rooney brothers and sisters came to Canada after the death of their parents and were there in the period just mentioned. Father Rooney left in the 1825–1830 period for New York. His training for the ministry was probably obtained in Ireland although some or all of it might have been obtained in Canada. Thomas Rooney, who was born in Ireland in 1804 did not get down into Vermont until some time between 1832 and 1837. There were undoubtedly other family members in Canada at about this time.

Hugh Robinson was unquestionably of Scot descent, a Protestant and came to Canada in the 1820-1830 period. This is about the time that Robert Irwin, the Gordons, the Richeys and other Protestants from the north of Ireland came over there. Hugh Robinson and Margaret Robinson probably met in Canada in the 1820–1830 period. They must have married about 1835 or 1836. After Hugh, their first child was born in 1837, they came down to Clinton County. Taking into consideration the crusading, religous zeal of Father Rooney there must have been considerable furor in the family when his young sister married a Protestant and one who refused to become a Catholic.

The first record of the Robinsons comes from the 1850 census. From it we learn that they were in the Town of Ausable, which is in the extreme south of Clinton County, N.Y. The 1855 interim census taken in Essex County, N.Y. tells us that they were living in the Town of Chesterfield which is just across the county line from Ausable. Their location in the Ausable-Chesterfield area is understandable as there was intense activity there at that time. They had a boom economy associated with iron mining, forging and related activities such as the making of charcoal, the manufacture of various products from iron such as nails, wire, etc. There was also lumbering and other activities.

The fact that a couple, where the husband was a laborer and who had been in this country just over fifteen years but owned a house valued at $200.00 could mean that one or even both of them had some money when they arrived that they had inherited. Father Rooney in all accounts is listed as being a wealthy man. As a priest he must have inherited his wealth because priests cannot become wealthy through their own earnings. It seems reasonable therefore to assume that Margaret, his sister, also could have had some money. Hugh Robinson possibly could have had some resources of his own besides his earnings.

Sometime in the 1852–1853 period Hugh Robinson died. Margaret Robinson was left with six children. Hugh, the oldest, was

somewhere between fifteen and eighteen years of age. The youngest, Stewart, was very young, possibly, not a year old. There were no pensions in those days, no social security and no formal aid for dependent children yet she had the responsibility of supporting herself, raising the children and educating them. According to family tradition any funds that she might have had were not adequate for these responsibilities.

The tradition handed down through Fannie's mother and her mother, Eliza who was the oldest daughter and second child, is that Father Rooney offered to support the children and educate them if she and the children would come back to the Catholic Church. She is supposed to have told him that the children were Robinsons, that they were Protestants and would be raised as Protestants. This she did.

Hugh, the oldest child was somewhere between fifteen and eighteen years of age. In those days a boy in that age bracket could do the work of a man. Work was plentiful in the booming economy of the area so he probably went to work. By working herself, and probably with the help of the other children as they grew older, she did raise her family. However, she must have had a hard time, and as a family, they undoubtedly had to do without many things. Eliza married James Irwin April 23, 1864. She was then twenty-two years of age.

Now to go back, absolutely nothing is known about Hugh Robinson other than has been included in this account. Fannie's mother told her that the mother of Margaret Rooney was a McGinty and that the family came from the County Cork in Ireland. Then, as now, the people of County Cork were mostly Catholic so McGinty and County Cork seem logical.

The author would like nothing better than to do some serious research on the Robinson and Rooney lines. Canada has some good records, particularly for Catholic families. Then too, some very interesting records might be found in Ireland in the Protestant north as well as in the Catholic south.

Before leaving this part of the account the author is going to include one remark that is of a type not normally included in a work of the type of this one. He is pleased that he found the ". . . . medium-sized, rosy, well-knit and choleric . . . ." description of Father Rooney. While no members of his family are direct descendants of Father Rooney, all of our children are descents of his parents. To say that several fit the description given of him is not an untrue statement. The Rooney line also gives Fannie C. Harrison the Irish blood that she has always so proudly claimed. Furthermore, it is the only possible source of an Irish blood line unless some of her Irwin family and their connecting lines married native Irish before coming to this country. No record of this has been found to date.

Just as we have no exact date and place of death for Hugh Robinson, we do not have this information for his wife Margaret (Rooney) Robinson. The only information about the children, other than Eliza who married James Irwin, has been supplied by Naomi (Irwin) Sherburne.

Hugh, born in Canada in 1837 went back to Canada and lived in Montreal. He had one daughter Rosella who never

married. Joseph Irwin, a son of Eliza (Robinson) Irwin, located Rosella many years ago. For several summers she spent her vacations with the Joseph Irwins at their farm near Peru, N.Y.

George Robinson died in Keeseville,N.Y. Sept 2, 1879. He was thirty-five years of age. Naomie Sherburne believes that he was a charming man that everyone liked, but that he liked alcohol too well. He never married as far as she knows.

Fanny married a man by the name of McKnall. A sugar spoon that she sent to her sister Eliza Irwin years ago reached Fannie C. Harrison by way of Eliza and Adelia Collins.

Harvey Robinson married Lydia M. Blakley. They had at least one daughter. She was given the name of Fanny, presumably for Fanny, the sister of the father. Fanny Blakely was born August 12, 1880 and married John F. Page. They had one daughter, Greta, who married Leonard F. Clark. They lived in South Hadley Falls, Mass. Unfortunately, the obituary does not give all of the essential dates. It is the opinion of Naomi Irwin Sherburne that the Clarks had no children.

Mrs. Sherburne had no information on Stewart Robinson, the youngest child. He was not more than a year old when his father died.

Although partially repetition, the author wants to return to the situation of a widow left with six children in the 1850 period. In this day when the "poverty level income" for a family of the size of the one with which Margaret Robinson was left is well over $10,000.00 a year, we have to wonder how she raised six children ranging from one to fifteen years of age with no source of income. She had no Social Security, no pension, no aid for dependent children, no food stamps and no assistance of any kind as far as we know. But people today in far better circumstances who get much help, complain bitterly about hardship. Margaret Robinson refused aid from a brother rather than change her religion and that of her children. She raised her children and raised them well. Careful planning and willingness by all to work to the full extent of their capabilities enabled her family to meet the situation that faced her.

It is the belief of Naomi Irwin Sherburne that the descendents of Eliza Robinson Irwin are today the only living descendants of Margaret (Rooney) Robinson.

NOTES

1 a. *A History of the Diocese of Ogdensburg*, by the Rev. John Talbot Smith, John W. Lovell Co., New York City, 1884, Pages 188–190 inc'l.

b. *Essex County Republican Annual* for the year 1891.

A History of Catholicism in the North Country by Sister Mary Christine Taylor, S.S.J., PhD, A.M., Farmsworth Sons, Inc. Cambden, N.Y. Page 10.

c. *St. John the Baptist Church, Plattsburgh, N.Y., The First Century* 1875-1975. Page 10.

d. *The Plattsburgh Republican*, April 28, 1858.

e. St. John Church pamphlet 1868-1943, Plattsburgh, N.Y.

2 *History of Clinton and Franklin Counties, New York*, by Duane H. Hurd.

CHAPTER XXXVI

James Irwin

James Irwin, the oldest son of Robert and Jane (Richey) Irwin was born in the town of Peru in Clinton County, N.Y. January 3, 1832. He married Elizabeth (Eliza) Robinson, also of Clinton County April 23, 1864. His wife Eliza, who was born Dec. 21, 1841, died October 20, 1907. He died April 4, 1909.

We do not know when James and Eliza Irwin first had a home of their own. Some of the children, including the mother of Fannie, were born in a stone house on Peasleeville Road just east of Banker Corner. Later they lived on Peasleevile Road southwest of Banker Corners. The latter house looking down on Salmon River was their last home. It is the one shown in the picture.

There should be much that could be written about James and Eliza Irwin and their family, but unfortunately the author has very little. His wife can just barely remember them as she was three and five years of age when they died. She left home when only sixteen years of age to go to high school and on to college so she was never really at home after that except for short periods of time and brief visits. Like so many of us, she did not ask many questions about her family that could have been answered by people that were then available.

James Irwin was a farmer and his three sons were also farmers. After he was grown and married, George the second son, had a place of his own. One day his father was going along Peasleeville Road and saw him plowing in a field along the road. As he came nearer, he realized that he was walking behind the single furrow plow in his bare feet. He stopped, ordered him to put on his shoes that he claimed hurt his feet. He then took him on into town where he bought him a pair of new shoes. His only price was to listen to a lecture admonishing him to never again work barefoot where he could be seen from the road.

There is something else that can be included that tells us something about James and Eliza Irwin. The schools in rural sections of New York in the 1870–1885 period when the children of James and Eliza were of secondary school age offered only a very limited education. Attendance at a high school meant leaving home and boarding in a town where there was a high school. In those days, if anyone went beyond the local rural school it would be a son because an education was not considered necessary for girls as the mother could teach them to cook, wash, clean the house and raise children. When the two daughters of James and Eliza completed the work at the local school, their parents sent them

An early home of James and Eliza (Robinson) Irwin.

to Plattsburgh, a distance of about twenty miles, to a private academy that had been established there. This was unusual then and showed that the parents were ahead of their times.

The Academy had been established in 1811 to offer education beyond that then obtainable at Clinton County town and county schools. After a fire destroyed the original building in 1871, a new brick and stone structure of four stories was built and ready for use in 1875. It was on the corner of Brinkerhoff and Oak streets. Courses from primary through a rough equivalent of our present day private college preparatory schools were offered.

Jane and Fannie Irwin probably started in the fall of 1884 and continued for two years. They had a room in the school or in a nearby private home. With a horse and buggy furnished them by their parents, they would make the four hour, twenty-mile drive into Plattsburgh on a Sunday afternoon. The horse would be boarded in a livery stable. At the end of the week, they would return home to do their washing and cook food to be eaten during the coming week. This was quite an undertaking as well as an experience for two young girls who had lived on a farm in a sparsely populated area all their life. Jane was only fourteen years of age when they started and her sister Fannie was eleven.

During the period that they were attending the academy, Jane Irwin decided that she wanted to prepare herself to be a teacher. With the approval of her parents, she entered the recently established Plattsburgh Normal School to prepare to teach school. As best we can determine, this was in 1886. The early records of the school were destroyed in a fire in later years.

Shortly after Jane entered Plattsburgh Normal, Dr. Hawkins, who later was president, addressed the student body and told them of the urgent need for teachers for the county schools. The school population in the area was increasing at a much faster rate than the supply of teachers. New families were moving in all the time so that the men could work in the iron mines; the cutting and processing of timber for charcoal for the iron foundries; the various tasks in the booming iron foundries; cutting timber to ship to lumber mills and farming to feed the ever growing population. Clinton County was then a boom area with a rapidly increasing population. And large families of children were the rule rather than the exception. Jane Irwin responded to the plea of Dr. Hawkins and volunteered to go into the country to teach.

Jane was selected to teach a Peasleeville school. If it was not the one that she had attended, it was another in the immediate area as it was between a mile and two miles

Seated from the left, Eliza, James and Andrew. Standing, Fannie, Jane (Jennie) and Joseph. George, the other son, is not in the picture. Taken in front of the James Irwin home on the Peasleeville Road.

of her home. She was just past sixteen years of age, but was tall for a girl of that age at that time. As she later told her children, she put up her hair, let down her dresses and started to teach. Sometimes she would have a horse to ride and when she did she would, on arriving at school, tie the reins to the saddle, point the horse toward her home and give it a good spank. The horse would go back on its own and thus be available for others to use during the day. If she did not get a ride home in the afternoon, she would walk as she did on days when a horse was not available. To undertake the full responsibility for a one-room school in the 1880–1890 period was a real responsibility. Some of the boys from the local farms were as old as she was or even older and often taller and stronger. However, she had been raised on a farm and was used to work and responsibility. She had to have

The old James Irwin home on the Peasleeville Road as it appears today with several additions.

discipline, and did, for there was no one that she could call to help her. There was no principal or superintendent to whom she could send pupils that she could not control.

The entire family was very proud of Jane, especially her father. At some time during her teaching career of about four years, he bought her a gold watch. There were no school clocks in that day so a watch was a necessary item for a teacher in a county school. It was a beautiful, closed case watch which she wore on a long chain. Jane took good care of the watch and it was always her most treasured possesison. She gave it to her daughter Fannie as she was the first of her children to teach. The watch is now the property of Sarah May Koogler of the next generation who was the first of our five daughters to become a teacher. It still keeps perfect time and is the proud possession of a third-generation teacher after about a hundred years. The hand bell that Jane Irwin used to call the pupils in from recess and at other times is still in the possession of her daughter, Fannie C. Harrison.

Looking across the valley from the James Irwin home in 1933. There has been very little change since then. It is still beautiful, especially in the fall with the coloring.

Church on the Peasleeville road near the old Irwin home.

The Peasleeville School taught by Jane Irwin was just to the right of the building shown in the picture.

The children of James and Eliza (Robinson) Irwin were:

Andrew, b. May 5, 1865; m. Mrs. Gertrude (Stafford) Church; d. Oct. 9, 1947. Two children, Roger and a daughter, Genevieve.

George H., b. Oct. 8, 1867; m. Nellie White, (b. April 1860; d. 1935) d. Nov. 30, 1930.

Jane (Jennie), b. May 13, 1870; m. Apr. 25, 1900 Lawrence Albert Collins; d. April 24, 1953.

Margaret Fannie, b. Jan. 4, 1873; m. Nov. 18, 1894 Riley Church; one son George who never married. d. Oct. 19, 1947.

Joseph, b. Jan. 29, 1876; m. Nora Church; d. Aug. 1964.

Jane (Jennie) Irwin about 1900.

Margaret Fannie (Irwin) Church about 1900.

Riley Church.

Naomi Irwin

Andrew Irwin

Andrew Irwin did not marry until he was fifty-one years of age. He and his wife, Gertrude, who had been married before, had two children; Roger and Genevieve. We kept in touch with Roger who visited us on Long Island. We would also see him when we would go to Plattsburgh and Peru. For many years, he drove a tractor trailer rig on long distance cross country trips. Unfortunately, we lost contact with him. He married and had one child. He died several years ago and his wife died earlier. The son lives in Virginia.

Home of Riley and Margaret Fannie (Irwin) Church.

Andrew and his younger brother Joseph were partners for several years and operated the farm of their father after acquiring the interest of the other heirs in his estate. In time, they dissolved their partnership. Andrew continued to operate the home place and Joseph bought a farm near Peru and moved there.

Unfortunately, we have no information on the daughter.

Harley P. and Phyllis M. (Irwin) Lewis.

Kermit and Bertha (Nax) Irwin.

One child, a son George, survived his parents. He never married. After his death, Kermit Irwin, son of Joseph, who was a first cousin, acquired the farm from the estate. He has since improved the property. The home is rented and he and his sons work the small farm.

George H. Irwin

Unfortunately, the information supplied earlier in this chapter is all that we have on George H. Irwin and his family. Fannie remembers him well and fondly. He was likeable and a lot of fun.

Margaret Fannie

As stated, Margaret Fannie married Riley Church. They had a farm between Peru and Lake Champlain. To the extent that distance and availability made practical Jennie Irwin Collins maintained close relations with her sister Fannie as did her daughter Fannie C. Harrison. The latter was named for her Aunt Fannie.

Joseph Irwin

Joseph Irwin married Nora Church. After they moved to the farm near Peru, they have concentrated on the improvement of

The Kermit Irwin place today.

An old fashioned sleigh or cutter with a high spirited horse of Kermit Irwin.

their property and the building of a herd of Holstein dairy cows. As it would be beyond the scope of this book to give a detailed account of the life of Joseph and Nora (Church) Irwin, only a brief summary will be presented. With hard work and good business judgement, they survived the great depression of the nineteen thirties and gradually built up an operation that their son Kermit took over and has greatly expanded.

Joseph Irwin and his sister Jane (Jennie) Irwin were always very close. Each admired the other and they had more in common than any other member of the family. They visited whenever they could and helped each other in every way that they could whenever there was a need.

Joseph and Nora (Church) Irwin had the following children:

Naomi Irwin, b. Aug. 20, 1912; m. John H. Sherburne, of Rye, N.Y. lived many years in Rye, N.Y. Now living in St. Petersburg, Fla. One son and two daughters. Five grandchildren.

Kermit Irwin, b. Peasleeville, Clinton County, N.Y. Dec. 17, 1914, m. Oct. 14, 1950. Bertha Nax.

Phyllis M. Irwin, b. Dec. 1, 1917; m. Harley P. Lewis, of Ticonderoga, N.Y. lived at Milford, Conn., many years. Now living in St. Petersburg, Fla. One son and one grandson. Harley Lewis died in May of 1987.

With the passing of years, Kermit and later Kermit and his wife Bertha took over the operation of the farm from Joseph Irwin. They lived nearby at first, but after a few years moved to the home of his parents to better take care of them and the expanding farm operations instituted by Kermit and carried out by him and his sons.

Joseph Irwin died in August 1964 and Nora (Church) Irwin died in February 1972 after a long illness.

Kermit and Bertha (Nax) Irwin

Although it will be another departure from the general plan for this book, ad-

Left to right, Rose and Richard Irwin and Will White and wife.

ditional information will be included on Kermit and Bertha Irwin, their family and their extensive and most successful dairy farm operations. This seems justified by the long term and very close relationship of Jane (Jennie) Irwin and her brother Joseph Irwin. This has been continued into the generation of their children, Fannie C. Harrison and Kermit Irwin in spite of busy careers for each of them and a separation over the years of hundreds of miles. Then, too, the life and accomplishments of this family are in keeping with the finest traditions of our country and should be recorded.

An Irwin family reunion in the 1920's. Front, from the left, Nora Irwin, Hazel and Nathan Irwin. Second row, Frank Cromie, ?, George I Collins. Third row, ?, Rose and Richard Irwin, Will White and wife, ?. Back, Sophia (Collins) Cromie, ?, ?, Fannie (Irwin) Church, George Irwin, Jennie (Irwin) Collins, Andrew Irwin, Joseph Irwin, ? and ?.

Born in 1914, Kermit was at the age to start on a life of his own when the Great Depression of the 1930's came along. He helped his father on the farm and carried on certain income providing activities of his own. As time passed, the latter had to be curtailed to devote more time to the operation of the home place.

A marriage that turned out to be a mistake was dissolved through divorce. October 14, 1950, Kermit married Bertha Nax of Buffalo, New York in the Rye Methodist Church, Rye, New York. Bertha also had had an unfortunate marriage dissolved through divorce. Her mother was Elizabeth Ann Struck of Glasshute, Hesse, Germany, born Oct. 28, 1880. And her father was Robert Nax of Offenbach, Germany, born August 1, 1878. They were married June 9, 1906 in Germany. They died in Peru, Cinton County, N.Y. July 28, 1964 and Nov. 28, 1962. In connection with her parents there is one story that is worth telling. Only a few years ago, Bertha and Kermit made their first trip to Germany. They visited many members of her family. On the visit to several different family groups, she was presented jewelry, various items of intrinsic or sentimental value that had been in the family for years and even significant sums of money that the living family members had been holding for her. They were greatly pleased by their warm welcome everywhere and the way that the family members shared with them. Kermit was especially pleased to have a trip made to visit in-law family members unexpectedly became a profitable one.

In a period of just a few months over eight years, Kermit and Bertha had six children—three girls and three boys. They all worked on the farm as they were growing up. The operations there were expanding all the time, increasing in scope and keeping up with all of the latest developments in dairy farm operation. During this period, Kermit was active in community affairs and Bertha was director

Seated, Andrew Irwin, George Irwin. Standing, Jennie (Irwin) Collins, Joseph Irwin and Fannie (Irwin) Church. This is probably the last picture of the five Irwin children of James and Eliza Irwin.

of music for their local church and also organist for the church.

Each of the three boys decided to join with their father in the expanded dairy farm operation. As he purchased additional adjoining or nearby land, he acquired four houses. Each has been modernized so each of the three sons, all married and with children, has a house of his own. The fourth house still in the process of modernization is used by the youngest daughter as her home. She is, as yet, unmarried.

The three boys each have associate degrees from units of the State University of New York—one from Cableskill, another from Morrisville and the third from Canton. Each has a different specialty—one animal husbandry, another agricultural mechanics and the third agronomy.

Maplegrand Farms is now a farm partnership of Kermit and his three sons. Total land holdings are now 1000 acres with 450 under cultivation in grain for feed, 100 in pasture, 5 in orchards and the balance woodland. The animal population is 250 head of registered Holstein-Fresians with 100 of them being milk producers at any given time. The stock is of the very highest quality from carefully selected lines. A few years ago, one of the mature cows made a world record for milk production and fat. Today that record is still second for the entire world. In 1986, Maplegrand Farms shipped 1,500,000 pounds (750 tons) of milk to Rosebud Creamery in Plattsburg, N.Y.

The children of Kermit and Bertha (Nax) Irwin are:

Betty Carlene, b. Mar. 18, 1951, m. William C. Cranndell, III Mar. 7, 1987. She has a B.S. in Nursing from Russell Sage College, a M.S. in Nursing from U. of Maryland. Presently she is a Clinical Specialist—Transplantation, Johns Hopkins Hospital, Baltimore, Md. Her husband has a B.S. in Psychology from U. of Md. and is Vice Pres./Mgr. Human Resources of the Provident Bank of Baltimore.

Robert Joseph, b. July 12, 1952, m. Karen Ann Coté Aug. 9, 1975 of Saratoga Springs, N.Y. She was born Feb. 26, 1954, has a B.S. in Elementary Education and a M.S. in Reading from State University of New York, Plattsburg. Currently teaching remedial reading at Peru Central School. He has an Associate Degree in Animal Husbandry, State University of N.Y. Cobleskill. They have one child, Katrina, age eight.

Jean Lenore, b. July 8, 1953; m. Bert R. Paquin Aug. 17, 1974. She has an Associate Degree in Accounting, State University New York, Canton. He has Associate Degree Applied Science, SUNY Canton and B.S. Rochester Institute of Technology. Currently manager

Simplex Corp., Worcester, Mass. She is active in church and school affairs and they have Kelly, seven and Scott, five.

James William, b. June 12, 1955; m. Susan L. Sayward April 3, 1982. She had a B.S. Physical Education, Casselton State College, Vermont. Presently substitute instructor physical education Peru Central School. He has an Associate Degree in Agriculture Mechanics, State University New York, Morrisville. They have Sarah, two and Kathleen, two months.

Melvin Andrew, b. Sept. 8, 1957; m. Jan. 3, 1984, Christine Voll of Moorehead, Minn. She was born Aug. 23, 1961. Has B.S. Animal Science from U. of Vermont. Currently a ski instructor White Face Mountain, N.Y. He has an Associate Degree SUNY, Canton in Agronomy. They have two children Lindsay, two and Rachel, one.

Christina Sue, b. Aug. 1, 1959. Associate Degree Data Processing, SUNY, Canton. Currently Data Processing Supervisor Keeseville National Bank. Christina has her own horse and lives in her own home on the family farm.

It is a pleasure to visit the Maplegrand Farm and see a large, well conceived and planned, fully modern dairy farm operation that runs smoothly and is profitable. To use an expression that has been used before in this account: "They Work".

CHAPTER XXXVII

Lawrence Albert and Jane (Irwin) Collins

Lawrence[9] Albert Seavey (George[8] Washington, Solomon[7], William[6], Solomon[5], Samuel[4], Samuel[3], Samuel[2] and Thomas[1]), the son of George[8] Washington and Delia Anne (Curtis) Seavey was born at Bellmont, Clinton County, N.Y. October 30, 1866. He was the third child of his parents. A sister, Ellen A. Seavey died July 25, 1862 when just a few days less than a year of age. Lawrence Albert lacked two months of being two years of age when his mother died September 1, 1868. At that time, his older brother, George L. Seavey, was four and a half years of age.

Earlier chapters told how George W. and Sophia (Sharrow) Collins came to the home of George W. Seavey after the death of his wife and took Lawrence Albert. This move, which was made to help the father and was probably intended to be of short duration only, developed into a permanent but unofficial adoption. As has been mentioned, the Collins had a son that was nine years of age at that time. He was severely crippled. Another son, born in 1861, had died in 1863 when only two years of age.

At the time that this account is being written, nothing has been found to tell us

Lawrence Albert Collins (sixth from the left) with some of the staff at the Hotel Ampersand about 1885.

what happened to George L. Seavey, the older brother of Lawrence Albert. As mentioned above, he was four and a half years of age when his mother died. He may have been taken by his paternal grandmother, Sylvia Washburn Seavey, who was married to Lorenzo Downey at the time and living nearby. After all, the father had lived with her after the death of Solomon Sevey, his father, until he was old enough to be independent. Sylvia (Washburn) (Seavey) Downey lived until June 20 of 1880. In 1868, she was sixty years of age having been born in 1808, so she was a relatively young woman. Her own children and those of Lorenzo Downey were all grown. As another possibility, there might have been some family of Delia Anne Curtis living and in the area at the time to take George L. Seavey.

Lawrence Albert and Jennie (Irwin) Collins with Sarah Sophia.

Farm house where Lawrence Albert and Jennie (Irwin) Collins first lived after their marriage. This is the house that burned in 1908.

As has been mentioned earlier, George L. Seavey lived until June 2, 1892 when he was twenty-eight years of age. He was married at the time and his widow joined with Lawrence Albert Seavey, then using the name Collins, to buy a cemetery lot. He must have lived in the area and there was probably some contact between the brothers over the years. Unfortunately, the family name of the wife of George L. Sevey has not been found and no information has been discovered about her. It is not known whether there were any children nor whether she married again.

In an earlier chapter, the marriage of George[8] W. Sevey to Annie Owen was mentioned. She died in 1880 leaving two children. They were raised by members of

The Collins house about 1918.

A free hand drawing made by L. A. Collins 1889 and found among some old papers. His daughter Fannie says that he would make sketches like this in a few minutes in ink and never make a false stroke.

her family. In the same chapter, there was information on a third marriage. If George[8] W. Sevey maintained any kind of a relationship with Lawrence[9] Albert once he went to live with Geroge W. and Sophia (Sharrow) Collins, there is nothing in the few records that have been found to indicate it. His living Collins grandchildren do not know of any contact between their father and grandfather Seavey. There undoubtedly was some for a few years following the death of Delia Anne Seavey. The burial of his second wife in the Saranac Hollow Cemetery in 1880 probably means that he was in the area until this time or at least came back there from time-to-time if he had moved away.

George W. and Sophia (Sharrow) Collins seem to have taken over Lawrence Albert Seavey just as if he had been their own child. Their own surviving son, Alfred E. Collins, who was nine years of age when they took Lawrence Albert in 1868, died eight years later in 1876. This left them only Lawrence Albert.

If George W. Collins did not in 1868 own and live in the house on the upper road in the Village of Saranac that later became the hotel, he did within a few years. He had started buying property in that section as early as 1864 between his two periods of service in the war. So Lawrence Albert was raised in the house on the upper road where he spent the rest of his life.

Undoubtedly, Lawrence attended the local school which was just a couple of hundred yards down the road from their home. It was probably a one-room school with a single teacher and all grades in the one room. While he probably completed all of the elementary grades, he did not go on to high school as there was no high school in the villages nearby. Also youngsters at that time and in that area did not go away to attend high school. It involved moving to a town where there was a high school and boarding with a family living there. In his case, it would have meant living in Plattsburgh for four school years, if indeed there was a high school there at

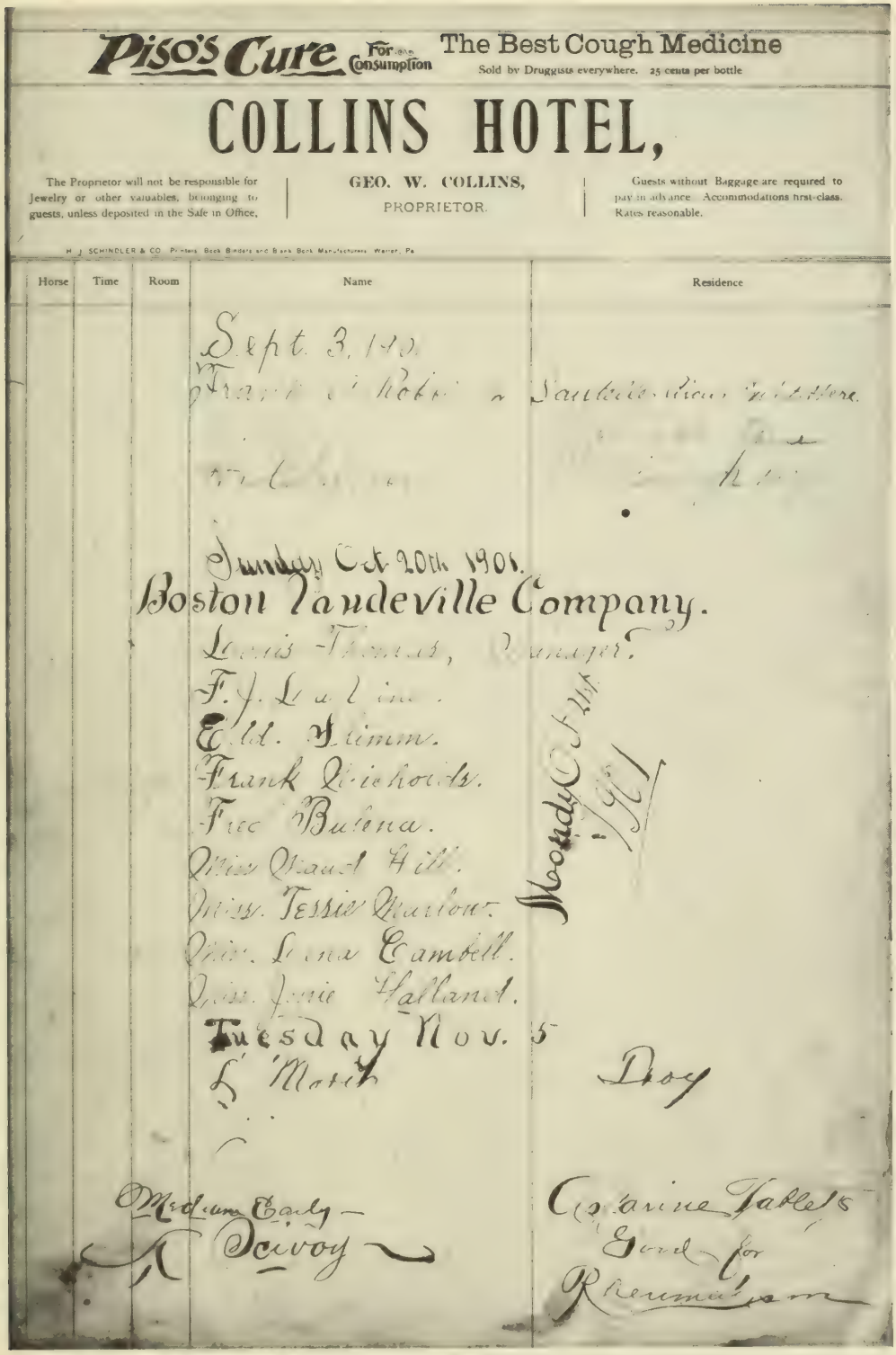
Lawrence Albert Collins about 1895.

that time. The other alternative would have been to attend the private academy in Plattsburgh. Like most boys in small towns or villages at that time in our history, Lawrence Albert undoubtedly helped with, and, as he grew older, took over the chores. George W. Collins had at least seventy-two acres of land. He probably kept a cow or two, several pigs, a few horses and, of course, some chickens. Then, too, there must have been a garden and probably quite a large one. People in those days before frozen food and even very much in the way of canned food, depended heavily on their gardens. Boys traditionally did much of the work that had to be done around the home as far as the yard, garden, chickens, barn and livestock were concerned. They also would be pressed into service to help in the preparation of garden products and fresh fruit for canning or preserving in any of several ways for use during the winter months.

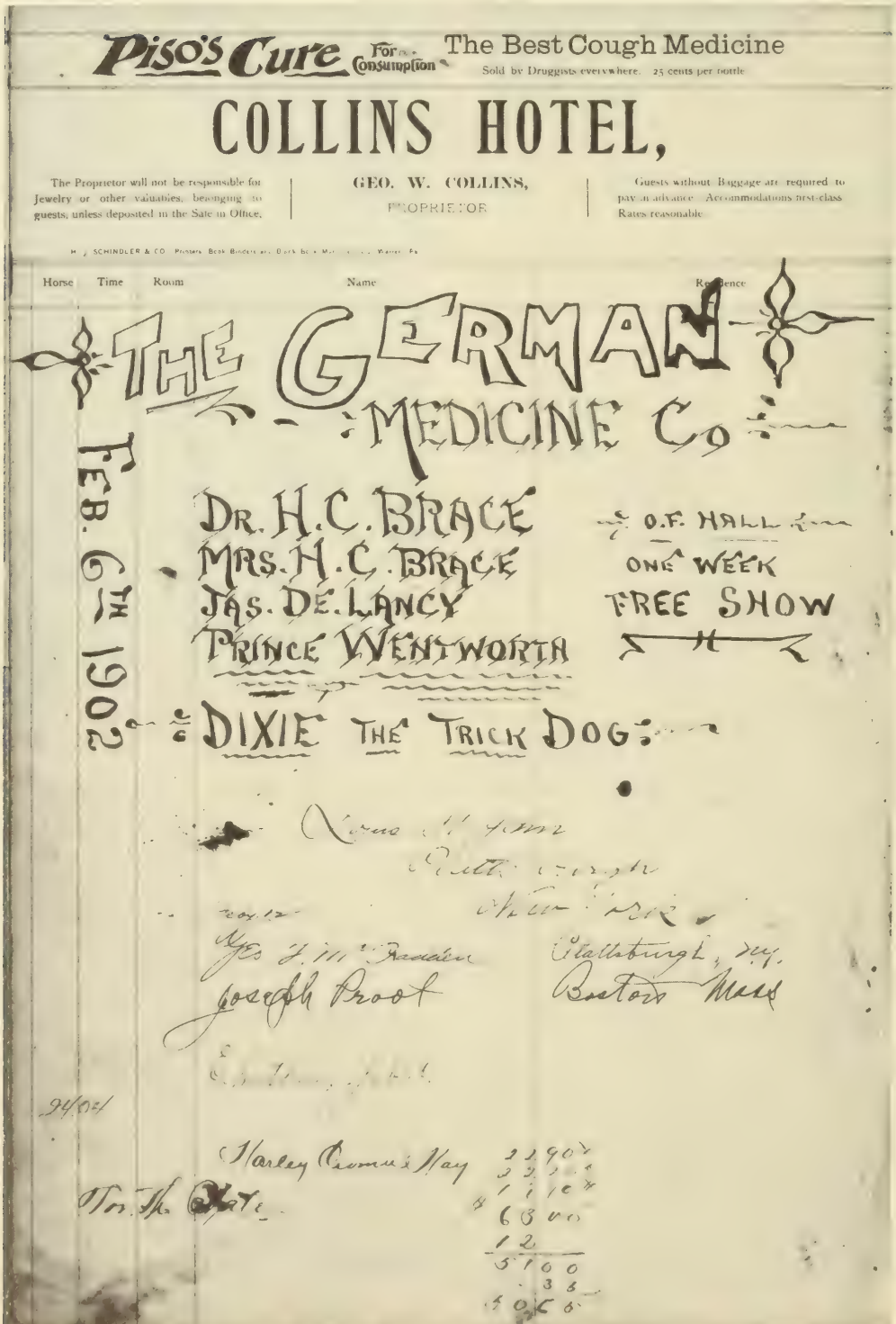
In addition to the normal chores that fell to a boy in a home in a village, Lawrence had extra work in connection with a hotel. He seems to have started at a very young age to help with this work. There were trips to the railroad station which was several miles from the hotel. Then, hay and grain had to be hauled in for their own livestock and for the horses of guests of the hotel. The records that have survived include receipts given Lawrence when he would pay for some merchandise, produce or service for the hotel.

As guests arrived on horseback or in a buggy or some kind of a vehicle drawn by a horse or horses, someone must have had to unharness the horse or horses, install them in the barn and feed and water them. This chore probably was assigned to Lawrence from a very early age. Of course, the animals had to be curried and brushed, watered and fed the next morning and saddled or harnessed, so that the guests could resume their journey.

There was something else that we do not think about today. Heat in the fall, winter and spring months was from wood that was burned in wood burning stoves in the various rooms. Cooking the year around was on stoves that burned wood. Sawing, splitting, stacking and carrying the wood was traditionally the work of the boy or boys of the house. Then, too, the ashes had to be removed.



3 pages from the Saranac House, later Collins House, register. The writing, decorations and promotional ideas are those of Lawrence Albert Collins.



Piso's Cure For Consumption The Best Cough Medicine
Sold by Druggists everywhere. 25 cents per bottle

COLLINS HOTEL,

The Proprietor will not be responsible for Jewelry or other valuables, belonging to guests, unless deposited in the Safe in Office.

GEO. W. COLLINS,
PROPRIETOR

Guests without Baggage are required to pay in advance. Accommodations first-class. Rates reasonable.

H. J. SCHINDLER & CO. Printers, Book Binders and Blank Book Manufacturers, Warren, Pa.

Horse Time Room Name Residence

THE GERMAN MEDICINE Co

FEB. 6TH 1902

DR. H. C. BRACE
MRS. H. C. BRACE
JAS. DE LANCY
PRINCE WENTWORTH

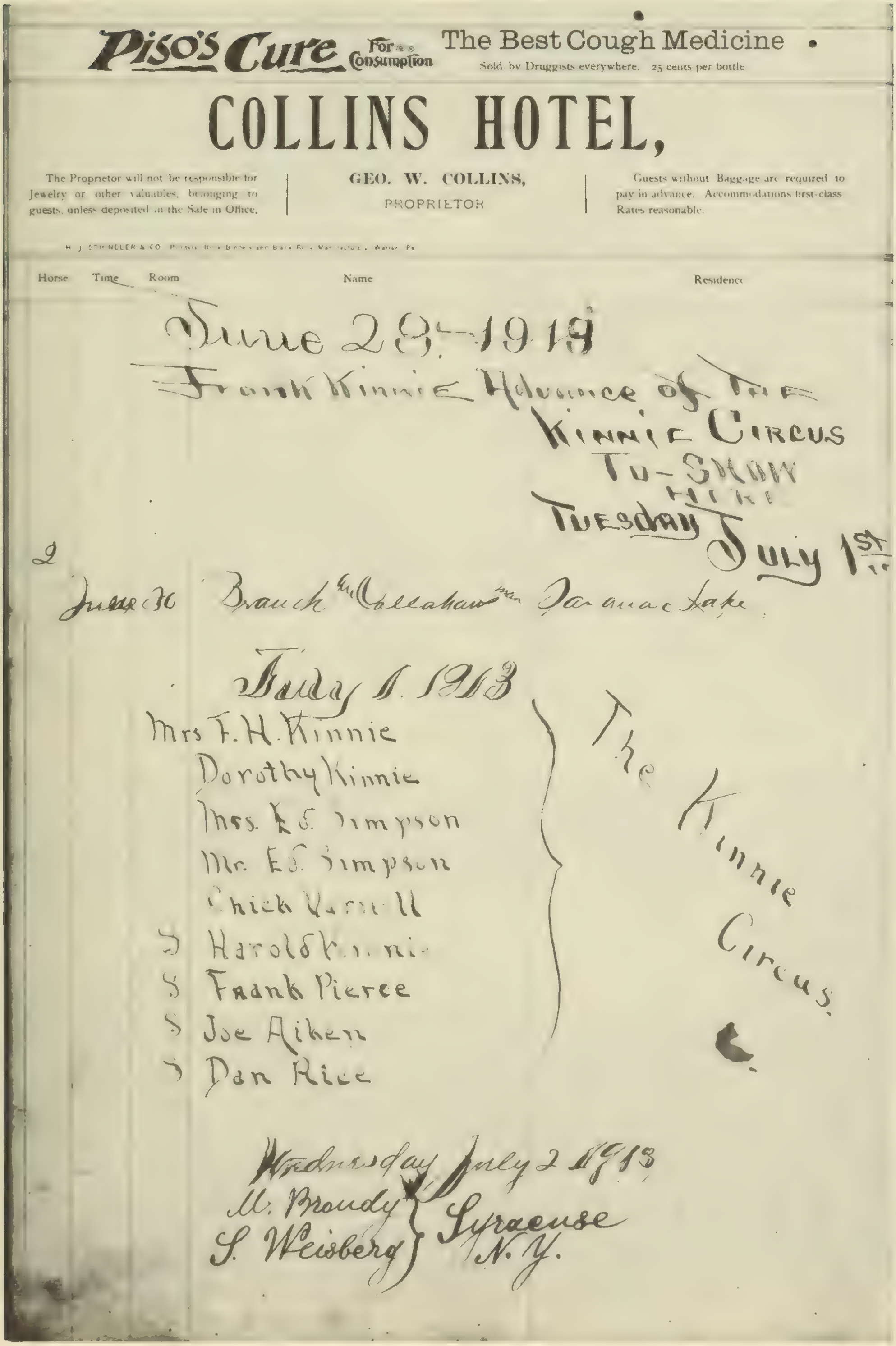
O.F. HALL
ONE WEEK
FREE SHOW

DIXIE THE TRICK DOG

Geo. F. McFadden Plattsburgh, N.Y.
Joseph Proot Boston Mass

Harley Cromwell May

For the Gate



Piso's Cure For Consumption The Best Cough Medicine
Sold by Druggists everywhere. 25 cents per bottle

COLLINS HOTEL,

The Proprietor will not be responsible for Jewelry or other valuables, belonging to guests, unless deposited in the Safe in Office.

GEO. W. COLLINS,
PROPRIETOR

Guests without Baggage are required to pay in advance. Accommodations first-class Rates reasonable.

Horse	Time	Room	Name	Residence
			June 28th 1913	
			Frank Kinnie Advance of the Kinnie Circus To-Show Here Tuesday July 1st	
		2	June 30 Branch McCallahan	Saranac Lake
			Friday 6 1913	
			Mrs F. H. Kinnie	The Kinnie Circus
			Dorothy Kinnie	
			Mrs. E. S. Simpson	
			Mr. E. S. Simpson	
			Chick Varrell	
		S	Harold Kinnie	
		S	Frank Pierce	
		S	Joe Aiken	
		S	Dan Rice	
			Wednesday July 2 1913	
			M. Broudy	Syracuse N. Y.
			S. Weisberg	

NEW HOTEL OPEN

The COLLINS HOUSE

Saranac, N. Y.

GOOD STABLES WITH ACCOMODATION

Rates Reasonable. L. A. COLLINS, Prop.

THANKSGIVING BALL

AND OYSTER SUPPER

At the Saranac House,

SARANAC, N. Y.

Thursday Evening, November 30, 1893.

Yourself and Ladies are Cordially Invited.

INVITATION COMMITTEE.

Will. Keenan, Annemora; Stephen Rodee, Saranac, Frank Storrs, Cadyville;
Lial Wilson, Redford; Michael Hanlon, Clayburgh.

FLOOR MANAGERS.

CHAS. HAYWOOD. L. A. COLLINS.

GOOD MUSIC IN ATTENDANCE.

TICKETS, $1.25.

FREE READING NOTICE

No. 543

(POST OFFICE)

The Collins House—L. A. Collins, Proprietor, Saranac, Clinton Co., N. Y. 3 miles from Russia station by stage or private conveyance. Modern improvements; bath; running spring water throughout the house. Fresh farm products. Accommodates 25. Rates $2 per day, special by the week. Open all the year.

MR. E. B. GERDINE, 1916
ALBANY, N. Y.

Dear Sir:

The above advertisement (with changes) is correct. Please publish in the 1916 edition of A Summer Paradise. Yours very truly,

NOTE:—This free advertisement from the 1915 edition of A Summer Paradise is submitted for approval. Please mark hereon alterations desired, if any, sign this card and return at once. The advertisement must be limited to five lines. Should you desire an illustrated page or half page advertisement, please so advise, and I will send information relative to rates, etc.

E. B. GERDINE,
Advertising Agent, The Delaware and Hudson Co.,
Albany, N. Y.

Examples of efforts to increase the patronage of the Saranac House, later the Collins House.

Jennie (Irwin) Collins holding her granddaughter, Betty Jane Harrison. 1932.

Jennie (Irwin) Collins with Betty Jane, Lee Olive, Sarah May, and Delia Anne Harrison. 1941

There is every reason to believe that Lawrence had very few times, if any, where he could say "I do not have anything to do" as is so common today with children. All the while there were people coming and going at the home which was the hotel. In addition, he was out increasingly as he grew older and could take more responsibility helping his father with the hotel. Lawrence was alert, quick in his actions, responsive and people liked him because he liked them and was pleasant to have around.

It is easy to understand how he made friends with the other boys and later young men of the area. He was generally known as Larney. There was no prepared entertainment for young people in those days so they made their own. There were picnics, pie suppers at county schools and churches, square dances and various things that they planned and carried out themselves including, of course, hunting and fishing. Lawrence and a few friends and relatives were in on all of these. Generally, they would have one or more horses that they could use so they ranged over a radius of ten to twelve miles. We know that Lawrence and different friends would go over to Peasleeville for dances and other affairs. This is a distance of seven miles as the crow flies, to use an old expression,

Jennie (Irwin) Collins about 1950 at eighty years of age.

but the winding road over Burnt Hill, which is really a mountain, that they had to take was considerably longer and was difficult to travel because of steep grades, rocks and rock ledges. Lawrence, or Larney, was always welcome as far as the girls were concerned. He would be the life of the party and get things going. Not all of the local boys in other communities thought so highly of him. Fannie's mother told her of various ways they showed their lack of enthusiasm for him and his friends from the Hollow. One night on their way home from the Peasleeville area, they found freshly cut trees across the road. Some of the local boys had gone up on the hill and cut the trees so that they would fall across the road. Larney and his friends had to remove them so that they could go on across the mountain to their homes.

In 1890 or earlier, Larney worked at Hotel Ampersand at Ampersand in Franklin County. It was one of the large hotels of that period where families from New York City and other places would come to spend weeks and often a month or even the whole summer. The husband or father might stay a short while but the family would stay longer. Fannie does not know the nature of the work he did at Hotel Ampersand but having been raised in a small hotel and having had experience he was probably a valuable employee who could be used in most any place in their operations. We have no idea how long he was there nor do we know why he was motivated to seek employment at Hotel Ampersand. He was then twenty-four or twenty-five years of age and unmarried. It may be that he wanted to get experience in a large hotel so that he could make a career of hotel management or just get experience that would enable him to improve the operation in Saranac. Then, too, there may have been some difficulties with the Collins. This does not seem likely as their relations seem to have been ideal in every way.

While at Hotel Ampersand or after leaving there, Lawrence wrote a letter that has survived. Although he was concerned that he had never been adopted, but was using Collins as a family name and he went through the ordeal of writing this letter, there is nothing to indicate that he ever mailed it. While he probably did not know it at the time, George W. Collins had already made a will naming Lawrence as his sole beneficiary after his death and that of his wife. In this document he identifies Lawrence A. Seavey as his adopted son.

The front porch of the Collins home in Saranac as the Harrison grand children remember it.

April 25, 1900, Lawrence Albert Collins of Saranac and Jane (Jennie) Irwin of Peasleeville took out a license to be married. Strangely, he signed the application for her. Her father, James Irwin, and her mother, Eliza Irwin, were the witnesses. The application is in the handwriting of the groom-to-be and he spelled the family name of his bride-to-be Erwin and not Irwin. Also the bride-to-be is identified as Jennie although her name was Jane.

The wedding was the same day that the license was issued and was at the home of the father of the bride in Peasleeville. The minister was P.H. West, a Maud Allen was one of the witnesses. The copy of the certificate is so poor that it is not possible to determine whether the other witness is James Irwin, the father, or Joseph, a brother of the bride.

Jane Irwin was twenty-nine and Lawrence Albert was thirty-four. Lawrence gave his occupation as a farmer. Interestinly, he spelled the given name of his mother as "Dealian".

It is the belief of Fannie and Adelia, daughters of Lawrence, that George W. Collins bought a farm a few miles from the village of Saranac before Lawrence married Jennie Irwin and presented it to him. The fact that he gave his occupation as "farmer" in the application for a marriage license seems to confirm this.

The farm to which he took his bride was about two miles back from the property of George W. Collins and was reached by a country road. There was about fifty acres and it included a small house, a barn and a few small farm buildings. There was some meadow or pasture land and some tillable land. Potatoes were the principal cash crop of farms in that area at that time. They did not require large fields and were grown on this farm in addition to some grain for the farm animals.

Entrance to the Saranac Hollow Cemetery. This photograph was taken at the height of the famous Adirondack fall coloring. Unfortunately the coloring could not be carried through in the printing of this book.

The Collins Lot in the Saranac Hollow Cemetery. The monument on the extreme left in the foreground is that of Delia Anne (Curtis) Seavey. The large stone to its right is that of Lawrence Albert and Jennie (Irwin) Collins. Other burials are in a second row.

While the newly married couple lived on the farm, he seems to have continued to help with the hotel. Entries in the register all through the first two years of marriage of Lawrence and Jennie are in his handwriting. She was probably back and forth and helped at the hotel. Fannie and Adelia remember their mother saying many times that the early years of their marriage that she spent on the farm were the happiest of her life. Lawrence had one or more men helping him with the farm work, so there was something going on all the time, and with sharing of work with neighbors and visiting back and forth there was activity and fun. In those days everything in the house and on the farm had to be done by hand, but they were young and strong and having never known any other life, made their work fun.

The first child, Sarah Sophia was born June 12, 1902. In a day when children, and especially the first girl and first boy, were given the names of family members, usually parents of the father or mother, the author cannot explain the name of Sarah. It has not been found in either the immediate Seavey or Irwin family. Jane (Jennie) Irwin did have an aunt with the name of Sarah Irwin who married an Ormsby. She may have been a favorite aunt. There is one other possible explanation. It is that Sarah could have been the given name of the mother of Sophia Sharrow Collins. The middle name of Sophia was certainly for her and the fact that it was the name used by Sarah Sophia could have some significance. In the opinion of the author, it is just one more confirmation for the closeness and great respect of Lawrence, and also his wife, for the couple that had raised him. However, Fannie says that Sophia was used because she, Fannie, could not say Sarah, but could say "Fi".

Fannie Elizabeth was born July 21, 1904. The first and only son, George Irwin was born March 20, 1907. Adelia Katherine was born Feb. 4, 1910.

In 1907, the family consisting of the father, mother and three children were living on the farm. He was carrying on his

activities on the farm and making frequent trips to Saranac to buy food and supplies and also to visit and help George and Sophia Collins. He was seventy-six and she was seventy-three years of age. If we can believe the old hotel register, they had not had any guests since June of 1902. Actually, former guests and a few others probably stopped there from time-to-time and they were accomodated even though there are no signatures in the register. Even if they had no guests and were living alone, they had a large house to maintain and to heat in the winter.

On one trip late in 1907, Lawrence found the Collins alone in the house and not well. She was crying because she could no longer do the work required for their large home. As they were depressed and obviously not able to carry on alone, he prevailed on them to go to the farm with him. They probably looked upon it as a temporary move and assumed that they would come back to their home as they were feeling better or at least when the worst of the winter had passed.

In February there was a very heavy snow and it was extremely cold with high winds. On February 2, a Sunday morning, Lawrence was at the barn with the hired man feeding the animals and taking care of the other chores. Jennie went upstairs, probably to make up some beds. George W. Collins decided that the house was not warm enough so he opened a damper on the wood-burning stove. Unfortunately, he did not remain near the stove and watch it. With a strong wind and the below zero cold outside, the stove was very hot in a few minutes. The stove pipe was soon so hot that it glowed and ignited the roof where it went through it. Before the fire was discovered, the whole roof was in flames and beyond control by Jennie and the older couple.

Jennie had to run to the barn to call her husband. By the time he reached the house, there was no hope of saving it or anything in the house. Lawrence did manage to throw a rocking chair out a window into the deep snow. It was a chair that had been given his wife when they were married. He also tossed a kerosene lamp out a window into the snow. Adelia Collins has this lamp in her apartment in Plattsburgh and is using it after its conversion to electricity. The chair is in the home of Betty Jane (Harrison) Cometa in Montclair, N.J. As the first granddaughter to be named for her grandmother, the chair has gone to her. It has never been refinished. The finish on the arm has been worn away so that the original wood shows where her grandmother rested her arms over the years, particularly, during her last eighteen years after the loss of her sight.

The immediate and principal concern became the safety of the family. Sophia, who was six years of age, ran about a quarter of a mile to the nearest neighbor through the snow and the below zero cold. She did not take time to clothe herself adequately so she arrived with frost-bitten hands and feet. George W. and Sophia Collins had to be helped to the neighbors. He put on his good, heavy coat, then changed his mind and put on an old one leaving the good coat to be consumed in the fire. Fannie was not quite four years of age and George was less than a year old. After

bundling up the two small children, and herself as best she could, Jennie started for the neighbors carrying one child under each arm. After a while some neighbors arrived and they, with Lawrence, concentrated on saving the barn and the animals. They were successful in this, but the house and its contents were completely consumed. In the cellar under the house the entire potato crop of the previous summer had been stored. It was common practice to store the potatoes over the winter because they could be sold at a higher price in the spring. So the family not only lost their home with its furniture and household items, their clothes and possessions, but they also lost their cash crop of the year.

The family remained with the Canning family, their nearest neighbors, for a week or ten days. Although they had a large family of their own, they made room for the seven people whose house had burned. The father had died several years earlier. Two teenage boys were operating the farm for their mother and seven sisters. It was so cold and the snow was so deep that it was several days before Lawrence could get down to Saranac. He rode Prince, their faithful horse that had been given them when they were married. The snow was so deep in places that it came up on the sides of the horse. Lawrence did not attempt to direct it but let it find its own way.

Fannie is not sure, but she believes that she remembers her mother saying that their insurance on the house expired a few days before the fire. In those days before telephones, a simple thing like the renewal of an insurance policy required calling in person or writing a letter. The agent was probably in Plattsburgh which required a full day for a round-trip journey.

As soon as the weather permitted, the entire two families moved down to the hotel in Saranac. George and Sophia Collins did not last long. He died first, sometime in 1908. A record of the exact date has not been found. She died a few months later. Both are buried in the Saranac Hollow Cemetery. The monument inscription is:

George W. Collins
Co. C. 16 Regt. Inft. N.Y.
Co. I. 16 Regt. Cavalry N.Y.
1831–1908

Sophia L. Sharrow, His Wife
1834–1908

Ellen M. Howes, His Wife
1833–1854

On the back there is the following:

Alfred E. Collins
His Son
1859–1876

George M. Collins
His Son
1861–1863

There are three smaller stones:

Alfred E.
Son of
Geo. W. & S.L.
Collins
Died
Aug. 23, 1876
A.E. 17yr. 4ms. & 23 ds.

Ellen M. Howes
Wife of
George W. Collins
Died
Feb. 1st 1854
A.E. 21y'rs. & 8 M's.

George M.
Son of
G.W. & S.L. Collins
died
July 25, 1863
A.E. 2 Yrs. 4 mos.
17 days.

In the years immediately after the fire and their move down to the house and hotel in Saranac and the death of the Collins, Lawrence seems to have continued to operate the farm by going back and forth from Saranac. The old hotel register is the principal source of information. Fannie and Adelia, the only surviving members of the family, were too young to remember events of that period. They do have some information that they remember from conversation with their mother.

The last entry before the death of the Collins was June 27, 1902. The next page is blank except for two visitors on May 24, 1923. This is obviously out of place and was made at a later date on a page that had been left blank between the period of operation by Lawrence A. Collins. The next page in his writing gives the date, Tuesday, Nov. 28, 1911. Two pages later he starts substituting L.A. for Geo. W. Collins as proprietor. There seems to be, therefore, a gap of nine years and five months when the home was not also a hotel.

REGISTER OF COLLINS HOTEL

Chapters could, and probably should, be written on the Collins Hotel register which was kept from December 7, 1896 through August 8, 1922, with a period of almost nine and a half years when there were no entries and presumably the hotel did not operate. It is a true item of Americana and, in addition, tells us much about the man who was very much a part of it during much of that period.

Each page has five columns—Horse, Time, Room, Name and Residence. Seldom was there an entry in every column, and in the entire book, except for those from small towns or villages, is there an adequate address for the delivery of mail. In many cases, only a city or town or even a state is given. However, the register is a source for all kinds of assorted information. In the early years most of the guests arrived in horse-drawn vehicles with one, but generally two horses, or on horseback. In April of 1913, George Kavanaugh of Plattsburgh, a regular visitor, arrived in an automobile—a Ford and this is noted. Previously he had a team of two horses. In August of 1913, he was driving a "Fierce" Arrow (a large early automobile of the Cadillac-Lincoln class) and this seems to have impressed Lawrence Collins. For later trips he alternated between a Ford and his "Fierce" Arrow. On June 13, 1913, E.D. Bettinger and daughter Muriel arrived in an Overland. Years later when in Plattsburgh attending high school and college, Fannie Collins lived with the Howell family who owned and operated the Witherill Hotel. Muriel Bettinger worked in the gift

shop in the hotel, and still later when we were married, Muriel was our witness and the only person present other than the minister and his wife.

July of 1913 was a notable year for another reason. The first men from the Mountain Home Telephone Company were guests and signed the register. This signified the coming of the telephone to the area. From this time on telephone company men were at the Collins Hotel frequently and there would be up to five and six at a time for several days. The Collins Hotel had one of the very few telephones in the Village of Saranac in the beginning.

Over the entire period that the hotel was operated, salesmen and sales representatives calling on customers and potential customers in the area were regular visitors. If their headquarters were not in Plattsburgh or some town within twenty to thirty miles, they would come to such a place by train and then rent a horse or two-horse team with a buggy or similar vehicle from a local livery stable and make the trip through their area or territory. This was the late nineteenth and early twentieth century equivalent of our airplane—rented automobile mode of travel for sales people covering an area. Several Kavanaughs, several men with the name of Levy, George Otis, and many others would sign in several times a year. In many cases the record seems to indicate that two or even three of the regular visitors would travel together. Fannie Harrison says that some of these men were wealthy in later life. One of the Kavanaughs, who was a bachelor and was a resident of the Witherill Hotel when she was with the Howells, taught her to waltz.

From time-to-time there were notations by Lawrence Collins about the weather. On January 3, 1897, it was 64 degrees above zero, but on January 21, 1898, it was 20 degrees below zero and there were strong winds but no snow. On February 11, it was 14 below zero, but by Monday the 13th it was 6 above. On April 11, 1913, the roads were very muddy. Then, too, there would be, from time-to-time, notations about purchases. In late February or early March of 1902, Harlie Cromie was paid $50.65 for what appears to be three loads of hay. Other notations tell of buying the Ormsbee's heifer on June 29, 1899, and on October 3 of the same year, the mare was taken out of the pasture along with the colt.

Registration seems to have been quite informal. Much of it is by Lawrence Collins rather than the guest. The registration might be "Guest and driver", "Guest and friend", "Guest and wife", "Guest and Lady" and in one case on May 21, 1813 it was "C.F. Dacel, Dannemora and good looking driver". In 1897 there is a registration "Blindman and son". Another found is "Gentleman Driver". And on July "Nell" registered. A few weeks later "Maud" registered. There is no other information about them. After the registrations for Dec. 24, 1912, there is a registration for "Prince Albert of Tobacco, N.Y." and "A. Mann and wife of all Over, N.Y." They are probably fictitious registraitons after some Christmas cheer. Feb. 28, 1913, there is a registration: "2 Pedders" and in another place a registration with a notation "on foot" in the column for horses.

There are many instances where the guests might have been relatives or family

members and in some of them Lawrence Collins might not have realized that they were related. Some of these guests were among others: Curtis, Sharrow, Cooke. One guest was Joseph Forkey of Plattsburgh. He could have been the father of Flossie Forkey who wrote the poem quoted in the next chapter.

If we accept the registrations completely the most frequent guests were the Collins children. They have written their names all through the book. "Sophia" and "Adelia" appear the most often. Fannie has her name in there only once and the same is true of George. Their names might have been written by Sophia. The name "Clara Kane", a neighbor about the age of Sophia and Fannie, appears frequently. In later years, after she was grown and had moved away, she registered several times, but was a legitimate guest. However, the name appears most frequently in the entire book is L.A. Collins. He was a good pennman and liked to practice by writing his name.

Before the death of George W. Collins, the hotel was primarily a stopping place for those traveling from Plattsburgh to Saranac Lake or Dannemora or somewhere else to the west. It was a full day journey from Plattsburgh on the roads of that day. Later, after being reactivated by L.A. Collins in 1911, it became a place to come for dinners and parties as well as for travelers. The roads were better so a family or several could drive up from Plattsburgh for dinner and return the same day. Then, too, there were more people traveling in that period. From the beginning all guests were fed and their horses stabled and fed. Jennie Irwin Collins ran the kitchen and had charge of the meals for guests and the family. Most of the time she had one or more women helping her. The Collins Hotel evidently became known for its hospitality and its food. In addition to the regular guests, there would be family parties, dinners for a group of friends and some large parties. For example, on Sunday, June 20, 1901, the register shows that twenty-seven registered for dinner. At this time Sophia Sharrow Collins was in charge of the meals. A card for a "Thanksgiving Ball and Oyster Supper" in 1893 has survived and is reproduced. Stephen Rodee, of the invitation committee for that affair, was still living next door for several years after we were married in 1930. By the standards of today, the price of $1.25 per person would be very low, but for that time it was probably high.

Fannie says that her father was not only a perfect host and made everyone feel welcome, but that he also helped with the meals. The food was not only good, but he saw to it that it was attractive and looked good when served.

Although the guests listed in the register were mostly from Clinton County, New York, there were many from other places. The New England states, New York and the north eastern and north central states as far west as Chicago and as far south as Washington supplied guests.

Lawrence Albert Collins died November 5, 1915. Of the seven words used by the local doctor to describe the cause of his death, only one is legible "Nephritis". At the time, he was said to have had Dropsey. Liquid built up in his system eventually causing his death. His wife took care of him. Until a few days before his death, he was in a second story room. Finally, he

was moved downstairs. He was so heavy from fluid that several strong men were necessary to get him down the narrow, very steep stairs. Until the end, he was cheerful and had company most of the time. Less than a week before his death, Jennie Collins made a cake and homemade ice cream on the occasion of his 49th birthday. When it was taken into his room, he was very much pleased. However, his first question was about Clara Kane, the neighbor girl from next door who was the age of his own girls. Someone promptly went for her so that the party could proceed.

The author is not qualified to evaluate Lawrence Collins. His information is limited to that obtained from his wife, Fannie, a daughter. She was only ten years of age when her father died, so most of her information came from her mother. His only other source is the register of the Collins Hotel. Based on the limited knowledge that he has, it is his opinion that, raised in a different environment and with more education and opportunities, he would have been very successful in life in any one of many ways. He had unlimited energy, was quick to learn, liked people and people liked him, so he had no problem in getting people to work with him. He had outstanding natural artistic ability and a good voice for singing. Just a few instances may be helpful. He always had someone with him, a boy from the neighborhood, an older man, children. People just seemed to be drawn to him. Any kind of work he had to do he made fun, and he had plenty of help who enjoyed working with him. He was also a friend. A near neighbor was the local doctor. He made house calls over an area about ten miles in radius, and many were made at night and in the winter over roads that were nothing more than wide paths and in intense cold with heavy snow. Sometimes, just for company, and at other times when he would be so tired he would not be sure he could make the trip under the unfavorable conditions prevailing, he would ask Lawrence to go with him. He was never disappointed. They would talk and sing. Lawrence would help harness the horses in the cold barn and take care of them while he was with the patient. Entries in the register for groups such as the circus personnel, the medicine show and the vaudeville troupe show an interest in the unusual and native promotional instinct and ability. He used the only medium that he had, his register, as an outlet for his promotional instinct. He was very fond of his children and always had time for them. His wife remembers him as always having people around him and that where ever he would be or whatever he might be doing, there would be laughter and singing and fun.

A few more items may contribute to a better understanding and greater appreciation of this complex and unusual man. Some time after the death of George W. Collins and his wife, a man from New York City built a large house and barn in front of the Collins home and hotel. With the stone wall that he put around the property the improvements blocked the view of Lawrence Collins of the lower road, the river and much of the valley on the other side of the river. He did not like this so

he decided to raise the house which was only about a foot off the ground in the front. With neighbors and men that he hired, he placed twenty five jacks under the sprawling house. When all was in readiness, he gave the signal and twenty-five men started to operate the jacks. The house was raised three feet and there was not a single crack in the plaster.

About 1910, word was received that there had been a forest fire in the wood lot and some if it had been burned. On a Sunday morning, he hitched a horse to a buck-board (which was a buggy without a top, but with a small section back of the single seat for carrying packages, boxes of feed, etc.). Of course, he took his gun and his dog as there were bears, wild cats and other animals up on the side of the mountain where the wood lot was located. As he was tramping over the hundred acre lot to check the damage, he saw an antlered deer. One shot and he had it. He then went back to the road to get the horse to drag it down to the road and the buck-board. Pleased with the slight damage to the wood lot by the fire and the unexpected find of a deer with a beautiful rack, he drove back to Saranac. Unfortunately for him, as he proudly drove down the road through the village, the congregation from the Methodist Church that the family attended was coming out of the church. His wife was ashamed and mortified. He was in her bad graces for many days. The deer head was later mounted. After the death of his son, George, we took it to Long Island and later to Michigan, and finally brought it to Grove City. It is now in the possession of our grandson, William H. Granger, a great grandson of the Sunday morning hunter who, following the basic instincts of a man with a gun, shot it. After nearly eighty years and several changes of residence, it is showing its age, but is still impressive in spite of the furor it caused.

So far in this chapter the emphasis has been on Lawrence Collins. Now we turn to the remarkable woman that he married in Peasleeville, April 25, 1900. They started life together on the farm that George W. Collins had purchased for them. Lawrence had cleaned up the house on the property, put on new wallpaper, painted and did everything within his capabilities to make it attractive for his new bride. The very first night she was awakened by a severe itching. It did not take them long to discover that the house was alive with bed bugs. Paper had to be ripped off and without the sprays and insecticides we have today, it took weeks and maybe longer to get rid of the bugs. They had probably been brought in by the previous occupant or had just come in from the outside as happened in many cases with houses in the country. In spite of the bugs and other problems of adjusting to a new life, they lived happily on their farm as previously mentioned. Jennie Collins in later life told her children that those first years on the farm were her happiest. She even accepted in stride the care of George W. and Sophia Collins when her husband brought them to the farm to live in 1907. There were then seven in the little house on the farm. Three generations in a house in those days were the rule rather than the exception. Of course, there was no electricity and no

water in the house. The privy was outside in the yard in back of the house and it was very cold when the temperature would get to zero and still continue to go down and there would be a strong wind blowing.

After the fire, as has been mentioned earlier, they all moved back to the house in the village of Saranac which had served George Collins and his wife as a home as well as a hotel. Adelia Katherine the fourth child, was born February 4, 1910, or about two years after the fire and the return of the family to Saranac.

When Lawrence Albert Collins (Seavey) died Nov. 5, 1915, his wife Jennie Collins was left with four children: Sophia 12, Fannie 10, George 8 and Adelia 4. She had the home/hotel property in Saranac, a garden lot and the pasture back of the home/hotel property. There was also the farm where they were living when the house burned and 100 acres of land several miles from Saranac that was called the wood lot. It was covered with timber and had no improvements. Its only value was as a source for wood for the stoves and logs to be sent to the saw mill for lumber. While she had property, there was no money and no income except what could be obtained from the operation of the farm and the hotel. None of the children were old enough to do more than assist around the house. Jennie Collins decided to continue to operate the hotel and the farm. The latter she did by hiring local help or, at times, by having a neighbor farmer operate it on a share basis. In addition to some farm products that she could use in the hotel operation and in the home she did receive some limited income. As many entries in the hotel register are without dates or full dates it is difficult to be sure about operations. Apparently, the hotel was not operated for the last few months of the life of Lawrence Collins and operations were not resumed until May of the next year or 1916. Jennie Collins continued the operation of the hotel until 1922 or 1923. The type of guests changed during this period. With better roads and the ever increasing use of automobiles there were no longer the people traveling on horseback or in horse-drawn vehicles that found Saranac a logical stop to and from Plattsburgh. The salesmen could go on through Saranac to their destination. Also there were fewer groups for Sunday dinner. The guests were more members of work crews installing telephone lines and service in the area and crews putting through new roads. They would stay for weeks at time.

The hotel operation was finally discontinued in 1922, possibly 1923, when Jennie Collins began to fear for her safety and that of her children. The final episode came when three men arrived without baggage, and asked for lodging. Mrs. Collins did not like their looks and told them that she could not take them. They told her that as long as her hotel sign was out and she had rooms that she had to take them. She did, but she locked the family section of the house that night for the first time. The next morning the sign was taken down and the hotel operations were discontinued.

Jennie Collins had always been well accepted by men even though she allowed her husband with his outgoing personality to be out in front. After the death of her

husband, there were many men in the area and guests at the hotel who became interested in Jennie Irwin Collins. She was only forty-five, attractive and capable. In 1917, she married Charles Cross, a widower with a farm near the farm that she owned and operated. This move was not popular with the children. As is so often the case with a second marriage, they considered him as an unacceptable replacement for their colorful father whom they admired and loved. For example, Charles Cross tried to stop Fannie from going to Plattsburgh to live so that she could go to high school. He considered it a waste of time and money as he was sure that she would be married in a few years and would not need any more education than she had already received at the local school.

Charles Cross died in 1926 of cancer. He is buried in the Seavey-Collins lot in the Saranac Cemetery. The author can report concerning him only on the basis of information obtained from the two living children of Lawrence and Jennie Collins. Adelia was only seven years of age when her mother married Charles Cross and she was sixteen when he died. She was at home during all or almost all of their life together. Fannie was thirteen years of age when they were married, but she left home to go to school in Plattsburgh in 1920 when she was sixteen years of age, so she was at home only about four years of their marriage. He was never accepted as a father. However, he seems to have been an honest, typical farmer of his area and period even though he may not have been the colorful, lively, loving father that the girls had known. Fannie has said that he was a good provider and he undoubtedly helped Jennie Collins by taking over the operation of the farm and the cows, chickens, garden, etc. at the home and hotel.

Before going on with this account one incident will be reported. It seems that Charles Cross had ordered a barrel of cider just a short while before his death. George Collins brought it home on the day of his death and put it in the cellar. Fannie was home that day. When the room directly above the cellar room and the cider was full of friends, relatives and neighbors who had come to pay their respects to the deceased, George remembered that the bung had not been taken out of the cider barrel. As it was new cider and had been hauled in on a warm day over a rough road, he was afraid that the fermentation would blow the bung if he did not take it out. Promptly, he prevailed on Fannie to help him. They went outside and into the cellar. Every sound in the room above could be heard by them so they realized that any sound they made could be heard in the room above. Whispering and gentle tapping on the bung did not produce results. Harder blows made more noise and they were sure that they would be heard above, but the bung did not budge. As they increased the force of the blows on the bung, the noise became greater and greater. Finally an extra hard blow that made a loud noise, loosened the bung and it blew out with a bang. A major explosion had been avoided, the cider was left so that it could breathe, and in spite of their concern, whispering and laughter, the mourners were not concious of what had taken place as they were too

busy visiting with each other. Such visits, really a wake, in that section in those days were a social occasion.

Sophia married Frank Cromie Dec. 20, 1920. However, she had left home several years earlier to take a commercial course while she lived with the family of a brother of the man she later married. Fannie left in 1920 and never really returned home. George remained at home, but he was sick from time-to-time. Adelia went to high school in Plattsburgh starting in about 1923 and then trained as a nurse at Physicians' Hospital in Plattsburgh. Jennie Collins began to have trouble with her eyes about 1928, and by 1935 she had lost her sight completely. At this point, Adelia gave up her job as a nurse and returned home to take care of her mother. Adelia continued with her until her death in 1953.

Although she had lost her husband when she was only forty-five years of age, had four young children to raise and was blind for eighteen years, Jennie Collins never complained about her lot. She did the best that she could, enjoyed life and continued trying to help others as she had always done. She never lacked company and help when she needed it because people in the area liked and respected her. They also remembered that she had always helped others in their times of need—sickness in the family, a death, writing a letter for someone who could not write and the many needs of her friends and neighbors. Very few days passed when she would not have some company and Adelia would take her to visit friends, to church, to meetings, to church suppers, etc. When dial telephones came into use, she did not want to give up the use of her telephone, so she learned to dial the many numbers that she had memorized. She knew the local area so well and had such a good mental picture of it that she could direct the driver of an automobile to the home of a friend long after she had lost her sight completely. She seemed to be able to sense the speed of the vehicle and the passage of time so that she could tell the driver when to turn. It was actually uncanny to have her direct the driver to a given spot.

With the assistance of Adelia, she would take a walk every day except in the very worst weather and then she would walk back and forth on the porch which ran across the entire front of the house. She also dried dishes and helped with some of the housework. Jennie Collins also always had some money with her or where she could find it. Currencey of different denominations, once identified for her, would be folded a certain way so that she could tell exactly what she was handing out. The door on the face of the mantle clock was always open. By locating the long and short hand, she told time.

Mrs. Collins never lost interest in local affairs. The high esteem in which she was held in the community was shown by the fact that practically all candidates for local offices would call her, not so much for her vote as for her support. They knew that she influenced the decisions of many people. Presents of candy, flowers, tickets to various community dinners, etc. from candidates seeking her backing were commmon. This continued until her death in her eighty-third year and after being blind for eighteen years.

As we view family income and the so-called "poverty level," the family of Jennie Collins was very poor even after making the necessary adjustments for inflation, purchasing power of income, etc. However, as Fannie has said many times, "We did not consider outselves poor." "There were lots of things that we did not have and that we could not afford to do. But we had enough to eat and our diet was balanced. We did not have many clothes or fancy ones, but we took care of what we had and managed to look well. Our mother instilled in us self-confidence and the belief that we were as good as anyone so we should not consider anyone to be better than we were." There was no life insurance when the provider in the family died. Of course, there was no social security, no food stamps, no aid to mothers with dependent children or public help of any kind. Yet one daughter completed college, another completed training as a nurse and obtained her R.N. and the third daughter took a business course. Only George, the son, did not continue in school, but he had rheumatic fever and was sick for long periods of time. However, he always had work and a good income. They, to paraphrase a current advertising slogan, "Did it the hard way. They worked." With all of the problems of raising four children without a father and with very little in the way of income theirs was a happy home. Friends and relatives were in and out of the house constantly. There was laughter and games and visiting. The two surviving members of the family look back on those years fondly and speak of them often. They had great respect, and admiration and love for their mother and for their father.

Jennie Irwin (Collins) Cross died April 24, 1953, just a few days short of her eighty-third birthday. She died from a heart attack. And she is buried in the Saranac Hollow Cemetery.

Lawrence Albert and Jennie (Irwin) Collins had the following children.

1) Sarah Sophia Collins
   b. June 12, 1902
   m. Dec. 20, 1920, Frank Cromie
   d. Jan. 14, 1970
2) Fannie Elizabeth Collins
   b. July 21, 1904
   m. Aug. 28, 1930, Crockett A. Harrison
3) George Irwin Collins
   b. March 20, 1907
   d. May 12, 1948
4) Adelia Katherine Collins
   b. Feb. 4, 1910

CHAPTER XXXVIII

Fannie Elizabeth Collins

The second child of Lawrence Albert and Jennie (Irwin) Collins was born in Saranac, N.Y., July 21, 1904. She was named Fannie for Fannie Irwin the only sister of her mother, and Elizabeth for her grandmother Eliza (Robinson) Irwin.

Her parents were living on their farm back from Saranac when she was born. They continued to live there until the house was destroyed by fire in 1908. Fannie was not quite four years of age at the time. She thinks that she remembers the farm and the fire. However, her concept of the two is probably more from hearing the family talk about them and visiting the site in later years than from memory of the tragic affair. After the fire, the family, as brought out in an earlier chapter, moved down into the village of Saranac and lived at the combination home and hotel of George W. Collins.

In the first twenty years of this century, Saranac was a small village of several hundred people. The iron forges were no longer working, the glass works at Redford had closed. There was no longer a demand for charcoal and much of the good timber had been cut for lumber, charcoal and firewood. It was essentially a community to serve the small farms in the area. There were a few general stores, a blacksmith shop or two, a grist mill and store selling feed for livestock. There was one large church for the small community and a one-room school building until the original building burned. The school offered only the first eight grades. There was no high school.

Fannie and her sisters and a brother grew up in this small community where all of the people knew each other and many were related. It was an isolated community, but most small settlements in that day were isolated. Horseback and horse-drawn vehicles were the only means of transportation until about 1920. For all practical purposes there were no roads as we know them today. Cadyville was a little larger and on a railroad, but it was six miles away over a dirt and gravel road. Dannemora was also slightly larger and six miles over a dirt and gravel road. Plattsburgh, the county seat of Clinton County, was sixteen miles. Except for Plattsburgh, these communities differed from Saranac only because they had a few more people and maybe an extra store or two. There was no public transportation. The Plattsburgh-Iron Mountain Railroad did go through Cadyville and Dannemora on its way to Chazy Lake and on to Lyon Mountain. There was a station a little over five miles from Saranac. It was primarily a freight carrier, but they did carry passen-

The two room school in Saranac Village which replaced the one room school while the Collins children were pupils there.

gers. To us today Saranac would be considered an isolated community, really a world to itself.

The factors and conditions bearing on the early life of a child in Saranac in the first twenty years of this century were much the same as in any other settlement of the same size in that time period and remote from any city or even major town. These will be reported along with some additional ones that had bearing on the life of Fannie Collins.

Family was all important. Parents and children were together everyday for many hours out of the day and almost always in the evening. There was homework during the school year, reading then and at other times, games, visits from neighbors, friends and relatives. During the day each child from a very early period had work to do. For this there were instructions and supervision and work was accepted as a way of life. All children had to do it. The type and amount of work changed from year to year with the ages of the children. How-

Fannie, George and the family cow in front of the barn. The steps at the right lead to the privy for women.

ever, the general division in the Collins home was that Sophia would help with the outside work around the barn and with the animals. Fannie would help in the house. Each had regular assigned duties. With time, George helped with the outside work and not long after the death of his father, took it over. Adelia helped in the house. Their work was in addition to that done by hired help in the house and the outside. Each day in the spring, summer and fall when the grass was good for grazing, the children would have to drive the cows to the upper pasture. This was a

Fannie in front of the Collins home about 1920.

trip of about two and a half miles each way. They used the horse and a buggy but the round trip still required an hour or more. It had to be done before school in the spring and fall, and in the late afternoon there would be another round trip as the cows would have to come back for feed and milking. All participated at different times in the milking. Of course, no

The Witherill Hotel in Plattsburgh. It was torn down several years ago.

two years or even two months were alike, but there was a closeness and a togetherness that is hard for people today to visualize. Parents knew what their children were doing all of the time, gave them instructions and constructive criticism as they worked so that they learned to do things, including the necessity for work. In conversations and discussions of daily hap-

Physicians Hospital in Plattsburgh. This is the initial unit. There have been many additions in recent years. Fannie worked there several summers as the switchboard operator, Adelia trained at Physicians to be a nurse and Betty Jane Harrison was born there. The hospital was built by a gift from a wealthy industrialist for Dr. Silver. Adelia took care of him for the last years of his life.

Fannie and her close friend Tex Langford. The picture was taken in 1927, their senior year.

penings they were taught the difference between right and wrong. However, it was not all work. There was play, fun, and companionship. In the case of the Collins family their home was the gathering place for many of the children in the neighborhood. They helped with the chores of the moment, but they also participated in the warmth and camaraderie of an active, friendly, fun-loving home.

School was another important part of growing up for children in the period when Fannie was a child. While we have undoubtedly made great advances in education, there is no question but what we have also lost some things of real value as we have gone from the one-room school. When Fannie started school, there was just one room and there were just two houses between her home and the school. When in the fifth and sixth grade the school burned and a new two room building was being erected just a few hundred feet farther down the road, a nearby house served

Fannie in 1927.

as the school. There were a total of about thirty-five children in the old one-room school distributed among the eight grades. With all grades being in the same room it was inevitable that children in one grade would get some benefit from the recitation of those in a higher grade and from the instruction given these higher grades by the teacher. As there was discipline in the school and on the playground, there were no harmful effects from mixing ages but actually many benefits.

Fannie remembers well many of her teachers. All were, in her opinion, competent and devoted to their task. They made the most of the conditions under which they worked. One in particular that she had for several years had a profound influence on the course of her life. She was Pearl Mitchell, daughter of Dr. Mitchell who was a neighbor. The families were friends and it was Dr. Mitchell who would ask Lawrence Collins to keep him company on different trips into the country at night in the winter for company and for help. Pearl Mitchell went beyond the standard courses for the upper grades to enrich the lives of her pupils and interest them in the world beyond the Saranac area and its marginal farming, country store, day labor economy. It was Pearl Mitchell who aroused the interest of Fannie in going

Crockett A. Harrison July 1930 in the front yard of the South Ireland Place home where he lived with five other Fairchild employees.

The first and last time that Fannie ever helped wash and polish a car of the author. This was taken at South Ireland Place in the early summer of 1930, several months before we were married.

on to high school, and possibly college, so that she could teach. The nearest high school at the time was in Plattsburgh, which was sixteen miles over a very bad road. With only horses for transportation, the round trip journey took a full day and Plattsburgh for most of the children in the school was another world. Many would reach twenty or twenty-one without ever going there and practically none of the children in the one and later two-room school, ever went on to high school. After World War I many young men returning from service who had not gone to high school did attend.

The church with its various activities was another important factor in the life of the children in the period being considered. Attendance at church twice on Sunday, Sunday school, Wednesday prayer meeting, Christian Endeavor and various special meetings, suppers, etc. was an accepted part of life. There were no movies, there was no radio, no television, and there were no automobiles to make visiting other communities and places easy. The church was where you saw your friends and enjoyed them and Sunday was a day when there was only essential work such as feeding the animals, milking the cows and pre-

Florence Dickey with a relative in the yard of her home in 1928.

Robert Dickey with son Robert in front of their home in Farmingdale in 1928.

paring the meals for the family. Play was restricted to something quiet and genteel and reading of the bible and religion related writing was encouraged. Sunday was also a day for visiting friends and relatives who did not live too far away to be reached by a horse-drawn vehicle or on foot.

Another factor to be considered is the general life in the community. There were not many families and while scattered over quite a large area they did know each other and, suprisingly, did see each other often. Without automobiles and, in the earliest years, without telephones, they knew the problems and the joys of each other. Many were even related. Second and third cousins were considered kinfolks and very often called uncle and aunt. Fannie and her sister Adelia now say that their family called at least half of the people in the community aunt, uncle or cousin and they were really related.

People in the community helped each other. They visited the sick and when needed helped by doing housework, barn chores, etc. Fannie can remember many occasions when her mother would take food or stay with someone who needed help. When there was a death, food, help of all kinds, even to the digging of the grave, would be supplied by neighbors and relatives. Willingness to help others became an accepted part of life for young people growing up in those days. They really knew of no other way of life.

The Collins children had certain advantages over others in the area. Fannie, probably without concious effort on her part, took full advantage of them. The hotel operated by her father and after his death by her mother, gave the children a chance to meet people from the outside world. Although they had definite instructions as to their place and conduct, they did get to know these people. They were salesmen, pack peddlers (who were mostly Jewish), engineers and supervisors for road construction, the men installing telephones in the area and people traveling between Plattsburgh and Saranac Lake. Then, too, there would be in the 1915–1920 period the groups that would come

Fannie in front of the Dickey home winter of 1929.

from Dannemora, Plattsburgh, and other places for special dinners and parties. The old hotel register also tells of a traveling Vaudeville company, a medicine show with Dixie the trained dog, and even a circus troupe. This type of experience was something that others of their age did not have at that time in that area.

While he had not had a chance to go beyond the local school with its eight grades, Lawrence Collins had taken correspondence courses and had learned by doing business for his adopted father and later on his own. He was, therefore, a man with more education and background than most in the area. Jennie Irwin Collins had attended the Academy in Plattsburgh and later taught school. Neighbors, friends, and others in the community would come to them to have them read letters, write letters, and help them with personal business problems. The children observed this. There was also another factor. The hotel had the first telephone in the area. Lawrence and Jennie made calls for many in the area, took messages which they delivered and let others use their telephone.

If we consider the remote rural community, the home, the school, the church, the unique background offered by the hotel and help given to others by the parents, the stones in the foundation for life for Fannie, the bond that held them all together, was the parents. They loved their children and made them a part of their life. The mother had the responsibility for the meals for the hotel guests and the family, also the rooms and the house. She had what was known then as hired help, but the children had assigned tasks. The father was the host and saw to it that the horses of the guests were fed and cared for during the night. He also operated the farm and arranged for supplies. The mother was active in the church and community affairs and on the school board when women did not often have such responsibilities. The children respected and admired their mother and they loved their father. He would play games with them. He would take them to Dannemora to buy shoes, clothes, hats, a special dress if they were going to be on stage in a church affair, etc. When they spoke he would be in the back pew and insist that they speak loud enough that he could hear them. To this day Fannie remembers that he called her "his little red hen" because she was so active, responsive and had auburn red hair. Although only ten years of age when he died, she remembers that there was always action, fun, and laughter when he was around.

The family or parental influence was important to the Collins children even though the family situation changed during the years that they were at home. Fannie has many, and fond, memories, of the last few years that her father lived during which her parents operated the hotel and the farm. Then there were the difficult years after his death, when her mother with four young children continued the operations of the hotel, but on a more limited basis, and also the farm. Later came a period of about nine years when they had a step-father. Before his death, Sophia had gone away to school and was on her own. Fannie was also away from home attending school and working in Platts-

burgh. All during these years with the many changes that took place, Fannie says that they were poor, very poor, but they did not realize it. They had enough to eat, they had clothes. They were raised to believe that they were an integral part of the community and as good as anyone. They worked and while there were many things that they did not have, but they had fun and were held in high regard by others. They were also taught that they could have what they wanted in life if they worked for it. Their mother admonished them many times to "reach for the stars" and to "hold their heads high."

After completing the eight grades of the local school, Fannie continued for another year on a part-time basis taking some special courses as the teacher at the time was able to work with her. She also worked part-time for a local family that had a number of young children. She was determined to go to high school, but this meant going down to Plattsburgh to live, which would require money for room and board. Her step-father was opposed to the program and her mother did not have enough money of her own coming in to take care of the cost. During the year 1919–1920, a solution was found. Sophia had completed what was known in those days as a commercial course by going down to Albany, N.Y., to live with, and work for, a local family who had moved there. There was no demand in Saranac in those days and very little in Plattsburgh for someone with commercial training—which consisted of typing, simple bookkeeping, etc., so she was working at the Vilas Home in Plattsburgh. It was an endowed home for older women and a 1920 version of our present day nursing home. While working there, she learned that the Howell family who operated the large Witherill Hotel in Plattsburgh were looking for a girl to live with them in their apartment across the street from the hotel and help with the care of their two young children and the apartment. Fannie applied, was accepted and moved down to Plattsburgh. This was the beginning of seven years with the Howells, four for high school and three at Plattsburgh Normal as the present State University of New York at Plattsburgh was then known.

The Howells lived in an apartment across Margaret Street, the main street of Plattsburgh, from their hotel, the Witherill. The apartment was over a store and on the third floor. Fannie had a room in the apartment and her principal responsibility was to see that William, age eight when she started with the Howells, had his bath, breakfast, and was dressed for school. Caroline was twelve years of age when Fannie arrived and being older required less care in some ways but more in others. Fannie also helped with the housekeeping in the apartment. The family ate at the hotel and Fannie obtained her meals there, other than breakfast, eating in the hotel dining room. Her compensation was room and board only and she worked seven days a week with no time off for holidays. She did not get home for Christmas once in the seven years and maybe had a chance to go to Saranac for a day on one or two other occasions. One was at the time of the death of her step-father when there was the episode with the bung in the barrel

of cider while the room immediately overhead was full of visitors.

In the summer, the Howell family would move to a cottage about three miles south of Plattsburgh on the shore of Lake Champlain. They insisted that Fannie go with them to look after the children and do the housework. For this she was paid a nominal wage. She would also be asked to work in the little gift shop of the hotel from time to time. She would receive no pay for this but would be given a very small commission on any sales made. One night when William Randolph Hearst was in town with Marian Davies and a complete movie crew he came into the shop. He was a big man and had on a black overcoat and a black hat. He looked at everything in the shop and bought $60.00 of assorted items. This was an enormous sale for her and a real experience as he asked many questions.

As Fannie had no income other than the few dollars earned during the summer months and her very limited commissions, her mother would give her a few dollars now and then to buy books and the absolute necessities for a very simple and spartan existence. In spite of this, she kept up her school work and participated in the limited activity program of the high school. The chef at the hotel and the kitchen staff saw to it that she was well fed. Today, the life she led would be considered a hard one and very few young people would be willing to pay such a price to be able to go to high school. She accepted it as the means to an end and made the most of it. Fannie was popular at school even though she had very little time for anything but classes and made many friends among the hotel staff and even some of the permanent residents at the hotel who were local businessmen. Some of them had been guests at the hotel of her family in Saranac in earlier years. In many ways her life with the Howells was a continuation on a more grand scale of her life at home. She was with people from all walks of life.

There was a brother of the Cavanaughs who used to stop overnight at the Collins House in Saranac when he was covering his sales territory with a livery stable team and later covered it with a "Fierce Sparrow" car according to the old hotel register. He was a bachelor and a wealthy man living at the hotel. The Hebrew tailor who had a shop in the same building as the Howells, would find Fannie on Sunday mornings and ask her to read his mail for him and write letters. He called her "Sweet Fannie" and once in a while would give her a quarter. At one time, the pastry cook at the hotel was Marie Del Bel, the widow of a miner who had been killed in the mines near Standish and Lyon Mountain. She and her husband were first-generation Italians, and she had been left with three small children and could scarcely speak English. Fannie helped her learn to speak and write English. She saw to it that Fannie always had dessert. Later she started making pies for restaurants, and through hard work, thrift and wise investments, became a wealthy woman. One son finished medical school and became a successful doctor. One earned a PhD in Physics and the daughter graduated from Plattsburgh Normal, earned a Masters degree at the State University in Albany and taught

in the Amityville, Long Island, schools at one time.

During high school, Fannie made all of her own clothes, working from patterns that she made herself. She had to sew by hand and often used material given her. Doing her laundry was her own responsibility and washing at night for wear the next day was the regular routine.

Although the time available for extracurricular activities was limited, Fannie was asked while in high school to be a member of the Minervian Society, an honorary literary society limited to twenty-one girls. She was president in her senior year. The following excerpts from the section on the society that appeared in the Barker, the high school annual for 1924, are interesting. "At the first meeting in 1923 the invitation for new members was followed by a "Backwards Party." All present wore their clothes backwards so they seemed to be going instead of coming. The refreshments were served in an order the opposite of the usual and the program was given in reverse." The next meeting of the year was devoted to a study of parliamentary law and meetings that followed were conducted according to it. Every third meeting was a social meeting. The others were on topics of current interest and each member spoke formally at least once during the year. The two most interesting events of each year seem to have been joint meetings or parties with the Junto Society for men. One year the Minervians gave a sleigh-ride party followed by a dance for the Junto Society. The Barker for that year mentions that the temperature the night of the party was one degree below zero and that very few Juntos showed up for the sleigh ride, but they did get to the dance part of the program. A spring picnic with the Juntos "Up the River" seems to have been the other social event that was looked forward to with anticipation.

By the time the four years at high school had been completed, Fannie was sure she wanted to go on to Plattsburgh State Normal School. She enrolled in the fall of 1924, and continued to work for the Howells. As during her high school years, she was expected to work seven days a week and at the cottage on the lake in the summer. To get to 8:00 a.m. classes she would have to rush through her morning chores and pratically run the mile to the Normal School. Many days during the winter, the snow would be deep and there would be temperatures as low as twenty degrees below zero with a strong northwest wind that she would have to face for the entire distance. There was a trolley but the fare was a dime, and most of the time there was no dime for it. Often she would arrive with frostbitten cheeks and thoroughly chilled.

As during high school days, there was very little time for extracurricular activities but she did manage to include some. In spite of her lack of time, a limited wardrobe, and no spending money, she was rushed by the two sororities on campus and joined Delta Kappa Phi.

Fannie decided while in Normal School that she preferred to teach in the lower grades so she concentrated on this. She considers the training that they had at Plattsburgh for teaching to have been exceptionally good. Not only did they acquire the academic background and

training, but they had extensive practice teaching at various grade-levels. The practice teaching assignments were preceded by complete instructions and discussion and followed by criticisms by faculty members who were present while they taught. She remembers the post-teaching review sessions as thorough, fair but merciless if the teaching observed was not what it should be.

When it come time to look for a school, Fannie applied for a position in Farmingdale, Long Island, New York. The superintendent there had a system that was expanding. He was from northern New York and had found that graduates of Plattsburgh were trained the way he thought they should be. Fannie to this day is not sure just why she applied for the position. Having made the move from Saranac to Plattsburgh and been on her own for seven years, she desired to make the next move toward getting along in the world. To that time she had never been more than twenty-five miles from Saranac, but she was confident that she could make the next move a big one. Long Island was about as far as she could get from Saranac and Plattsburgh and still be in the state of New York where she was certified to teach.

The summer after graduation, Fannie, by request, contined with the Howells at their cottage on Lake Champlain. In mid-August she told Mrs. Howell that she had to quit to get ready to go to Long Island and spend a little time at her home. She had not been there for more than a few hours at a time for over seven years. Among other things, she had to make some clothes.

Finally, the day of departure arrived. Her brother George decided that the battered family car could make it to Albany. With a friend Ernest Bedell, they drove Fannie and Sarah Hoffman, the daughter of a neighbor who had taught in the New York area for several years, to Albany. It was an all-day trip at that time in the automobile and the road that they had. From Albany, Fannie and Sarah took the train to New York arriving at Grand Central Station in the early evening. They spent the night in a nearby inexpensive hotel. Early the next day, Fannie made her way alone to the Pennsylvania Station and the Long Island Railroad. On arrival in Farmingdale a taxi took her to a restaurant as she had not taken time in New York to eat breakfast. From there, she walked the three or four short blocks to the Farmingdale Public School carrying the small traveling bag that she had brought along.

Dr. Howett, the superintendent, was expecting her. After a few preliminaries, he asked her if she had made any arrangements for a place to live. When told that she had not, he said, "Let's get in my 'Flivver' and see what we can find." Fannie expressed a desire for a boarding house where there would not be any other teachers. She explained that she wanted to get to know the local people and get away from school when the school day was over.

Dr. Howett took her to the home of Robert and Florence Dickey. They had never taken in boarders, but had advised him that they would like to take in one or two teachers. They had two young chil-

dren and Mr. Dickey commuted to work in New York City every day. Fannie immediately decided that she liked Mrs. Dickey and what she had to offer in the way of a room. The house was an old one that they rented, and had had very little in the way of maintenance or redecorating inside or out for years. However, it impressed her as being comfortable and liveable. Also she liked the warmth of Mrs. Dickey. The rate for a room and meals, while it seemed high to the girl from the country was within her means even though she was being paid only $1000 for almost ten months of teaching. The decision to live with the Dickey family proved to be a wise one as will be seen.

Before the day was over, there was a second favorable development. Another new teacher, Evelyn Nash, who had trained at Plattsburgh Normal reported for work. She had graduated two years earlier and had been teaching in a school north of New York City. When Dr. Howett mentioned that Miss Collins from Plattsburgh had reported for work earlier in the day, Evelyn asked, "Which Miss Collins?" as there were two at Plattsburgh Normal. When told that it was Fannie, she told him that she knew Fannie and asked if she could be taken to the same place for a room. So in a very short time the 1925 and 1927 Plattsburgh graduates were roommates. A college acquaintance has lengthened into a close friendship that has lasted to this day (1987). Evelyn had come to Farmingdale because she was engaged to be married to G. Hayward Webster of the class of 1925 at Plattsburgh, who was teaching at Amityville, Long Island, just five miles away.

When Fannie decided to apply for a position in Farmingdale, Long Island, she could not have known one sitution that she was going to encounter. Charles A. Lindberg made his famous flight from Roosevelt Field, Long Island, to Paris, France, in May of the year that she graduated. The aviation industry was beginning to develop on Long Island at that time. It was soon one of several areas that were literally "hot houses" for the development of aviation. Fairchild, for example, was building airplanes of their own design in a small plant on the south edge of Farmingdale where glass had formerly been made. They soon needed more and better space so they moved to a new complex of an airplane manufacturing plant, and engine manufacturing plant, a third unit for service parts and accessories and a large hanger on their own airport. New employees were coming into Fairchild every week and others were joining various types of aviation activity within a few miles of Farmingdale. Most were young engineers just out of engineering school, but there were also pilots, clerks, accountants, and others. Generally, they were young and of what might be called the pioneer type. They had the vision to see that aviation had a future and they had the courage to get into the rough and tumble of a new industry and take the associated chances.

This was a situation that was made to order for Fannie. Her background of living in a small hotel in Saranac, a larger one in Plattsburgh, a coed college and seven

years away from home, fitted her for what she walked into when she arrived in Farmingdale. Like the young men coming into the area, and there were literally hundreds of them, she had no local ties, so they were all starting new lives. The choice of the Dickey home fitted in well as they did not object to a house full of young men many evenings of the week. There was an old beaten up piano but it could be played. There were bridge games, candy making, and all kinds of pastimes that only single, young women and men in their early twenties can arrange and carry on. Many of the young men had automobiles that would run most of the time, and if they did not, they could fix them. This brought the movies and restaurants of adjoining towns within reach and occasional trips to New York City for dinners and shows were made. The Dickeys entered into the fun and encouraged the young people.

Evelyn Nash and Hayward Webster married at Christmas of 1927, the first year. She continued to teach at Farmingdale and live at the Dickey home and he had quarters in Amityville. Fannie managed to scrape up enough money to buy a ticket and go home for Christmas - her first in eight years.

The summer of 1928, Fannie returned to Saranac and quickly found a job as night telephone switchboard operator at the large Physician's Hospital in Plattsburgh. She had learned to operated a switchboard at the hotel while working for the Howells. This gave her room and meals and some income. The $60.00 a month with the board and room added was more than the approximately $100 a month that she received for teaching.

When she arrived back in Farmingdale for her second year, activities resumed at an accelerated pace. More young engineers, pilots, accountants and others were in the area as well as more young teachers. Evelyn Nash Webster had moved to Amityville to be with her new husband. Fannie had a room alone for part of the year and shared it the last part of the year with another teacher. Also Alma Whalen, a physical education teacher and a very attractive one, moved into another room at the Dickey home. Around Thanksgiving time, two things happened. Fannie had a sudden attack of acute appendicitis and had to have emergency surgery. The other was the arrival in Farmingdale of the author. She soon recovered from the surgery, but the then new arrival is still with her.

I had graduated from the Massachusetts Instutute of Technology in Cambridge, Mass., in June of 1926, with a degree in Civil Engineering and Business Administration. In the absence of any other immediate employment opportunity, I accepted the only position that had been offered me. It was with the A.P. Green Firebrick Company in Mexico, Missouri. The work was not what I had trained for but it was something I could do, was with a rapidly growing company and in a town near my home where I had relatives.

After ten months, or in March of 1927, I reluctantly decided to leave a good position and pleasant surroundings to try to get into some phase of aviation. My parents questioned my judgement and my un-

cle, Dr. J. Frank Harrison, was furious. I still owed him and my Aunt Ped Harrison nearly four thousand dollars they had advanced me to finish at M.I.T. after my money and that of my father had been exhausted. But leave I did. I even borrowed money from a friend to help tide me over until I could find employment. The next twenty months proved very interesting for me, but a full account of the ups and downs of that period is beyond the scope of this book. Only the briefest summary will be given here.

Discouraging interviews in Chicago and Philadelphia were followed by an offer to sell advertising for Aviation Magazine. I had sold advertising space for an undergraduate monthly engineering magazine at M.I.T. Lindberg flew to Paris in May of 1928, and aviation literally exploded. Next came a job as assistant sales manager of a small airplane manufacturer in Cincinnati, Ohio. In less than four months, they were bankrupt. In the next month and a half, I sold advertising space for the official program for a national aviation show to be held in Chicago the first week in December of 1928. Working on a commission basis and paying my own expenses, I made what I considered a good income for an entire year. But the best compensation was an offer of position as director of advertising and public relations for the various Fairchild companies. So at age twenty-six and only a few months over two years out of M.I.T., I was in a responsible position in one of the most promising companies in a whole new industry. I went to Farmingdale, Long Island, to live.

So in mid-November of 1928, I joined the ranks of the young, single men in Farmingdale. A young woman, who had been with the former advertising manager, was assigned to work with me. With her help I met other new arrivals and found temporary quarters. Through these young fellows, some of whom were living in a dirty, dark, crowded rooming house where there was inadequate heat, I met Fannie Collins and her roommate Alma Whalen. The first month with Fairchild was so hectic, and so many things happened, that I can no longer remember the exact order in which they happened.

All three of the new Fairchild airplanes made it to the show and were exhibited. The folders, catalogs and advertising were all ready in time. I think that I kept my room at the Fraternities Club on 38th at Madison in New York City and did not move out to Farmingdale until after I returned from the show in Chicago.

With four of the fellows in the rooming house, I rented a furnished house in Amityville and moved there around Christmas. I bought a second-hand Chevrolet. Fannie had the emergency operation for appendicitis around Thanksgiving, so she did not attempt to go home for Christmas. I moved into our new quarters ahead of the others who went away for Christmas.

About this time I called the Dickey residence to see if Fannie was able to have a date. She was not there at the time, but Mrs. Dickey made a date for her. We went to a movie in Freeport which was about ten miles west toward New York City. It was our first date.

The last forty-five days of 1928 were the beginning of a most interesting period. The aviation industry was literally exploding and I was involved in many phases of it. My work required frequent trips to Manhattan, and others to Canada where we had two companies and to Hagerstown, Maryland.

The house in Amityville which we operated as a fraternity house, proved to be an excellent living arrangement. There were many delightful parties, and when our six-month lease expired we rented an even larger seven-room house that was more comfortable. With the larger quarters, we had seven fellows and six cars. A woman came in once a week and cleaned for us. Many times the girls would cook a dinner with food that we would buy. Although we all worked hard, there were parties, large or small, all the time. The neighbors wondered, I am sure, about what was going on but I know that there was never anything at which I would not want a daughter or granddaughter of mine to participate.

Two of our group were lost while on a test flight with a new airplane.

In addition to the parties, the movies, the dinners at the house and elsewhere, there were long walks on the deserted ocean beaches in the winter and swims at the beaches in the summer, walks in the woods and all-day trips down toward the east end of the island on Sundays. Once we tried the famous John Duck Inn and didn't like it, but had at Wading River a favorite private home that served delightful Sunday dinners. After stopping at some country church for the Sunday morning service, we would go there. In the winter, they would have a wood fire.

The famous market crash came in September of 1929 and I, along with many more, was dismissed. In a few weeks I had a temporary job with the Fairchild Aerial Camera Corp. in New York City. Two developments turned this into something that ran on for almost twenty-five years. Fred Lutz, the general manager, found that the Air Force had money to re-work and convert some of their old aerial camera equipment and to prepare instruction manuals to a new specification. I agreed to write the manuals; along with this I found that aerial cameras could be sold to the Air Force of foreign countries.

In the summer of 1928, and again in 1929, Fannie reutrned to Saranac for the summer. Again, she worked as the switchboard operator at the Physicians Hospital in Plattsburgh.

In the summer of 1929, a round trip to Plattsburgh was made over a long week and with one of the fellows in the house and his girl. They had just been married, but I did not know this at the time. Another trip was made the next Memorial Day weekend with Fannie and another one of the fellows. On these trips, I had a chance to meet her family and visit her home. At the same time, they had a chance to meet me.

By the middle of the summer of 1930, it began to look like my two-week job of the fall of 1929 might last a while. I was twenty-eight years of age and although the Depression was getting worse, I decided to see if Fannie would marry me.

At the time, Fannie was in Plattsburgh and I asked her in a long letter. My financial situation, which she already knew about in a general way, was explained and the suggestion was made that she would probably have to continue teaching for a few years. I was not sure that she would accept, but my salesman's instinct told me that she would. She was going with a number of different fellows, although the number had come down as I spent more and more time with her and the number of young men dropped with the slow down in the growth of the aviation-connected companies in the area. She did accept and we were married in Plattsburgh on Friday, August 28th, 1930.

This account of how Fannie and I happened to come to the Farmingdale-Amityville area of Long Island and eventually marry, has been long. However, it is something that we want to have recorded, as it is consistent with the general story of the coming to this country of her Seavey, Foss, Fuller, Cooke, Washburn and other ancestral lines and the Harrison, Allen, Stovall, Hampton, Crockett and other lines of the author. We knew what we wanted and were willing to undertake the work and hardships necessary to get it. We were confident of our own ability, willing to work, and had faith that we would achieve the ends that we sought. Conditions were certainly not favorable in mid-1930 and they deteriorated for several more years. We either did not know enough to be afraid or we had supreme confidence in ourselves and faith that we could succeed. We like to think that it was the latter.

CHAPTER XXXIX

Amityville Years

Due to our limited resources and the general situation at the time, we really did not take a wedding trip. I left Manhattan after work on Thursday, and with a stop for only a few hours sleep enroute, I arrived in Saranac in mid-morning. We were married in the afternoon and left immediatley for Long Island. We did detour across New England to Portland, Maine and then drove down the coast line until we could get over to Long Island where we arrived in the evening on Monday which was Labor Day. Between us we had less than a dollar.

One incident will be included here. As soon as we were married, Fannie sent Mrs. Dickey a telegram telling her that she would not need her room for the coming school year as she was being married. In composing the telegram, she neglected to tell her who she had married. When we arrived in Amityville and called Mrs. Dickey, the first question was "Who did you marry?" There had evidently been considerable speculation and discussion as to the identity of the new husband.

Only the briefest summary of our fifty-seven years together can be included in this account. They have been years filled to over flowing with career changes, moves, children, and finally retirement with extensive travel. Remembering that this account is primarily the story of Fannie C. Harrison and her family lines, there will be included only a minimum of information about the author and career and achievements necessary to provide the frame for our fifty-seven years together. To do this is not going to be easy because her life over these years is inseperable from career developments and because she had a very important part in that career.

The account of our years together will be divided into four sections: Amityville, N.Y.; Birmingham, Mich; Grove City, PA; and finally retirement and travel. This chapter will deal with the Amityville years.

Fairchild and Amityville

By the time that we decided to get married the two week, temporary job lasted ten months. The writer had completed a catalog of the first commercial aerial camera of the company and was trying to sell it. He was also doing some work on U.S. Air Force accounts, but the really solid development was the increasing amount of business being received from abroad. It continued to increase. By the time the company moved all of its operations to Woodside, New York, the little export-commercial group had increased to ten people. Later in 1938 the company moved

The Park Avenue house in Amityville, Long Island, New York that was our home for the first five years of our marriage.

to larger quarters in Jamaica, N.Y. Export-Commercial was made a seperate company as it was doing as much business as its parent operation. Just before our entry into World War II when the U.S. Air Force and Naval aviation orders were starting to flow into Fairchild Aerial Camera, the vice president and general manager, and in a few months, his sales manager, decided to leave on short notice. The writer was asked to take over for a while until permanent replacements could be found. He moved his staff onto the new work, as export and commercial business had practically

Fannie and Betty Jane in the winter of 1932-1933.

During the first visit of Fannie to Missouri in July of 1931 there was a gathering of some of the members of the Harrison family at the home of Minnie Harrison, Red Bird Farm, Benton City, Mo. Front row from the left, Fannie, Crockett, and Crockett A. Harrison and David May. Second row, Lena Harrison May, Marsena and Louise Johnson. Third row, Minnie Harrison, Ped Draper Harrison, Olive Linda Allen Harrison and Margaret Cave. Today (July 5, 1987) only Marsena Johnson, Fannie and the author are left.

stopped. He and his people became the permanent replacements and carried it through a fifty-fold increase with the addition of staff as necessary including a service staff operating in every field of foreign operations of the U.S. Air Force.

When the end of World War II was in sight, the author was assigned the task of finding non-military business. This was an interesting project and fortunately after sales fell from fifty-three million dollars a year to six, we had them back to thirty million in a few years.

During the twenty-five years, my operations moved from Farmingdale to two floors of a garment center building at 270 West 38th Street in Manhattan, to Woodside, to Jamaica, to the old McGraw-Hill Building on 10th Avenue in Manhattan, back to Jamaica and then to Flushing. Compensation increased steadily and for some years a bonus would add considerably to salary income. However, the demand on time plus heavy travel, some years almost constant, left little freedom for family, home and practically nothing in the

The house on Clock Boulevard in Amityville. Long Island, New York.

way of vacation time. For example, just before World War II, we took control of Taylorcraft Aviation whose small planes we had been selling abroad. Supervision of the operation as well as selling thier airplanes abroad was added to the responsibilities of the author.

The foregoing tells briefly of the life situation within which Fannie C. Harrison lived for the first twenty-five years of her married life. Now we can fill in those years.

The house in South Ireland Place where the seven of us were living was turned over to the remaing members of the group. As we had no furniture or household equipment of any kind and no money to buy any, there was only one choice, that was a furnished apartment or a house. In a few weeks, we found a completely furnished house in Amityville. The retired husband of an older woman in town had been killed in an automobile accident in the west while they were on a trip. She could not bring

Some of the Harrison family at Clock Boulevard, Amityville for Christmas of 1940. Front row from the left, Peter and Frank Harrison, Betty Jane and Lee-Olive Harrison. Second row, Dorothy Packard Harrison, Olive Linda Allen Harrison with Sarah May Harrison (?), Crockett Harrison with Delia Anne Harrison (?) and Fannie Collins Harrison. Back row, J. Frank Harrison and Crockett A. Harrison.

herself to live in their house alone. They had no children or close family. She moved into the hotel where we were staying and we moved into her house.

In those days, Fairchild worked a half day on Saturday. On the Saturday that we planned to move, a friend from Missouri was in New York and called. Before the conversation ended, he and a girl from Arkansas, who was also in New York, were invited to spend the weekend with us. I took a train to Amityville soon after 12:00 noon. Fannie and I moved all of our posessions which were in several travel bags and met our guests in mid-afternoon. We had to hunt for tableware, pots, pans, bed linens, towels and then buy food and prepare it. With all of this, there was a swim at Jones Beach and a wonderful weekend.

This weekend very effectively describes our life even to the present. Fannie's life up to the time of our marriage prepared

Looking north along the waterfront of the Clock Boulevard property. There was 150 feet of bulkheaded waterfront plus approximately 100 feet of bulkhead for the slipway in the boat house.

her for situations of this kind. Her adaptibility and willingness and capabilities made it all possible. Some entertaining over the years has been family and personal friends but most of it has been business connected. The frequency soon increased and continued until retirement in 1968 or for thirty-eight years. Much had to be done with no advance notice as those to be entertained would often arrive in New York City unexpectedly and be there only for a day or two so it was do it now or pass up the opportunity and possibly the business.

We settled into a routine of sorts in a few days. Fannie was teaching in Farmingdale which is five miles from Amityville. After breakfast I would walk to the station for the train to New York. If the weather was bad or we were running behind schedule, Fannie would take me, return to the house and then go to school. However, life was not simple and without complications, even in the beginning.

Hard at work at a favorite task and enjoying every lick. Lee Olive cleans the remaining cake icing from the pan.

The fellows gave up the house on South Ireland Place in Amityville a few months after I moved out. The employment at Fairchild continued to drop, two were lost in an airplane crash and others married. The house, incidentally, was just two half blocks from the house that later became famous as the site of the book "Amityville Horror".

For a long time we would have a blanket on a large divan in the living room as we never knew who might come in after we had gone to bed and the bed in the spare

The Clock Boulevard property was the favorite "jungle" for young hobos in the area. This gathering with Virginia Sue was the fourth in a series.

The "Chuggle Buggy", a 1930 Model A bought Ford second hand in 1941, was the favorite of everybody. No bumper, no gas gauge, no horn in wet weather, a roof that leaked and the world's greatest assortment of rattles but it did run and used very little gas during the period of rationing. After about ten years of hard use the total return when it was sold was within a few dollars of its cost.

room was occupied. Several of the former residents of the rented house carried keys to our house. After a while we rented our second bedroom to a Fairchild employee. This helped with our expenses.

After the close of school in late June of 1931, we drove to Missouri. Fannie had never met any of my family and none of them had ever seen her. It was a three and a half-day trip in a Model A Ford that was underpowered and had very bad lights. The weather was very hot and the roads not very good. It was 101 degrees farenheit in the shade when we passed through Terre Haute, Indiana. Fannie, never having spent a summer anywhere but in the Adirondock Mountains of northern New York had never experienced such heat. Of course, our car had no air conditioning. The next day we wandered from our route in East St. Louis. I soon realized that we were near the Union Stock Yards where my Uncle James Harrison carried on his livestock commission selling operation, so we went into the yards and found him. This was a mistake. It was just after noon, the heat was terrific and the air was foul beyond belief. We did not visit long and it was not entirely because

Off to camp we go for eight weeks of fun and training at Camp Abena, Belgrade Lakes, Maine—all five.

The famous tree house in a giant willow at the edge of the water. The rope for the swing over the water is circled.

we were still 115 miles from Fulton and wanted to get there. Fannie's opinion of the mid-west in summer was going down by the minute.

About an hour later we were going along and spotted some hickory trees on a high bank just west of St. Charles, Missouri so we stopped. The shade was good and there was a breeze. Fannie was so tired and hot that she was asleep in a few minutes. Three hours after we resumed our travel we were in Fulton.

Although nothing was ever said, I am sure that the initial rating given by my father was much higher than that of my mother. We visited relatives and old friends over a wide area in central Missouri while the hot weather continued. Before starting back, we traded for a later and better Model A coupe. The return trip was by Buffalo, N.Y. where we visited overnight with my brother Frank and his wife.

We had not been married long when the export orders increased in numbers and size, and with this increase, there was more entertaining. I very early learned that visitors from abroad of the type that we were having generally preferred to visit homes rather than be entertained in New York City. Among the early visitors from abroad were three photogrammetric engineers from Russia and the vice president of the Amtorg Trading Co. and his wife. We had them out to our home for Thanksgiving Day dinner. This was quite an experience. They spoke very little English, but they ate heartily. The next issue of our local weekly newspaper carried an account of their visit under the headline "Russians Recognize Turkey at Thanksgiving Dinner". Later arrangements were made for three other engineers to study the use of our equipment in which they were interested, in mapping operations in Canada where the problems were similar to those in their home country. I met them in Canada and this was quite an experience, but that is a story for another account.

During the years that followed, we had at our home visitors from many countries of the world. While it is beyond the scope of this account to tell about even a few of these interesting experiences, one more will be related. After spending several days with Engineer Panoff of Russia, he accompanied me home one evening for dinner. As he was two meters (six feet and seven inches) in height, he could just barely fit himself into the Model A Coupe that I had bought in Missouri. After a good dinner, we spent most of the interesting evening in front of an open fire. Like all visitors from Russia, Engineer Panoff could not believe that only two of us had for our-

The twins. They cannot pick themselves out so the writer will not try.

selves a whole house with six large rooms. In his country, twenty to thirty people would live in that amount of space. As we were getting coats to drive him to the train for his return to Manhattan, Fannie happened to mention that all banks had been closed by President Roosevelt that day and wanted to know how much money I happened to have in my pockets. This called for a long explanation followed by assurances that we could buy food, gasoline, and everything that we might need on credit even though the banks would not be open. Our assurances were not fully accepted because he pulled out a fold of currency about the size of a brick and started peeling off $20.00 bills which he insisted we take. We had great difficulty in convincing him that we could really get along.

Betty Jane, our first child, was born September 11, 1932. Fannie insisted that she could finish the school year and Dr. Howett wanted her to do so. Physically she could get along very well even though school was not over until near the end of her sixth month of pregnancy. There was, unfortunately, a very serious development near the end of the school term. One of her pupils who was the son of a laborer, (a first generation Italian), became sick,

and after a few days, died. The father went to the district attorney of Nassau County and filed a claim that Fannie had kept the child after school, punished him, and he had to walk the two miles to his home as he missed the bus. There had been some problems with the father, not the child, before. She had to appear before a grand jury without counsel. Fortunately, there were other teachers in the building that day after school, and they testified that the child had not been punished. One, Alice Fay, was an older person, very positive, and made an excellent witness. This experience took a lot out of her even though the charge was dismissed.

My export sales were increasing all of the time and I earned more money each year. However, the depression grew worse and in 1932 was at its lowest point. It was very distressing to see several different men in each block in Manhattan selling apples. There were also many men and women on the streets asking for money. Some were really pitiful cases or seemed to be. Once in a while I would ask a fellow if he was really hungry. If he said yes and seemed sincere and sober I would take him to the nearest restaurant and give the cashier a dollar or a dollar and a half so that the meal could be ordered. A few refused. I explained thatI had enough money to buy food, but not enough to give it to them for liqour. About this time, my brother Frank was out of work and had been long enough to use up his savings. He came to live with us and look for work. His wife Dorothy and their three-year old son Frank, went to live with her family. After a time, he found a selling job in our area where he was paid on a commision basis for sales made. He slept in an attic room that I was finishing. By this time we had rented the second bedroom to one of the Fairchild employees who was a friend. Fannie's family managed to get along and so did mine in Missouri, but in a few years my parents needed help and their need continued until the death of my father in 1947 and my mother in 1952.

In July we started looking for a hospital and a specialist to deliver our first child. Our first thought was to go to a large hospital in Brooklyn where a Harvard medical school graduate whom I had known well in Boston was serving a surgical residency. The combination of the fee of the specialist that he recommended plus the hospital was more than we thought that we could afford. Arrangements were then made with a doctor in Plattsburgh known to Fannie and her sister Adelia who had trained for nursing there. The total estimated cost for the doctor and the hospital was only a fraction of what the cost would have been in Brooklyn. However, we would probably have been better off economically and as far as Fannie's future health was concerned had we gone to Brooklyn and paid the higher price. The Plattsburgh doctor and hospital worked out very well, but Fannie hurt her back in handling the baby in the car on the return to Long Island in too short a time after giving birth to Betty Jane. Anyway, we drove to Saranac late in August and I returned to work. On a hot Saturday afternoon, after I made the trip to Manhattan to work a half day and then returned home, as I was finishing the mowing of the lawn, the call came

that Fannie was on the way to the hospital.

Rather than take my Ford Model A Coupe, I borrowed a newer Chevrolet of my brother. By midnight, I had reached Hudson, New York and decided that I had better stop and get some sleep. For a dollar or maybe two I obtained a room and slept for three or four hours. I arrived at the hospital around 9:00 a.m. but the baby had been born a few hours earlier.

After her discharge, Fannie went to Saranac for a short while. I drove up a little later and brought them back to Long Island. We stopped for the night just south of Troy and drove the rest of the 385 miles the next day. With the road and cars of 1932, and a very young baby, it was quite a trip. Handling a small baby a few weeks after delivery was a new experience for Fannie. She strained herself in lifting the baby from the back seat to the front seat.

My brother's wife Dorothy and four-year old son Frank were living with us at the time. Our roomer had left. Frank and his family remained for several days after we returned with Betty Jane and then moved to Missouri where Frank had a chance to become city engineer for Fulton.

With a baby in the house there were some changes, but in general our life went on as before. We had business visitors and personal friends as visitors. Lee Olive, our second child, was born May 5, 1934. This time we had our family doctor and used the local hospital.

About this time, Mrs. Lumley, owner of the house where we were living, decided that she would like to move back into her house. A little searching uncovered a distress property on Clock Blvd., just outside of the village of Amityville and on one of the creeks running into the Great South Bay. It was a large, eight-rooms but with only one bath, Georgian Colonial on a half acre of ground. It was not in good condition and I had some misgivings as to whether it could be heated economically, if at all, for there was not a single storm window or door. We rented it furnished. The property was owned by an elderly couple that had owned and operated a large furniture store in Brooklyn. They lost their business early in the depression. Next they obtained from the Home Owners Loan Corp, a loan in return for a mortgage on their house. The H.O.L.C. was a U.S. Government Agency established to loan money to home owners who could not get loans through normal channels. As the family's financial condition deteriorated, their only child and her husband lost their home so they moved in with the parents bringing all of their furniture. Finally, in despair, they put the house up for rent furnished, so that two families could take some of their furniture and move into a smaller house. To finish the account, they could not make the mortgage interest and principal payments after a few years so the H.O.L.C. took over the house. We rented first from them, and when they lost the house, we rented from H.O.L.C. and rented the furniture from the former owners. The H.O.L.C. tried to sell the property but there was no market at that time for large, old houses. After a year or so we purchased it from them for a mortgage of just under $7000 and a nominal down payment. The former owners sold us the fur-

niture, eight rooms of it, for $125.00. We paid off the mortgage several years ahead of schedule and made extensive alterations inside the house over a period of years investing at least twice what we paid the H.O.L.C. for the entire house. When it came time to sell in 1955, to move to Michigan, we had a valuable property worth at least $50,000 that had cost us less than $25,000. We had a ten-room house with six bedrooms with a deep-water slip for a forty-foot cabin cruiser and a half acre of bulkheaded waterfront with beautiful trees. Unfortunately, we were able to obtain only $25,000 for it as the "block-busting" tactics of Brooklyn and other realtors started just a year or so before we put the house on the market. A black realtor from Brooklyn bought a lot diagonally across the street from us at a tax sale for practically nothing. She built a nice house for her own use on it. Weekends and holidays she and other real estate agents from Brooklyn would have black families out by the dozens and they would drive up and down our street and others nearby. Every so often, one would buy a house. With every sale, the value of all the other property in the area would go down. We did not actually lose anything simply because we had bought the property at such a low price. However, we did not realize the profit that we could have had except for the "block-busting" operation and the reaction of those in the market for property at that time.

Over the years we did extensive reworking and gained two baths, two more bedrooms and a fireplace. A summer living room with screens and sliding glass windows was added on top of the boat house so we could look down the creek to the Great South Bay and on a clear day see the island where Jones Beach State Park was located. It was a wonderful place to relax in the summer months and for children to play during the day.

The twins, Delia Ann and Sarah May, were born July 14, 1938, my birthday, and the day Howard Hughes was making his famous record breaking flight around the world. Virginia Sue was born November 18, 1941. The Clocks Blvd. property was an ideal place for children. Those in our area generally played at our place and later classmates would ride the school bus to our home with our children and we would later take them home or their parents would come for them. The water was an asset but also a hazard, but Fannie instructed our children about the dangers and she and the household help watched them at all times. All five children were taught to swim at a very early age. In fact, they had their own small private beach with a wire fence to keep them out of the deep water. In spite of this, we would have probably lost Lee Olive if it had not been for a prompt rescue by one of our maids at that time, Finnish Anna. Lee Olive could swim, but she on a heavy sheep skin-lined coat. Another time Delia Ann fell out of a boat that was in deep water and the good judgment of a neighbor boy who got a stick out to her enabled her to pull herself back to shallow water. Our principal fear was more for children playing at our place. They could not always swim and had not

been taught to respect the water. Not only was the Clocks Boulevard home an ideal place for children of all ages to play, it was perfect for parties. And Fannie had them frequently for the children. She started with parties for Betty Jane and had a series of them over the years with the nature of the party changing as they grew older. The parties for Betty Jane were supplemented with parties for the other children. Certain types of parties became standard and were held for each child as they reached a certain age. One was a party where they would come in a costume that was basically the oldest and most ragged that they could find, in effect a "hobo" party. One feature was a pie-eating contest without forks or hands. The prize for the winner was a whole pie. Another standard was a masquerade party. An unusual affair was a formal tea. The parents of the girls were told the nature of the party so the little girls arrived in their best finery. They visited, had their tea and cakes and conducted themselves like little ladies. They rebelled at only one part of the routine and that was leaving at the end of three quarters of an hour or an hour. They did not want to go home. There would be swimming in the summer and skating on the frozen creek in the winter, with hot chocolate and gingerbread in front of the fire afterwards. When it came time for the first school dances at the age when boys and girls were not used to going together, Fannie would have the parents of several boys and girls and bring them to our house. They would be served with dessert or a light supper including dessert. We would then take them to the dance as a group. Later we or the parents would take them home as none of the youngsters were old enough to have licenses to drive.

With a place where our children liked to play and others liked to come and play with them, and where we could entertain, and Fannie was willing to go to the trouble to do it, we reaped several benefits. She knew where the children were until they were old enough to go out on their own. They developed social graces and could be at ease with others. Also they literally grew up entertaining so they could do it when they were grown and on their own. The entertaining that we did of adults for business or friends over the years they were at home, was also beneficial for them. However, it was not until many years later that we learned why they were always so willing to carry empty mint julep glasses to the kitchen and wash them. The maraschino cherry which was often left in the bottom of the glass with some ice retained some of the bourbon of the julep. If it was a big party they could have one of their own.

Fannie did not teach after Betty Jane was born. However, she never lacked for something to do even though we had household help. The school cafeteria was not a very good place to have lunch so she always brought all the children home for their lunch. The Clock Boulevard house was one and three quarters of a mile from school and at one period in time she had to pick up the children at four different schools and due to different times for lunch periods she had to make more than one round trip. Of course, there was prepara-

tion of the lunch and the return trip or trips. As the children advanced to higher grades there was taxiing for sports, band, school plays, girl scouts, church recitals, and all kinds of events. Each year Fannie would be the homeroom mother for one or more rooms. Also she was the perenial seller of tickets for hot dogs, hamburgers, pop, etc. at athletic events with the responsibility for making change and minding the money.

Then there were bus trips for groups of children. She would help numerous teachers take bus loads of students to New York City. She no longer remembers the number of times that she climbed to the top of the Statue of Liberty. Once she and a junior high teacher took fifty to the Bronx Zoo for a day. Museums, special shows in New York City, and all kinds of expeditions were run over the years.

Then there was the church. During our twenty-five years in Amityville there was always several youth programs at the First Methodist Church. Our children were always in them and that meant taking them to and from but, generally Fannie had some part in the various programs. One year the activities for the youth were run by a senior from Union Theological Seminary who would come out for the weekend in the home of one of the youth in his program. As we had five in his program he was practically a weekend guest for a year. We have kept in touch with him over the years, visited him in California and in 1980, made a three-week tour with him and his wife and twenty-five from his church. We visited seven countries, four behind the Iron Curtain and attended the famous Passion Play in Oberammagau, Germany. But back to the church in Amityville. Fannie was also on the official board for several years.

Fannie would take the children to Manhattan with her regularly for shopping. By the time they were ready for high school, they knew the area from Pennsylvania Station to Central Park well enough to get around by subway or bus.

At this point, one other item must be inserted. When we moved into the Clocks Boulevard house, it had a coal-fired steam heating system. Being on the waterfront, the basement was not quite six feet high and there were large beams that came down another eight inches. The basement stairs were at the extreme back of the house and the furnace was more than half way to the front. To get to it, several low beams had to be dodged. Then to get coal in the furnace, it had to be carried about twenty feet on the shovel and thrown into the furnace from a position where it was almost impossible to complete the operation without giving an overhead beam a hard blow with the forehead. When we had a northeast wind, and we had many, it was almost impossible to keep the furnace going enough to heat the house, so it required frequent attention. Fortunately, she knew how to build a coal fire and keep it going as I was away everyday and many nights when traveling on business she had to make many trips to the furnace, often several in the night from the second floor. First to try to get the fire to burn, then to start a new fire and return later to adjust the dampers. After five or six years, we installed an oil burner. There is a story in connection with the oil. We had a 450 gallon

tank, but when we saw World War II rationing coming we bought one of the last 1000 gallon tanks available in our section of Long Island. While our ration allowance would not give us enough to adequately heat our house for small children playing on the floor, we worked out a solution. Our dealer could get oil in the summer, but he had limited storage capacity. We would give him all our coupons and he would fill our 1450-gallon capacity tanks. In March he would put in some more to run the rest of the year. We never had any problems except to find enough money to pay him.

Meat was rationed and scarce. We never had a problem although unannounced visits from delegations of Air Force, Naval Aviation, and aviation officials from our Allies abroad would produce a need for meat. From the beginning, we bought all of our meat from an old fashion butcher shop that had only the finest meat. It was owned by a first-generation unmarried Italian who was in the country illegaly. He knew meat, but when ration stamps came in he had problems as his education had been obtained in Italy and was limited. Fannie would help him with his records whenever he needed help. In turn, he would help us with one and three-quarter inch steaks for a group of visiting officials whenever we needed them. If he didn't have steaks, it would be lamb chops, leg of lamb, or pork chops. But we always had first quality meat for visitors.

Amityville had some fine old families that had social background and money. One of the organizations that they had was the Mary P. Myton Literary Society. It was named for the mother of the founder and had a limited membership. Fannie was invited to become a member a few years after we were married. She was elected to various offices in the group and was president for three terms. She still recieves an invitation each year to their annual spring luncheon. Undoubtedly, she is the earliest living president.

Fannie also became active in the local women's club, soon she was an officer in the Long Island District organization of womens clubs. Before completing her term in this office, she was asked to take an office that would have automatically led to the presidencey of the New York State Federation of Womens Clubs. Reluctantly she had to turn it down because a lot of travel over the entire state would be required. With five children at home, and involved in all kinds of activity, and with my travel requiring that I be away frequently for days at a time, she did not see how she could do it. She put the welfare of the children first.

Fannie had another difficult decision to make in 1940. In our early days on Clock Boulevard there was an older man who was a realtor. He lived below us, nearer to the Great South Bay, and had a small office at the intersection of Clock Boulevard and the Merrick Road. He was semi-retired, but he represented the Home Owners Loan Corporation, so we had some dealings with him, handled mostly by Fannie. He offered her a partnership in his business, training, and help in securing a license to sell real estate. Had she accepted and had the time to hold on until the end of World War II, she could have

easily made a fortune when the population wave moved out on to Long Island, Reluctantly, she turned down the chance. The twins were only two-years of age, and Betty Jane eight and Lee Olive six.

There is one more item. When the children were a little older, she did start doing some substitute teaching. The problem was not getting work, but turning it down. Some system would always be after her to teach for months to finish a term or cover an extended illness. In our last years on Long Island, most of her teaching was in the Farmingdale system. As some of their schools were on two sessions she would sometimes put in two days teaching in one day with double pay. She was in demand for classes where there were discipline problems and taught anything from grade one through eight.

Anyone who does not know us and who had not attended one of our affairs may find it difficult to accept an account of them. There were many and they were all different. One of the most unusual was a square dance. All of us in the compnay had been working under pressure, and for long hours. Tension was running dangerously high, so we decided to have a real party—an old fashioned square dance. There was live music and we had one square in the living room and two in the dining room. Light was from kerosene burning barn lanterns and the seats were bales of straw which were a foot deep over the two rooms before the evening was over. A senior vice-president who was over seventy and had been with Fairchild since its founding, came with real old barn boots that had dried barn manure on them that looked as if it might have been there for fifty years. Just to add to the ludicrousness of his outfit, he had them on the wrong feet. It was a wild but most beneficial affair. Two key people who were to the point where they could not communicate civilly were going around among the dancers before the party was over, one with a broom sweeping straw into a shovel held by the other who would, when his shovel was full, throw it over his shoulder on to all the dancers in the area. Many of the parties were for key Fairchild personnel that had to work together as a team. Others were for visiting customers and prospective customers. There were several roast pig parties when a whole roasted young pig would be served. One of the most unusual parties was just before we moved from Amityville. We had a party for local trades people and their families with whom we had done business for twenty years or more. In attendance there were the two Chinese from the local laundry, the owner of a hardware store, two separate Italian families each of whom operated "mom and pop" type stores, our tailor who was Czech, and others.

For the entire twenty-five years in Amityville, much of the entertaining was business connected. Fannie had always insisted that I regularly call her between for and five in the afternoon and tell her that I would be home in an hour or so with anywhere up to ten or more for dinner. It did happen but only when more notice could not be given.

At this point, a paragraph is in order about our household help. Here again, an entire book could be written. At the first

house we would have a woman or a girl in for a half day or a day now and then to help with the housework. When we moved to the larger house and had two children, we tried to have help each day of the week. One woman who had come from England via Canada, was with us a long time. Later her daughter helped us and we still hear from her. She is now 93 years of age. Still later we had help living at the house and after the twins were born, we tried to keep two women and have them live with us. Finding and keeping good help was a problem from the beginning, but during World War II it was very difficult to find anyone. We finally hit on a plan that worked well for quite a few years. The first shop employee at Fairchild, and our master mechanic during World War II, was Carl Mayblom, a Finn. He lived in an area in Brooklyn where there were many Finns and Scandanavians and he knew many people in his area. Carl would find a young girl shortly after her arrival and recommend her to us. Such girls would have difficulty finding work as they could not speak English. We had several who did not speak our language at all. However, they were clean, strong and good workers. There were times when we would have two. Finnish Anna was outstanding. She had been the cook on a Finnish freighter that broke down in the middle of the Atlantic. Before they could complete their repairs, they had exhausted their water and food. When Anna arrived at our house, she was almost a walking skeleton. Over the weeks that followed, she gained weight. Although she could not speak a word of English, she was a worker and she is the one who waded and then swam out in freezing salt water to rescue our daughter Lee Olive. Anna was with us a long time. Before she left, the second woman was Swedish Anna. She was a good cook, had good manners, was actually charming, but she did like to drink. Her drinking was a real problem, but she too remained a long time. When she left we decided we could get along with day help as the children were older. However, before leaving the subject of help, two girls will be mentioned. When visiting Saranac with the children one summer, Fannie returned with two young girls from farms near Saranac. One was French-Canadian and a clown. The other was a perfect lady. Each was good help. Unfortunately, after a few months they got restless and wanted to go home. As an inducement to stay, we even loaned them a car during their days off, but this held them for only a short while.

In 1936 or 1937, I reached a point where I was afraid that I was going to get sick. I had been working six or seven years without a vacation, putting in long hours, commuting and traveling under considerable pressure. I talked the situation over with Fred Lutz, who was then general manager and he agreed that the compnay would give me a three-week vacation and pay for a round trip cruise to Mexico. Our freight forwarder who handled our airplane and other export shipments arranged for the cruise and obtained at a mimimum rate, one of the deluxe cabins and an invitation to sit at the captains table. Fannie and I hurriedly made our preperations and embarked. In twenty-four

hours I was feeling better, in another day I was well. The trip to Vera Cruz was perfect. From there, after a swim in the Gulf of Mexico and a dinner in a local restaurant we took an over-night trip to Mexico City by train that had some very ancient pullman-type cars.

Although the trip was supposed to be for rest and pleasure, I made telephone calls and found, as I suspicioned, that purchasing commisions for both sides in the civil war in Spain were in Mexico City. Before we had completed our week of sightseeing, I advised New York by telephone that I planned to remain another week or so. We moved into an apartment or suite hotel and started on a most interesting period in our life which has had many.

On the first day while having lunch in La Cucaracha (The Cockroach) with our Mexican sales agent, we encountered a fraternity brother and classmate from Westminister College in Missouri. I had not seen him for about twenty years. That evening Col. Fierro, Chief of the Mexican Air Force, invited us to have dinner with him and some friends. We went to the most famous club in Mexico City. One of the friends was a munitions and military equipment dealer from New York City with whom we had been doing business for some time. He was a Latvian who left Russia after World War I and was a real storybook character. He had been at the table with us in the grand ballroom of the Waldorf-Astoria the night that the opening of diplomatic relations with Russia were celebrated. It was one of the last large affairs planned and supervised by the famous Oscar of the Waldorf. We were guests of the Amtorg Trading Corp. that did all purchasing in the United States for Russia. As it was during Prohibition, no liquor was served, but Cuse, our table mate, had a fist full of prescriptions from doctors. When the bottles he brought with him were gone he went out for more. Cuse was in Mexico selling equipment to Mexico and to the purchasing commission for the communists side of the war in Spain. Some of them were at the table that night. The whole evening was quite an experience for us. The club had three levels with orchestras on each level. That on the second level below ground was the loudest and the activity there the wildest. Down at this level we again found our friend from Missouri—son of a Presbyterian minister and president of one of the principal banks in St. Louis.

A day or so later, with a former salesman—pilot from Fairchild who was living in Mexico City at the time, I made a trip to the Embassy of Spain to meet members of a purchasing commission from the Loyalist side of the war in Spain. He drove and parked on a side street and went to a door that did not impress me as an entrance to an embassy. After a delay, we were admitted by an armed guard. When we had identified ourselves, he opened another door and we walked several hundred feet through a narrow underground passageway. At the end, our escort unlocked a door and we found ourselves in a large office that was more like a library or a study. The door through which we entered, was a secret panel with book shelves and books on it. While no orders were

signed so that I could carry them back with me, we did, in time, get orders from both sides of the war in Spain and from Mexico.

Before leaving the general subject of the war in Spain, one more incident will be mentioned even though it has very little to do with the family lines of Fannie C. Harrison. However, she did have to answer many telephone calls at our home connected with it at all hours and it was a part of the life that we led.

Sherman M. Fairchild the principal stockholder of all of the Fairchild companies, was a close personal friend of Howard Hughes. They were about the same age, neither was married, each was very wealthy and each a man of unusual ability. About this time, Hughes decided that he wanted to sell a special airplane that he had had built to order for his attempt to establish a record for a flight around the world. He never used it because he had a better one built for him. Mr. Fairchild told him that we would sell it for him. And we did in a few weeks. The buyer was to pay for it in United States dollars upon delivery to Havana, Cuba. The price alone was close to two million dollars as I remember and just what Hughes was asking. At first Hughes was very much pleased, then he started calling at all hours of the day and to our house at night to find out who was buying the airplane. I did not know and the man in our organization who made the sale did not know. Finally, he said he would not release the airplane without knowing the identity of the buyer. With some difficulty we determined that it was a buying commission working for the communist side of the war in Spain. When we informed Hughes, he refused to deliver the airplane. He explained that the communists were opposed to everything that he believed and considered sacred. We explained that we might be liable for a very substantial commission as there had been no stipulation that certain buyers would not be acceptable and we had gone ahead in good faith as had our agent. He finally agreed to reimburse us for any commission that we might have to pay. Fortunately, we did not have to pay a commission. This incident is included because it shows a side of Howard Hughes that few people know.

While in Mexico City, our agent and his wife took us to their home in Cuernavaca for a night and then to Taxsco which was just becoming a tourist attraction. We also visited them in their home in Mexico City. He was a mixture of German, French, Spanish, and Indian and she was German and English, having been raised in Guatemala, and had worked for Elizabeth Arden in Vienna and New York City. We knew them before they were married. They had five children and spoke English and French at home, sent the children to German School in Mexico City and let them learn Spanish from their playmates. He was killed in an airplane accident as well as two of his sons and we have lost contact with his wife and the other children.

There was one near crisis before we reached home. While in the harbor at Havana, Fannie went ashore with a party from the ship. I met our agent for Cuba to get acquainted and discuss the prospects for business. On the return trip to the ship,

we stopped to pick up some rum and cigars at places known to him. With a little time left, he started to show me Havana. When several miles from the harbor, he was stopped by a cruising police car and taken to a nearby police station to answer for a traffic violation committed some time ago. Even though he explained that I would miss my sailing they held him. Finally, with rum and cigars, I went in the street and was lucky to find a cruising taxi. He hurried and his taxi did not break down nor run out of gas—frequent occurences—and we made it to the pier. The passenger gang-plank had been pulled in but one for cargo going in the hold was still in place, but they were starting to take it aboard. Fannie and many of the passengers who were at the rail on the upper deck let out a big cheer as I scrambled over the freight gang-plank and into the hold.

When our ship steamed into New York Harbor on the return trip, Don Wilson, our pilot-salesman, circled the ship several times and dived on it with our demonstrator airplane.

At the time of this trip, we had only two children. They had been left in the care of the help that we had at the time. Neighbors across the street checked in from time-to-time.

Before leaving Fairchild and Amityville, there are two topics that fit into our story. One is summer camps. In 1940, we sent Betty Jane, who was then eight years of age, to Silver Lake Camp in Clinton County, N.Y. for eight weeks. It worked out so well that she went back the next year. The third year, Lee Olive also went to Silver Lake. When Miss Martha Samson, who was one of the principal counselors at Silver Lake, bought her own camp on the Belgrade Lakes in Maine, we sent our girls to her camp, and by 1947 we were sending all five for the full eight-week period. While very expensive, considering our level of income, this proved to be a very wise move. In addition to good summers out of doors with swimming, tennis, sailing, archery, riflery, horseback riding, canoe trips and many other wholesome activities, each of the girls by the time that they were ready for college were qualified to be counselors in any or all of the camp activities. Some actually paid part of their expenses by being junior counselors as they grew older and the twins earned part of their expenses by washing dishes when family funds were not plentiful.

Travel with the children also deserves mention. Fannie started when the children were very young to take them to her home in Saranac at least twice a year. Some trips were made by train, but most by automobile. In the beginning when roads and cars left a lot to be desired, there would often be an overnight stop. She made most of the trips with them alone as I could seldom take the necessary time from work. On some she would take the woman who happened to be working for us at the time. The distance was just under four hundred miles and around Ticonderoga, the road led through a section of the Adirondacks with sharp turns and steep grades. The children enjoyed these trips. Fannie's mother had a chance to see Betty Jane on several trips and Lee Olive on one

before she lost her sight completely. She never had the opportunity to see the twins or Virginia Sue. However, she could tell the twins apart as well as anyone using means known only to people who have lost their sight. All of the children worshipped their grandmother, their Auntie Dee, and Uncle George.

We did not get to Missouri so often with the children. One trip was made by train with four of them before Virginia Sue was born. I went to Dayton by Pullman on business and took the two older ones with me. The wife of one of our Air Force contacts took care of them during the day. The next morning I boarded the Spirit of St. Louis to join Fannie and the twins for the trip on to St. Louis and after changing trains there, on to Mexico, Mo. This was quite an experience for all of us. Unfortunately, Sarah May came down with pneumonia and Delia Anne with bronchial pneumonia. Uncle Frank (Dr. Harrison) put them in the hospital and decided to try sulfa which was just beginning to be used. The proper dosage for small children had not yet been determined, so he gave them a little too much. They survived, but were still not well when we made the return trip. We had two bedrooms, each with a lower and an upper bunk. It was quite a trip. Fannie still tells about the trip and the eleven pieces of luggage. In the Jamacia, Long Island station, I had to get these eleven bags from one train to another by going through a third train while she carried two children and led two more. Later, in 1946, we drove out to Missouri with all five children. The oldest was fourteen and the youngest was five. The logistics of that trip were very complicated. One thing that the children will always remember was that we crossed the Mississippi River at Louisiana, Mo. when it was out of its banks and had flooded the entire river bottom area. There was some doubt whether we would be allowed to cross as there was up to a foot of water on the road for over a mile. At one place chickens were roosting on the roof of a house near the road where the water was up to the eaves. When we returned in two weeks, the owners were cleaning out the mud so that they could again occupy the house. We also drove down to the Missouri River one day, which was in full flood and several miles wide.

In 1951 or 1952, James Ogsbury, who had been president of Fairchild for about eighteen years, died suddenly enroute to Florida for vacation. Ernest Robinson, who had been with Sherman Fairchild's father and was assigned to Sherman when he started his first company and was then well over seventy years of age and active only on a part-time basis, was the only officer with more seniority than I had. Contrary to my expectations, he decided that he wanted to be president. To improve his chances, he launched a campaign with the other officers with whom I had worked harmoniously for years, to discredit me. He was not selected, but he hurt my chances. The directors brought in a man selected by a group of new stockholders who had been impressed with the growth of our company and its additional potential. He was supposed to select and groom a successor. However, he liked his new job and wanted to stay. He systematically

set about changing a smooth running, successful organization so as to improve his chances for remaining. A bad situation rapidly deteriorated and in a few months I was asked to leave after twenty-five years. I was given full pay and benefits for a year and allowed to withdraw my portion of a pension fund.

The Fairchild companies had been my life for twenty-five years and Fannie had been very much involved. Fortunately, what was a most traumatic experience at the time proved to be a blessing and one that opened the way to a better life for all of us.

CHAPTER CHAPTER XL

Birmingham Years

Fannie was visiting her home when I was called over to the house of Sherman Fairchild that morning in May. After her return, it was decided that I should go into the hospital for a double hernia correction that I had been needing very badly for some time, but had been postponing rather than taking time from work. After returning home from the hospital, we drove to Boston with the girls. Fannie went on to the camp in Maine with them, leaving Betty Jane and I in Cambridge. On her return, we attended the wedding of my nephew Frank Harrison to Frances Mc Carthy.

When I started looking for a new connection, I found it very discouraging. While I had established my ability to build a business and operate it, this had been done for a company in a highly specialized field. Then, too, I was fifty-one years of age. In time, I found a number of openings for which I was qualified but nothing ever developed. I believe, but cannot be sure, that the then president of Fairchild was damaging my chances by giving an unfavorable reply to requests for information. Finally, in late 1953 or early 1954, in reply to one of my many letters, I had an interview with an executive of the Bendix Corporation in Teterboro, N.J.

This led to another in Detroit with Malcolm P. Ferguson, the president. From it came an offer which I accepted even though the salary was much lower than I had been receiving. It seemed to me that it could have excellent possibilities.

At that time Bendix business was about 70% U.S. Government and 20% automotive components. They wanted someone to work directly for Mr. Ferguson to help them add, through the acquisition of companies and development of commercial product lines that they already had, enough business that non-government and non-automotive sales would be over 50% of the total instead of 10% as it was at the time. While I had never accomplished anything of this magnitude, I had been successful with Fairchild on a smaller scale in every element of endeavor necessary to do what they wanted.

For a year and four months, I was literally on "hold" working out of their large plant in Teterboro, N.J. I had a wide assortment of assignments including some work in acquisitions but mostly I worked to help them obtain commercial business for existing products of their various divisions. They were trying me out and also marking the time until they were ready to go ahead on an ambitious program of ac-

Christmas time 1955 in our Birmingham, Michigan home. Virginia Sue had grown several inches that year and to get the news around plus other information the idea of a Christmas Report originated and this photograph was taken. There have been thirty-one annual reports since then.

The Birmingham, Michigan home on Waddington Road.

quisition. During this period, I had a room near Teterboro and went back to Amityville for weekends. Fannie took care of the children and the house except for such chores as I could do over the weekend.

Finally, in June of 1955, we sold our house in Amityville even though we had to take much less than we hoped to receive. When I advised Bendix I was ready to move, I was asked to move to Detroit. Fannie and I flew to Detroit and rented a car at Willow Run Airport. By dark the next day, we had looked at twenty-five houses and decided on our first, second and third choices. When we learned the next morning that our first choice had been sold the day we looked at it, we made an offer on the second choice. When assured that this would be accepted, we went back to the house and made measurements of the rooms, located windows and doors that would influence furniture placement, then put this on our sketches and went back to Long Island.

For the first time since meeting her, Fannie seemed unsure of herself. After thoroughly covering Birmingham and neighboring communities, which were then, and are still today, among the finest in our country, she wondered if we might not be getting in over our heads socially and financially. However, we went ahead with the move. When we arrived, we found that we knew two people in Birmingham. Jack Fontaine, the man who first interviewed me in Teterboro and who had just been transferred to the Detroit office. Fannie had met his wife one day when we were looking for houses in New Jersey before we knew that we would be going to the Detroit area. The other was the real estate agent who sold us the house.

We decided that the thing to do was to join a church and go to work in it. We did. It was about four blocks from our house and had over 3000 members. Fannie joined a woman's guild in the church suggested by the wife of Mr. Ferguson and soon was

president. In a year or so I was elected an elder in the church, probably due to the recommendation of the wife of our real estate agent who was active in the church as an elder. A fraternity brother from M.I.T. looked us up and helped us get acquainted. A next door neighbor who was an assistant treasurer of Ford and had been just one year behind me at M.I.T. visited us. Fannie was almost immediately invited into a neighborhood group that met informally every Friday morning. She still tries to arrange trips back to Michigan so that they will include Friday and she can be with them. In short, we were in the midst of a group of small town boys and their wives who had made good in the automotive business or some related activity.

Our life there was much better than my career with Bendix. They were not serious about large scale acquisitions. Some desirable ones of medium size that we tried very hard to get would not join us. We did complete one good acquisition and several smaller ones. I traveled constantly making many round trips to New York City, for example, in one day. I was able to help several of the divisions get commercial operations underway but none were large producers of business. After several years of frustration, I asked to be transferred to an opening that developed that I could fill, but without success. By having me as an acquisition and commercial business department, the board of directors did not push Mr. Ferguson too hard to diversify and expand.

When six years had gone by, and I could not see any substantial increase in income ahead in the near future, I became concerned. At sixty-five I would have only eleven years of service with Bendix so my pension would be very small. My savings at retirement would not be very large, so to have adequate retirement income I realized that a drastic move would be necessary.

One small company had been offered to us in 1959 or 1960. While it was not what we really should have been buying, I recommended purchase because I could not obtain approval for anything but very small companies. A tentative approval was rescinded in a few weeks. After careful study, I decided to buy a controlling interest in the company. A little money from the estate of my mother who died in 1952, and some from my uncle, Dr. Frank Harrison, had helped the family finances withstand the onslaught of college expenses and we had only a few more college years ahead. By replacing the very low mortgage remaining on the Birmingham house with a higher one, selling all of my securities, borrowing to the limit against our life insurance, selling the securities that Fannie had, withdrawing her savings, and borrowing the final few thousand dollars from a Bendix associate, I was able to acquire just over 50% interest in Arcweld Mfg. Co. of Grove City, PA (later named Satec Corp.) The balance of the money needed was borrowed from the selling stockholder with the purchased shares as security. This was essentially our home-made version of a "leveraged buy-out" twenty-six years before this method of buying a company became common.

Neither of us wanted to leave Birming-

ham and Fannie particularly did not want to leave. She had hundreds of friends between our church, neighborhood, Bendix, and other activities. We had been told on arrival that Bendix people in Birmingham never did anything together socially. In less than a year, there was plenty of activity and Fannie was responsible for much of it. Then some of our parties for the neighborhood people were classics. Unfortunately, too much space would be required to tell about them. The work around the home was not so great as we had a smaller house and it was only three years old with all new appliances. Most of the time only one daughter was at home - Virginia Sue. The twins were ready for college a year after we moved to Birmingham. Lee Olive was away in school and Betty Jane came to the University of Michigan to get her baccalaureate degree in fine arts, but she lived in Ann Arbor.

It took almost a year to sell our house in Birmingham. Fannie remained there and I had a two-room suite in the Penn Grove Hotel in Grove City. Some weekends Fannie would come to Grove City and others I would go to Michigan.

Fannie considers her seven years in Birmingham some of the most enjoyable of her life. After the first year, all of the children were away except Virginia Sue and for the last few years she was also away. The house was new, smaller than the Amityville house and easy to keep. There were many interesting activities and congenial friends in the neighborhood, the Bendix group and the church. We entertained friends and business associates, we had visitors and we were invited to the entertainment of others. Her work with the young college group of the church was also interesting. Yes, she looks back on the Birmingham years with pleasure and still maintains contacts with many of her friends of that period.

CHAPTER CHAPTER XLI

Grove City Years

The closing for Satec (then Arcweld) was on August 17, 1961. By the time it was over, I was practically in a state of shock. I had been tieing up loose ends on Bendix projects from the west coast to New England in preparation for leaving. Our oldest daughter, Betty Jane, married Angelo T. Cometa in New York City on July 29th. They were both living there and they wanted to have a church wedding and have it there. Amityville was the nearest that she had to a home, but we no longer lived there. Angelo's family was in the Scranton area. As I was traveling back and forth to New York City on business, I took the responsibility for the reception at the Grovesnor Hotel on lower 5th Avenue. It started out to be a small party, but grew to be a big reception with orchestra, bar, full buffet dinner, and dancing. Our family

The Grove City home from the northwest.

The private lane leading to Route No. 208 is beautiful throughout the year. Mountain laurel, dogwood and very tall Norway pines are on the west side of it. On the east there are lilacs and the open field.

were all present along with many Fairchild and Amityville friends from Long Island. At the same time the company purchase was being put together.

The minority stockholder in Satec retained his holdings. He had a doctorate in metalurgy and was experienced in the testing of materials for use at high temperatures. When I took over, the selling stockholder told me there was enough money in the bank to meet the payroll that week. That did not prove to be the case, so I had to add some money of my own from a bank account that was very low. I soon found that many of the accounts payable were long over due and realized that if several of them should get together they could throw us into bankruptcy. So for the first year or so, incoming money had to be carefully distributed among the longest over due accounts to keep the creditors happy.

There were several traumatic experiences over the next few years. The minority stockholder tried to take advantage of a technical default in my payments to the company to steal my stock. Legal and financial help was needed to stop this. When I had cleared this, I bought his interest and sold it to a Pittsburgh company brought to my attention by the Pittsburgh bank where we had our principal account. The new minority stockholder proved to be the most helpful and in 1968 bought my stock in accordance with an option and a formula based on earnings. However, before they took over the minority interest, we had to go to Pittsburgh bank as we needed loans beyond the lending limit of our Grove City bank. I also had to negotiate a large loan from a company in Harrisburg that had been formed to finance small companies that would create jobs in Pennsylvania. We received the first

The terrace at the northeast corner of the house looking southwest across the front.

Our gathering area for birds. In the winter there eight to ten feeders, suet, peanut butter, a heated drinking-bathing fountain, and protection from the north and west winds. During periods of heavy snow it is not uncommon to have two hundred or more birds feeding at one time.

loan they made and paid it back several years before it was due. We also had to watch constantly for efforts by unions to organize the employees of the company. An attempt was made several years before I arrived, and was defeated by one vote.

After a while, we had the business going, and in 1967, my last year, sales were about five times what they were the year I arrived and they were profitable. I found in the company a very fine small group of key people and competent and loyal employees. Many of them are still with the company. They, with one key member of the organization, Ed Granger, the husband of our daughter, Delia Anne, made it possible to increase sales and operate at a profit. Ed Granger had gone to work with Bendix in Teterboro, N.J. upon graduation from Whittenburg University and he came to Grove City to help me in 1962.

Before leaving the first part of our days in Grove City, we will pick up the housing or home situation. It took from August of 1961 to February of 1962, to sell the home in Birmingham, Michigan. As I was living

From the east.

in Grove City at the Penn Grove Hotel, the full responsibility for selling the house rested with Fannie. She was there alone and it was a bad winter in the area with more than the usual amount of snow and ice.

One interesting incident during this period revolved around a national metals show held in Detroit that winter. It shows the ability of Fannie to accept unusual situations. I realized we should have a booth

and display our equipment. However, we did not have enough money in the company to pay all of the expenses including travel, hotel rooms, and meals for the five men necessary to look after our interest at the show. I decided that we could swing it, if the men would stay at our house and if Fannie would be willing to have them. We had three bedrooms with beds for five that were not being used. She was willing and so were the men, so we went ahead. Fannie would feed them a good breakfast and have a snack laid out in the library when they came in around midnight each day. It all worked out fine. The men enjoyed it, we obtained some badly needed orders, our total costs were low, and Fannie had someone in the house for a week. However, she had not thought to tell the neighbors what was going to take place. When they would see several strange cars in the yard in the morning and men coming in around midnight, they naturally wondered what was going on as they knew that she was supposed to be alone and that I was in Pennsylvania.

Fire wood, mostly from the place, cut and split by the author. An evening fire in the fireplace is routine during the cold months.

As soon as I came to Grove City in August of 1961, I started looking for a suitable house to buy whenever we sold our home in Michigan. On some of her many trips down to Grove City, Fannie would join me in looking at houses. I had seen one the first month that I was in Grove City that looked like it might be a good possibility. However, the real estate agent said that it could not be bought. It belonged to an officer of the Cooper-Bessemer Corp., the principal industry in town, who was stationed in New York City and lived in Conneticut. I had two mutual friends ask about selling the house to me. He would not consider parting with it as he hoped someday to return to Grove City and live in the house. At the time it was rented and he was feeding thirty beef cattle in the barn using local men to take care of them.

Once we had sold our house, we had to find a place to live. Fannie was here for a weekend in February and with me at the hotel. Elaine Pompa, who was managing the hotel at that time, knew that we needed a place to live and that there was only one that appealed to us. The owner of that place, Michael Pollock, happened also to be at the hotel that weekend so she introduced us. We told him of our interest in his property but he gave us no indication that he would be willing to part with it. However, the next day, which was Sunday, he invited us to go down to the place and see his cattle. We accepted and met him at the barn at the appointed time. The cattle were being fed. It was muddy around the barn and the floor of the barn was wet. He observed that each of us were

Down through the center of the grove of tall Norway pines to the west of the lane there is the "Avenue of the Pines". It starts just west and north of the house and runs almost to the public road.

wearing rubbers and that we were perfectly at home in a barn. Fannie picked up a kitten that the caretaker kept in the barn. We looked the cattle over carefully and asked questions that showed each of us had been around farms. The next day Mike Pollock came to our table at the hotel and announced that although he had a tenant in the house, he could and would move them out and lease us the house with an option to buy the entire place - house, garage, barn, and fifty-two acres of land.

The barn from the yard with the Grove City Country Club No. 1 green just beyond the thin line of trees.

He was concerned about the condition of the house and the lack of care that the current tenants were giving it. He made arrangements for us to inspect the house. While we were in it less than a half an hour, each of us, but particularly Fannie, could see possibilities in spite of the clutter, furnishings in poor taste, and just plain old dirt and filth. Before the end of another day, we had agreed on terms, and his attorney was instructed to draw up a lease with the option to buy. The rent was nominal, but we agreed to pay for any redecorating and mainteneance inside of the house. Our other responsibility was to take care of the yard, but he agreed to paint the house whenever it needed painting.

Our water comes from the spring in the small house shown in this picture. It is pumped to the barn and the house. It is always cold and there is no clorine in it.

As soon as the tenant moved, we went into the house with a painting contractor and a builder. We put in a new tiled bath to replace an old one, built-in wardrobes were torn out of several rooms, doors were closed up, baseboard heat was installed in several rooms to eliminate big radiators,

Looking west across the fields.

and everything was painted and repapered. An interior decorator came up from the Joseph Horne Co. in Pittsburgh to help in selection of carpets, drapes and furniture. The last operation was scrubbing and scrubbing to get the place clean. The project was started the first of March and we moved in the first week in May. On a house where we had only a two-year lease, we had spent over $10,000, but the rent was very low, and we did have a wonderful place to live.

When the two years had passed, we decided to exercise our option and buy the place. I was still over-extended financially in connection with the purchase of the company, so my personal finances were not in good shape and the company was not yet profitable. However, I was able to arrange for the necessary money and went ahead with the purchase. In so doing, the previously mentioned technical default in my contract to purchase the company occurred. I informed the minority holder of this and told him I would correct it in a week or so. It was in this period while Fannie and I were in Harrisburg to arrange for badly needed financing for the com-

Mermaids in a farm yard near Grove City? No! Contestants lined up for the girl's sack race at the church picnic. This was just one of a day of hillarious events, good food, and good fellowship.

pany, that he tried to get possession of my stock which was held in escrow in connection with my notes.

Mike Pollock never expected us to exercise our option and he was very unhappy about losing his place. He loved it and we always tried to make him feel at home whenever he would come back to Grove City on business or just to visit family and friends. He had not been entirely fair to us as he held out seven acres and we did not discover it for several years. We bought and paid for fifty-two acres which we understood was the entire place (which actually had fifty-nine acres). Also, between

Fannie, the perfect hostess, ready for the charge of the brigade of very hungry guests. A great time was had by all at her parties, as always! After all she was a part of giving parties since before she can remember.

the first agreement on terms and the signing of the contract, he insisted on raising his price $10,000.00. We went along with him as his first price was low. Today, after giving away and selling four acres, the place is probably worth about ten times what we paid for it. Of course, considerable money has been spent to improve and enlarge the house.

In August of 1968, just a little over a month after my majority interest in Satec was sold, plans were made for our youngest daughter, Virginia Sue, to be married here at our home. It was supposed to be primarily a family affair, but the number to be invited always increases. It was decided that the wedding would take place on the flagstone terrace with the old reed organ from Fannie's home moved out on the terrace. In case of rain, we would have the wedding inside. The reception was also to be outside. Our first plan was to have a tent so we would be protected from the rain, but after trying to find a suitable one, we cleaned up the upper level of the barn so that we could hold it there. The weather was perfect and the whole affair was beautiful. The barn was not needed.

All five of our daughters were here plus three sons-in-law and several grandchildren. The day before the wedding, we assembled the girls and their husbands and told them how we, at ages fifty-seven and fifty-nine, had put up all of the money that we had plus all that we could borrow to buy a fifty-one percent interest in a company that was operating at a loss and was on the verge of bankruptcy. We went on to tell how in seven years the business had built up to be very profitable and finally had been sold for a substantial net gain. We were able to announce all notes, loans, mortgages, and other obligations had been paid so that there were no longer any obligations of any kind and that there was enough left for a comfortable retirement. We then produced a number of documents of indebtedness amounting to more than a quarter of a million dollars and burned them.

Not long after arriving in Grove City, Fannie was asked to become a member of a small group known as the Literary Society. All members must approve new members. She has enjoyed working with this group and over the years has held every office including that of president. Our daughter Delia Anne Granger is also a member.

Fannie also served our Presbyterian church as Ruling Elder. In addition, she with another member, had the responsibility for planning and carrying out the program to raise funds to operate the church for a year. They were very successful and went beyond their goal.

CHAPTER XLII

Retirement and Travel

Part-time employment with Satec after selling my interest, did not prove to be a good arrangement for them or me. So before the end of 1968, I retired completely. We considered moving, but after a time decided that it would be best to remain in Grove City for a while at least.

We had no definite plans but to do as much travel as our financial situation and health would permit. One additional possibility that we considered was to layout a residential development with about thirty one-acre lots and an established minimum of $150,000 or some such sum for homes. Acquisition of additional land for more lots and houses was contemplated. However, after our daughter and her husband, Ed Granger, built a home on the farm and

Fannie and Crockett, August 1972.

Fannie and daughter Delia Anne, at the National Congress of the Sons of the American Revolution in Philadelphia, Pa. in 1976 celebrating the 200th Anniversary of the signing of the Declaration of Independence. Fannie, with Betty Hayes, wife of the president general of the Pennsylvania State SAR, was responsible for hospitality and all other activities for women attending the congress.

a close friend and his wife built another, we decided that we preferred the seclusion of the remaining acres and that the land with its long common boundary with the Grove City Country Club would increase in value with each passing year. We very soon settled into a pattern of domestic and extensive foreign travel with the enjoyment of our pleasant home situation in between trips. Frequent trips were made to the homes of our children and they and the grandchildren have come here often.

Having decided to remain on our farm, we determined to make it as comfortable as possible. On to the back of the house a substantial one-story addition was added. In the new part plus the space formerly devoted to a kitchen, a one-half bath and a small porch we obtained a library, a bedroom, a full-bath, a kitchen, a laundry, a half-bath, a back entry and storage room, and a large two-car garage. We essentially

Grandchildren present in Grove City for the 40th Wedding Anniversary, August 1970. Front, from the left, Melinda-Lee Koogler, Gregory George Granger, Helen Lynn Granger, Allison-Lee Cometa and Thomas More Cometa. Standing, Ariane Katherine Cometa, Jennie Elizabeth Granger and William Harrison Granger.

For the 50th Anniversary gathering there were also grandchildren present. Front row from the left, Hillary-Beth Koogler, David Aaron Forstot, Victoria Anne Cometa, Corinne Isabel Forstot and Sharon Lynn Koogler. Second row, Melinda-Lee Koogler, Gregory George Granger, Helen Lynn Granger, Allison-Lee Cometa and Thomas More Cometa. Back row, Ariane Katherine Cometa, Jennie Elizabeth Granger and William Harrison Granger. The size and number of grandchildren does seem to change in a ten year period.

doubled the floor space of the house. More recently, by using some screen panels saved from the old porch, we convert the garage each year into a summer living room or family room.

After the addition to the house was complete and the trip to Hawaii was made in 1969, I decided to start collecting information on my family lines so that I could write and leave in printed form a book on our family. I also started to collect information for a similar book on the family lines of Fannie. Over the years I had come to realize that the story of our families was in essence the story of our country. I was motivated in part by the realization that it would be very difficult for someone of a later generation to put such an account together as they would not have the unrecorded family history

that I had learned from my father and others and what Fannie had on her family. When I started, I thought that it would be interesting, but as I progressed I found it more and more interesting. I made numerous and lengthy trips to Kentucky, Missouri, and Virginia. I also carried on an extensive correspondence and retained record searchers and genealogists to attempt to find information in places and at times where and when it was not practical for me to go. The more I searched the more interesting the project became and the more that there was to do. Finally, after nine years and at the age of seventy-six, I decided I had better finish the manuscript and get it printed or my descendants might have only notes, letters, and assorted photocopies from books, etc. Fannie agreed because she claimed that she was a "book widow." The finished book of 748 pages, printers type, illustrated, and with a hard cover was delivered in April of 1981.

In 1969, I also started to collect information for this book on the family of Fannie. I very quickly discovered that this project was going to be more difficult. As Fannie's father died when she was only ten years of age she had learned nothing about his family and nothing had been recorded as his mother died when he was very young so he was raised by George W. Collins and his wife. Finally, with much work and travel plus some good luck, the basic Seavey line was put together, but the Washburn line required extensive help from a genealogist in Salt Lake City with knowledge of, and access to, the extensive files of the Mormon Church. As with my lines, I have had to write the manuscript and release it for printing without some information that I would like very much

Fannie and Crockett with Dr. Joseph Burke, then president of the University of the State of New York at Plattsburgh, and Adrian Wood, president of the Alumni Association. October 1978.

The corn grows tall on our farm—almost as tall as Missouri corn.

to have. For example, for her great grandmother, Delia Anne Curtis, I have little more than a name, approximate date of marriage, names of children and date of death.

The two projects have taken much of my time, have required extensive travel and in total have required a very substantial investment of money. However, our children and grandchildren and generations to come, have a record in print of most of their family lines. And they are lines of which they can very well be proud. Also, they now know that they have the unusual distinction of having lines that lead to the Mayflower of the Plymouth Colony, the first settlers on the Isles of Shoals off New Hampshire in 1632, the earliest days of the Massachusetts Bay Colony and Jamestown, Va. in 1620 or possibly even earlier. The book on my family lines, *The Allens and the Harrisons of the Kingdom of Callaway* has in addition helped many others add to their knowledge of their own families. It is hoped that this book will help many with lines that con-

Fannie and her daughters. From the right and in order of age: Betty Jane Cometa, Lee-Olive, Delia Anne Granger, Sarah May Koogler and Virginia Sue Forstot.

At the three day Bartholomew Stovall Tricentennial in Richmond, Va. in August of 1984, Fannie and daughter, Betty Jane Cometa, in their colonial costumes met the guests (nearly a thousand) on their arrival at the headquarters hotel and directed them to the various areas of activity. With them is Mrs. James C. Stovall of Watertown, N.Y.

nect to the Seavey, Irwin, and other lines that it covers.

In the first few years of retirement, Fannie had major surgery several times at the Cleveland Clinic in Cleveland, Ohio. Her recovery in each case was satisfactory and each of us has enjoyed excellent health for most of the time.

Our first major trip was to Hawaii. After a few days in a hotel in Honolulu, we rented an automobile and drove around the island of Oahu. This proved to be so enjoyable that when we moved over to Maui we rented another car. With it we

In the old stone church (1800) on Star Island, one of the Isles of Shoals, the members of the Harrison party learn of the early history of the area and the part that their Seavey ancestors had in it. The brackets on the wall are to hold lanterns brought by those who come to worship at night. Today lanterns are still the only source of light in the chapel.

found a much more desirable place to stay and for less money. We kept the car for the rest of our stay and explored the island thoroughly taking advantage of isolated beaches, small restaurants and seeing sights seldom seen by tourists. The total experience was so wonderful that we decided to use rented cars wherever practical when traveling in the future.

In 1981, we wrote the editor of *Plattsburgh Today* the alumni association publication of the State University College of Arts and Sciences at Plattsburgh, N.Y. a long letter about the travels of Fannie Collins of the class of 1927. It was expected that they would take information from it for a short article. Instead, they published the entire letter deleting nothing but adding a half column of introduction. Five pictures furnished them were included. Rather than try to write an account of our travels, the article in *Plattsburgh Today* will be presented in full. Much in the way of details could be added that would be interesting, especially about the trip through

the Transkei in Africa, the night in the native village in Egypt, some of the experiences in Alaska, Australia, Finland, and other countries where we were driving.

THE HARRISON ODYSSEY

A 1927 Alumna and her husband hopscotch around the globe in quest of adventure and enlightenment.

When we have returned to Plattsburgh for reunions and homecomings in recent years, friends who have received "annual reports" from us at Christmas time over the years invariably have asked about the travels described in these reports. In essence, the most frequently asked question relates to how a girl raised in Saranac Village, or Saranac Hollow as it was known many years ago, happens to have traveled so extensively and visited six continents in addition to all 50 states of our country. This is a subject that my husband and I have often discussed. We are still wondering just how each of us happened to make decisions at different periods in our life that have determined the course of our lives. Frankly, we have not reached any final conclusions, but a few ideas may be in order before I tell of some of our travels.

Far-Away Plattsburgh

Life in Saranac in the 1915–1924 period was really quite primitive and the Hollow was a little world unto itself. There was no railroad. Plattsburgh was 16 miles away or over two hours with a fast team or a light rig. A trip there was an all-day undertaking and was not made very often. We had a one room school with grades one through eight only. There was no high school in Saranac. In spite of out isolation and no radio, television, or movies, we had a lot of fun.

In grade school I made up my mind to go to high school even though it involved going down to Plattsburgh to stay for the school year. I attribute this decision to the influence of my mother and a teacher that I had, Pearl Mitchell, who now lives in Springfield, Vermont. Although it was hard for a girl to make money in Saranac at that time, I was successful in doing so. With my savings and by working all through the four years of high school, I was able to manage it.

While in high school I decided that I wanted to go on to Plattsburgh Normal and become a teacher. My mother had done this years before, so I was following in her footsteps. The example of some of my teachers and their encouragement, again was a great help to me.

Another Major Move

While the jump from Saranac was a major one, I decided on an even greater stride when it came time to start teaching. I accepted a position in Farmingdale on Long Island, for the 1927–1928 school year.

At the time, I did not realize that the aviation industry was starting to boom, and that much of it then centered on Long Island. Young engineers, pilots, accountants, and aviation equipment sales engineers were coming to Long Island by the hundreds. One, who, after a while, asked me to marry him, had gone from a small town in Missouri to Massachusetts Institute of Technology, and, after working in Missouri, Cincinnati, and New York City, had come to Farmingdale to join the local airplane manufacturer.

Now about my travels.

I suppose the fact that my family operated a small hotel in Saranac for many years had something to do with the creation of a desire within me to venture out into the world. Over a period of years I had the opportunity to meet and be with people from many places outside of the Hollow, then, while in Plattsburgh, I lived with

12th generation descendants explore one of the Isles of Shoals where their emigrant ancestor, Thomas Seavey, first lived on arrival in America. The small island in the distance is two at high tide. On the left with the light house is White Island and to the right is Seavey Island.

the Howell family who owned and operated the Witherill Hotel. So, again I had a chance to meet and really get to know people from many interesting places.

Travel: The Early Days

My husband was in some phase of the rapidly expanding aerospace industry all of his working years. Many of those years he worked exclusively or partially in export sales. During that period, sales representatives, engineers, and military aviation officials from all over the globe would come to New York City to negotiate for the purchase of equipment.

We entertained many of them in our home. Then, too, my husband had to travel extensively. To the extent that raising five children and doing substitute teaching from time to time would permit, I traveled with him. Between this and vacation travel, we covered most of the continental United States, and even managed to book a trip to Mexico City. The war in Spain was going on, and buying missions from each side and representatives of manufacturers in this country met there. The intrigue was beyond belief, and my husband's company was selling to both sides.

When Crockett retired, we decided to visit some of the many places we had always wanted to see. Our children were all grown up and on their own so we started our adventures with a trip to Hawaii. That was in 1969 when many people were going to Hawaii. However, we decided to do it differently, and in so doing, developed a travel pattern that we have followed for most of our trips.

The 'Odyssey' Begins

After a few days in a hotel on Waikiki Beach, we decided that we wanted to *really see* Hawaii and get to know it. So we rented a car and drove around the island of Oahu. That was most enjoyable. The next move was to fly to Maui. There we rented a car for the duration of our stay of over two weeks. Travelling by car we found a resort colony on the beach with grass huts—each equipped with bath and a kitchenette.

The colony also had a central dining hall that could be used as desired. In those two weeks our curiosity and the car took us over the entire island on all roads and to some places that we were not supposed to go. We ate in all sorts of places, found beautiful secluded beaches where we would be the only visitors, took picnic lunches, and almost decided to "go native."

Later in the year we fitted out a second-hand Buick station wagon that we had and started for Alaska. We crossed Canada to Banff, went on to Lake Louise, and then to Alaska on the Alaskan Highway. We shared the driving, and on the 1,200 miles that were not paved, fifty miles at a time was enough, particularly if it was very dusty or very muddy, and we had plenty of each.

'Top of the World?'

While in Alaska, we covered every paved road except for a few miles, and we sampled some of the gravel ones. A flight from Anchorage for a few days of fishing at a camp on

Fannie and a young friend that she picked up in Brisbane, Queensland, Australia—a live Koala.

the Alaskan peninsula proved interesting, but our most unusual experience occurred during what was supposed to be a one-day trip from Fairbanks by air to Point Barrow, the northern most town on the North America continent.

It was our 39th wedding anniversary. When we arrived at Point Barrow, the fog was so dense that we flew over the Arctic ocean for a long time before we could land. Late in the afternoon, when we were supposed to take off for the return, the fog had returned so we were stuck for the night. Wean Airlines put us up at the Top of the World Hotel—outfitted with curtained compartments with iron beds, and one chemical toilet for all, but with no hot water. We didn't even have a tooth brush.

Our noon meal the first day had been prepared with special food but from then on we were unexpected guests in an Eskimo community of 2,000. We had to eat what we could find. Caribou hamburgers seemed to be the staple food. Late in the second day, we did take off, but we had to share the plane with two crates of polar bears that were being returned to a Hamburg West Germany zoo after helping make a TV documentary.

To return home from Alaska, we took the Alaskan State Ferry down the inside passage. An ordinary one night and all-day trip turned out to be two nights and two days when the ferry threw a propeller. From Prince Rupert, British Columbia, we drove across Canada and the northern United States to Pennsylvania to conclude our 11,000 mile journey.

The Pacific Connection

The next year found us in Tahiti, New Zealand, Australia, and Fiji for a period of six weeks in all. On the two islands of New Zealand and in Tasmania and Australia, we used five different rental cars (covering 5,300 miles) and made eight hops by air from one rental car trip to another. In New Zealand, we visited a 53,000 acre sheep ranch which was accessible only by a one-hour boat trip on a lake. In addition to seeing something of the operation of the ranch, we were served high tea in the English manner of years ago.

We also made a flight down to Milford Sound in the fjord country of southwest New Zealand. When clouds rolled in from the Pacific, our single-engine biplane had to make part of the trip maneuvering in between the walls of the fjord.

Starting for the Lakes of Killarny, Ireland in a jaunting cart.

Driving to the ruin of an early prison camp for prisoners from England was quite an experience on Tasmania.

In Australia, Ayers Rock, Standly Chasm, and Spencer Gap—all in the center of the "Out Back"—were reached from Alice Springs either by chartered taxi or airplane, and we found them to be all that the travel folders claim. Flying out of Alice, we had to go all the way to Townsend on the east coast before the country was dry enough to travel by road, the rainy season had lasted longer than usual.

In five days of travel from Townsend to Cairns in the tropical north, we had twenty-five inches of rain. However this did not keep us from enjoying the beautiful country or from making a boat trip out to the Great Barrier Reef. (We do hope someday to get back to New Zealand!)

Seeing It All By Car

Ireland, England, Wales, Scotland, Norway, Denmark, Sweden, and Finland have all been covered in rented automobiles, but on three different trips. In each country we would get to see things and have experiences that could not possibly be seen or experienced on a conducted tour. We stopped overnight in small country town inns, pubs, private homes, and even a castle.

A side trip to Finland by air took us out to a rural area to meet the owner of a herd of reindeer. We went into the bush via a near broken down Volkswagen bus. The owner, a woman, brought in at least 100 reindeer. Some would eat from her hand.

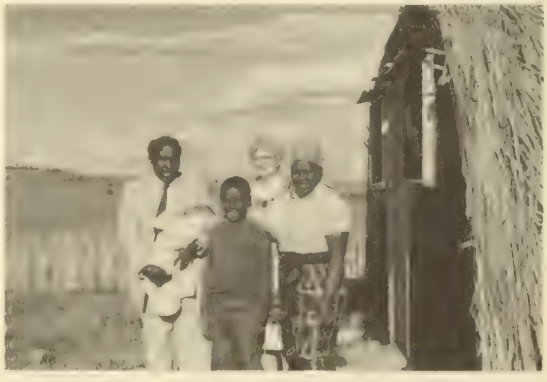
On only one other trip have we felt that we could use a rented automobile, and that was in South Africa. We flew to Johannesburg, with a two day and two night stop in Rio de Janeiro to break the very long trip. When we could not get reservations on the famous Blue Train to Cape Town as planned, we flew there. After an all day bus trip down the Cape peninsula to the Cape of Good Hope, we returned to Cape Town and took off the next day for Durban by car, travelling 1,300 miles north and east along the coast of the Indian Ocean.

Sloppy Homework

First, however, we had to get our visitor's permits to buy gas on Saturdays and Sundays, as all gas stations in South Africa were closed weekends, to conserve fuel. By Sunday we started to run low on gasoline. We had to find a station and then convince the owner to open it for us. This involved going to the local police station, obtaining the name of the owner and waiting for a call from him confirming he would open his station.

It was on this trip that we had failed to do our homework adequately, and nearly encountered serious trouble. We did not realize when we started that we would have to go through Transkei, one of the new, all-Black Republics established by South Africa to be a homeland for some of their people. Actually, it was so new that it was not even on our map.

Since it was so new, we could get very little information as to what would be involved in exiting South Africa and entering Transkei, and then reversing the process. Enroute, we learned that ahead of us there was, of all things, a Holiday Inn. By driving late we reached it and



The Reverend Sam, his wife and two children in front of their new home in the Maasi country near Nairobi, Kenya, Africa. The Rev. Sam was trained by the Rev. Lowry and Margaret Anderson during their long stay in the Maasi area of Africa. He met us in Nairobi and gave us a full day tour of his country and his work.

violated one of our cardinal rules as we prefer to stop at locally run establishments rather than "exported Americana." We were given reasonably complete information and, to our amazement, we learned that there was a Holiday Inn in Umtata, the capital of Transkei. Also we were advised that we would not be able to make it all the way to Durban the next day, so we accepted an offer to make reservations.

'Holiday' in Umtata

We were never so glad to see a Holiday Inn as we were to see the one in Umtata the next night. On arrival, after dark, we discovered we were probably the only whites in the town.

But, going back a bit, we learned we had to clear customs and immigration to get out of South Africa, and then clear customs and immigration to get into Transkei. The Transkei officials were not sure of themselves as full procedures had not been worked out, but they were polite, although very slow.

All of this took place in temporary wood sheds where the heat was intense and the dust overpowering, and where there were no screens to protect from the millions of flies. The procedure had to be repeated, but in reverse the next day.

Our small tour bus stops so we can visit with a group of friendly llamas and alpacas on a mountain road near Cuzco, Peru. Fannie is in the door trying to decide whether to join the crowd.

South of Durban, and overlooking the beautiful Indian Ocean beaches, we visited overnight with a woman from the hometown of my husband in Missouri.

Small World

She had met a man from South Africa when they were both doing graduate work at Columbia University. She has lived in South Africa ever since.

From Durban, we flew back to Johannesburg. Before leaving for Kenya, we were entertained and driven to Pretoria, the capital, by a couple that traveled in Norway with us several years earlier. In Kenya, we enjoyed a long interesting afternoon in Maasai country with a native minister who had been trained by some missionary friends of ours. And we embarked on a six day safari, where we traveled with a native driver-guide and three others in a Land Rover. That was something that will not soon be forgotten.

For one thing, I had only one outfit that had to be purchased in less than an hour on a Saturday morning with money supplied by KLM Airlines, as my travel bag, with all of my safari outfits, went on to Amsterdam instead of being put off at Nairobi with us.

Sleepless Night in Luxor

In Cairo, we joined up with a conducted tour to see the Pyramids and the principal points of interest in Egypt. Everything was wonderful, including a camel ride, until our tour conductor found that our airline reservations from Aswan to Luxor, which had been made months before, had been cancelled. The same was true of our hotel reservations in Luxor. Consequently, we had to travel all day along the Nile by bus in the dust and intense heat. On arrival, six of us were sent by Land Rover on a wild 25-mile ride down the Nile to a native hotel in a small town. It was dark when we arrived. There was no dinner until about ten o'clock, there was only one bathroom for our entire floor, and it had probably been removed from one of the pyramids.

A Nubian with turban and scimitar had to stand guard outside of our door all night as there was an open stair to the street. No one in the hotel, including our driver, spoke English, and our tour director had our passports and airline tickets. Now we can look back on all of it as an experience, but at the time it was a bit harrowing.

Smaller World Yet!

For the Far East and around South America, we selected guided tours because on our own by rented automobile was not practical. The Asian trip included Japan, Taiwan, the Philippines, Singapore, Bali, Thailand, and Hong Kong. In South America, it was Colombia, Ecuador, Peru, Chile, Argentina, and Brazil.

Even on conducted tours with tight, preplanned schedules, we found that we could flavor them to suit our special desires by visiting friends and associates from export days. My husband even met a cousin from Missouri in the lobby of the Imperial Hotel in Tokyo. Neither knew that the other planned to be there. And, at a small hotel in the mountains of Japan, we ran into two couples that had been with us on the ill-fated Egyptian trip.

An extended cruise down the west coast of Mexico from Los Angeles convinced us that we did not want to take cruises. However, two stops at lower California ports and two at resort cities on the West Coast of Mexico were worthwhile.

Behind the Iron Curtain

Our most recent trip was different—three weeks by chartered air conditioned bus from Zagreb, Yugoslavia through Bulgaria, Romania, Czechoslovakia, Hungary, Austria and on to Oberammergau in West Germany, and home from Munich. The tour was conducted by a Methodist minister we first met on Long Island when he was in the seminary. All of the people were from the Los Angeles area where he now has a church. Four of the countries visited are behind the Iron Curtain. Very revealing.

The Passion Play at Oberammergau, something that I have wanted to see for years, was wonderful and far beyond my descriptive powers. It has been given since 1634, and is normally performed at ten year intervals. However, there was a special performance in 1984, the 350th anniversary of the first performances. About one-half million people attend the performances a year. I recommend it strongly, but I suggest you start on reservations early.

Yes, a lot has happened since a wonderful mother and dedicated teacher encouraged me to go to Plattsburgh to high school, and from there to Plattsburgh Normal.

There have been only two trips out of the country since Fannie had heart surgery in April of 1981. The first was a two-week trip through the Panama Canal. We flew to Puerto Rico, cruised through the Carribean, through the Canal and on to Los Angeles with stops at interesting South American and Mexican ports. From Los Angeles, we flew home. It was a wonderful two weeks and a trip that we had been wanting to take for years and may even take again.

The second trip out of the country was made in late August and early September

Seavey descendants and connected Harrisons who spent the day on Star Island, one of the Isles of Shoals.

of 1984. We had just concluded the Bartholomew Stovall Tricentennial in Richmond and neighboring Powhatan County, Virginia. I, along with other Stovall descendants, had worked on this for two years. We had a thousand family members at three motels for three days. The final day there was an all-day picnic on the site of the original land grant of Bartholomew Stovall. Fannie and Betty Jane were official hosts and in their early Colonial Virginia costumes greeted the arriving descendants.

With this project out of the way, we decided to visit the Maritime Provinces of Canada. We took the ferry from Bar Harbor, Maine to Nova Scotia. For two weeks we wandered in our own automobile through the three Maritime Provinces of Canada. Return was by way of Quebec Province and Plattsburgh, N.Y.

In some respects Fannie has not been as active in recent years as formerly, but

Fannie and her cousin, Sylvia Fitts Getchel. She is the author of *The Berrys By the Beach, Marden Family Genealogy, Lamprey River Village, Historical Map of Newmarket, N.H.* and a new book still in preparation. August, 1985.

The clam bake at the 55th Wedding Anniversary Gathering at Rye, N.H. proved to be a day of disaster for the clams and lobsters of the nearby waters. The Isles of Shoals are about nine miles at sea in about the center of the picture.

when looking back over the past nineteen years there seems to have been plenty of activity. The church decided to have a picnic for all members and the first idea was to have it in our very fine Grove City Park. Fannie invited them to have it here. The first year we had nearly 300 and the second almost as many. Those attending brought their own food, but there was still a lot of work getting everything ready and helping by supplying basic facilities and the things that different ones forgot to

The usual type of Harrison family activity. A routine operation such as packing a car for the departure of a family member can become a riot.

bring. Warm dishes had to be kept warm and others had to be kept cold. Then there was the horseshoe pitching rink, badminton, croquet, sacks for sack races, eggs for an egg-throwing contest. Everyone had fun, but particularly the children who jumped in the hay at the barn.

A delegation from the Chamber of Commerce of Samburi Game Preserve, Kenya, Africa comes to welcome us.

Speaking of the barn, it is no longer used for the purpose for which it was built. However, a young couples group at our church had a square dance there. A youth group has also used it for a dance and the summer bible school of our church and another had their final session there a year ago with about 300 young people and their parents present. Girl and boy scout groups have also used the barn.

The wedding of Virginia Sue at our home in 1968 has already been mentioned. The ceremony was outside on a flagstone terrace and there was shade for half of the area and bright sun for the other half. The ushers asked the guest whether they preferred sun or shade rather than whether they were friends of the bride of the groom. Sean, the very well trained Irish Setter dog of Virginia Sue, made her own decision and was her own usher. Just as they started the wedding ceremony, she took a place beside Virginia Sue. The buffet meal was prepared by Della Smith of the Penn Grove Hotel and served from a station wagon. The guests included Malcolm Ferguson, the president of Bendix, who drove to Grove City from Detroit with some friends from Bendix and Birmingham. Virginia Sue was a great favorite of Malcolm Ferguson and his wife. It was through her (Vera Ferguson was an alumna) intervention that we had been able to get Virginia Sue into Elmira College in Elmira, N.Y.

Fannie preparing to kiss the Blarney Stone in Blarney Castle, County Cork, Ireland.

when it was decided at the last minute that it would be desirable to have her go there.

A brief account of some of our wedding anniversary gatherings or celebrations should be included. They were unusual and different. For many years we did not plan anything special for wedding anniversaries as they would come along. The first was our twenty-fifth in 1955. We had only recently moved to Birmingham and were just beginning to make friends. The girls who were at home at the time invited, without our knowledge, a few people for dessert and the evening. It was a very quiet affair and really did not get underway.

The next was our thirty-ninth in 1970 when we were grounded by fog at Point Barrow on the Arctic Ocean. That was a most unusual situation and is not one that will be forgotten. Although it was the twenty-eighth of August it was cold. We had been issued, on arrival, fur-lined parkas, hats and boots and although there was some heat in all buildings we were chilled most of the time. The noon meal had been good because it had been planned for us. For the evening meal, we had to take what was available in the local restaurants. As I remember, it was a choice between scrambled eggs and bacon, beans from a can and caribou burgers. There were about twenty of us in what they called a hotel. The rooms were small spaces with curtains separating them from the others and double deck iron beds. One chemical toilet at the end of the hall and one wash basin with only cold water constituted the total toilet facilities available. I remember scrounging in a trash can and finding an empty bean can. This was taken to our curtained cubicle so that we would not have to go down the long hall without a robe if we had to get up during the night. We had no pajamas and no robe of any kind. It was an experience. The next day our lunch was a caribou burger—quite a wild game taste.

In 1980, we decided to have a family gathering to celebrate our 50th anniversary. The children and relatives were invited and asked to have the 28th of August thru the 31st clear so that they could be with us. We had no more than done this until we had a chance to visit Yugoslavia, Romania, Bulgaria, Hungary, Czechoslovakia, Austria and Germany including tickets for the Oberammergau Pageant with a party from California led by the Rev. George Walter and his wife. When he was in Union Theological Seminary in Manhattan he had been minister to the youth of our church in Amityville, Long Island. He would stay at the homes of the children when he would come out over the weekends. As we had five children in his youth group, he was at our home many weekends. As return from the three-week trip was not to be until August 18th or just ten days before our anniversary we had some misgivings about going. However, our girls assured us that they would proceed with the plans while we were gone. This they did but we never realized that they would get carried away with their planning. The trip was a wonderful experience, but really too much for people our age. Incidentally, the group of about thirty had a surprise dinner for us in a very fine restaurant in Budapest, Hungary. We

were on high ground overlooking the blue Danube which is no longer very blue.

All of the girls were here with husbands and children. Fannie's sister and first cousin Kermit Irwin and his wife Bertha drove down from Plattsburgh, N.Y. Fannie's nephew Harold Cromie and wife Ruby were also here from Saranac. My nephew Frank Harrison, his wife Frances, son David and daughter Beth drove out here from Kennebunk, Maine. My first cousin James Harrison and wife Margaret drove through from the St. Louis, Missouri area.

For the affair, our two-car garage adjoining the house had been converted into a summer living room. This was the gathering place for everyone. On the first day, some of the girls kept urging Fannie and I to get dressed for the dinner as they planned to take some pictures before departing for the dinner at the Sheraton-Shenango Inn near Sharon, Pa. a distance of twenty-five miles. We did change clothes and I was serving drinks when our minister, the Rev. James D. Bigley, drove up to our garage-summer living room. Unknown to us, a formal, full reaffirmation of our wedding vows was scheduled to be held on the terrace complete with flower girl, ring bearer, attendants, etc. This proved to be the beginning of a program to not only duplicate our original wedding but to supply everything that was missing from that spartan ceremony that took place at the lowest period in the Great Depression.

When we were ready to leave for the Sheraton-Shenango, Fannie's gold Cadillac (very appropriate for a golden wedding anniversary although it had been purchased several years earlier) pulled into the yard. We quickly realized where all of the grandchildren had been all afternoon. It was decorated like no car had ever been decorated before. There were pom-poms, streamers, signs and even shoes and tin cans dragging behind. Harold Cromie, who had just served me as best man in the just completed wedding re-affirmation ceremony, drove the car the twenty-five miles to Sharon.

After an excellent full course dinner in a private room, there was a wedding cake. This, of course, was something that we had not had in 1930.

The next day, Ed Granger and I barbecued a whole sheep over a bed of coals in a pit that had been dug a few days earlier. I had started the apple wood fire at 5:00 a.m. The sheep, held in a frame that Ed had had made at Satec, was put on about 9:00 a.m. It was turned every fifteen minutes and basted with sauce that Ed and I concocted from various recipes. The smell of the barbecue was heavenly and the cooked barbecue was delicious.

In our absence, the children had taken our Christmas Report card file of addresses and advised all of the nearly four hundred people of our anniversary. The reply cards came in by the hundreds. Someday we will take the time to evaluate the number of times our parties, our Missouri version of a Kentucky Mint Julep and our annual Christmas Report were each mentioned. The latter was probably mentioned the most often as all had received it. But the others were mentioned many times.

For our 55th anniversary we decided to do something different. Several years ear-

lier, to do research in the area where the emigrant Seavey ancestor and connecting lines had lived, we decided to spend some time there. We wanted to visit the Isles of Shoals off the coast of the Portsmouth-Rye area of New Hampshire. As has been mentioned earlier, to do so we had to sign up for a one-week conference of the Star Island Corp. and the church owners of the islands. We also wanted to attend a meeting of the Piscataqua Pioneers held the last Saturday in July each year in Portsmouth, N.H. Fannie had been accepted for membership earlier. To do both, we would have a full week in between. With great difficulty, for it was the peak tourist season, we obtained quarters at a bed and breakfast place on the ocean in Rye that opened with us as their first guests. While there we discovered that the land on which our bed and breakfast place was located had been owned at a very early date by John Foss, an emigrant ancestor of Fannie, and at a still earlier date by his father-in-law William Berry who the first owner of the land. To get on with our story, we were so impressed with the bed and breakfast, the entire area including the most unique Isles of Shoals and the lore of the early Seavey family and connecting lines that we decided to try and hold our 55th anniversary there and bring together as many of the family as could attend. Norman and Janice Marineau, the owners agreed to take us and really cooperated. They put up, with the help of their next door neighbor, seventeen of us. We all went to the Isles of Shoals for a day. My nephew, Frank Harrison, his wife Frances and daughter Anne and her husband joined us on this trip. On the third day of the gathering, the Marineau's had an old-fashioned clam bake and all of the fixings. There were thirty-five of us. The weather was perfect for all three days. Only a narrow road separated us from the Ocean and we could look out over the water and see the Isles of Shoals where the first Seavey family members lived, starting in 1632. All of our family present saw the old Seavey houses, one dating back to 1700 or earlier, toured two of them and visited the Foss Cemetery looking out over the ocean and adjoining the property of our bed and breakfast place in the back. It was a weekend that all will remember for life.

In 1978, Fannie began to have problems with her heart. After frequent checks at the Cleveland Clinic in Cleveland, it was decided that heart surgery would be a better course to follow than ever increasing medication. April 16, 1981, she had heart surgery. Only one of the two bypasses needed could be completed, and when repair work on a valve of the aorta could not be satisfactorily completed, a new valve had to be inserted. There were other complications and recovery was slow. Such extensive surgery is not common at age seventy-seven. There were severe problems for over six months with the medicines prescribed until a combination was found that would be effective and that she could tolerate. As this is being written six years after the surgery, she is living, at age eighty-three, an active life. She has some limitations, but still does more and enjoys life more fully than most people many years younger.

Your author is currently threatened with a divorce if he ever decides to undertake a third book.

CHAPTER XLIII

Sarah Sophia, George Irwin and Adelia Katherine Collins

So far in this account the Seavey, Irwin and connecting lines have been brought down through the generation of Lawrence Albert and Jennie (Irwin) Collins. In addition, considerable information has been included on life in the Collins house and hotel when Fannie and her sisters and brother George were children. In this chapter some additional material will be included on them.

Sarah Sophia

The first child of Lawrence Albert and Jennie (Irwin) Collins was born June 12, 1902. She was named Sarah Sophia.

Sophia preferred to be outside rather than in the house. As she grew older, she helped her father with the chores around the barn and with some of the work on the farm. Very early in the morning of his death, Jennie Collins was with Lawrence Albert. The doctor had been with them most of the night but when he had to leave on a call he suggested that she call Sophia to have someone with her. Sophia was only twelve years of age, but she would have been company. When there was no response she went searching for her but she was not in the house. After a while she returned. It had snowed during the night, so when she awakened very early and saw the snow, she dressed, lighted a kerosene burning lantern and went up in the hill pasture to get the cows. Of course, it was still dark. I have neither the writing ability nor the space to convey a good concept of what she had done. An adult in daytime has a hard time climbing that steep hill winding between big boulders five and six feet high and getting over smaller ones that cannot be missed. Here, she had gone out alone, in the dark to get the cows out of the cold and the snow and to milk and feed them so she could get to school on time. It is difficult to picture a twelve-year old girl doing this today.

The Cromie home on Burnt Hill as it was about 1940.

This incident tells more about Sophia than could be told in pages of narration.

In the winter they have snow, high winds and bitter cold on Burnt Hill.

All her life she continued to work hard. When married with a home of her own and small children, and a house to keep, she still would help with the work at the barn and in the fields as necessary.

Sophia attended the one-room school near their home. When she had completed all of their grades, she decided that she wanted to take a commercial course. As there was nothing like this available in Saranac or even in Plattsburgh, she arranged to live with John Cromie, a local young man who was married and living in Albany. There will be more about the Cromie family later in this chapter. She helped with the housework in return for a room and board. To go all the way to Albany at that time, about 1918, from Saranac was quite a decision and the step was probably taken only after much consideration and discussion.

When Sophia completed her courses in Albany, she could not find work of the type for which she was trained in either the Saranac area or in Plattsburgh. She did, as has been mentioned in another

Charlotte E. Cromie when a high school senior.

Harold Lawrence Cromie.

chapter, find work at the Vilas Home in Plattsburgh. There she was a cook and probably helped as needed with office records, waiting on tables and cleaning and housekeeping. Her pay was probably little more than a room and meals. In time, she did get office work as a bookkeeper at Lyon Mountain.

December 20, 1920, Sarah Sophia Collins married Frank Mitchell Cromie. She was eighteen years of age and he was thirty years of age.

At this point, the temptation is strong to devote a long chapter to the Cromie family and Frank. They deserve it and it would be most interesting. However, there has not been enough time for the necessary research. A brief account will be given, however, as Frank Cromie has been a great favorite with us and all of our children. Whenever visiting Saranac, they would spend as much time as possible with Frank and Sophia Cromie and their children at their farm home on Burnt Hill.

William S. Cromie was born in the north of Ireland in 1840. He came to this country about 1860 with his brother Robert. William served in the Civil War from Port Henry, N.Y. He was in Company B. After the end of the war, he married Mary Ann

Family members at the wedding of Claude Cromie and Clara Anna Van Dyke. From the left, Harold L. Cromie, Larry, Virginia Sue Harrison, Sherrill, Katheleen (La Pier) Cromie, Clara Anne (Van Dyke) Cromie, Claude William Cromie, Sarah Sophia (Collins) Cromie and Frank Mitchell Cromie. 1959.

Frank Mitchell Cromie, Virginia Sue (Harrison) Forstot and Harold L. Cromie. Taken 1979.

White who was born in 1850, so she was eighteen years of age when she married. He was twenty-six years of age. It is likely that William Cromie came to the Saranac-Peru area after the war and met Mary Ann there. Ever since Fannie can remember, there have been White families living on Burnt Hill. She remembers a William and a James White each with families. They were brothers of Mary Ann White.

William S. and Mary Ann (White) Cromie lived on a small tract of land on Burnt Hill. The original house was built of logs and was essentially a two-room cabin with a loft that was reached by a ladder. They had twelve children with the youngest, twin boys, born about 1892. William Cromie died about 1891 from acute appendicitis. An emergency operation was performed on the kitchen table, but he did not survive. Mary Ann Cromie was left with eleven children and a small farm. The first child had died in infancy. As has been mentioned in connection with other family members there was no public support programs in those days. The only possibility was a Civil War Pension, but if there was one, it was certainly not enough to support a family of twelve.

The children of William S. and Mary Ann (White) Cromie with such information as is available for them follows:

1. Sidney,
   died in infancy.

2. Asher,
   m.—Boyd. One son Thomas.

3. Jennie,
   m. Andrew Boyd. Their children were Ross, Fred and Dorothy. As this is being written (March 1987), Dorothy is living. Her husband William Finney is no longer living. Their children are William, Jr. and Gary.

4. Harley,
   m. Stella Smith. No children.

5. Winfred,
   b. 1876; d. 1959; m. 1st Ruth Fifield, one child, Ruth. m. 2nd Eva Nye (Nay), children, Ralph, John, Laura, Robert, Carroll, and Phyllis. Of these children, Ralph, Carroll and Phyllis are living.

6. James,
   m. Elsie Brant. Children, Anna and Gordon.

7. John,
   m. Minnie Parsons. Children all living. Lucile m.—Chapman; Helen, m. Bob Rogers and Mary m. (Judge) Robert Rice.

8. Eliza,
   m. Ernest Chittendon. Children, Safford, Howard, Dorothy, Raymond, and Royal. All are living except Howard.

9. Ross,
   m. Maude Parsons. Children, Mildred, m. Campbell, two boys; Loretta, m. Sam Palmer, two boys and a girl; William, m. Shirley Jabauet, three girls and a boy; Ross, no information available.

10. Frank Mitchell,
    Information will follow.

11. Raymond,
    m. Velma Bell. One child, Lillian (Rodes).

12. Ransom,
    m. Ada Bruce. They adopted Ethel and Edmond.

Raymond and Ransom were twins.

Mary Ann Cromie, known in her later years as Grandma Cromie, raised her eleven children and every one developed into a substantial, upright citizen and member of the community. Fannie remembers well Grandma Cromie and her eleven children marching into church each Sunday. They all attended Sunday school and all other church affairs. For many years she taught Sunday school classes. They were poor, but every one was neatly dressed, clean and behaved. They all worked and Grandma Cromie always had time to help any neighbor in need of help. She was the first person to bathe Fannie after she was born. To use her words she was "the first to put water on her."

The presence of White families, presumably relatives of Mary Ann (White) Cromie, on Burnt Hill was already mentioned. Two of her children married Boyds. They were probably from the Peru area. As mentioned earlier, there were Boyd and Richey marriages. John and Ross Cromie married Parsons. As has been mentioned, Washburns and Parsons married. All of this highlights the inter-marrying among families in the small community of earlier days.

Grandma Cromie lived on the farm on the hill until her children were grown. After Frank married Sophia and took over the farm, she lived with them for a number of years. In late life, she moved into a small house on Hard Scrabble Road in Saranac near the river. She lived a long and active life and was probably the most widely loved and admired person in the Saranac area.

Frank and Sophia (Collins) Cromie started their married life on the Cromie farm. Over the years, they purchased adjoining land to increase the size of the farm, added to the house, covered the log structure with siding, installed plumbing and electricity, and built a large new barn. They carried on a farming and dairying operation of increasing size until the death of Sophia January 14, 1970. They lacked less than a year of being married fifty years.

Frank and Sophia (Collins) Cromie had these children:

Charlotte E., born Oct. 6, 1921.
Harold Lawrence, born Aug. 15, 1925.
Claude William, born Oct 31, 1936; d. Feb. 6, 1982.

After the death of Sophia, Frank continued to live on the farm for a time. Later he sold it to his son Claude, and he with his wife and children moved there. Frank moved into a mobile home that he pur-

chased and placed on the property of his son Harold on the Hard Scrabble Road either in the village of Saranac or just outside of it. Although he had a stroke, he recovered except that he only partially recovered his ability to speak. He took care of his own home and prepared his own meals except for those brought to him by his son Harold and his wife, and one or more of the many widows in the area who seemed to take a great interest in his welfare. Until the day of his fatal accident, he continued to drive his own automobile making trips to Plattsburgh to shop, go to the bank and take care of personal business. When just six months short of ninety years of age, he pulled out of a gasoline station in Saranac into the path of a large truck travelling at a high speed. He died a few days later.

Charlotte E. Cromie

Charlotte was born October 6, 1921. She attended the elementary and high school in Saranac. In the winter months when there was deep snow and the school bus could not always get to the Cromie house on Burnt Hill, she would stay in Saranac with her grandmother. After finishing high school, she trained to be a beautician. However, it was while working at the General Electric Company in Schnectady, N.Y. that she met Frank T. Barry. They were married November 11, 1950. He was the son of Michael and Edna Barry and was born May 12, 1920.

For a few years they continued to live in Schnectady. However, they later moved to Saranac where Frank helped his father-in-law on the farm and worked at various jobs. He died suddenly from heart failure May 5, 1964.

Charlotte was left with five young children. Michael, the oldest, was just ten years of age and Gary, the youngest was just ten months of age. By hard work she has raised all five children and supported them through high school. For a long time she worked in the food service of the Saranac schools and lived in Saranac. More recently she has been living in Morrisonville and has had charge of the food service in their high school. Currently, she is planning to retire soon and move back to Saranac.

Michael T. was born July 4, 1954. After high school, he joined the U.S. Army. He is an electrician by trade. July 1, 1978, he married Micky Smart daughter of Albert and Beatrice Smart. One son, Jason, was born to this union on July 26, 1983. They were divorced. Michael has since married Patricia Burnell on August 3, 1985.

Charlene A. was born June 29, 1956. She married James Trudeau, son of Ernest and Theresa Trudeau July 17, 1976. They have two children, Erin and Adam.

Susan J. was born March 7, 1958. On August 23, 1980, Susan married Anthony Facteau the son of Andrew and Barbara Facteau. They have two sons, Kyle and Andrew.

Donna M. was born June 28, 1959. She married first on January 25, 1980 John Edwards son of William and Lois Edwards. They have two daughters, Nichole and Heather. On December 5, 1983, they were divorced and Donna married second Ray

Fountain September 1, 1984. They have a son, Matthew.

Gary T. was born January 7, 1963. After high school he served in the Navy. At present he is at home and single.

Harold Lawrence Cromie

Harold Lawrence Cromie was born August 25, 1925. The first name of Harold does not have any apparent family connection. However, the second name of Lawrence is undoubtedly for his maternal grandfather Lawrence Albert Collins.

Starting at a very early age, Harold helped his father with the work on the farm. As he grew in age and stature, he was able to be of more and more help to his father so he increased the scope of his operations—more land, more feed grown, and more cows to milk. When World War II came along, Harold was attending college in Plattsburgh. The demand for farm products was so great that his father, working alone, could not produce to the capacity of his land and farm plant. Good hired help just simply was not available so Harold dropped out of college to devote full time to helping his father on the farm. Working together they increased the output of the farm.

February 24, 1945, Harold married Kathleen La Pier. After the war, the demand for farm products decreased. Harold took over a delivery route for a local distributor of gasoline and oil. He took good care of his customers and they liked him. He earned several promotions and it was not long before business on his route increased to such an extent that he was working very long hours and often on Saturdays and Sundays. Under pressure at home, he left the oil distributor to become a guard at the New York State Correctional Institution at Dannemora. Harold is retiring this year.

In 1954 with no children of their own, Kathleen and Harold adopted Larry. Three years later, they adopted Sherrill. Very few children receive the loving care and have the advantages that were made available to Larry and Sherry. Kathleen and Harold raised them as their own children. Larry married Sarah Neyenhouse January 1, 1982. They have a daughter Jessica born September 12, 1986. Sherrill married Peter Payant June 5, 1982. She is a veterinary technician.

Kathleen and Harold were granted a divorce August 30, 1970.

Harold married Ruby (Carpenter) Collins August 19, 1972. Her first husband Bernard Collins had died January 17, 1964. She has four sons. As far as Fannie and her family and Ruby know, the Collins family of Bernard and that of George Washington Collins who raised Lawrence Albert Seavey are not related.

Harold and Ruby live on Hard Scrabble Road in or just outside of the village of Saranac. All of our children consider Harold their favorite cousin. When they were younger they literally worshipped him. He was just enough older that they looked up to him, but he was always most considerate of them and would join them in all kinds of interesting programs.

Claude William Cromie

The third and last child of Frank and Sophia (Collins) Cromie, Claude Wil-

liam, was born October 31, 1936. The source of Claude as a name is not known. William is probably from his grandfather Cromie whose name was William.

Claude attended the local grade and high school in Saranac. Like his older brother and sister, he would stay with his grandmother and Aunt Adelia in Saranac when the weather was bad in the winter. He helped his parents on the farm. At school in Saranac he excelled in sports. His desire was to go to the State University of New York at Rockport and prepare to teach physical education. Claude would have done very well in this field. He was a natural athlete and even at an early age showed exceptional ability in handling children. They liked and trusted him. As with his sister and brother, our children always enjoyed being with Claude. Unfortunately, if the author may express a personal opinion, his parents not only discouraged him about Rockport, but would not help him financially.

Claude started working in New York State hospitals and institutions. November 21, 1959, he married at the Unadilla Forks Baptist Church, Unadilla, New York, Clara Anna Van Dyke. She is the daughter of Archie Simeon Van Dyke, who was born April 12, 1889 at Ottawa, Canada and Charlotte Anne Bontwell, born September 3, 1916 in the town of Brookfield in Madison County, New York. Clara was born September 27, 1937 in the town of Warren in Herkimer County, New York. She was raised on a dairy farm and graduated from the West Winfield Central School in West Winfield, Herkimer County, New York, majoring in business and art courses. She was the oldest of ten children.

Claude worked at various state facilities but in time returned to Saranac. He moved to the family farm and after a few years sold it. By this time, he was working at the Clinton Correctional Facility-Annex, Dannemora, New York and they moved to Dannemora.

Claude was killed by an inmate when he attempted to help a guard who was attempting to stop two inmates who were scuffling. Claude was well liked by the prisoners and had had no problems with discipline. The inmate who attacked him was immediately transferred to another facility for fear that he would be lynched by his fellow inmates who regarded Claude very highly.

Claude and Clara Anna (Van Dyke) Cromie have five children as follows:

1. Darlene Sarah,
   b. May 14, 1960, Plattsburgh, N.Y. Graduated Saranac Central School with business and secretarial courses. Married first, Joshua Allen Boucher December 31, 1977. One son Joshua Allen Boucher b. May 16, 1978. Married second, Alexander Pete Salano March 23, 1981. They have one son Andre Marcel, b. Dec. 20, 1981. Currently they are living in Englewood, Colorado which is near Denver.

2. Patricia Adelia,
   b. Feb. 4, 1963, Plattsburgh, N.Y. Graduated as Valedictorian of her class at Dannemora Union Free School. Attended Wittenberg University, Springfield, Ohio and graduated 1985 with major in chemistry and minor in secondary education. Currently teaching sixth, seventh and eighth grades at Lake Shore Christian School, Plattsburgh, N.Y.

3. David Paul,
   b. Oct. 27, 1968 at Cold Springs, Putnam County, N.Y. To graduate from Lakeshore Christian High School, Plattsburgh, N.Y. June 7, 1987. Has been accepted at Baptist Bible College East Boston, Mass. To prepare for the ministry.

4. Leslie Jennie,
   b. Sept. 25, 1970 at Plattsburgh, N.Y. Currently living with her sister Darlene Salano, Englewood Colorado.

5. Irwin York,
   b. July 2, 1974. Currently at home and attending Lake Shore Christian School, Plattsburgh, N.Y. York is a family name in the line of his maternal grandmother. Their genealogy has been recorded back to the time of James II of England.

George Irwin Collins

George Irwin was born March 20, 1907. The name of George was probably for his grandfather, George[8] Washington Seavey and also for George Irwin who was a brother of his mother. Irwin, of course, was the family name of his mother. He was born with a defective heart and when very young he had rheumatic fever that further damaged his heart. This and related health problems plagued him throughout his short life.

George attended the local school and later started to attend a high school that had been opened in Cadyville, about six miles from Saranac. He would go back and forth with a horse and buggy. One day he had to come home in a heavy snow storm or blizzard. It was a long and very difficult trip during which he was thoroughly chilled. Following this he was very sick and was

Eleven hunters and one deer. George I. Collins is standing second from the right. He enjoyed hunting and fishing in the mountains.

in bed for almost a year. He never went back to school.

In spite of his health, George grew to be strong and he worked hard. He helped his father with work around the hotel and the barn and on the farm. After the death of his father, he took over much of the outside work and continued with it after the second marriage of his mother. As was the custom in those days in rural areas and small towns, he helped neighbors with their work either on a "trade the work" basis or for pay.

In time George became skilled as a plumber. He took care of this type of work around the home-hotel installing and maintaining the plumbing and doing basic carpenter and other repair work. He also worked for the leading plumbing and heating contractor in the area for several years. For the last few years of his life, he was a millwright for the large Imperial paper plant in Plattsburgh. His responsibility was to keep the production equipment of the plant operating. George could do most anything mechanical, and he always had a large garden each year and there would never be a weed in it.

George I. Collins with one of the two Morley boys who would come to Saranac each summer. They spent every possible minute with George.

For a person with a severe physical hardship, George did a lot of hard work and would put in long hours each day. He would get very tired, but he just kept going. He also liked to fish and hunt. He would go at every opportunity with friends, and he had many of them. As with his work he put everything he had into his hunting and fishing, tramping over the mountains to hunt and along mountain brooks to fish for trout, his favorite sport and pastime. On a visit to Saranac one summer, I expressed an interest in climbing Lyon Mountain which was nearby and one of the highest of the Adirondack Mountains. He knew the trail and went with me. The summit is at an elevation of 3,830 feet so the climb is about 2800 feet or just over a half of a mile of vertical climb. We were up and back in a couple of hours or so and I was exhausted. Even with his heart and rheumatic fever related problems, I constantly had to slow him down. Nevertheless, I was exhausted when we returned to our automobile for the trip to Saranac.

George was always a great favorite with our children. They would get him up early and still be with him at bed time. Pillow fights with Uncle George were eagerly anticipated and thoroughly enjoyed. On one trip he took Lee Olive deer hunting with a group of his friends. She still regards it as one of the great experiences of her life.

Fannie and George were always close as children.

Had our modern medicine and greatly improved medical knowledge been avail-

Edward Morley tries some fancy riding with George to control the horse.

able in George's day he would probably have enjoyed a much longer and happier life. The same is true of his father.

George died May 12, 1948. He was only forty-one years of age. His father died at the age of forty-nine.

The death of George was a great loss for his mother. He was her only son and she had cared for him through his many and lengthy periods of illness. Also his earnings over the years, starting as a teenage boy, had accounted for a substantial part of the income of the family. However, she accepted her loss as she had accepted earlier losses during her lifetime.

Adelia Katherine Collins

Adelia was born February 4, 1910. The Adelia portion of her name goes back to the name of her grandmother Delia Ann Curtis and is an adaption or version of it. The name of Delia Ann Curtis was spelled various ways by different people at different times and some spellings approached Adelia. The Katherine of her name probably comes from Katherine Seavey, a daughter of George Washington Seavey by his second wife Annie Owen. It is likely that Lawrence Albert Collins maintained contact with his half sister Katherine Seavey during his lifetime.

Adelia attended the local school in Saranac which had two rooms during most of the time that she attended. In an earlier chapter, we told how she would ask to be excused to go to the outside privy and while out, run home and ask her mother for a slice of homemade bread and butter. When she finished the local school, she,

Adelia Katherine Collins.

From the Plattsburgh *Press-Republican*, the caption reads—Dr. Cassius D. Silver, retired Plattsburgh physician observed his 93rd birthday Monday with a party at one of the places he knows best—Physicians Hospital. His private nurse, Miss Adelia Collins revealed it also was her birthday and shared a piece of cake the hospital staff provided for the doctor. But she didn't reveal how many birthdays she's had.

like her sister Fannie, went to Plattsburgh to attend high school. In the beginning, she lived with a married daughter of her step father. However, the work that they expected of her required so much of her time that she did not have enough time for study. Another and more satisfactory arrangement was made.

Upon graduation from high school, Adelia enrolled at the Physician's Hospital in Plattsburgh to train to be a nurse. Her course was completed in January of 1933, but she had to put in another month to make up some work that she missed when she had had scarlet fever.

Adelia came to Long Island May of 1934 to help her sister Fannie when our second daughter, Lee Olive, was born. After she had been with us for a short while, she obtained a job at a hospital in Bay Shore, Long Island, which was about thirteen miles east of Amityville.

While Adelia was still in training at Physician's Hospital, her mother began to

Adelia K. Collins with the members of her class at Physicians Hospital for their 50th Reunion. Adelia is on the extreme left.

have serious trouble with her eyes. Treatment included surgery that did not prove effective. In 1934 or 1935, while Adelia was still working on Long Island, the sight of her mother had deteriorated to the point where Adelia concluded that she should go home to be with her mother who was living at the home in Saranac with George, her son. From the time that she returned home, she lived there with her mother and took care of her until her death April 24, 1953. She was housekeeper for her mother and her brother George, around-the-clock nurse for her mother and George, during his final illness, and companion and chauffeur for her mother. Adelia was, and is, a Registered Nurse and a good one. Some of the more recently trained nurses may know more about the newer medicines and equipment, but in general they do not have the compassion for the patient and know and use practices now considered old fashioned but that contribute greatly to the comfort of, and sense of well being of, the patient. From time-to-time Adelia would work at the hospital and take short term special cases there and in the area, but generally to do so she would have to find someone to stay with her mother. This she could not always do and when she did find someone their compensation would consume most of what she would be paid. They spent eighteen years together and no one ever had better care than her mother received.

George died in 1948, but Adelia continued on at the home with her mother. During his life, he maintained the home which was quite old and, in addition, constantly improved it. Although he left the property in good condition, there was maintenance to be taken care of and this additional responsibility fell to Adelia.

After the death of her mother, Adelia continued to live at the home in Saranac. Sophia and Fannie agreed that she should have the home, the land, and the entire estate of their mother except for the hundred-acre wood lot. They took this, and after holding it for a while, sold it for a nominal sum. In a few years Adelia sold the property and moved to an apartment in Plattsburgh. Rather than work as a floor nurse in the local hospital, she took assignments as a special nurse for patients requiring more care than the regular hospital staff could give. She was in great demand and had more requests than she could accept.

From time-to-time Dr. Cassius D. Silver who had been superintendent of the Physicians Hospital would ask for her when he was sick and needed care. The hospital had been built for him and endowed by a Mr. Minor who was a wealthy industrialist. Dr. Silver's request for Adelia as his special nurse became more frequent as his health deteriorated with age. After a while, she was spending full time with him as a nurse, companion, chauffeur, and supervisor of his home. His wife had died some time earlier and he had no children or near relatives. She took care of him until he was ninety-seven years of age, even taking him to his office in the hospital until near the end of his life. He died April 27, 1967 and in his will Dr. Silver left Adelia his large home in Plattsburgh with all of its furnishings and household goods. In addition, his will provided for her substan-

tially as evidence of his appreciation for the care he had received. In time, Adelia sold the home of Dr. Silver as it was much too large for her and would have been expensive to maintain.

After the passing of Dr. Silver, Adelia took a few more special cases. In 1972, she decided to retire. With many of the traits of her father that made him so popular, Adelia has many friends. She is on the go all the time—dinners, church suppers, Harvest dinners, parties, trips all over northern New York and into Vermont. After a lifetime taking care of others, she is enjoying some years of doing what she wants to do. It is the wish of her sister and the author and all of our children and grandchildren that these years may be many and filled with happiness.

CHAPTER XLIV

Children of Crockett A. and Fannie C. Harrison

All five of our children were born while we lived in Amityville, Long Island. Betty Jane, the first was born in 1932 and Virginia Sue, the last in 1941. All of them consider Amityville as their home although Virginia Sue was only thirteen years of age when we moved to Birmingham, Michigan in July of 1955.

Some mention has been made of the children and their life in previous chapters. This chapter will be limited primarily to dates and essential facts as this work is first, genealogy and secondly, biography of family members who are no longer living.

All five girls attended the Amityville public school, but only Lee Olive graduated from high school there. The twins each had one year of high school in Birmingham, Michigan and Virginia Sue had all four years. Betty Jane did her twelfth year work at a private school in North Hampton, Mass.

When eight years of age Betty Jane spent four weeks at Silver Lake Camp in Clinton County, N.Y. The next year she went back for eight weeks and Lee Olive also at-

Home of the Cometas in Montclair, N.J., 201 North Mountain Avenue.

Cometa home on Long Beach Island on the New Jersey Shore.

tended that summer. The next year we started sending the girls to Camp Abena on the Belgrade Lakes in Maine. By the time Virginia Sue was seven years of age, all five were going each summer until they were about eighteen years of age. By the end of their camp experience, each was qualified to be a counselor in almost every type of camp activity such as swimming, sailing, canoeing, tennis, crafts, archery, riflery, etc. The activities and living in close quarters with others proved valuable for all five children.

In 1935, when Betty Jane was three years of age and Lee Olive was one, we moved to the house on Clocks Blvd. It proved to be an ideal place for children. The house was large with large rooms. By the time we made several sets of improvements, we had in addition to a living room, dining room and kitchen; six bedrooms, three baths, a room used variously for maids and an office and a semi-enclosed porch that served as a summer dining area. A separate building that had been a carriage house was an ideal play area and there was a boat house that would accommodate a forty-five foot cabin cruiser. Across the front of the boat house and opening into the yard there was a porch. After a few years, a summer living room with sliding glass windows and screens was built on top of the boat house and a flight of stairs led to it. The yard was large with beautiful old trees. One, a willow, had a limb that extended over the little fenced in beach area where the children could swim. A strong rope

Betty Jane (Harrison) Cometa. 1982.

Angelo Thomas Cometa.

dropped from this limb and was used to swing from the yard over the water. At the end of their travel, as they swung they could let go and fall in the water and often did even when fully clothed. This was very popular with our children and visiting friends. Even at adult parties there would be those who could not resist the temptation to try the swing over the water. Some of these resulted in dunkings—voluntary as well as involuntary. A large tree house was built in this willow tree with a ladder to reach it. Another feature of the place was a stage in the basement with wings, a curtain, dressing area, etc. Much of the time there were many children other than ours at the house and there were many parties for ours and their friends. Very often we would have up to five or six extra children sit down with us for dinner.

Betty Jane

Born Sept. 11, 1932 at Physicians Hospital in Plattsburgh, N.Y. Betty Jane was three years of age when we moved to Clocks Boulevard. She attended the Amityville public schools through her junior year of high school. For her fourth year of high school she attended the Mary Burnham School in Northampton, Mass.

Many colleges for Betty Jane were discussed and considered. Although she did not want to, she agreed to go to William Wood College in Fulton, Mo. The mother of the author was living alone in a large nine room house in Fulton. At the time, fall of 1950, she was seventy-six years of age and not well. Betty Jane lived in the dormitory at the college but she was in the same town and could get down to her grandmother Harrison's in about twenty

Ariane Katherine Cometa.

Allison-Lee Cometa.

Thomas More Cometa.

minutes or less. William Wood was then a junior or two-year college. Just a few weeks before she was to graduate in 1952, she went down to see her grandmother. She was not well and had made an appointment to see a doctor the next day. It would have been her first visit to a doctor in almost fifty years. She was so nervous and apprehensive that Betty Jane called the doctor and postponed the appointment for a day. She also called the college and told them she was staying overnight with her grandmother. Early the next morning my mother died very suddenly from a heart attack. Betty Jane was alone in the house with her.

When in kindergarden or the first grade Betty Jane had to spend several months in bed with a special diet in an effort to clear up a glandular infection in her neck. The work that she did in some coloring books during this period showed a very definite talent for art and costume design. This was encouraged during her childhood. One of the many things her mother did was to attach wide strips of white wrapping paper along an entire side of a room so that she and her sisters could sketch with a free hand on a large scale rather than work on a small sheet of paper. The

Victoria Anne Cometa.

stage in the basement was built primarily for Betty Jane. She not only designed and made the costumes for her plays but would adapt, or even write, skits and short plays which were really quite sophisticated, her age considered.

Betty Jane graduated from William Wood in May of 1952 with an associate degree in fine arts. All colleges and universities have commencement exercises so they are not being given special mention in this account. However, there was something special about the commencement at William Wood in 1952. We did not realize at the time just how special it was. The president of the college was a graduate of a small college in Illinois. For a commencement speaker, he asked a classmate who was a movie actor, and while not a star known to everyone was known to many. We had seen him in at least one movie and did recognize his name. He came to Fulton with his wife the day before the commencement so that they could be present at a reception for the graduating seniors and their parents. Betty Jane's mother and the writer attended. The formal reception line moved slowly as the guest of honor and speaker of the next day took time to converse with each person going through the line. In addition, he remained for the rest of the evening going from group to group to visit with them.

The next day the speaker asked the indulgence of graduates as he put on his glasses and expressed the hope that glasses would not impair his image as an actor. He went on to say that maybe glasses would be in keeping with the occasion and, therefore, permissible. Then he proceeded to give one of the best commencement addresses either of us had ever heard and we had been present for many of them. After the ceremony, there was an informal reception and the speaker and his wife remained for it, again taking time to visit. The speaker was Ronald Reagan and Nancy was with him.

There was a lot more going on that weekend besides commencement. We had decided that there was no practical course for us except for us to sell the entire contents of the Fulton house and then to sell it, also. Arrangements were made in advance, therefore, to sell everything at an auction while we were in Fulton. The widow of my brother, Dorothy Packard Harrison (Mrs. J. Frank) joined us in Fulton. In a few days the four of us burned or disposed of as trash all non-saleable items from a large nine-room, two-bath house. The items to be sold were moved into the yard. It was a beautiful day and many people were present. My mother was known to have some old pieces of furniture and considerable old glassware that she had acquired over a period of years. Two auctioneers worked furiously from early morning to late afternoon. The last item sold was a small pile of bricks that my mother was planning to put around a flower bed.

To have beds for our last night in an empty house, the purchasers of some beds left them overnight for us. In St. Louis on the way out, we had picked up a company rental car that had to be returned to New York city. Into it we packed, in addition to the personal baggage of the four of us, such items as silver, a family bible and a few other books, and the few items we did

not want to sell. The last item was a table that had been in the home of my grandmother Allen and that had been promised to a sister of my mother in Pontiac, Ill. We delivered it, but to this day none of us knows just how we fitted everything into the car including ourselves and made that trip to Pontiac which is near Chicago. From there we continued out to Amityville, N.Y.

Next Betty Jane enrolled at the well known Traphagen School of Fashion Design in New York City. While attending Traphagen, she commuted from Amityville, Long Island. When the family moved to Birmingham, she came to Ann Arbor, Michigan and after a short residency there earned a baccalaureate degree in fine arts from the University of Michigan. Between Traphagen and the University of Michigan, she had taken courses at Hunter College of the City of New York while working for various companies in the garment industry in New York City and living there. She also, during this period, designed costumes for several off-Broadway shows. After graduating from Michigan, one of her jobs was with a firm that specialized in the design of fancy or high style clothes for children. The author remembers well walking down one of the principal shopping streets in St. Louis, Mo. one afternoon with several men after a meeting. Although the sidewalk was crowded and his party was walking rapidly something in a store window caught his eye. He asked his group to stop. We all went to the window. It was full of dresses for young girls designed by Betty Jane Harrison.

Betty Jane married Angelo Thomas Cometa at Saint Joseph's Church in New York City July 29, 1961. The reception was at the Hotel Grosvenor, 35 Fifth Avenue. In addition to their friends, many of our friends from Long Island and Fairchild were present.

Angelo Cometa was an Assistant District Attorney of the Borough of Manhattan at the time. They moved into an apartment in Brooklyn, a walk-up on either the fourth or fifth floor. Betty Jane taught in the New York City school system for a short time. They later moved to Staten Island, then to Montclair, N.J. and are currently living in their second house in Montclair. It is an impressive large house on one of the best streets in Montclair. They also have a beach house on the Atlantic on Long Beach Island, N.J.

Angelo is now one of the senior and managing partners in a very large law firm in New York City. Betty Jane, who has been an ardent cross word puzzle fan for many, many years, recently accepted a position as editor of *Cross Word Varieties* a cross word puzzle magazine with national circulation.

The children of Angelo T. and Betty Jane (Harrison) Cometa are:

Ariane Katherine, Born, July 28, 1962. Graduated from the University of Massachusetts in December of 1984 with courses to qualify her for admission to medical school or a school of veterinary medicine. She is currently at the University of Virginia, Charlottesville, Va. in a special research program and working toward a masters degree and admission to medical school.

Allison Lee, Born, March 12, 1964. Graduated June 1986 from Fordham University, New York, N.Y., the alma mater of her father. The winter of 1986–87, she has been teaching the children of guests at ski lodges in Aspen, Col-

orado. She plans to teach and earn a masters degree in 1987–88.

Thomas More, Born, March 5, 1966. Currently in his junior year at Clark University in Worcester, Mass. He is spending the spring term of 1987 in Kenya, Africa on a special exchange program with others from Clark.

Victoria Anne, Born, July 3, 1971. Finishing her junior year at the Montclair, N.J. High School. She is very active in sports and other activities. Maintaining the tradition of the Cometa children for always having jobs, Vicki started working at a fast food shop on the beach several years ago. She was manager last year and will be again this year.

Lee Olive

Lee Olive was born in Amityville, N.Y. at the Brunswick Hospital May 5, 1934. She attended the Amityville schools and graduated from high school there in 1952. Very early she showed an understanding of things mechanical and aptitudes that indicated that she could prepare to be a doctor or a nurse. After high school, she entered a five year program at the University of Vermont in Burlington, Vermont that would have given her a Bachelor of Science degree and qualify her to pass the examination to be a Registered Nurse. After a year and a half, she returned home and was accepted for a three-year training program at the Flower and Fifth Avenue Hospital in New York City. Finishing this course as president of her class and passing her New York R.N. examinations, she entered Wittenberg University in Springfield, Ohio in September of 1958. In 1960, she was awarded a Bachelor of Science degree.

Lee-Olive Harrison on the flight deck of the U.S. Navy Carrier Nimitz with Jim Woodward. 1982.

After working in a hospital in Casper, Wyoming for a while she moved on to a position at the Swedish Hospital in Seattle, Washington. While there she applied for and was accepted by project Hope for their mission to Peru that left San Francisco May 9, 1962. It was quite an honor to be accepted for this assignment as there were a thousand applicants with only ten accepted. The voyage was on a partially modernized World War II hospital ship. The nurses lived on board for ten months and trained Peruvian nurses in modern hospital practices while the doctors trained Peruvian doctors. Her specialty was operating room procedure. A working knowledge of Spanish had to be acquired enroute from San Francisco to Peru in order to be able to instruct the Peruvian nurses. A year after returning from Peru, she went with Hope again on their trip to Ecuador. Unfortunately, space limitations do not permit an adequate account of the Hope Project and its various voyages. In concept and execution it was most outstanding. Voluntary contributions fur-

Return to Machu Picci 1981. When with Project Hope in Peru in 1962–63 Lee-Olive visited Machu Picci. It is a truly interesting and fascinating place. Her desire to return is understandable.

Hawaii. Where else?

nished the entire project. The ship was a completely equipped hospital. Leading doctors in all fields of medicine donated their services for eight weeks. The nurses worked for nominal pay and lived on the ship in the tropics in crowded quarters that were not adequately air conditioned. The project really made a contribution to the medical care skills of personnel in the host countries. When they arrived in Peru, crowds urged on by Communist sympathizers would assemble on the dock where the ship Hope was anchored and shout "Yankee, go home." When they left ten months later, hundreds assembled for an enormous reception or farewell party with

Lee-Olive with her fellow professor and partner in writing textbooks for the education of nurses, Barbara Stright. 1986.

fireworks. Several of the men handling the fireworks were severly injured. The operating rooms which had been closed for the voyage home were quickly opened. The surgeons of the medical team and the nurses worked under great pressure throughout the night performing major surgery. They sailed at day-break leaving the severely injured all living and in the care of local surgeons who had assisted in the operation.

One Harrison type incident justifies being included here. At Christmas 1962, the nurses, doctors and other members of the Hope crew looked in vain for a Christmas tree. They could find nothing that even an active imagination could consider a suitable substitute. When preparing to leave for New York City for the voyage to Ecuador, Lee Olive visited us. She asked about the feasibility of taking a Christmas tree from Grove City. She was confident that the Captain would be able and willing to store it in one of the large walk-in refrigerators on ship until Christmas. So, one hot summer day we cut two or three trees from neighboring property, each about five feet tall, wrapped them in burlap and heavy reinforced paper and she took them to New York. When unwrapped at Christmas they were in perfect condition. To say that they were appreciated by the hundred or so people who were spending Christmas on the equator would be the under-statement of the year. We received dozens of letters of appreciation.

After the second Hope voyage, Lee Olive has worked in various hospitals. More recently she has been teaching nursing in community hospitals. For the last nine years she has been with a unit of the Pennsylvania State University system, the Venango Campus of Clarion State University, in Oil City, Pa. She is an assistant professor. Recently, she, with a co-worker, were asked to re-write two chapters of a widely used text book for the training of nurses. With that completed they are now writing, by request of the publisher, a companion volume to go with it.

Lee Olive continues to work from time-to-time on a volunteer basis with Project Hope. She is a director of their alumni association and in charge of a district. Once in a while she gets a chance to do a little "bird watching" which is one of her hobbies. She has made trips to England, to the 1984 Oberammergau Passion Play, to Hawaii, and a return trip to Peru and Machu Picchu.

Delia Anne and Sarah May

Identical twins, Delia Anne and Sarah May were born on the birthday of the author, July 14, 1938 at Woman's Hospital, New York City. This was also the day that Howard Hughes completed his record

Delia Anne (Harrison) and Edward Granger.

breaking flight around the world. They were born a minute apart and were only an ounce apart in weight.

Through twelve years of elementary and high school the twins dressed alike and were always in the same room at school.

Edward B. Granger, Delia Anne (Harrison) Granger, Jennie Elizabeth (Granger) and Takahiro Ono.

They are truly identical. Even their parents were not always able to tell them apart instantly. They switched seats, they changed places in basketball and hockey, they switched dates and took full advantage of their identical appearance and traits.

At Whittenberg University they had matching outfits but in different colors, but they switched these. Delia Anne married in February of her junior year. While she finished that year she did not go on the next year and graduate with her class. Sarah May graduated in 1960.

Delia Anne

Feb. 22, 1959 Delia Anne married Edward Brown Granger at Wittenberg University in Springfield, Ohio. She finished the school year and Edward graduated that

Ikuko and Seiji Ono with grandson Yoshihiro Ono. January 1983.

year with a baccalaureate degree in Business Administration. They had a small apartment near the University campus. After graduation, he went to work for the Bendix Corp. in Teterboro, N.J. Bendix was having some problems in determining the costs for their products and he was one of several assigned to it.

Incongruous as it may seem, great grandson Yoshihiro Ono, a 12th generation descendant of Bartholomew Stovall tells Major Bill Stovall, editor of the *Stovall Journal* all about how it happened.

They first had a small apartment in Glen Rock, N.J., but soon moved to larger quarters in Ridgewood, N.J.

Before the end of his first year at Satec (then Arcweld Mfg.) the author realized that the expanding operation needed a comptroller to take charge of all office and record operations. After a visit to Grove City and a careful evaluation of the company and its prospects, Edward agreed to join us. It was a difficult decision for him as he was building a good record at Bendix and there was every reason that he could look forward to a good future.

At Satec, Edward contributed to its growth. He lived through a difficult period after the departure of the author. However, after a few years he was asked to be president and chief executive officer. The company has done well under his leadership and has been profitable each year—a most commendable record and one that not all companies in their field have achieved.

Edward and Dedee (Delia Anne) have a beautiful home built on two acres taken out of our farm. The Granger children are:

Jennie Elizabeth, Born Aug. 22, 1959. Graduated from Grove City Area High School in 1977. Attended Franklin Pierce College, Rindge, N.H. In the summer after her junior year she married Takahiro Ono of Osaka, Japan who received his baccalaureate degree in business administration that year. He attended preparatory school as well as college in this country. They now live near Osaka in Japan where he is president of a school that trains dental technicians. They have one child, Yoshihiro Joshua Ono, b. Oct. 8, 1983. He is our first great grandchild. Jennie has spent a month or more in this country each year since her marriage.

The receiving line after the wedding of Kimberley Anne Jewell and William H. Granger.

Helen Lynn Granger, a 1986 graduate of Hunter College of the City of New York.

Gregory George Granger.

Izaak William Granger with his Harrison great grandparents. 1986.

William Harrison, Born March 21, 1962. Graduated from the Grove City Area High School. Has attended Slippery Rock University and Youngstown University and is well along toward a baccalaureate degree. Married Kimberely Anne Jewell July 28, 1984. They live in Leesburg, Penn. and have a son Izaak William Granger, born August 4, 1985. William is in the sales department of Satec. His hobby is conservation of the environment and he devotes much time to lecturing and work in this field.

Yoshihiro Ono with his great grandmother Granger and great grandmother Harrison. Summer of 1986.

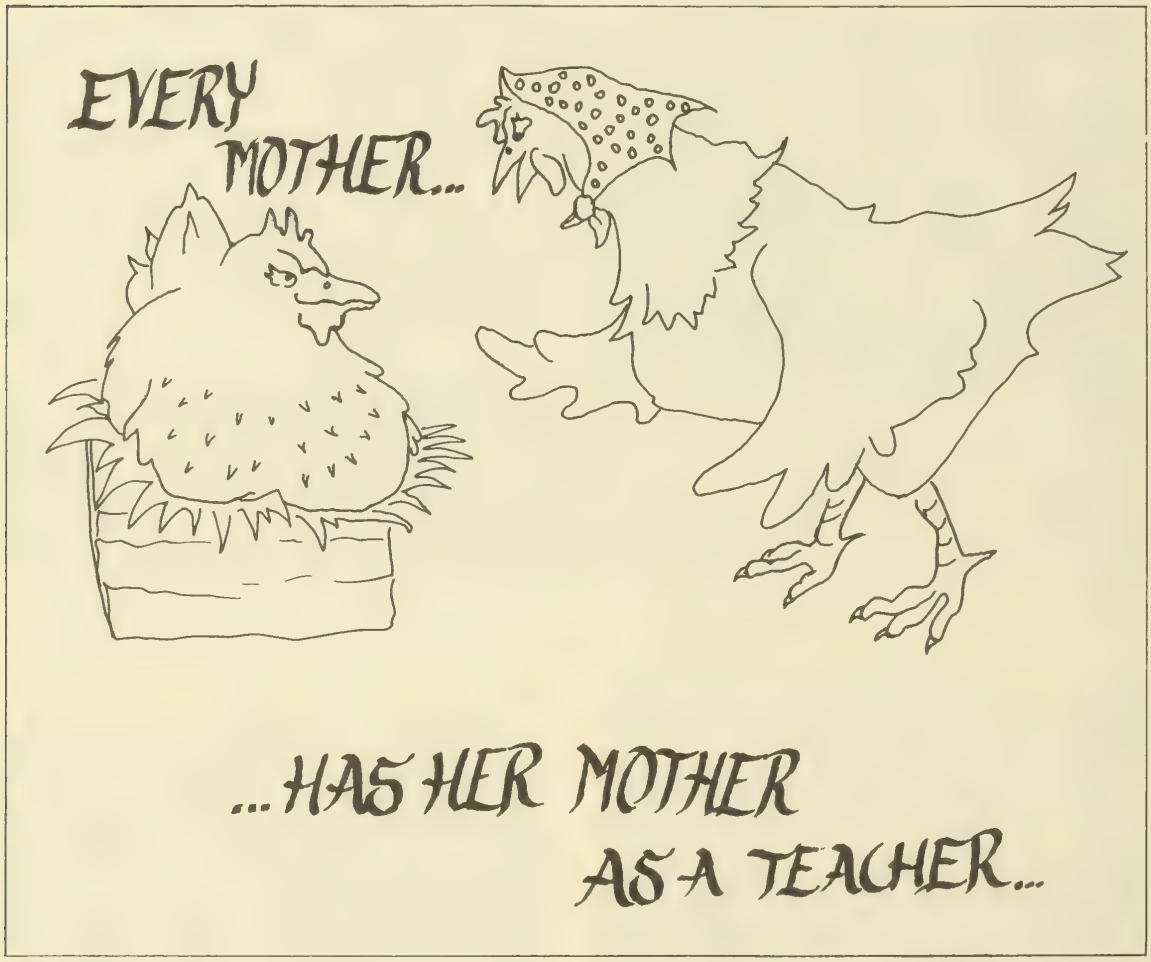
Helen Lynn, Born May 15, 1963. Graduated from Grove City Area High School in 1981. Attended School of Art of the University of Hartford (Conn.) for one and a half years, did a one year internship with two artists in New York City for credit and more recently attended Hunter College of the City of New York from which she has a baccalaureate degree in fine arts. She is currently employed by a design firm and lives in New York City. At least one book that she has designed recently has made the "Best Seller" list of the N.Y. Times.

Gregory George, Born July 29, 1965. Graduated from Grove City Area High School in 1983. Currently attending Temple University, Philadelphia, Penn. from which he expects to receive a baccalaureate degree in communications in January of 1988. He spent the summer of 1986 in London, England with a group of students from various lodges and universities in this country studying British communications.

Sarah May

Sarah May married Robert Eugene Koogler June 7, 1959 after the end of her junior year. She returned the next year and earned a baccalaureate degree. Robert had graduated from Wittenberg in June of 1958. Later he received a masters degree in mathematics from the University of Dayton.

Sarah taught in the Springfield Public School System and Robert worked for Dayton Power and Light Co. They took over the small apartment that Delia Anne and Edward left to go to New Jersey. Soon after their marriage they bought a lot in a new section on the south side of Springfield. Homer Sayers, a brother-in-law of Delia Anne and Edward Granger, who was

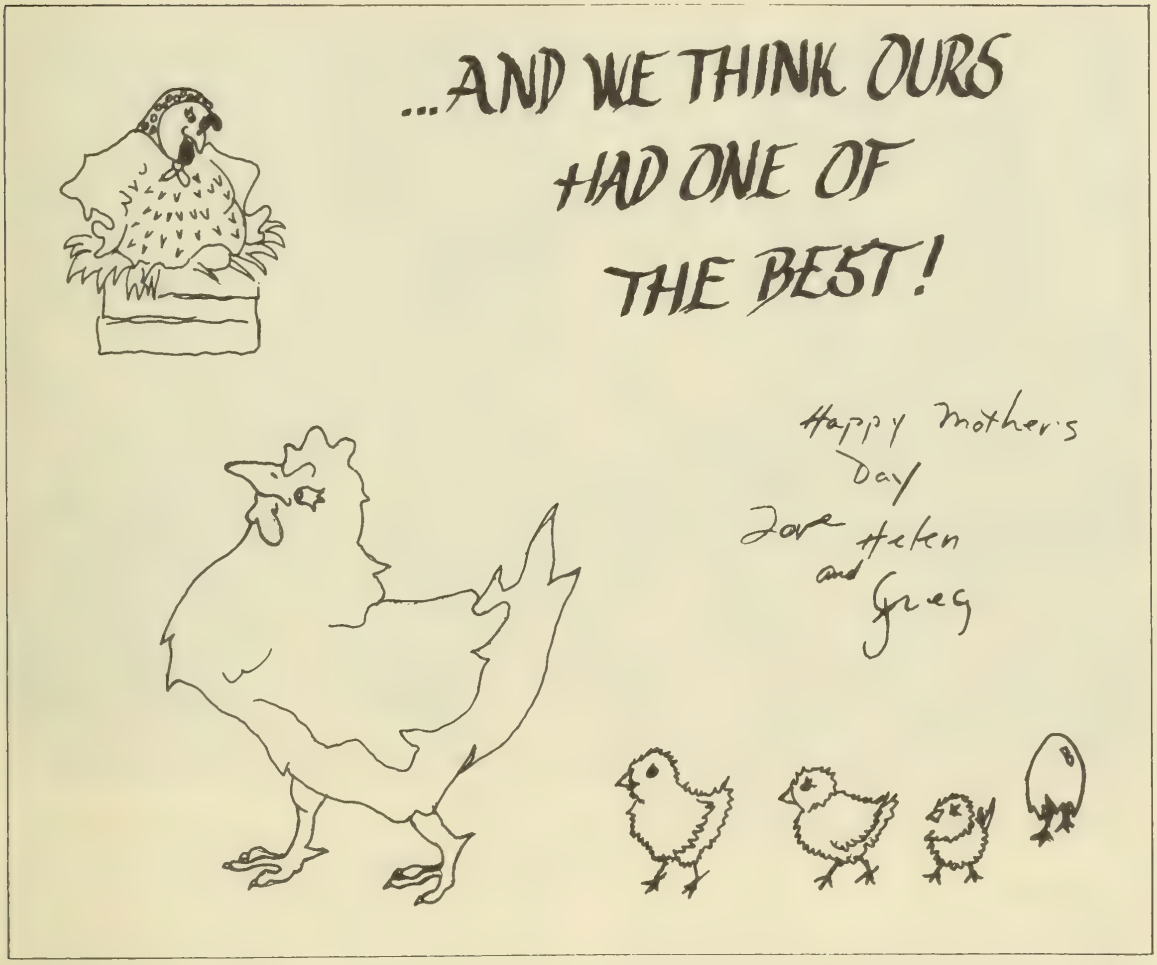


An original card produced by Helen Lynn Granger and Gregory George Granger and sent their grandmother Harrison for Mother's Day.

a builder, helped them through the foundation, framing, roofing, and enclosing of their house. Sarah and Robert working nights, weekends, and vacations, finished it with some special help from time-to-time.

After Dayton Power and Light and a short stay with another organization, Robert joined N.C.R. (formerly National Cash Register, Corp.) of Dayton who were changing over from mechanical cash register, for which they were world leaders, to computers. They continued to live in the house that they built until Robert was transferred to Wichita, Kansas. After a year or so he was moved back to headquarters in Dayton, Ohio. This time they bought a new home in Centerville, which is just south of Dayton.

While in Wichita, Sarah worked part time in a large, new J.C. Penney in a new shopping center near their home. She made



such a good record there that they recommended her to another new and very large J.C. Penney that was just getting underway between Centerville and Dayton. Soon she was in charge of the bridal department. Presently, she is effectively in charge of advertising for the entire unit.

The Koogler children are:

Melinda-Lee, Born June 22, 1965. Graduated from Centerville High School. Currently attending Westminister College in Fulton, Mo., the school of the author, and scheduled to receive a baccalaureate degree in creative writing in a few weeks.

Hillary-Beth, Born Dec. 17, 1969. Currently a junior in Centerville High School. Hillary plays the drums in the marching band of Centerville High. They consistently place high in high school band competitions and this past winter were invited to the McDonald band competitions at Disney World in Florida. Her parents are band sponsors. Robert was one of the drivers for their tractor trailer unit that took

Robert Eugene Koogler.

the instruments to Florida. Sarah was a chaperone and both help in the raising of money for such expeditions.

Sharon, Born March 14, 1971. Presently a Sophomore at Centerville High School. Sharon is also in the Centerville High Marching Band.

Virginia Sue

Born Nov. 17, 1941 at Woman's Hospital in New York City, Virginia Sue has had the trying task supplying the encore after her three-year older identical twin sisters. From the time that she could walk, she has tried and done very well. They seldom objected to her presence.

Hillary-Beth and Sharon-Lynn Koogler in the uniforms of the Centerville Jazz Band.

The Koogler home in Centerville, Ohio.

The trailer that hauls the band equipment to engagements. For the trip to Disney World, Florida in December of 1986, Robert Koogler was one of the drivers.

Graduation at Westminster College in Fulton, Mo. 1987. From left, Robert E. Koogler, Sarah May (Harrison) Koogler, Melinda-Lee Koogler, the graduate, Lee-Olive Harrison, Sharon-Lynn Koogler, the author and Hillary-Beth Koogler.

When the family moved to Birmingham, Virginia Sue was ready to enter high school. Although the high school there operated on a much higher scholastic level, she held her own, with personality to give her a little push when scholastic ability began to falter. She graduated from Seaholm High School in Birmingham in 1959.

Of many things that could be told, one will be included. Over and above the interest of the incident itself, it ties into her earlier years and that of her sisters. As a part of the physical education program of the school, she started to take swimming. The first day the instructor after observing her competence asked about her previous training. She had been swimming since she could walk and had probably ten years of good instruction at Camp Abena, some of it from her older sister Betty Jane who helped with swimming instruction at the camp for years. From that time on, she was an assistant swimming instructor at her high school, although only a student.

Virginia Sue was accepted at Elmira College, an all girl college, in Elmira, N.Y. through the intervention of Vera Ferguson, an alumna who was the wife of the president of Bendix. After graduation, she taught at Middletown, N.Y., worked at

Melinda-Lee Koogler and her grandfather, the author.

Satec in the summers and took courses at nearby Slippery Rock University. After a few years of this, she was accepted at Michigan State University in East Lansing, Mich. in a masters program. She received her masters degree and was well along on a doctoral program when she met and married Marshall Forstot who was starting work on a doctoral program. The ceremony was at our home in Grove City and has been mentioned previously.

They first bought a log cabin on a lake at Hastings, Mich. Virginia Sue taught school and improved the cabin which had been allowed to run down. Marshall transferred to Wayne State University in Detroit to complete his program. They sold the cabin at a profit, bought a home at Grand Ledge, Mich., later they sold this for a profit and bought in Rochester, Mich., where they were living when he received his Ph.D. in Psychology.

The next move was from Rochester to West Bloomfield, Mich. Marshall taught in different schools and developed some private practice in clinical psychology.

Virginia Sue and Marshall were granted a divorce in 1983. After this, the house

Virginia Sue (Harrison) Forstot. 1982.

David Aaron Forstot.

in West Bloomfield was sold and she moved across the street where she rented a house. In July she will move to a home that she has just purchased in Farmington Hills which is about six miles from the West Bloomfield home. For two years Virginia Sue taught as a substitute at various schools in the area taking assignments for anything in Junior High and High schools from social studies to math to a diesel-engine laboratory and welding. More recently, she has been with Armco Steel in a district sales office for construction products. This led to an offer to join Price Brothers, a Dayton, Ohio company with Detroit area offices that sell products for water and sewage systems. She is purchasing agent.

The children are:

David Aaron, Born Dec. 16, 1975. Currently attends a special school in the suburban Detroit area. He is working at a general level of the ninth grade.

Corinne, Born Feb. 20, 1978. Presently attending elementary school in West Bloomfield, in the 3rd grade.

Summary

It is the hope and belief of the parents of these fine red-headed girls with their

Corinne Isabel Forstot.

David Forstot bringing the Christmas tree that he cut, down the Avenue of the Pines to the house. 1984.

English, Scotch, French, German, and Scandanavian background, that they will maintain the high tradition of their family who have preceeded them. They came to this country early and contributed to it. There is still much to be done. Their mother and the writer have tried to prepare them for it. The rest is up to them.

New home of Virginia Sue (Harrison) Forstot in Farmington Hills, Michigan.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

For a project that has been going on for nearly nineteen years, it is almost impossible to adequately acknowledge the help that has been received from others. There are so many that have helped and while the information they have furnished or assisted the author in finding has been used and is greatly appreciated he has not always kept an adequate record of them. To his chagrin, memory that was always exceptional has not functioned too well in the late seventies and early eighties of his life.

For the omissions, and the author is sure that there are many, he is sincerely sorry. For those that are mentioned, the order of the mention and its length has no significance. All help is of great value and is appreciated. A single name, or date or place of birth or a single incident of interest can be of great value.

Harold L. Hanson of Kennebunkport, Maine gave me, a total stranger, first over the telephone, and later in writing, seven generations of Seavey genealogy. This enabled me to connect the Seavey family of Clinton County, New York with the early generations of the family in New England. He had planned to write a book on the family and had done an unbelievable amount of work collecting information. His material and directions led me to the files of Mrs. A.B. Hall in Boston. All of this he did without hesitation and over a period of time with a lot of special effort to supplement what he had in his files. For several years I have not been able to locate him but hope that I can do so as soon as I have a finished book.

Another great debt is owed to Richard W. Ward formerly with the Clinton-Essex, Franklin Library in Plattsburgh, N.Y. When he purchased the old diary of Mrs. Andrew Hull and found a mention of George Seavey, he went across the alley to the main library building to see if the register of genealogists seeking family information included anyone seeking Seavey family information. When he found my name, he wrote to me. The information that he furnished confirmed my conclusion for which I had no proof, that the wife of Solomon[7] Seavey and the great grandmother of Fannie C. Harrison was a Washburn. With this the Washburn line was traced and the Cooke, Mitchell, Packard, Leonard and other lines discovered and followed.

And then there is J. Robert Locke of San Andreas, California, a Foss descendant, who filed a letter in the library of the New Hampshire Historical Society in Concord, N.H. questioning the genealogy account prepared by Guy S. Rix and on file there. Over a period of four years, he has guided the writer through the misleading and incorrect material on the early Foss family. Of course, it has meant re-

writing the chapter twice, but the author is indebted to him.

Phyllis Calderon a descendant of a sister of Jane Richie the wife of Robert[1] Irwin, and living in New Mexico, saw a notice that I had in a genealogical publication requesting Richey-Irwin information. She wrote and by putting her information with mine, the Irwin-Richey line was put together. True, there is much that we do not have, but we have something.

Naomi Irwin Sherburne, daughter of Joseph[3], granddaughter of James[2] and great granddaughter of Robert[1] the emigrant started collecting information on the Irwin and connecting lines many years ago. She had the opportunity to talk to her father and others of his generation and to access to clippings and other items that they had saved. She, very kindly, made all of this available to the writer. Thanks to you, Naomi.

Mrs. Harold Cromie (Ruby) loaned me an old account book that she found in an old house that she renovated and modernized several years ago. Entries in this book confirmed the presence of Solomon[7] and his son Albert[8] Seavey in the Saranac area and gives us a time period. This information helped fill in the account.

Several years ago, I learned from some source that Mrs. W.K. Hearn of Johnson City, Tenn. might have Washburn family information that would be of help to me. This was before I had a definite tie to the Washburns. By return mail, I received an eight- or ten-page, handwritten letter carrying the line back twenty generations from John[1] Washburn who later proved to be the emigrant ancestor being sought. Once I had a definite line to John[1] Washburn I had a total Washburn line of twenty-eight generations. True, there are some questions about the early line, but Mrs. Hearn certainly cooperated.

Mrs. Sylvia Fitts Getchell of Newmarket, N.H. a Berry descendant, author of *Marden Family Genealogy* and *The Berrys by the Beach* has given permission to use material from the Berry publication and, in addition, has been most helpful in supplying information. Through her cooperation my account is greatly enriched.

Through the Piscataqua Pioneers, I learned of Betty Perkins (Mrs. Elton) of South Tamworth, N.H. She is a descendant of Thomas[1] Seavey, and has been of great assistance. She had made trips to Dover, N.H., Exeter, N.H. and other places. During the course of her searching, she has found old documents and records that greatly improve the links between Thomas[1] Seavey and his descendants, Samuel[2], Samuel[3] and Samuel[4]. She has made copies of these documents and sent them to me.

In an effort to get the Seavey line of Fannie C. Harrison in shape that the Daughters of the American Revolution would approve her application for membership, I retained Mrs. Alfred B. Marden of Rochester, N.H. Unfortunately, she was not able to find the information needed for the D.A.R., but she did find an old original Seavey document which she copied. It added to the clarification of the line back to Thomas[1] Seavey.

Miss Elaine Washburn of Salt Lake City, Utah was retained to establish the connection of the Washburn line to the Seavey

line and then follow the line to the emigrant ancestor. She did this very effectively and went on back into England for several generations. It is the opinion of the writer that she rendered service beyond the normal genealogist-client relationship. In addition, she cooperated in meeting a deadline when she had a backlog of orders from others.

In the course of collecting information for this account, numerous trips were made to the library of The New Hampshire Historical Society in Concord, N.H. Although several were for three or four days, there was never enough time. Bill Copeley, librarian, through his prompt, always pleasant, and most helpful cooperation made it possible to make the most out of every precious hour spent in the library. He has also cooperated by answering telephone and correspondence requests. Librarians are not as knowledgeable and as cooperative as in past years but Copeley is the exception. More like him would add greatly to the pleasure and accomplishments of amateur genealogists.

Special thanks are due Ruby Cromie (Mrs. Harold), Charlotte Cromie Barry and Mrs. Clara Cromie (Mrs. Claude) for supplying exactly the information requested for their families plus some extra in each case just for good measure.

Adelia Collins has been of great help all through the long and involved process of collecting information. She has supplied old pictures, documents, letters and has answered many, many questions. Also she communicated my requirements for information to the three in the preceeding paragraph and worked with them.

As has been mentioned in various places in the text of this work, a great debt is owed to Louise Tallman of Rye, N.H. First, her interest in the history of the Rye-Portsmouth, N.H. area and the people who made it has resulted in accumulated information that it would have taken the author years to bring together, if, in fact, he could even bring any significant part of it together. Second, she has extended cooperation unselfishly many times in many ways.

Corollary to the help from Mrs. Tallman has been assistance from the Rye Historical Society and Mrs. Bonnie Goodman and Mrs. Jessie Herlihy of that organization. Thanks are also due the staff of the Rye Public Library for their cooperation and help.

Kermit and Bertha Irwin of Peru, N.Y. have been of great help in bringing Irwin family information together. Kermit has driven me to the various areas where the Irwins had homes and lived. Bertha has answered innumerable telephone and written requests for information and help.

Hazel Irwin, who is no longer living and was the widow of William[2] Irwin of the Illinois branch of the family has supplied information of that part of the family.

Fred Sevey of Center Point, Texas and a descendant of William[6] Seavey has shared, over a period of years, the family information that he has worked hard to collect. By putting our files together each of us has a better concept of this family of many children and descendants but there is still much that we need to know.

To Bill Caldwell of the Portland (Maine) Press Herald and Maine Sunday Herald

and his fascinating book, *The Islands of Maine, Where America Really Began* the author is greatly obliged. From his book a new, and much better, concept of the beginning of our country has been obtained.

Billy Jean Brown typed the entire manuscript working from the handwritten manuscript of the author. It had been written over a period of years and I could not even decipher portions of it so I can only marvel over the patience of Billy Jean.

Helen Lynn Granger, listed on the title page as the designer of this book volunteered to take on the project. Just a month over a year out of college with a liberal arts and fine arts background Helen is designing books professionally and carrying out other assignments for the New York organization of Levavi & Levavi, Inc. Of close to a dozen books to her credit several have been on the "best seller lists." She is a 12th generation descendant of Thomas Seavey and an 11th, 12th or 13th generation descendant of the other early arriving ancestors of this account. A daughter of Edward B. and Delia Anne (Harrison) Granger Helen is a granddaughter of the author and his wife.

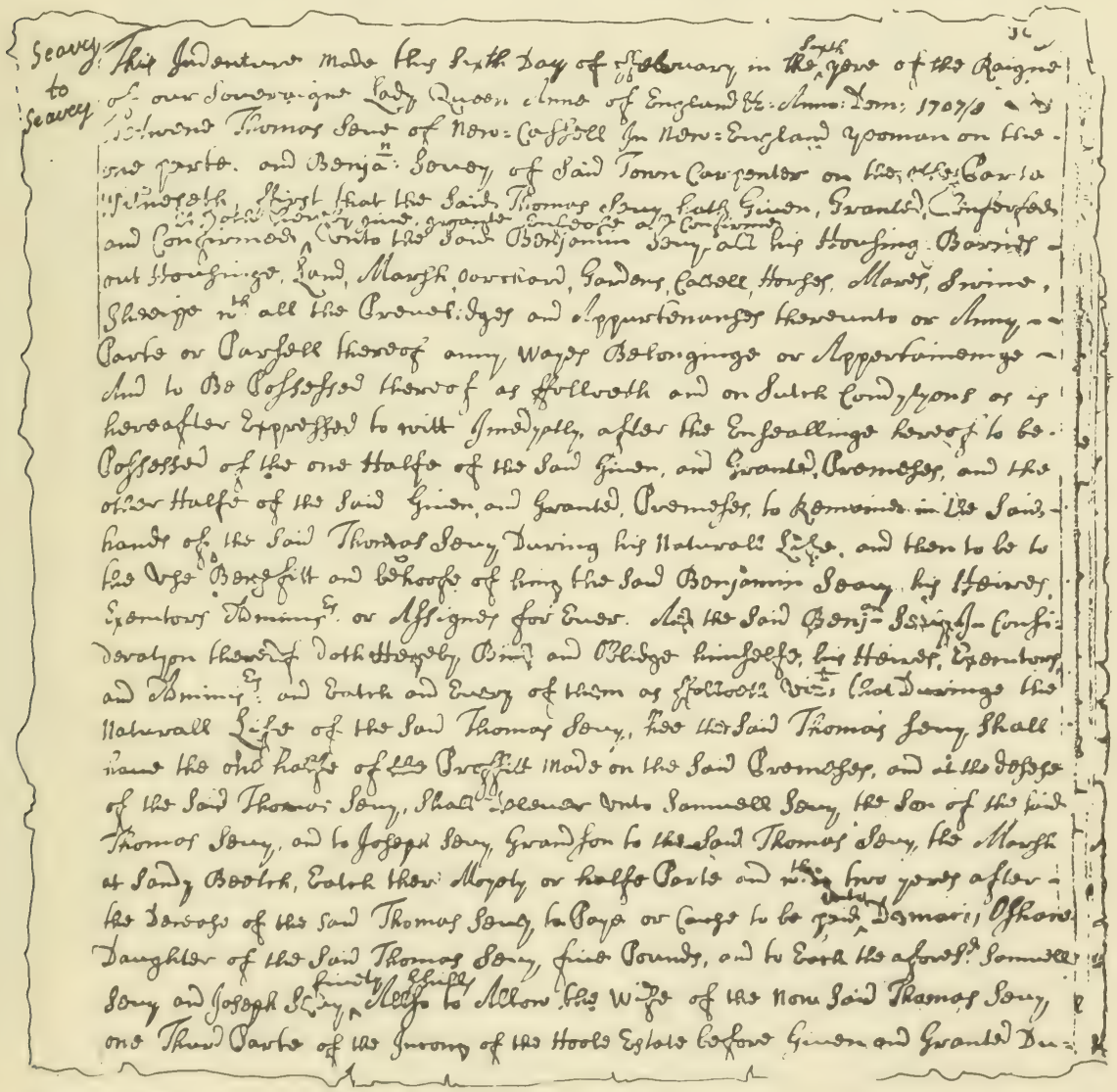
Last but not least, Fannie, my wife, the descendant of all of the wonderful, early pioneers in this account. Her information about people, places and events accounts for much of the material in many chapters. Without her help and patience this book could not have become a reality.

There are undoubtedly many more that should be acknowledged. But at the time that this is being written, the voluminous files that have accumulated are in a state of utter chaos. As has been mentioned, memory at eighty-five leaves a lot to be desired. So to all who have not been included, I offer most sincere thanks along with my apologies.

On her visit to this country in July and August of 1987 Jennie Granger Ono (Mrs. Takahiro) of Osaka, Japan, has been kind enough to read proofs for this book and offer many suggestions that have been most helpful. She is a 12th generation descendant of Thomas Seavey, the emigrant, 13th generation descendant of Francis Cooke of the Mayflower and 14th generation descendant of Christopher Branch of the Jamestown, Virginia colony.

Appendix A

Copies of very old documents found in various places have recently been brought together and studied as a group. They give us new information about the early generations of the line of Thomas[1] Seavey, the emigrant of the line being followed in

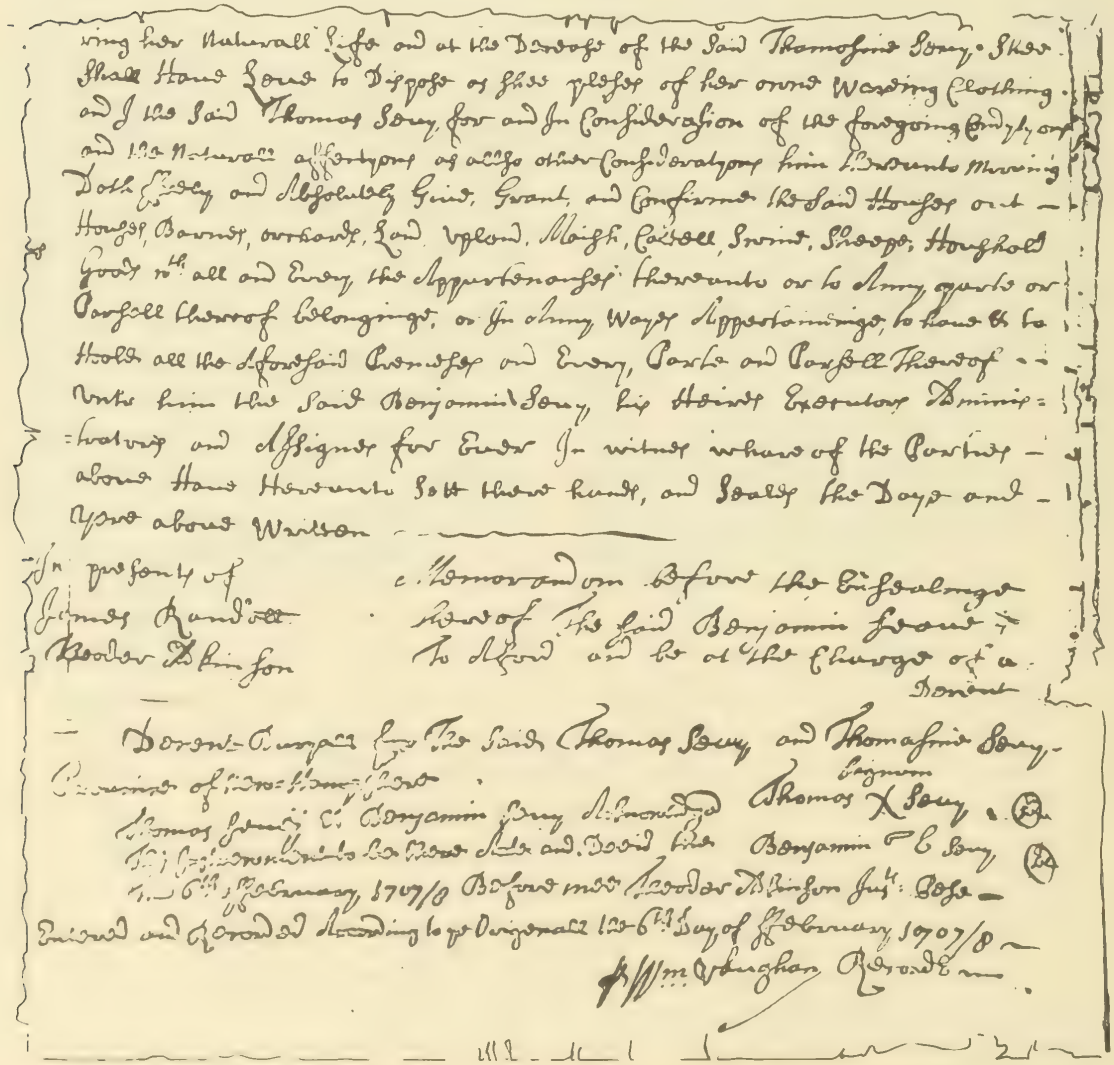


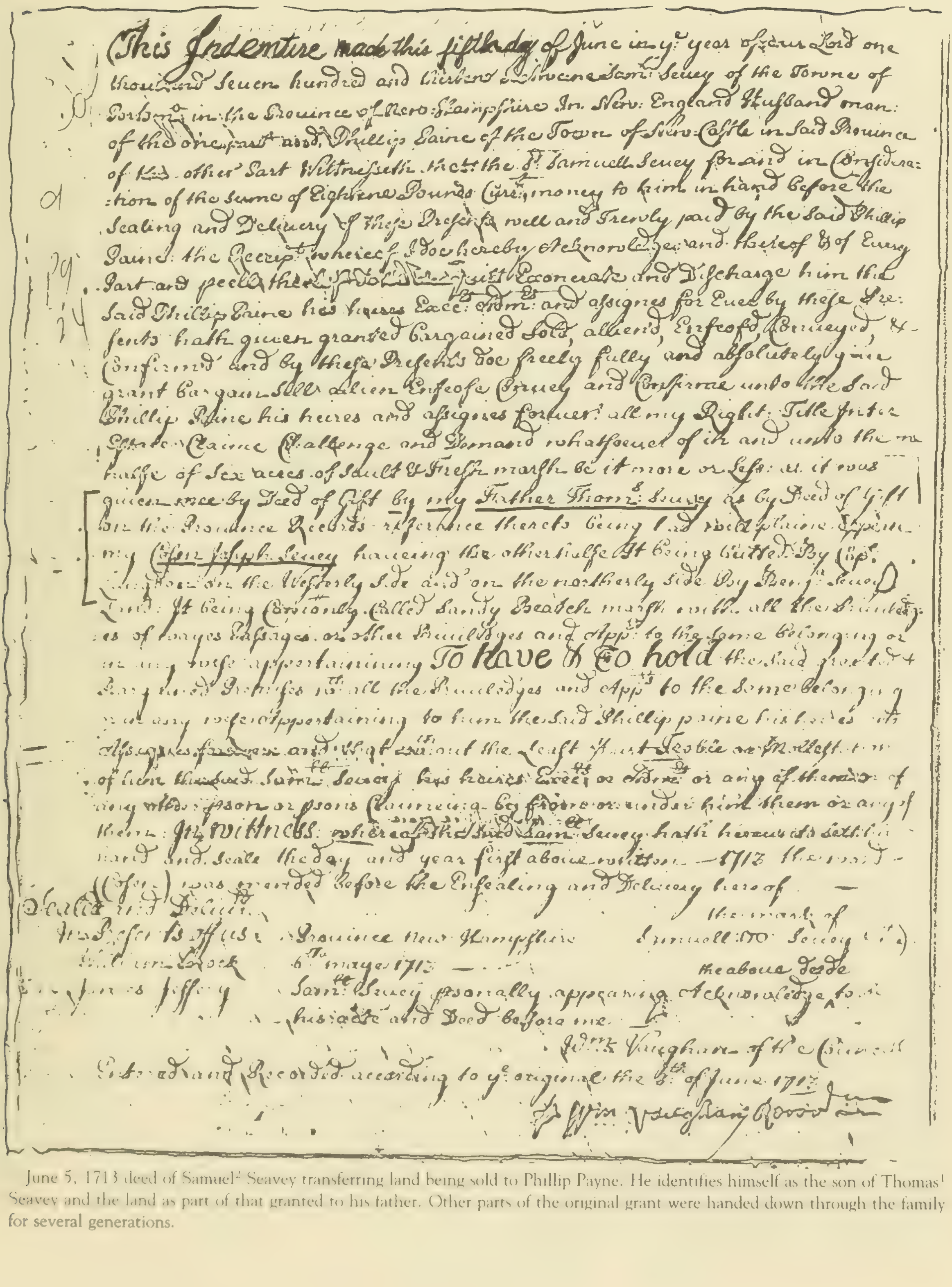
February 6, 1708 deed of gift from Thomas[1] Seavey to his son, Benjamin[2] Seavey. Recorded Volume 7, Page 190 at Exeter, Rockingham County, N.H.

this account. They document the line that is presented in this book.

The deed of gift of Thomas[1] Seavey to his son Benjamin[2] Seavey was made February 6, 1708. This was not long before his death. It is a most unusual document and a valuable one as far as information about the children of Thomas[1] Seavey is concerned. He mentions all living descendants and his wife Thomasine. Unforunately her family name is not included.

Although reproduced in two sections it is not readily legible. However, the original document can be read with careful study.





This Indenture made this fifth day of June in ye year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and thirteen between Saml Seavey of the Towne of Portsmo in the Province of New Hampshire In New England Husband man of the one part and Phillip Paine of the Town of New Castle in Said Province of the other Part Witnesseth that the sd Samuell Seavey for and in Considera:tion of the sume of Eighteene Pounds Curt money to him in hand before the Sealing and Delivery of these Presents well and Truely paid by the said Phillip Paine: the Receipt whereof I doe hereby acknowledge and thereof & of Every Part and parcell thereof [illegible] Exonerate and Discharge him the said Phillip Paine his heires Exec. Adm. and assignes for Ever by these Pre:sents hath given granted bargained sold, aliend, Enfeoffd Conveyed, & Confirmed and by these Presents doe freely fully and absolutely give grant bargain sell alien Enfeofe Convey and Confirme unto the said Phillip Paine his heires and assignes forever: all my Right Title Inter[est] Estate Claime Challenge and Demand whatsoever of in and unto the halfe of Six acres of Salt & Fresh marsh be it more or less: as it was given once by Deed of Gift by my Father Thoms Seavey as by Deed of Gift in the Province Records [illegible] my Cosen Joseph Seavey haveing the other halfe It being butted By Capt. [illegible] on the Westerly Side and on the northerly side By Benja Seavey Land: It being Comonly Called Sandy Beach marsh with all the [illegible] of wayes Passages or other Priviledges and Appts to the same belonging or in any wise appertaining To have & to hold the said granted & bargained Premises with all the Priviledges and Appts to the same belonging or any wise appertaining to him the said Phillip Paine his heires and Assignes forever and that without the Least [illegible] of him the said Saml Seavey his heires Exers or Admrs or any of them or of any other person or persons Claiming by from or under him them or any of them: In witness whereof the said Saml Seavey hath hereunto sett his hand and Seale the day and year first above written — 1713 the word (Cosen) was enterlined before the Ensealing and Delivery hereof —

Sealed and Delivd in the presence of us [illegible] — the mark of Samuell SS Seavey (seal)

Province New Hampshire 6th maye 1713 — Saml Seavey personally appearing Acknowledged the above Deede to be his acte and Deed before me — Geo. Vaughan of the Council

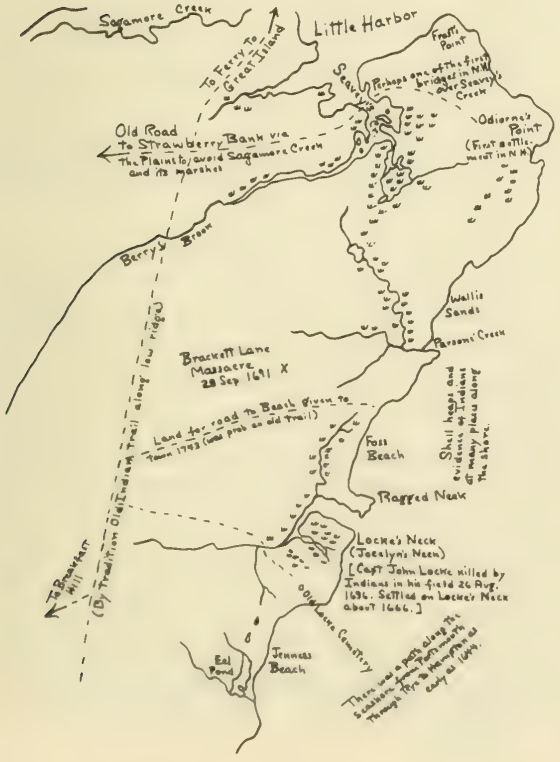
Entered and Recorded according to ye original the 8th of June 1713 — Wm Vaughan Recorder

June 5, 1713 deed of Samuel[2] Seavey transferring land being sold to Phillip Payne. He identifies himself as the son of Thomas[1] Seavey and the land as part of that granted to his father. Other parts of the original grant were handed down through the family for several generations.

Appendix B

The booklet, *The Berrys By The Beach*, is one of the most fascinating and original publications that the author has encountered in nearly twenty years of searching for family information. Its forty-one pages contain an unbelievable amount of genealogy, biography, and history and all of it sound. However, it is the fifteen page account of two of the young Berry children and the sketches by the author that contribute the most to making it unusual. It is all the more unusual and pertinent to this work because one of the children is the ninth great great grandmother of Fannie C. Harrison of this book. Her ninth great great grandfather is also mentioned.

Sylvia Fitts Getchell still had, at the time that this book went to press, a few copies of her booklet. Her address is 51 North Main Street, Newmarket, N.H. 03857. The price is nominal for a limited edition of a booklet on family history and genealogy.



PROLOGUE

The Berrys were not the first settlers of "Rye" because as new towns were formed, the older settlement at Odiorne's Point eventually came within the boundaries of the new Township of Rye. They were, however, the first colonists at the Beach.

Their daughter Rachel was my greatgreat-greatgreatgreatgreatgreatgrandmother. In spite of that very long title, I'm sure she was once just a happy little girl who loved the chickadees and the gulls—and who may have talked to crickets, or run barefoot in the warm sands at Rye.

Rachel named her oldest son James, after her beloved little brother. The exact ages of the Berry children are unknown, with the exception of the son John whose birthdate, reckoned from his age, was c.1637. The placement of the other children within the family has been calculated from *their* children's

birthdates or marriage dates, or other related evidence. Certainly Elizabeth must have been the oldest as she was married about 1652.

For the thousands of descendants of William and Jane Berry, I have tried to make their family "come alive." Of course the actual incidents of the story are fiction. However, the women and girls in the family certainly spun wool, and swept with hemlock brooms, and made rabbit stews over an open fire. And as surely as they plowed in New England soil—William and his sons must have "picked rocks"—and built stone walls.

William Berry never made a hope chest for little Rachel, as he died suddenly in 1654. He might, however, have spent his spare time, in the last winter of his life, fashioning one for Rachel's older sister Mary.

New Hampshire's first colonists of 1623 were not Puritans but were members of the Church of England, and were engaged in a commercial venture in the new land. But by 1633 when the group of Dover settlers arrived from Bristol—and by 1638 when Rev. John Wheelwright brought his dissenters north to Exeter, and Rev. Stephen Bachiler (Batchelder) and his fold had settled Hampton—the Puritan/Congregational elements in the colony were coming into the majority.

As William Berry was one of Capt. John Mason's colonists of 1631, and as he was among the signers of the deed to the Glebe lands in 1640, he might be presumed to have been a Church of England man. A small number of the early comers, though, (Thomas Wiggin among them) were certainly Puritans. In any case, a man of the seventeenth century, breaking out a pioneer farm in lonely New England, must needs have felt close to his God.

Through Susanna[5] (Berry) Marden I am also descended from John[2] Berry. Perhaps this "double dose" could explain our family's love for the seashore, the pounding surf, the fog, the lonesome rocks in a winter's storm, or the summer sun shining on the periwinkle shells in a quiet tidal pool. Something very strong must have taken William Berry on two such pioneering feats in one short lifetime. First across the ocean—and then away from the settled town of Portsmouth to the lonely seaside.

I have enjoyed trying to picture how William and Jane spent their days "upon the neck of land upon the South side of the Little River at Sandy Beach."

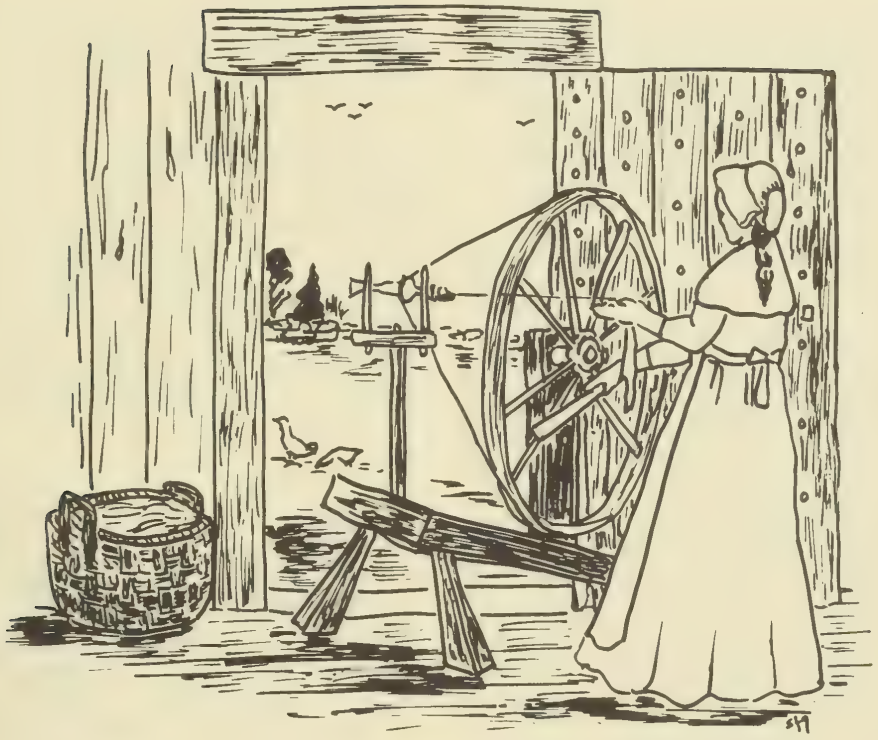
EARLY FALL 1653

Mary worked quietly beside the open doorway, her nimble young fingers busy at the great wheel. Mid-afternoon sunlight shone on her long braids, and glistened on bits of the coarse wool she was spinning into yarn.

She had spent long hours in watching her mother shape and test the growing strands. This last spring, when she had turned twelve, she had been allowed to take over much of the family spinning. She was tall enough now to stand easily at the large walking wheel, but even young muscle could ache.

Mary thought of how she had begged and begged her mother to be allowed to use the spinning wheel, and of the first days when her fingers had seemed all thumbs—how she had gripped the clumps of wool till her finger tips were sore—how awkward she had been in "drawing" the first strands and in gauging her steps backward as the yarn twisted and her steps forward as she allowed it to wind onto the turning spindle.

Then, with practice, had come a steady knowledge of the very feel of the yarn, the feel of the wool texture—how much "play" to yield into the strand as it grew—how tightly to hold it.



She was taking quiet pride in her work today as she thought about the approaching winter. Maybe there would be enough cloth for her to have a new skirt as well as the blankets that had to be finished. She had grown so this year! The heavy wool skirt she had worn last winter should be laid aside for little Rachel.

Maybe, for the first time in her life, she could have a brand new piece of clothing, and not something Elizabeth had outgrown.

Elizabeth was their oldest sister. Now that she was married, and living in Portsmouth, Mother depended heavily on Mary to help with all the household chores. Their days were very full. Though Mary took great pride in the baskets of yarn that stood in the corner of the keeping room, she knew that the weaving still lay ahead.

The loom her father had built stood in the little borning room off the kitchen. Whenever Mother could find the time from daily housekeeping, and the drying and storing of food for the winter, one could hear the clacking of the beaters as the older woman worked steadily on the family's supply of cloth.

Mother had allowed Mary to try her hand once at the loom. It was after she and Elizabeth had finished the last of the linens that had gone into Elizabeth's hope chest. Mary, who had been an eager observer of all the wedding preparations, had begged to weave something, too. Mother had let her make her first piece of linen toweling.

The hand polished shuttle had seemed so big, and the warping like a very jungle. Though the threads of the finished piece were loose and the texture clumsy, Mary didn't mind. She had folded it carefully away as though it had been made for a queen. It would be the first thing to go into the big pine hope chest Father had promised to make for her this winter.

The smooth wooden wheel hummed steadily, and Mary's soft moccasin tapped in time to the old tune she hummed quietly to herself. She stepped lightly back and forth, walking with the wheel, as she alternately drew the thread—and then allowed it to wind onto the spindle.

From the loft chamber came the busy sounds of sweeping. Mistress Jane Berry had discovered last night that some mice had moved into the far southwest corner under the eaves and probably had plans to stay the winter. The cat had been called in to evict the little family, and now a great cleaning of the entire loft was under way.

Little Rachel had been so unhappy when the big black cat had caught one of the mice. She was only five and had pleaded with her mother to let the tiny grey creatures spend the winter in their cozy hideaway.

"They need a home, too," the child had reasoned. "We have sheep and cows, and pigs, and a horse—and a dog—and a cat. Why can't we have mice?"

"We also have a barn," her mother had answered. "That's where the animals stay. Not here in the house with us. Besides the mice will get into our winter supplies of beans and corn and spoil them. We cannot allow that."

Rachel had tried to understand. She was a serious little thing, and afterwards she had gone about her own small duties, thoughtful and very quiet. She often tended to baby William's needs, but three-year-old James was her special charge, and this afternoon, while Mother cleaned in the attic, she took him carefully by the hand, and led him into the yard.

Together, they walked towards the barn. Together they looked in on the pigs in their pen. They rounded the shed and stood watching the sheep in the near pasture and the two big yellow cows who were standing under a giant elm slowly chewing their cuds. Father and the older boys had taken the ox with them today, as they were down in the farther field working.

Rachel looked about her. Home was nice. The little natural meadow that the men had hayed earlier in the year looked soft and sunny and was full of fall field flowers. Father planned to get a second crop of hay from it soon if the weather held. And there was more salt hay to be gotten in from the great marshes on the northern half of their neck of land.

As the two children stood there, they saw a bluejay alight on the lowest limb of the sugar maple beside the barn. He began his sharp raucous call. "Thief! Thief!"

"James, I wonder where the bluejay lives. And the chickadees we saw yesterday. Do you suppose they have homes?"

The little boy shook his sober head.

Rachel often carried on long conversations with her little brother, who sometimes understood, and sometimes didn't.

"What are you thinking, James? Do you suppose some of the mice got away and hid in the barn? Mother won't find them there."

Rachel squeezed his chubby hand, and James looked up at her. "We two will always be especial friends, won't we James?"

They stood there looking towards the east, the westing sun shining on their bare heads.

Gulls floated overhead, flying towards the great ocean that lay just beyond their fields.

"James, do you suppose Father will let us go with him in the ox cart when he and John and Joseph go to the beach for a load of seaweed for the garden? He let me go last year, but you were too little.

"I wonder where the gulls homes are. I've seen so many hundreds of them, but I never thought before about where they sleep, and where their nests are."

Rachel tossed her dark braids, and as suddenly as New England weather, her mood changed.

"Come on," she called. "I'll race you around the barn."

Small feet pelting on the worn ground, they cheered each other on. Then came a race to the stone wall at the edge of the near pasture, Rachel always careful not to get too far ahead of her chubby little brother.

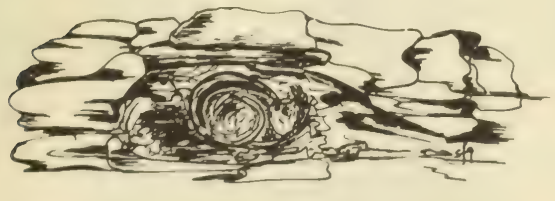
Panting, they rested on the cool stones, saying nothing, and watching the sheep who had been startled by their approach.

"What silly things sheep are, James—Oh, look."

Rachel's voice was lowered carefully. She had spied a chipmunk sitting like a small statue farther down the wall.

"I know where his home is, anyway," she pondered. "He lives right here in this wall. Father explained to me. He has little tunnels and burrows and nests—and lots of his friends live here, too."

She paused. "Maybe he's a friend of the mice and will take them in for the winter. Do you suppose that could be so, James? Are the animals all friends of each other?—No, that can't quite be so. Not all of them."



She was remembering a time she'd seen a hawk dive down into the pasture and catch some small creature. It had probably been a mouse. And now their poor family of mice was without a home, and out in the cold for the coming winter.

John and Joseph had spent the morning, under their mother's supervision, clearing all the corn husk bedding from the attic. It lay beside the stone wall where the boys had piled it. When Mother had finished with her sweeping, they would carry in fresh shocks to lay in layers under their featherbed ticking. The featherbed itself had been laid out in the sunshine for the day.

To the rest of the family, the loft might seem like an attic, but when John and Joe snuggled into the featherbed near the big chimney, it was a cozy sleeping chamber for them. They loved the smell of the dried corn husks and the spicy, musty odors of the herbs hanging from the rafters. Sometimes they rested their feet against the warm stones of the chimney while they told each other stories in the dark.

Mary had a little cot bed in the borning room beside the loom. Baby William was still in the cradle, and James and Rachel shared the trundle bed in their parents' room.

It was a happy home, but a full one. Maybe there wasn't room for even a mouse, thought Rachel.

The chipmunk had scurried away, his cheeks fat with seeds he was storing for the winter. Rachel and James sat on the stone wall, kicking at the pile of old corn husks cleared from the attic.

Suddenly, as though from a great distance, a slight scuttling sound came from under their feet. Quick as a flash, a tiny grey creature

slipped from under the debris and ran beneath a rock in the stone wall.

"James, did you see? One of the mice from the attic got away. He's safe and is finding another home for the winter."

"Good, Ray," the boy sighed. He hadn't really understood his sister's concern, but he was glad she was happier, and seeing the mouse had been fun.

A firm voice sounded from the house. "Rachel, come here, please."

Mother was finished with her sweeping and had appeared at the doorstep.

The two children looked at each other. Could their mother have also seen the mouse? Uneasily they hurried towards the yard.

"How could mother have seen so far?" asked the little girl. "He was so small, and we were away across the yard."

But when the two innocent conspirators arrived beside their mother, they discovered that she had called them for a very different reason. The mouse was indeed quite safe now.

"Rachel, dear, would leave James here with me,and take this cool flask of fresh cider down to your father and the boys? They're in the far field where they did the fall plowing last week. You know the place where they're picking rocks and working on the stone wall between that field and the cartway that goes around to the marshes.

"Follow the farm lane beside the near pasture,and I'm sure you'll see them. But if they've moved their work to another place and you don't find them right away, please don't wander around trying to.

"And mind you come back right away, so I'll know you're safe. I always worry even though we haven't seen any Indians about of late. They do come to this part of the shore, and they'll be on their fall and winter hunting trails soon, now that their corn and crops may be harvested.

"Mary and I have to start the rabbit stew for supper, but I know the men will be thirsty and tired."

Rachel turned to leave on her errand, but suddenly her mother's hand stopped her.

"Rachel, what have you done with your cap? Have you lost it again?"

The little girl looked sheepishly down and pulled a crinkled white head covering from her pocket. It was soiled from a fall in the barnyard and looked a bit like an old rag.

Her mother sighed—and then laughed. "Never mind, dear, I always hated wearing my cap on sunny days, too, when I was a little girl in old England. You may wash it ready for tomorrow when you're through with your supper chores, and we'll hang it by the fire to dry overnight."

She took the cap from Rachel's relieved hand and with a pat on the back sent her on her way.

Mary waved to little Rachel. The older girl was already at the well drawing water for the supper preparations.

Mistress Berry started to take the freshly sunned and aired featherbed into the house. It was bulky, and Mary hurried to help her carry it, leaving the wooden water bucket beside the well.

Rachel went happily down the pasture lane clutching the wooden flask.

How good Mother was, always thinking of others. And if she said that mice did not belong in the house, she must be right.

Anyway Rachel's heart felt lighter now. If one of the mice had gotten away, maybe others had, too.

She reached the end of the lane and looked across the plowed field to where she could see the men and the great ox at work. The flask had a tight wooden peg for a stopper, so it was safe for her to run. She jumped from hummock to furrow as she hurried towards the workers.

Joe Berry was standing beside the ox. He looked up and waved as Rachel approached. He and his sister Mary were so nearly of an age that they often teased each other. But good-natured Joseph really had great affection for all his brothers and sisters, and for little Rachel there was an especially warm spot in his heart.

"Hi, Ray", he shouted.

John and their father looked up. William Berry was prying a large piece of granite out of the plowed ground. His great iron pry bar was working it onto the stone boat which Joe held steady with one foot.

Sweat dripped down the side of his face, and glistened in the hair on his forearms. He only glanced at Rachel, and said not a word

until the huge rock was safely in place on the flat sled.

"Well, little one, what have you there for us?"

He reached for the wooden flask and leaned on the tall pry bar.

"I see Mother is thinking of us. That must mean they're starting supper up at the house.

"Boys, we'd better finish what we're doing here and start getting ready to go home."

The oldest boy, John, now sixteen and nearly a man, had his arms full of smaller stones. Before he took his turn at the flask, he carried his load over to the wall they were slowly building. Down on one knee, he placed the rocks into chinks left between larger boulders.

He wiped his hands clean on the grass beside the wall before returning to the others.

"Well, Father," he said, "I've got that last stretch pretty well picked over. Maybe one more go round, and a few more arms full will finish it. But I'd guess my back's about broken for today."

"I'll do some more picking now," piped up Joe. "I'm rested from my last turns.

"You bare-headed again, Sis?" He gave little Rachel's head an affectionate tousle and sprinted off.

"Well, that tasted good, little daughter."

William Berry brushed his arm across his forehead, and left a streak of dirt beside his right ear. There he stood, an honest husbandman, deep in the soil, and loving every minute of it. He had worked hard to clear this field. It was maybe his best piece of land. A few more stumps on the northern edge still to be dug out, but they were soft pine and would rot quickly. Perhaps he'd just plow around them for a year or so.

Or better still he'd get some more apple trees started—plant them between the stumps. Now that he and the boys had finished building a good stone bridge over the drainage ditch from the inner swamp, this farther field was much easier to get to. Maybe they could set out an orchard over along the edge of the field near the great salt marsh.

He knew there had been night heron nesting in the big pines they had cut down on the northern edge of the field. Maybe in another fifteen years they'd be nesting in apple trees if an orchard would take hold there.

He had a few fruit trees started near the house—both pear and apple—but they weren't bearing yet. He'd made a good trade with Tom Seavey on apples for the winter, but that wasn't the same as having your own.

It had been hard to leave behind the orchard he'd started at Little Harbor. Even though it hadn't begun to bear fruit, it had gotten a good start and had showed promise. It took a good many years for apple trees to really produce a full crop. They were one of the first things to be seen to on any new farm. He'd known that when they first settled here.

But the few he'd gotten started wouldn't be nearly enough and some had been winter killed—probably by the salt spray from the ocean storms. This northern field was a little further from the ocean even though the great salt marsh penetrated to its very edge. Maybe he should give some thought to putting an orchard a little further back from the edge of the marsh.

He'd talk it over with Tom and Will Seavey. They'd had less winter kill on their fruit trees last year than he had, and they might have some good ideas on where he'd gone wrong. Tom might be a fisherman, but he certainly knew a thing or two about farming. Seemed to have a knack with fruit trees anyway.

He took a last drink from the wooden flask.

That cider had tasted good, but they hadn't had enough pears for any good perry in more than a year. He sort of hankered for some.

The big man looked back across the field, his broad-brimmed hat shading his eyes from the afternoon sun.

If the Good Lord continued to bless them, this should be quite a working farm in a few years. They had not moved from Little Harbor to the neck of land by Sandy Beach so very many years before, and they'd certainly made a good start here.

It was in 1648 he'd gotten his first Sandy Beach land, and just last year the town had let him have forty acres more.

He looked fondly at his son John, who was standing beside the ox and patting its great head. He certainly looked like his mother, that one. Now the boys were big enough they were a real help and the farm was beginning to take shape. Last year they'd made the well deeper, and this summer it had lasted through the dry spells.

It was dawn to dusk of work every day except the Sabbath. That was what made life real, and, best of all, it was their own land. He glanced over at Joe, who was whistling to himself as he bent up and down picking small rocks from the plowed ground.

"Father," chimed in little Rachel. "May I keep this?"

Goodman Berry looked down to see in his daughter's hand, a little black cricket, sleepy in the fall afternoon.

"I know you are quick, child. But how did you catch the cricket? Usually they hop away."

"He likes me, Father. Is that what he's called? A cricket? Can I keep him and take him home to stay in the house this winter and be my special pet? He wouldn't eat much."

Their cat was Mary's favorite, and the dog always followed the boys. Maybe she could have an animal friend of her very own.

Her father put his great hand on her shoulder.

"Do you remember how I told you about the chipmunks' holes, and the rabbits' burrows and how each animal makes his own home just the way he likes it? It's always best to let each creature find their own place and make their very own way. Even though you and I both love this whole great world around us, and care about its creatures, part of that caring means letting the Good Lord speak to each of us in His own way. That little animal has his own ideas about where he wants to live."

Suddenly, the cricket gave a chirp, and hopped from Rachel's small hand. Another hop and chirp, and he was lost beyond a furrow in the dark soil of the field.

Rachel heaved a little sigh.

"Well, I guess you're right, Father. Is that how he talks? That 'chirp, chirp'?"

"Yes, my dear. That's how he talks. And they do say crickets bring good fortune to the homes where they live. But—they must not be taken there. They must choose the home themselves.

"John, you and I had better get a few more

big rocks on the stone boat, and get a last load over to the wall before we start for home. See if you can whistle up the dog. He's still chasing squirrels over there in the woods. Haven't seen him in over an hour."

He turned again to Rachel. "Thank you, little girl, for the good cider. Tell Mother we're nearly finished up here for the day."

Rachel's face lit up again as her father thanked her. She knew how hard he worked, and she loved both her parents dearly. Turning, she headed towards the pasture lane and home.

"Good-bye, Joe," she called to the distant figure bent over in the field.

The trip back was not as hurried a one. Her quiet, sober little head was thinking about what Father had said. She had been taught much about the Lord in the Sabbath lessons, and the daily prayers her father led at the table. If God was speaking to each creature, then maybe He spoke to her—all alone. Was she alone in the world? No, that wasn't the answer. She wasn't alone. She always felt surrounded by love.

She looked at each side of the sunny lane as she passed along it. There were a pair of chickadees. No, there were three of them, flitting about in the sumach trees, almost playing games with each other. And, yes, they were playing with her, too.

She began to skip along the path. I'll just be happy, she thought, like they are. Her braids bounced at her back, and she held her long skirt up so that she could go faster without tripping.

She raced into the yard—and into the house.

Mother was busy stirring the stew over the fire, and rocking William's cradle with her foot as she stirred.

Mary was going from hutch to table, setting out their wooden bowls, and their father's and mother's pewter tankards. She put a fresh loaf of bread out, and a great pitcher of milk.

"May I rock William, Mother? Father said to tell you they'd be finishing up soon. And he was very happy you sent me with the cider."

Mistress Jane Berry stopped her foot on the rocker of the cradle and let Rachel take over the care of little Will.

"Thank you, dear," she said. "See James over there in the corner on the boys' featherbed. He's fallen asleep with all his running about today. The featherbed was too big for Mary and me to get it up the loft stair. The boys and Father will have to put it up when they get home.

"I'm going out to get some fresh apples from the shed, Mary, and make a dowdy. Just keep your eye on this stew for me—and stir it once in a while. That fire's really too hot for it just now."

Mother left, and the two girls sat quietly together by the hearth.

Suddenly, from somewhere near at hand, came a loud chirp. Then another one sounded from over near the hutch.

"Oh, Mary, that's a cricket, and he's hopping about in here."

"Silly, of course it's a cricket. Haven't you ever heard them before?"

But Rachel didn't mind Mary's chiding tone. She had a quiet way of living with her own happy thoughts. And she knew, deep in her heart, that this little cricket had *chosen* to come and live with them—and that theirs was a very happy home.

Her eyes sparkled as the firelight danced in them. The two little boys slept quietly. The fire crackled and the logs shifted slightly. The only other sounds were the soft rocking of the pine cradle, and the noise of the great wooden spoon stirring in the iron kettle.

Suddenly another chirp came from near the wall under the tall hutch, and the two girls smiled at each other.

Appendix C

In the course of searching for information for this book a number of old wills were found. Most were interesting and contained valuable information so there has been a great temptation to reproduce several of them. However, the will of Thomas[1] Emerson, the emigrant of that line, has been selected. It is a very early will having been made in 1653. Together with the inventory of the estate it tells us much about life in the first thirty years of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. Also it mentions Elizabeth Emerson Fuller, a direct ancestor of Fannie C. Harrison. This confirms the Emerson line of descent.

The copy of the will and inventory as it appears in the *Ipswich Emersons* by Benjamin Kendall Emerson is reproduced to preserve more of the quaintness of the original document as it was reproduced years ago.

THE WILL OF THOMAS EMERSON.

(*Essex Probate Registry, Salem, Mass.*)

The 31st of Maye 1653

I Thomas Emerson of Ipswich in the countye of Essex being att present, I prayse god, of good health and pfect memory, And well knowing that all men are borne to dye & depart this life. and that the tyme & place of there departure is to them vnknowne & vncertayne and sometymes sudden, I doe therfore declare & make knowne this my last will and Testament in maner following

Iuprimus I bequeath my soule into the hands of my blessed Creator & Redeemer my body to the earth to be deasently buried In asured hope of a Joyfull resurection at the last day And for my outward Estate I doe dispose of as followeth:

I Give and bequeath vnto my sonne Joseph the some eighty pound of current paye of new england viz forty pound of it which I reserued out of my farme Given vnto my sonne John to be payd unto the said Joseph my sonne acording to the couenant & agreement expressed in a papre of Indentors bearing date the six and twentieth of the ninth month 1648 the other fforty pound to be payd vnto him by my sonne Nathaniell (out of my house & land giuen vnto him) within six moonths after the decease of me & my wife

Item I giue & bequeath vnto Nathaniell Emerson my sonne my house wherein I now dwell with all my vpland & meddow and the marsh I bought of my sonne Joseph w'h was somtymes Mr Woodmansys with all the aptenances & priveledges thervnto belonging payeing forty pound out of it as aboue expresst alsoe a little p'sel of meddow lyeing within the marsh before mentioned after the decease of me & my wife

Item I Giue vnto my daughter Elisabeth ffullor The best fether bed & boulster with a paire of blanketts and the best couerlet and the bedstd to Inioy for hir vse vntill hir daughter Susana atayne the age of Twenty yeares or day of hir mariage if shall happen sooner and then she to Inioy them alsoe. I giue vnto my sayd daughter the great caruel chest & the caruel box with a little Trunck with all y't is in it and a small caruel chest with what is in it

Item I giue vnto my sonne James Emerson the some of forty pounds out of my stock of cattell to be payd vnto him if he shall come ouer into this country (or send by a certayne surtifficate of his being liueing) within two yeares after the decease of me & my wife. In case my sayd sonne dye before. then my will is that my sonne Joseph his sonne Joseph shall haue ten pound of it and my sonne Nathaiell ten pound & my daughter ffullar hir foure sonnes the other Twenty pound or if any of them dye the survivors to inioye the same

Item my will is that Elisabeth Emerson my wife shall Inioy the yearely rent of the farme with the six head of cattell wintering at the sayd farme & if they doe not winter soe many to make it vp as is agreed as alsoe the house wherein I dwell with the vpland & meddow & marsh bought of my sonne Joseph with all the aptenances belonging thervnto and alsoe all my household goods and all my cattell I shall leave both oxen & cowes & all other youngcattell whasoeuer to inioy them freely without let or disturbance of any pson or psons whatsoeuer dureing the tyme that she doth continue my widdow provided allwayes and it is my will & meaneing that if the sayd Elisabeth my wife doth marry that then she shall haue only the yearly Rent of the aforesayd farme dureing the tyme of hir naturall Life and the wintering of the aforesayd Six head of cattell alsoe to haue the little featherbed & one boulster & two payre of sheetes and two cowes The rest of the cattell and household stufe to be dis-posed of as In this my will expresst

And further my will is that my sonne Nathaniell incase he doe inioye the house & Land by the mariage of my wife that then he shall paye the some of six pound by the yeare to his mother dureing the terme of hir naturall life for the rest of my household goods I leave to my wife to dispose of what shee shall thinke fitt to my sonne Joseph and the rest to be devided betweene my son Nathaniell and my daughter ffuller.

ffurther I make my Loueing wife Elisabeth Emerson sole executrix to this my last will and Testament And doe desire my much honored & faithfull frends M'r Samuel Symonds and Maior Gen'l Daniell Denison to be ouerseers to see y't this my will be fullfilled.

In witness to this my last will I have heervnto sett my hand and seale the day and yeare first expresst

signed sealed &c
in the p'sents of vs
ROBERT LORD
DANIEL HOUEY

Thomas Emerson

Janvary the 4th 1660.

memorandum. thes ar to testifie vnto any home it may consern that I haue giuen vnto my son John Emerson his portion Ful in y'e Consideration of y't agreement betwixt vs about my farme he dully performing the Couenant of y'r said indenters betwixt vs during the terme of my life & his mothers as also thos engag ments their in spe-ified afterwords acording to our mutu all agreement according to the sixteenth lin of this wil

Thomas Emerson

memorandum in Consideration of the ten Lins Canseld on the other sid Conserning my son James my will is thet he shal have the sum of fiv povnd payd to him by my Son Nathaniel w'hin tow yers after the diseas of the longest liver of my wife or myself in Case he shall Come or send by a sertain sertifficat y't he is then Living.

Alsoe in refrans to ye eigtenth lin of this my will for six months ther exprest is thus to be vnderstood that my son Nathaniel shoul pay that forty pounds to my son Joseph the sume of ten pounds a year til it be fully dischardgd vnles he y'e said Nathaniel shall sell my hous & land I now dwel in, & the it is to be payd to my son Joseph presently.

Also in refrens to the twenty fifth lin of this my wil it is to be vnderstood that what ther is mentoned as to my daughter ffulor is my intent that it shall be holy and fuly devided betwen hur tow daughter at y'r age of twenty yers or at y'r day of mariadg Susanna and Elisabeth. alsoe my will

is that my loving wif Elisabeth Emerson shall enioy for hur use halfe the fruit of the orchard during her natural lif

to the particulers abov mention I witnes to be my own act

In the presents of

George Giddinge
Daniel Hovey

Ptued by the oaths of George Gidding Daniell Hovey & Robert Lord respectiuely before mr Symon Bradstreet & maior Genall Denison the clerke being psent the 10th of May 1666 to be the last will of Thomas Emerson with the additions

As attest Robert Lord clerk

Annd Jnuintorey of the lands cattell and Goods of Goodman Emepsonne Sener deceased 3 May 1666

J primis the housing and land belongin toe it	150-00-00
" too steares 6£ three cows and a heyfer 16£	22-00-00
" tu weanings calfs 1£ Six sheep and too lamb 3£10	04-10-00
" half a mare and half a colt	05-00-00
" his wearing cote & linen and woolen	09-00-00
" in the pallor a feather beed flock beed a quilt 3 bolsters and too pilows a ceverlitt and too blencketts curttains valantts bedsted	18-00-00
" a lettell trunk a doosin ½ napkines and a tabel cloth a short and a long towel	03-00-00
" the greatt carved chest with nine payre of sheet 3 tabel cloths 4 pilow bears peace cloth	16-10-00
" a carved bote	00-06-00
" 3 chest and a trunk	01-00-00
" a carpet too coushings a remnantt cootten	01-15-00
" a remnant of cloth att	01-02-00
" books and bibels	02-00-00
" a tabel and chayers stoals glass cast and whattis	03-00-00
" brass and pewter and tin ware	01-10-00
" Jron ware and tools	02-00-00
" a feather bed in the chamber and blanks	04-10-00
" in the other chamber corn and steel mill	03-10-00
" for severall single particulares	01-00-00
" for too peaces and bandeleares	01-00-00
the Sume	251 3 0

by us

William Goodhue
Simon Thompson

Att the Court held at Ipswich the 25 of Sept: 1666

The widdow Elizabeth Emerson upon oath d'd this Jnventory to be a true inventory to the best of her knowledge & if more come to her knowledge she will ad it as attest Robert Lord

Cleric

Index

A

ADAMS
Bernie 260, 261, 262
Beverley 262, 263
H. Burnham 260, 262, 263
Harry Burnham 164
Henry W. 260
Katherine (Seavey) 260
ALDEN
Anna[5] 227
Ebenezer,[4] Cap't. 227
John 205, 208, 214, 230
Joseph, Deacon 230
Joseph[2] 223
Oliver 230
Seth, Cap't. 230
ALGER
Joseph 233
Mary 233
Thomas 224
ALLEN
Allens ii
The Rev. 85, 91, 93
"Old Taylor" of (Tailor) 176
Daniel 72
Emma Etta 280
Etta Martha 280
Eveline 280
Jane (Boyd) 280
Martha Frances (Hampton) 256
Mary A. 250
Maud 313
Tailor 176
Thomas 280
ALLERTON
Isaak 203
AMES
Abagail[4] 220
Benjamin[4] 220
Daniel[4] 220
Deborah[4] 220
Elizabeth[4] 220
John 220
John[3] 220
John[4] 220
Jonathan[4] 220
Joshua[4] 220
Sarah[4] 220
William[1] 220
ANDERSON
Lowry, The Rev. 388
Margaret, Mrs. 388
ANDRUS
William, The Hon. 174
ANLT (AULT)
John 11
ARNO
Mary 161
ASPINWALL
Zervial 159
ATWOOD
Abagail 229
John 86, 88
AUSTIN
Jim 179

B

BABB
Phillip, Jr. 72
BACHILER (BATCHELDER)
Stephen, The Rev. 440

BACON
— 123, 124
Rebecca Potter 124
BALDWIN
Henry 10, 11
BALL
Agnes 278
BANKER
Rose 278
BAREFOOT
Walter, Gov. 68
BARKER
Kate L. 159
BARLEY
Mary 230
BARNES
Mary 88
BARON
Edward 35, 55
Helen 35
Joan 35, 55
BARROWS
Sidney Biddle 109
BARRY
Charlene 402
Charlotte (Cromie) (Mrs. Frank) 402
Donna M. 402
Edna 402
Frank T. 401
Gary T. 403
Jason 402
Michael T. 402
Susan J. 402
BARTLETT
Josiah, Dr. 99, 100
BATCHELDER
David 112
Nathaniel 81
BATES
Eli, Mrs. 176
BEAL
Joseph 11
BEAN
Susan 159, 161, 162
BEANE
Robert 129
Sarah 129
Tammasen 129
William 128
BEAPLE
John 45
BEDELL
Ernest 338
BEEMAN
Nathan 172, 173
BELL
Velma 401
BERKLEY
— 179
BERRY
Abagail[3] 72
Deliverance[3] 72
Ebenezer 67
Elisha[3] 72
Elizabeth[2] 72, 80, 440, 441
Elizabeth[3] 72
Frederica[3] 72
George[3] 72
Hannah[3] 72
James[2] 72, 439, 442, 443, 444, 448
James[3] 72
Jane[1] (Hermins) 44, 69, 70, 71, 72, 440, 442, 445, 448
Jane[3] 72
Jene 72
Jeremiah[3] 72
John[2] 70, 72, 440, 443, 445, 446, 447
John[3] 72
Joseph[2] 72, 443, 445, 446, 447, 448
Joseph[3] 72
Judith[3] Locke 72
Mary[2] 57, 69, 72, 73, 78, 80, 143, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 447, 448, 449
Nathaniel[3] 72, 81
Nemiah 67
Rachel[2] 72, 439, 440, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449
Rachel[3] 72
Samuel 67
Samuel[3] 72
Stephen 67
Stephen[3] 72

Thomas[3] 72
William 67
William[1] 11, 12, 13, 44, 45, 51, 57, 58, 61, 69, 70, 71, 72, 78, 80, 142, 395, 440, 445, 446, 447
William[2] 72, 442, 443, 448
William[3] 72
BETTINGER
E.D. 317
Muriel 317, 318
BIGLEY
James D., The Rev. 394
BILLING
John 71
BILLINGTON
John 203
BIXBY
Freeman 159
BLAISDELL
Michael 100
BLAKLEY
Fanny 288
Lydia M. 288
BLESSING
Margaret 122, 123
BLETHEN
Jane 127, 128
John 127, 128
BLUE
Edward 86, 88
Edward (son of Edward) 88
Jonathan 88
Mehitable 87
Mehitable[4] (Seavey) 88
BOAD
Henry 43
BOLTON
Joseph 233
Phillip 233
BOND
John 112
BONNEY
Dorcas (Sampson) 217
Mary 217
Thomas 217
BONTWELL
Charlotte Anne 404
BOOKER
Florence 280
Jay 280
BOSWELL
Sarah 81
Susannah (Perkins) 110
BOUCHER
Joshua Allen 404
Joshua Allen (son of Joshua Allen) 404
BOUGHAM
James 122, 123
BOWDEN
Mary 220
BOWDITCH
Nathaniel 145
BOWEN
Emily J. 266
Shepard P. 266
BOWES
Major 262
BOWHAM (BAFFAM)
— 123, 124
BOWPASSE
Edward 208
BOYD
Andrew 400
Dorothy 400
Fred 400
Margaret 278
Ross 400
BRACE
G.W. 177
BRACKETT
Anthony 71
John 49, 67
Samuel 67
William 11
BRADFORD
Alice 216
John[3], Mayor 216
Mercy (Warren) 216
William, Governor 10, 192, 195, 200, 201, 202, 204, 205, 208, 214, 216

BRANCH
Christopher 434
BRAND
Nathaniel 72
BRANT
Elsie 400
BRAY
Margerey 59
BREWSTER
Elizabeth 108, 109
Love 208
William, Elder 108, 109, 192, 195, 200, 203, 208, 214
BREYETTE
Hermidas 179
BRIGGS
John 213
BROOKLIN (BRAKIN?)
William 11
BROWN
Billy Jean 434
Elizabeth 102
Joseph 67
Mary 112
Nicholas 129
Peter 203
BROWNE
Elizabeth 34
BRUCE
Ada 401
BUDDINGTON
Robert 71
BUFFUM
Abagail[5] Mary Eusta 132
Abraham (of 1st Marriage) 122, 123, 124, 125
Anna[5] 132
Arnold 134
Benjamin[3] 131, 132, 134, 135, 136
Benjamin[4] 132
Benjamin[5] 132
Benjamin[6] 133
Bethana[6] 120, 121, 133, 134, 157
Bethany[6] 133, 134
Caleb[2] 123, 125, 129, 131, 134, 135
Caleb[3] 129, 131
Comfort[5] 132
Comfort[6] 133
Demaris 123, 127, 128
Dammaris 129
David 134
David[5] 132
Debora[2] 123
Deborah[2] 122, 125, 127
Edward Gould 134
Elizabeth (Buxton) 132
Elizabeth[4] 132
Elizabeth[5] 132
Esther[4] 132
Hannah 127, 128
Hannah[3] 131
Hannah[4] 132
Hannah[5] 132
Hannah[6] 133
Jacob (of 1st Marriage) 122, 123, 124, 125
James[5] 132
Jedediah[5] 132, 133
John[2] (of 1st Marriage) 122, 124, 125
John[6] 133
Jonathan[3] 131
Jonathan[5] 132, 133, 134, 157
Joseph, The Hon. 134
Joseph[3] 131
Joseph[4] 132, 133, 134, 136, 138
Joseph[5] 132
Joseph[6] 133
Joshua[2] (of 1st Marriage) 122, 123, 124, 125
Joshua[2] 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 135
Lydia 123
Lydia[4] 132
Margaret (Blessing) 124
Margaret (Osborn) 132, 133
Margaret[5] 132
Margaret[6] 133
Margerey 123
Mary 123, 125, 129
Mary[2] (1st Marriage) 122, 123, 124, 125
Mary[4] 135
Moses[5] 133
Ophelia[6] 133
Rachel[4] 132

Rebecca[4] 132
Richard[5] 132
Robard[2] 123
Robert[1] 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 131, 134
Robert[3] 131
Ruth[6] 133
Ruth (Joslin) 134, 157
Sam[2] (son of 1st Marriage) 122, 123, 124, 125
Sarah (Gaskill) 133
Sarah[2] 123
Stephen[6] 133
Tomazin (Tomoson) 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 134
Tammasen[3] (Tamoson) 129, 131
Thomas B. 134
Walter N. 123, 127
William[5] 132
William[6] 134
BUNTEN
John 100
BURGERS
William 192
BURK
Irena 163
BURKE
Joseph, Dr. 382
BURNETT
Frances 24
BURNHAM
Katherine (Owen) 260
BURNELL
Patricia 402
BURROW
Dionis 122, 123
BURTINGTON
Bartholomew 20
BURTON
Hannah 137
John, Cap't. 137
BUTLER
Eugene 163
BUXTON
Anthony 136
Elizabeth 132, 136
Hannah 138
John[2] 136, 138
Joseph 132

C

CABOTO
Giovanni 1
CALDERON
Phyllis 275, 280, 432
CALDWELL
Bill 4, 5, 21, 22, 24, 27, 433
CANNEY
Thomas 11
CAREWE
George, Sir 32
CARPENTER
Alice 161
Amelia 161
Charles L. 161
Cutter C. 160, 161
Edward 172
George W. 161
Israel R. 161
Monroe 161
CASE
Russell 176
CAVANAUGHS
— 336
CAVE
Margaret 347
CHADBORN
Matthew 11
CHADBOURN
William 11, 77, 79
Mary 77, 79
Humphrey 46
CHADBOURNES
— 10
CHAMBERLAIN
— 9
Joshua 173
Kinkade 173
CHAMPERNOWNE
Francis 59, 91
CHAMPLAIN
Samuel de 3, 4, 170

CHANDLER
Phoebe 230, 233
Sarah 229, 231
CHAPMAN
Job 72
CHARLES
Prince of Eng. 6
II of England 47, 126
CHASE
Hannah 112
CHATHERTON
Thomas 11
CHATTERTON
Michael 71
CHEVEY
Eldal 51
CHITTENDON
Dorothy 400
Ernest 400
Howard 400
Raymond 400
Royal 400
Safford 400
CHOAT
— 123, 124
CHRIS
Palmer 67
CHURCH
Fannie (Irwin) 299, 300
George 295, 296
George W. 266
Gertrude, Mrs. (Stafford) 295
Margaret Fannie (Irwin) 296
Nora 295, 297
Riley 266, 296, 297
CLARK
Leonard F. 288
Susanna 212
Thomas 212
CLEAVES
Samuel 145
CLIFFORD
Abagail 87
Abraham 63, 86, 88, 103
CLIFTON
Richard 200
COCHRAN
John, Cap't. 82
COFLEY
Pat 179
COLE
Abagail 81
Matthew 71
COLLACUT
Thomasin 136
COLLECOTT
Richard 138
COLLINS
Adelia Katherine 164, 187, 262, 263, 265, 274, 288, 313, 314, 315, 319, 322, 324, 325, 327, 329, 333, 404, 407, 408, 409, 410, 433
Alfred E. 271, 305, 316
Belle 263, 264
Bernard 403
Clara 250
Ellen (Lamkins), Mrs. 263, 264
Ernest R., Mrs. 250
Fannie Elizabeth 233, 314, 315, 317, 319, 322, 323, 324, 325, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 384, 397
George Irwin 273, 299, 314, 315, 319, 322, 323, 324, 325, 327, 338, 364, 397, 405, 406, 407, 409
George M. 272, 316, 317
George W. i, 153, 248, 249, 254, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 303, 305, 306, 312, 313, 315, 316, 317, 319, 320, 321, 322, 327, 382, 403
James 263, 264
Jane (Jennie) Irwin i, 240, 268, 272, 273, 275, 276, 285, 297, 299, 300, 304, 311, 312, 314, 315, 316, 317, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 327, 334, 364, 397
King 271
Lawrence Albert i, 240, 247, 248, 268, 269, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 325, 327, 331, 334, 397, 403, 407
Lonnie 263

Ruby (Carpenter) 403
Sarah Sophia 273, 304, 314, 315, 319, 322, 325, 327, 334, 335, 397, 398, 399, 401
Sophia (Sharrow) 153, 248, 249, 265, 271, 272, 273, 274, 303, 305, 314, 315, 316, 319, 321
COLMER
Abraham 9
COMETA
Allison-Lee 380, 381, 413, 416
Angelo Thomas 371, 412, 416
Ariane Katherine 380, 381, 413, 416
Betty Jane (Harrison) 315, 383, 384, 391, 412
Thomas More 380, 381, 414, 417
Victoria Anne 380, 414, 417
COMOCK
Thomas 11
CONANT
David 230
Hannah (Blackman) 230
Joseph 219
CONKLANE
Anamin 137
CONNOR
Benjamin 88
John 72
Joseph 63, 86, 88
Mary 87
Mary[4] (Seavey) 88
Samuel 88
Sarah 88
COOK
Gresbolin 182, 183
COOKE
Elisha 9, 10
Francis ii, v, 191, 195, 196, 197, 198, 202, 203, 204, 208, 211, 213, 214, 215, 434
Hester (Mahieu) 198, 204, 213, 215
Jacob 204, 205
Jane 190, 198, 204
John[2] 198, 202, 214, 215, 216
COON
Samuel C. 239, 241
COOPER
William 11
COOTY
Ray 264
COPELEY
Bill 433
CORBETT
Abraham 47
CORNING
Charles 182, 183
COTE
Karen Ann 300
CRABB
Susan 107
CRANNDELL
William C. 300
CRAWFORD
Margaret 43
Sarah 43
Stephen 43, 45
Susan 43, 44
CROAD
John 45
CROCKETAGNE
Antoine de 12
CROCKETT
Davey 175
Thomas 9, 10, 12, 40, 142
CROMIE
Anna 400
Asher 400
Carroll 400
Charlotte E. 398, 401, 402
Clara (Mrs. Harold), Mrs. 433
Claude William 399, 401, 403, 404
Darlene Sarah 404
David Paul 405
Edmond 401
Eliza 400
Ethel 401
Frank Mitchell 299, 324, 325, 399, 400, 401, 403
Gordon 400
Harley 318, 400
Harold Lawrence 394, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403
Harold, Mrs. (Ruby) 245, 432
Helen 400

CROMIE—Continued
Irwin York 405
James 400
Jennie 400
John 398, 400, 401
Jessica 403
Kathaleen (La Pier) 399
Larry 399, 403
Laura 400
Leslie Jennie 405
Lillian 401
Loretta 401
Lucile 406
Mary 400
Mary Ann (Grandma) 400, 401
Mildred 401
Patricia Adelia 404
Phyllis 400
Ralph 400
Ranson 401
Raymond 401
Robert 399
Ross 401
Ross (son of Ross) 401
Ruby 394, 433
Ruth 400
Sherrill 399, 403
Sidney 400
Sophia (Collins) 299, 399, 401, 403, 409
Thomas 400
William (son of Ross) 401
William S. 399, 400, 404
Winfred 400
CROMWELL
Oliver 126
Richard 126
CROSS
Charles 323
CROWTHER
John 11, 71
CULLAM
David, Cap't. 82
CUMMINS
— 70
Richard 55
CURTIS
Abner 251
Adelia 250
Amaryllis 251
Benjamin Hewell 250
Crosby 256
Delia Anne (Delian) 177, 249, 250, 251, 258, 304, 383, 407
Delian 252
Eliza 251
Ella 251
Ellen M. 250
Euoch E. 250
Fannie (Lyon) 177
Fanny (Lyon) 250
Florence 250
Jane 251
Lenora 249, 250
Levi 177, 249, 250
Luther R. 254
Marvada 249
Mary 251
Philena 251
Phoebe Sarah 251
Sarah 251
Silvester 249
Thomas 251
Walter 251
William 20, 251
Zerah 250
Cap't. Z 250
CUSE
— 362
CUSHING
Elesha 216
Elizabeth 216
CUSHMAN
Erial 268
CUTTING
John 19
CUTTS
— 46
Richard 19, 47

D

DACEL
C.F. 318
DALLY
Pardon 172

DANA
Richard Henry 24, 148
DANES
Eight 11, 40
DARLING
Sarah 129
DATEN
Edward 208
DAVANCY
Mary 253
DAVID
Pete 179
DAVIES
Marian 336
DAVIS
Joseph 52
DEARING
Mary (Carpenter) 52
DELANEY
E.T. 269
DELANO
Phillip 214
DEL BEL
Marie 336
DELONG
— 173
DENTON
Dora (Margaret) 278, 279, 280
Margaret 279
DERBY
Elizabeth (Haskett) 138
Margaret 132, 138
Roger 138
Samuel 129
DERRICK
Peter 100
DE VENUE
Philip 195
DEXTER
— 197
Henry Martin, The Rev. 212
Morton 212
DIAMONT
John, Sr. 45
DICKEY
Florence, Mrs. 332, 338, 339, 341, 345
Robert 332, 338, 339
Robert (son of Robert) 332
DOIONS
Rebora 20
DOLLEY
Jeremiah 47
DOMINY
C.G. 172
DORANCY
Mary 244
DOVOST
Samuel 67
DOW
Henry 87
DOWNEY
John 244
Lorenzo 187, 188, 191, 239, 244, 245, 249, 253, 254, 304
Lorenzo (son of Lorenzo) 244, 245, 254, 256
Sylvia 244, 245
Thomas 244, 245, 253
DOWNS
Charles 280
DRAKE
Jane (Hermins) (Berry) 57, 70
Nathaniel 44, 70, 71
DRUMMOND
The Rev. Father 184, 283
DUBOIS
John, Bishop 281
DUGAS
Victor, Father 282
DUGLES
Joshua 118
DUSTIN
Daniel 177

E

EASTWICK
Elizabeth (Fernald) 52
EASTWICKE
Stephen, Cap't. 52
EDDY
Samuel 213
EDSON
Samuel, Deacon 223
EDWARDS
Heather 402

EDWARDS—Continued
John 402
Lois 402
Nichole 402
William 402
EELLS
William 278
ELIZABETH
Queen of Eng. 3
ELKINS
Henry, Cap't. 96, 97
ELLINS
Ant 11, 70
EMERSON
Alice of Eng. 108
Anne of England 108
Benjamin[2] 108
Benjamin Kendall 451
Edward[3] 108
Elizabeth[2] 108, 110
James[2] 108
Joan of England 107
Johannes of England 107
John 109, 110
John of England 107, 108
John[2] 108
Joseph[2] 108
Joseph[4] 108
Margaret of England 108
Nathaniel[2] 108
Ralfe[2] 108
Ralph[7] Waldo 107, 108
Robert of England 107, 108
Robert[2] 108
Susan[2] 108
Thomas of England 107
Thomas[1] 107, 108, 110, 111, 451
Thomas[2] 108
William[5] 108
William[6] 108
ERIC THE RED 1
ERICSON
Leif 1
ESTABROOK
Jemima 157
EVERETT
Edward F. 109
EVERS
Joseph 244

F

FACTEAU
Andrew 402
Andrew (son of Anthony) 402
Anthony 402
Barbara 402
Kyle 402
FAIRCHILD
Sherman Mills 363, 365, 367
FALLS
Captain 146
FARWELL
David 158
FAY
Alice 354
FEAGIN
Bob 261
FELLOWS
Stephen 118
FERDINANDO
Simon 2
FERGUSON
Malcolm P. 367, 392
Vera (Mrs. Malcolm P.) 392, 427
FERNALD
Anne 52
Elizabeth 52
Patience 52
Reginald (Renald) 11, 13, 51, 71
Sarah 52
Thomas 10
Thomas[2] 51, 52
FERRIS
Isaac 176
Lewis 176
FIERRO
Colonel 362
FIFIELD
Ruth 400

FINNEY
Gary 400
William 400
William, Jr. 400
FINCH
Lucy 163
FLANDERS
Ira 182
FLINT
Edward 129
FOIDE
Stephen 20
FOLGER
Abiah 135
Bethesda[2] 135
Peter[1] 135
FONTAINE
A.P. (Jack) 368
FOOT
G. Hall 267
FORBES
Caleb 213
Edward[2] 213
Elizabeth[2] 213
John[1] 213
John[2] 213
Joshua[2] 213
Mary[2] 213
William[2] 213
FORD
Stephen 45
FORKEY
Flossie 319
Joseph 319
FORSTOT
Corinne Isabel 381, 429, 430
David Aaron 381, 422, 429, 430
Marshall 428
Virginia Sue 383, 428, 429, 430
FOSS
Abagail 57, 69, 75, 81, 85
Agatha 76
Anthonius 76
Charles A. 76
Craig 78
David Lauritzon 76, 79
Elizabeth[2] 81
Hannah[2] 81
Inger 76, 79
Jacob[5] Daniel 76, 79
Jens 76
Job 103
John (Johan) 76, 79
John[1] 12, 56, 69, 72, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 143, 394
John[2] 69, 80, 81, 82, 85
Joseph[3] 81
Joshua 67
Joshua[2] 78, 81
Joshua[3] 79, 80
Josiah[3] 81
Karine 76
Lawritz 76
Lawritz Davidson 76
Magdalena 76
Margaret 82
Martha[2] 81
Mary (Berry) 80, 81
Mary[3] 81
Mary (Thadburn) 81, 85
Mary (Chadbourn) 77
Mercy[3] 81
Nathan[2] 81
Peder (Peter) 76, 78, 79
Richard[2] 81
Samuel[2] 78, 81
Susannah[3] 81
Thomas[2] 81
Thomas[3] 81
William 103
William[2] 81
Zachariah[2] 81, 82
Zacharias[3]
FOST
John 78
FOSTER
Deborah 129
John S. 183
FOUNTAIN
Matthew 403
Pete 179
Ray 403

FOWLER
James 67
FRANCIS
King of France 1
FRANKLIN
Benjamin 135
Josiah 135
FRAY
Aaron 163
Julia 163
FRAZIER
John 177
William 177
FREDEUBURGH
Charles, Count 170
FRENCH
— 172
Dr. 176
Christina 80
FROST
Nicholas 45
FULLER
Benoni[3] 112
Catherine[5] 113
David[5] 113
Elizabeth 91
Elizabeth Emerson 111, 451
Elizabeth[2] 110, 111
Elizabeth[3] 112
Elizabeth[4] 113
Elizabeth[5] 113
Hannah[5] 113
James[2] 110, 111
James[3] 112
James[4] 113
James[5] 113
Jeremiah[4] 112, 113
Joanna[4] (Seavey) 117, 119
Joanna[5] 113, 117, 157
John[1] 108, 109, 110, 111
John[2] 110, 111, 112
John[3] 112
John[4] 112
Joseph 60, 91, 109
Joseph[2] 110
Joseph[4] 112, 113, 117
Joseph[5] 113
Lovey[4] 113
Mary 85, 92, 93
Mary[4] 113
Mary[5] 113, 117, 153
Nathaniel[2] 110, 111
Olive[5] 113
Rachel 112
Rachel (Brabrook) 112
Rachel[3] 112
Rachel[5] 113
Robert 110
Sarah[2] 110
Sarah[5] 113
Susannah[2] 110, 111
Tho. 112
Thomas[2] 110, 111
Thomas[3] 112
William[1] 109, 110
William[2] 110, 112
William Hyslop 109, 110, 112
FURNOLD (FERNALD)
Thomas 11

G

GAINS
George 99
GAMBLE
Hamilton Rowan 255
GARDINER
Abagail 94
Samuel 129
GARDNER
George 128
GASKILL
Provided 127, 128
Sarah 133
GEDNEY
Bartholomew 129
GEE (ALSO GOT)
Ralph 11, 45
Henry 11
GEORGE II
King of England 59
GEORGE III
King of England 59

GETCHELL
Sylvia Fitts 49, 72, 391, 432, 439
GIBBINS
Ambrose 9, 10, 11, 71
GIBSON
Richard, The Rev. 71
GILBERT
Humphrey, Sir 3, 5, 20
John, Sir 5
GILMANS OF EXETER 99
GODDARD
John 11
GODFREY
Edward 43
GOLD
George A. 271
GOMES
Estaban 2
GOODMAN
John 203
GOODWIN
Bonnie, Mrs. 433
Ichabod 145
GORDON
Andrew 275, 276, 277
Nancy (Richey) 280
GORGES
Ferdinando, Sir 4, 7, 8, 9, 11, 12, 13, 15, 16, 17, 19, 40, 51
GOSNOLD
Bartholomew 3, 5
GOSS
Jonathan 102
Jonathan (son of Jonathan) 102
Richard 67, 72, 81
Robert 72
GOSSELIN
Charles 179
GRANGER
Delia Anne (Mrs. Edward B.) 77, 373, 378, 379, 383, 420, 421, 423, 434
Edward Brown 373, 379, 394, 420, 421, 423, 434
Gregory George 380, 381, 422, 423, 424
Helen Lynn 380, 381, 422, 423, 424, 434
Izaak William 423
Jennie Elizabeth 380, 381, 420, 421
William H. 321, 380, 381, 422, 423
Willian (Brown), Mrs. 423
GREEN
Joseph 163
GREENLEAF
Abner 145, 146
GREGORY
John 176
GRENERY
Margaret (Brown) 124
GRUBB
Gabriel 20
GUAST
Pierre de 3, 5

H

HACKWELL
William 109
HAGER
C.L., The Rev. 263
HAGNER
Louis 280
HALES
Edward 61
HALEY
Andrew 72
Deliverance 72
HALL
A.C., Mrs. (also Mrs. A.B.) 102, 154, 155, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 164, 172, 431
HAMMOND
Fred S. 121
HANSDATER
Catherine 76
HANSON
Harold L. 63, 93, 94, 102, 117, 144, 153, 154, 155, 158, 159, 160, 162, 187, 431
HARRINGTON
Daniel 229
HARRIS
Isaac 227
HARRISONS ii
HARRISON
Ann 224
Beth 224, 394

HARRISON—Continued
Betty Jane 311, 329, 346, 349, 354, 355, 357, 360, 366, 367, 370, 371, 378, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416
Crockett 347, 349
Crockett A. 325, 331, 340, 347, 349, 367, 379, 382, 386, 411
David 224, 394
Delia Anne 311, 349, 356, 365, 419, 420
Dorothy (Packard) (Mrs. J. Frank) 349, 354, 355, 415
Erick 224
Fannie C. (Mrs. C.A.) 13, 39, 42, 55, 57, 73, 108, 109, 119, 141, 145, 153, 160, 163, 164, 177, 184, 187, 191, 225, 245, 247, 256, 260, 262, 265, 266, 274, 278, 285, 287, 288, 294, 297, 299, 305, 313, 318, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 382, 383, 384, 387, 389, 390, 391, 392, 394, 395, 400, 401, 403, 406, 408, 409, 411, 423, 424, 431, 432, 434, 439, 451
Frances (McCarthy) (Mrs. J. Frank) 224, 394, 395
J. Frank 225, 349, 354, 355, 367
J. Frank (son of J. Frank) 224, 349, 354, 355, 394, 395
J. Frank, Dr. 341, 365, 369
James 224, 394
James S. 351
Lee-Olive 311, 349, 350, 355, 356, 360, 361, 364, 406, 408, 411, 412, 417, 418, 419, 427
Margaret (Frick) (Mrs. James S.) 394
Minnie 347
Olive Linda (Harrison) (Mrs. Crockett) 347, 349
Ped Draper 341, 347
Peter 225, 349
Sarah May 311, 349, 356, 365, 419, 420, 423, 426, 427
Stephen 224
Virginia Sue 351, 356, 364, 370, 392, 399, 400, 411, 412
HART
John, Cap't. 100
HASKETT
Elizabeth 138
HASKINS
Jane 48, 50
HASSAM
Childe 24
HASSELTINE
Eli 161, 172
Isiaih 161
Samuel 161, 172
HAWKINS
Dr. 292
John, Sir 2
HAWTHORNE
Nathaniel 24, 148
HAYES
Betty 379
HAYWARD
Azariah 230
Benjamin[3] 216
Benoni[3] 216
Dorothy 217
Elesha[2] 216
Elizbeth[3] 216
John[2] 216
John[3] 216
Joseph[2] 216, 217
Joseph[3] 216
Mary[2] 216
Mary[3] 216
Susanna[3] 213, 216
Susannah (wife of Thomas[1]) 216
Thomas[1] 216, 223
Thomas[3] 216
HEARN
W.K., Mrs. 189, 192, 432
HEARST
William Randolph 336
HENDERSON
Johnny 52
HENRY VII OF ENGLAND 1
HENRY VIII OF ENG. 21
Hereford
Abagail 219

HERLIHY
Jessie, Mrs. 433
HERMINS
Jane 70, 71, 80
Judith 80
HERSEY
John, Deacon 216
HEWARD (HAYWARD)
Tho., Sr. 208
HILL
Ebenezer 230
Ebenezer[2] 230
Eleazer[2] 230
John 128
Israel[2] 230
Jacob[2] 230
Lidey 128
Theresa Snow 230
HILTONS 9, 10
HILTON
Edward 10, 11
William 10
William, Jr. 10
HINKSON
Mary 81
HINDS
Benjamin 172
HODGE
Nicholas 61, 62, 67
HOFFMAN
Sarah 338
HOLTON
Elizabeth 136
HOOPER
Elizabeth 229, 230
Hezekiah 230
Joseph 230
Winslow 230
HOPPER
John M. 176
Lambert 176
HOVEY
Nathaniel 110
HOWARD
Elizabeth 220
Ephriam 227
James 220
June 227
John 220, 223, 224
Mercy 220
Sarah 224
HOWELL FAMILY 335, 336, 337, 338, 340
HOWELL
Caroline 335
William 335
HOWELLS
William Dean 24
HOWES
Ellen M. 265, 271, 316, 317
HOWETT
Dr. 338, 339, 353
HOWLAND
Henry 208, 214
Jabez[2] 216
Jacob[1] 216
John 208
HOYT
Joseph, Cap't. 157
Sarah 120, 157
HUBBARD 10, 13, 40
HUBBELL
J.C. 175
HUGGINS
Nathaniel 72
Samuel 72
HUGHES
Archbishop 283, 284
Howard 356, 363
HULL
Ann 244
Andrew 180, 239, 240, 244
Andrew, Mrs. 188, 254, 431
James 177
Mary 239, 240
Samuel 180
Samuel Wesley 239, 240
Wesley 188, 254, 256
HUNDERVADT
Aura Jensdatter 76
HUNDEVARD
Jens Sorensen 76

HUNTER
Hugh 100
John 266
HUNTLEY
Lorinda 160
HUTCHINS
Samuel 93
HUTCHINSON
John 219

I

INGRAM
David 2
IRWINS ii
IRWIN
Andrew[2] 278
Andrew[3] 293, 295, 296, 299, 300
Ann[2] 278, 279
Bertha (Nax) 297, 298, 299, 300, 394, 433
Betty[5] Carlene 300
Charles[4] Milford 280
Christina[5] Sue 301
Donald[4] Leland 280
Dora[4] Elizabeth 280
Eliza (Robinson) 288, 291, 292, 293, 295, 299, 313, 327
Elizabeth[2] 277, 278
Elizabeth[3] 280
Ethel[3] 280
Fannie 327
Genevieve 295, 296
George[3] H. 291, 293, 295, 296, 299, 300
Gertrude 296
Hazel 280, 433
Hazel (wife of Nathan) 299
James[2] 275, 278, 281, 287, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 299, 313, 432
James[5] Willian 301
Jane[1] (Richey) 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 291
Jane[2] 278, 279
Jane[3] (Jennie) 258, 266, 275, 278, 285, 292, 293, 294, 295, 298, 299, 313, 314
Jean[6] Lenore 300
Joseph[3] 288, 293, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 313, 432
Kathleen[6] 301
Katrina[6] 300
Kermit[4] 297, 298, 299, 300, 394, 433
Lindsay[6] 301
Mamie[3] 278
Margaret (Robinson) 275
Margaret Fannie[3] 266, 292, 293, 295, 297
Mary[2] 278
Melvin[5] Andrew 301
Naomi 296, 298
Nathan 299
Nora (Church) 298, 299
Phyllis M. 298
Rachel[6] 301
Richard[2] 278, 279, 298, 299
Robbie[3] 278
Robert[1] 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 286, 291, 432
Robert (Jr.)[2] 278
Robert[3] 278
Robert[5] Joseph 300
Roger[4] 295, 296
Rose 298, 299
Sally[2] 278
Samuel[2] 278, 279
Sarah[2] 314
Sarah[3] 280
Sarah[3] E. 279, 280
Sarah[6] 301
Will[3] 280
William[2] 278, 279, 280
William[3] 279, 280
William Dale 280

J

JABAUET
Shirley 401
JACKSON
Daniel, Cap't. 99
Hannah 49, 50
Thomas 49
JAMES I KING OF ENGLAND 6
JAMES
Hugh 11
JAY
Thomas, Sir 124

JENNESS
Eleanor 72
Francis 72
Hezekia 67
John 67, 81
John Scribner 7, 19, 20
Mary 65
JENNES (JONNES)
Richard 65, 67, 87
Samuel 87
Thomas 67
JENNEY
Sarah 216
JENNINGS
Ephriam 219
Hannah 229
Richard 229
JEWELL
Kimberley Ann 422, 423
JEWETT
Sarah Orne 24
JOCELYN
Hinry 11, 43, 44
JOHNSON
Estella, Mrs. 142
Francis, The Rev. 212
Harry[2] 159
James 11, 49
Louise 347
Marsena 347
Mary 49, 50
JONES
Alexander 11, 59
Deborah 145
John 71
John Paul 53, 82, 101
Sarah (Pierce) 59
Thomas 129
William 71, 72
JORDAN
Dominicus 60
JOSLIN
Abraham 138
Dorothy[2] 138
Elizabeth[2] 138
Mary[2] 138
Nathaniel[2] 138
Nathaniel[3,4,5,6,7,8,9,10] 139
Rebecca[1] 138
Rebecca[2] 138
Ruth 133, 134, 138
Thomas[1] 138
JUSTIN
George 177

K

KANE
Clara 319, 320
KAVANAUGH
George 317
KEITH
Daniel[3] 227
Ephriam[3] 227
Hannah[3] 227
Israel[3] 227
James, The Rev. 223, 227
James[3] 227
John[2] 227
John[3] 227
Joseph[2] 227
Joseph[3] 227
Keyiah[3] 229
Mary[3] 227
Susanna[3] 227
Zephaniah[3] 227
KELLAM
Elizabeth 129
KELLEY
Andrew 20
Mary 52
KELLY
Roger 45
KETCHEN
John 128
KEYSON
George 244
KIMBALL
Ebenezer 177
KING
Experience (Phillips) 233
James 110
Katherine 127, 128

KING—Continued
Samuel 233
Susanna 230, 233
KINGMAN
Elizabeth 217
Henry 217
Joanna 217
John 224
John[2] 217
Mary 72, 86, 88
William 88
KINSLEY
Benjamin[4] 220
Bethiah[4] 220
Hannah 220
John[4] 220
Mary[4] 220
Nathan[4] 220
Samuel[3] 220
Samuel[4] 220
Sarah[4] 220
Stephen[1] 220
Susanna[4] 220
KITCHEN
Elizabeth 128
KNIGHT
Roger 11
KNOWLES
John 67
Keziah 72
KOOGLER
Hillary-Beth 381, 425, 427
Melinda-Lee 380, 381, 425, 427, 428
Robert Eugene 423, 424, 426, 427
Sarah May 294, 383, 424, 427
Sharon Lynn 381, 426, 427
KRAUS
Michael 5, 6, 130

L

LABOURNE
Dr. 65
LA FROMBOIS
John 170
LAMB
William 161
LAMBERT
Isaac 176
John 176
LAMKINS
A. 268
Alonzo 268
C.A. 268
Ellen 258, 268
LANDER
John 71
LANE
Ambrose 46
Matthew 183
Sampson 10, 11, 46, 47
Sara 72
William 72
LANGE
Margaret 76
LANGFORD
Tex 330
LANGSTAFF
Henry 11
LAPHAM
Rebecca 219, 220
LA PIER
Kathleen 403
LAPMAN
John 266
Moses 268
LARTIQUE
Bishop 282
LATHAM
Hannah 219
Robert 219
LATHROP
Elizabeth 224
Mark 224
Mary 217
LA TOUR 46
LITTLEJOHN
Nelson 271
LEACH
Solomon 233

LEAR (LEER)
Mary 93, 94
LEE
John 212
LEIGHTON (LAYTON, LAIGHTON, LAITON, ETC.)
Alexander, Dr. 144
Cedric 26
Debbie (Seavey) 144
Eliza (Rymes) 146
Helen 145
Joanna 144
Mark 145
Oscar 26, 145, 147
Robert 144
Thomas[1] 144
Thomas Bell (also Layton) 25, 26
Thomas Bell 144, 145, 146, 147, 148
LEONARD
Abagail 191, 219, 227, 233
Abagail[3] 230
Anna M. 231
Anna R. 229
Benjamin 230
Deliverance 191, 227, 230, 233
Deliverance[4] 230
Ebenezer[4] 230
Elizabeth[4] 229, 230
Enoch[3] 229
Enoch[4] 229
Experience[3] 230
Ezekiel[4] 229
Hannah[4] 229, 230
Isaac 191, 227, 233
Isaac[3] 230
Isaac[4] 230
Jacob 191, 219, 227, 233
Jacob[2] 230
Jacob[3] 230
James 224
John[2] 229
John[3] 229
John[4] 229
Joseph[3] 229
Joseph[4] 229, 231
Josiah 219
Josiah[3] 229
Josiah[4] 229
Lydia 229
Margene[4] 229
Mary 229
Mary[3] 230, 231
Mary[4] 229
Mehitabel[4] 230
Moses[3] 229
Moses[4] 229
Nathan[4] 229
Orpah[4] 229
Rebecca[4] 230
Samuel 229
Samuel[2] 229
Samuel[4] 229
Sarah 219
Sarah[3] 229, 230
Seth[4] 229
Solomon 228
Solomon[1] 229
Solomon[3] 230, 231
Solomon[4] 230
Susanna[3] 230
Thankful[4] 230
Timothy[4] 230
LEVETT
Christopher, Cap't. 11, 22, 43
LEWIS
Abraham 72
Harley P. 297, 288
Phyllis M. (Irwin) 297
LIBBY
Charles Thornton 6, 8, 11, 12, 40
Hannah 164
LIBE
Isack 67
Jacob 67
LINDBERG
Charles A. 339
LOBDELL
Abram 177
LOCKE, (LOCK)
Christina (French) 86
Edward 67
Elijah 89

LOCKE (LOCK)—Continued
Francis 67, 87
Hulda 86, 89
James 67, 81
Jethro 67
John, Cap't. 67, 72, 78, 80
John, Jr. 67
John Robert 69, 78, 79, 80
Joseph 67
Judith 72
Lydia (Foss) 79
Nathaniel 80
Sabrina 72
Samuel 67
Simon 80
Thomas 80
Willial 67
William 89
LOCKER
Lydia 129
LOW
Robert 25
LOWELL
James Russell 24
LUMLEY
Sadie, Mrs. 355
LUTZ
Fred (Fredrick W.) 342, 361
LYFORD 10
LYON
Fanny (Fannie) 177, 249
Hattie 177
Nathaniel 126, 127, 249

Mc

MACK CLARRY
Andrew 87
MCCARTHY
Frances 367
MCCLOSKY
Bishop 283
MCFARLIN
Diana (Owen) 260
MCGILLIGAN
Father 283
MCGILL
Fred 27
Fredrick T., Jr. 148
MCGINTY 287
MCKENNA
Cordelia 163
MCKNALL 288

M

MACE
Reuben 61
MAHIEU
Hester ii, 195, 196, 197
Jennie 195
MANLEY
Lyman 176
Lyman, Col. 177
MANSFIELD
Saloma 234
MARDEN
Abagail (Webster) 72
Alfred B., Mrs. 432
Elizabeth 72
James 67, 72
John 72
Rachel (Berry) 73
Samuel 93
Thomas 61, 72
William 67
MARINEAU
Janice 143, 395
Norman 143, 395
MARSHALL
Robert 47
MASON
John (of Salem) 128
John, Cap't. 4, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 19, 24, 39, 40, 44, 46, 47, 48, 49, 69, 71, 440
Joseph 45
Robert 39, 40
MASSASOIT 216
MATTHEWS
ffrancis 11
Samuel 20

MATTONE
Hughbert 59
Sarah (Pierce) (Jones) 59, 91
MAVERICK
Samuel 9
MAY
David 347
Lena (Harrison) 347
MAYBLOM
Carl 361
MAYHEW
Thomas 123
MEADOWS
Beaver 268
MIGNAULT
Pierre-Marie, Father 282
MILLS
Adam 124, 125
MINOR 409
MITCHELL
Dr. 331
Alice B. 216
Batholomew 20
Constant[2] 213
Edward[2] 215, 216, 217
Edward[3] 216, 221
Elizabeth[2] 190, 195, 204, 205, 208, 213, 215, 216, 219, 220, 221
Experience 190, 195, 198, 204, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 219, 220
Hannah[2] 217
Jacob[2] 212, 215, 216, 217
Jacob[3] 217
Jane (Cooke) 190, 212, 215, 219
John[2] 217
Maria 212, 213
Mary 215
Mary[2] 216
Mary[3] (da. of Edward[2]) 216
Mary[3] (da. of Jacob[2]) 217
Pearl 331
Sarah[2] 216
Susanna (Pope) 216, 217
Thomas 212, 213
Thomas (son of Thomas of Amsterdam) 212, 213, 220
Thomas[2] 215
Thomas[3] 217
MONTCALM
General 95
MOODY
Joshua, The Rev. 47
MOOR
Thomas 11
MOORE
Ellen (Taylor) 190, 207, 219
Margery (Margaret) 190, 207, 219
Robert 190, 207, 219
MORGAN
Richard 80, 268
MORGENSEN
Archer 76
MORLEY
Edward 406
MORRIS
Sally 163
MORSE
Joseph 61
MORTON
Gordon 213
MULFORD
Frisweil 136
John 136, 137,138
MULLENS
Priscilla 227
MUNSON
Jared 173
MURRAY
Harriet 161, 172
John R. 172
MUSKETT
Simon 124

N

NASH
Evelyn 339, 340
Samuel, Sgt. 219
NATE
Alexander, Cap't. 100
NAX
Bertha 298, 299
Robert 299

NEAL
Walter, Cap't. 11, 12, 13, 39, 40, 44
NEALE
Jeremiah 128, 129
Mary 129
NELSON
Dr. 177
NEWMAN
Antipas 136, 137
NEWT
James 11
NEYENHOUSE
Sarah 403
NICHOLS BROTHERS 99
NORTON
Captain 39
Francis 10, 11
NURSE
Mary 129
NYE (NAY)
Eva 400

O

ODIORNE
Elizabeth[2] (Seavey) 48
Henry 10
John 49, 50
Nathaniel 48
Philip 48, 50
OGSBURY
James 365
ONO
Jennie (Granger) (Mrs. Takahiro) 434
Ikuko 421
Seiji 420
Takahiro 420, 421
Yoshihiro Joshua 420, 421, 423
ORCUTT
Caleb 220
Deliverance 220
Elizabeth 220
Jacob 230
Jane 220
Joanna 220
John 230
Martha 220, 233
Moses 220
William 220, 230
ORMSBY
Waterman 278
OSBORNE
Abagail[4] 138
Benjamin[4] 138
Bezaliell 136
Elizabeth[4] 138
Frisweil (Frezwith, Freesweed, Frodisword, Freesword) 137, 138
Hannah (Burton) 137, 138
Hannah[2] 137
John 137
Jonathan[4] 138
Joseph 136
Joseph[2] 137
Margaret 132
Margaret (Derby) 132, 136
Margaret[4] 138
Nicole 77
Recompense[2] 137
Richard[4] 138
Samuel 137
Stephen[4] 138
William[1] 132, 136, 137, 138
William[2] 137, 138
William[3] 137, 138
William[4] 138
OSCAR OF THE WALDORF 362
O'SHAW
Catherine 61
Daniel 60, 61
Dermon 60
Joan 61
John 61
Margaret 61
Mary 61
Sarah 61
OTIS
George 318
OWEN
Annie W. 259, 304, 407
C.F. 259
Datus Byron 259

P

PACKARD
Abul[3] 224
Daniel[3] 224
David[3] 224
Deborah 191, 219, 220, 221, 223, 233
Deborah[2] 225, 227
Deborah[3] 224
Deliverance 219
Deliverance[2] 225, 230
Deliverance[3] 224
Dorothy Gertrude 225
Elizabeth (Stream) 191, 223, 227
Elizabeth[2] 223, 224
Elizabeth[3] 224
Faithful[3] 224
Fearnot[3] 224
Frank, Dr. 225
George[3] 224
Hannah[2] 224
Hannah[3] 224
Israel[2] 225
Israel[3] 224
Jael[2] 225
James[3] 224
John 225
John[2] 224
John[3] 224
Jonathan[3] 224
Joseph[3] 224
Lydia[3] 224
Margaret[3] 224
Mary[2] 224
Mary[3] 224
Nathaniel[2] 224
Samuel[1] 191, 219, 220, 221, 223, 225, 227, 230
Samuel[2] 224
Samuel[3] 224
Samuel[4] 220
Sarah[3] 224
Solomon[3] 224
Susanna[3] 224
Thomas[2] 223
Widow 224
Zacheus[2] 224
Zacheus[3] 224
Zechariah[3] 224
PAGE
Greta 288
John, Gov. 148
John F. 288
PAIGE
Andrew H. 239
Charles H. 239
Edward J. 239, 241
James J. 239
William G. 239
PAINE
Henry 63, 65
Philip 64, 65, 67
PALMER
Christopher 72
Sam 401
William 71, 217
PANOFF
Engineer 352
PAQUIN
Bert R. 300
Kelly 301
Scott 301
PARKER
Basil 43
Betsy A. 163
Robert, Cap't. 99
Thomas 104
PARSONS
Cap't. 88, 102
George 177
Joseph, Cap't. 88, 97
L.B. 6, 7, 22
Maude 401
Minnie 400
PATTON
Darlene 280
PAYANT
Peter 403
PAYNE
Phillip 437
PEARSON
Drew 262

PECK
— 159
Aaron[7] 159
PELTIER 100
PEPLAW
Mrs. —, Sr. 224
Frances (Harrison) 224
Russell 224
PEPPERRELL
William[1] 59
William[2], Sir 59, 61
PERKINS
Elizabeth 230
Elton S., Mrs. 64, 65, 87, 89, 432
Isaac 110
Nathaniel 233
Susannah 110
Timothy 233
PERRIN
Thomas 110
PERRY
Marshall 172
PEVERLEY
John 11
Kinsman, Cap't. 101
PHELPS
Nicholas 126
PHILBROOK
Anna 72
Ebenezer 67
Elizabeth 72
John 50, 72
Thomas 72
PHILLIPS
Alice 216
Experience 233
Richard 224
PHILLIP SON OF MASSASOIT 216, 217
PICKERING
Thomas, Cap't. 100
John 71
PIERCE (PEARCE)
Eleanor 59
Ezekiel 176
Franklin 24, 148
John 59, 60, 91
Joseph 59, 61
Mary 59
Sarah 59
PLATT
Moss K. 177
POLLARD
John 231
POLLOCK
Michael 374, 375, 377
POMEROY
Leonard 9
Richard 72
POMPA
Elaine 374
POOR
Enoch, Col. 97
POPE
Benjamin 135
Demaris[1] 135
Demaris[2] 125, 135
Enos 135
Exercise 129
George 135
Gerthry (Gertrude) 127, 128, 131, 135
Hannah[2] 131, 135
John 217
Joseph[1] 125, 131, 135
Joseph[2] 135
Robert 135
Samuel 135
Sarah (Jenney) 216
Stephen[4] 135
Susanna 216
Thomas 216
POPHAM
George 5
PORTER
H., The Rev. 103
POTTER
— 123
Thomas, Esq. 124
POWER
Michael, The Rev. 282
PRATT
Ebenezer 227

PREBLE
Abraham 43
PRINDLE
The Rev. 174
PRING
Martin 3, 4
PRIOR
Mary 217
PUDDINGTON
George 51
Robert 45
PUTNAM
A. 177
Aaron 177
Archeleaus 177
Israel 177

R

RACKLEY
John 81
RALEIGH
Walter, Sir 5
RAMUSIO
Giovanni Batisto 3
RAND
Frances 61
ffrancis 11
Lydia 80
Nathan 67
Samuel 67
Thomas 67
RANDALL
Polly 89
Thomas 224
RAYLTON
Margerey 122, 123
RAYMOND
William 11
REAGAN
Nancy 415
Ronald 415
RENALDS
John 19
REYNOLDS
Seaborn 61
RICE
Robert, Judge 400
RIDGE
Daniel 82
RING
Mary 110
RISHWORTH
Edw. 39
RITCHEE (RITCHEY, RICHIE, ETC)
Belle 275
Jane 275, 276, 280, 432
Nancy 275, 276, 277
RIX
Guy Scoby 75, 77, 78, 431
ROACH (ROCHE)
Thomas 102
ROBERTS
Alanson 174
Benjamin 172, 173, 174
Catherine 174
Eliakim 174
Ethan 173
Harriet 174
John 174
Michael 174
Samuel 174
Susan 174
Theodorus P. 174
William 173
ROBINSON
Elizabeth[2] (Eliza) 281, 285, 286, 287, 288, 291
Ernest 365
Fanny 285
George[2] 285, 288
Harvey 285, 288
Hugh[1] 285, 286, 287
Hugh[2] 285, 286, 287
John, Pastor 197, 200, 201
Margaret (Rooney) 282, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288
Rosella 287, 288
Stewart 285, 287, 288
RODEE
Stephen 319

ROELANDT
Raphael 195
ROGERS
Boh 400
Father 282
John 208
ROONEY
Bridgit 284
Catherine 284
James, Father 184, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287
Margaret 285
Thomas 284, 286
William 284
ROOSEVELT
President 353
ROSIER
James 4
ROW
Nicholas 71
RUMBOLD
Daniel 127
RUTLEDGE
Lyman V. 16, 17, 19, 22, 23
RYMES
Christopher 145
Eliza 145
Lucy (Walker) 145

S

SALANO
Alexander Pete 404
Andre Marcel 404
SAMORS
William 61
SAMOSET 4, 204
SAMPSON
Dorcas 217
SANBORN
— 86
Nathan 88
Nathaniel 86, 87, 88
Samuel 86, 87, 88
Sarah 88
Sarah[4] (Seavey) 87, 88
SANSOM
Martha 364
SAYERS
Homer 423
SAYWARD
Susan L. 301
SCADGEL
Mary 113
SCOTT
Sarah 91
SEALEY
Edward 220
John 220
SEAVEY, OLD ENGLISH SPELLING VARIANT OF: SAWAY, SCEWE, SEAVEY, SEAVIE, SEEVEY, SEEVYE, SEVEE, SEVEY, SEVIE, SEVY, SEVYE, SEWAY, SEWY, SEWYE, ZEAVIE, ZEVE, ZEVIE, ZEYVE
Alice 32, 33, 34
Charity 34
Christopher 33, 36
Elizabeth 34, 35
Ellis (Elizeus) 32, 33, 34, 36, 37
Gregory 35, 36
Helen Baron 42, 55
Henry 34, 35, 36, 42, 55, 145
Jo 32
Joan 33
Johan 34
Johanna 34, 36
John 33, 34, 36
Julian 35
Margaret 33
Marie 34
Nicholas 33, 34
Rebecka 36
Richard 32, 33, 34, 36
Richard, Jr. 33
Robert 33
Thomas 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 55
Thomazine 34, 37
William 33, 34, 36
William, Jr. 33
SEAVEY i, ii, v, vi, 1, 6, 12, 20, 22, 24, 30, 31, 32, 35, 36, 37, 39
Aaron 103

Aaron[8] 161, 163
Aaron[9] Mortimer 161
Abagail (Foss) 87, 89, 91
Abagail[3] 63, 65
Abagail[4] 86, 88, 103
Abagail[4] (da. Moses[3]) 89
Abagail[5] (da. Ithamar[4]) 88
Adeline E. 160, 161
Albert[8] 244, 245, 253, 432
Alice 259
Allen[9] 161
Allison[8] 160
Amelia 260
Amos[3] 50, 118
Andrew[8] 161, 163
Annie (Owens) 258, 259
Anson[9] Mortimer 163
Benjiman 67
Benjamin[2] 58, 60, 64, 65, 89, 435, 436
Benjamin[6] (son Samuel[5]) 94
Benjamin[7] 160, 162
Benjamin[8] 160
Benjamin, Jr. 67
Bethana (Buffum) 157, 159, 162, 172, 243
Bethana[7] 159
Betsy 119
Bill 158
Charles 259
Charles[8] 160
Comfort[5] (da. Jonathan[4]) 89
Comfort[5] (da. Ithamar[4]) 88
Daniel[8] Monroe 161, 163
Datus 259, 260
David[8] 161, 163
David (son Cap't. Stephen[3]) 52
Debbie 144
Deborah Jones 145
Deborah[5] 93, 115
Deborah[6] (da. Samuel[5]) 94
Delia Anne (Curtis) 247, 248, 249, 252, 272, 274, 303, 305, 314
Delian 247, 254
Demaris[2] (Damaris) 58, 60
Ebenezer[3] 50
Edmund[6] 120, 161
Edward[6] 117
Elijah[4] (son Moses[3]) 89
Elijah[5] 88
Elisha Porter 31, 50, 57
Elizabeth[2] 35, 42, 48, 50
Elizabeth[5] (da. Ithamar[4]) 88
Elizabeth (da. Cap't. Stephen[3]) 52
Ellen A. 247, 258, 303
Ellen (Lamkin) (Collins) 258, 263, 264
Flora[9] 163
Florence[9] 161, 163
Fred C.[9] 159
Fred W. 162, 163, 433
George 164, 244, 431
George 247
George[7] 160, 164
George[9] 161, 245
George L. 247, 248, 258, 259, 272, 303, 304
George W. 247
George[8] Washington 153, 155, 163, 164, 177, 182, 188, 245, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 253, 254, 256, 257, 258, 263, 264, 265, 266, 268, 272, 274, 303, 304, 305, 407, 431
George Washington (The Mormon) 163, 164
Hannah 50
Hannah[3] (Seavey) 2nd wife William[3] 64
Hannah[3] 50, 53
Hannah[4] 60, 85, 91, 93, 104, 115
Hannah[5] (da. Samuel[4]) 93, 94, 115
Hannah[8] 161, 163
Hannah (Jackson) 52
Hannah (da. Cap't. Stephen[3]) 52
Hannah (wife of Joseph[3]) 60
Henry[2] 58, 59, 64, 65, 91, 113, 117
Henry[3] 63, 64
Henry[4] 60, 61, 64, 86, 87, 91, 92, 113
Hephsibah[3] 50
Hiram[8] 159
Horace[8] 159
Huldah[4] (da. Moses[3]) 89
Irene 263, 264
Isaac[5] 93, 94
Ithamar[4] 60, 85, 87, 88, 91, 92, 95, 96, 97, 112, 113
J.[8] J. (Johnson J.) 161, 163
James 67, 118

SEAVEY—Continued
James[3] 50
James T.M. 31, 32, 35, 36, 42, 44, 55, 57
Jane[5] (da. Ithamar[4]) 88
Joanna[4] (Johannah) 60, 91, 113
John[2] 35, 42, 48, 50, 61
John[5] 88
John (son Cap't. Stephen[3]) 52
John,[5] Cap't. 144, 145
John[7] 157, 158, 159, 161, 162
John Franklin 164
John[8] R.M. 161
Jonathan[4] 86, 87, 88
Jonathan[5] (son Jonathan[4]) 97
Jonathan[6] T. (son Samuel[5] Rochester) 97
Jonathan[6,7,8] 89
Jone[8] 161, 163
Joseph 67
Joseph[3] 60, 61, 64, 91, 113
Joseph[4] 60, 91, 96
Joseph[5] (son Jonathan[4]) 89
Joseph[6] 117, 119, 120, 157, 161, 169
Joseph[7] 158, 159, 160, 161, 172
Joseph[8] M. 161
Joshua (son Cap't. Stephen[3]) 52
Katherine 259, 260, 407
Laura[8] 161
Lawrence[9] Albert (Sevey) 155, 184, 247, 249, 251, 254, 258, 259, 272, 295, 303, 304, 305, 312, 403
Levi[4] (son Moses[3]) 89
Levi[5] (son Jonathan[4]) 89
Lucius[8] 244, 245, 253
Margaret[5] 93
Mary[3] 50
Mary[3] 63
Mary[4] 86
Mary[5] (da. Ithamar[4]) 88
Mary[5] (Fuller) 97, 119, 120, 121
Mary[7] 159
Mary[8] 163
Mary[8] Jane 161
Mary[9] 161
Mary (2nd w. of John[2]) 57
Mary (da. Cap't. Stephen[3]) 52
Mary (Carpenter) (Dearing) 53
Mary (True) 52
Mehitabel[5] (da. Ithamar[4]) 88
Mehitable[4] 86, 88
Michael (son Cap't. Stephen[3]) 52
Minerva Elizabeth (Johnson, Vance) 164
Moses 95, 96, 118
Moses[3] (son Benjamin[2]) 89, 115
Moses[4] (son Moses[3]) 89
Moses[4] 67, 86, 87, 89
Moses[7] 159
Nathaniel[2] 58, 61
Nathaniel[3] 50
Nicholas (son Cap't. Stephen[3]) 52
Paul 96
Rebecca[2] (Rebekah) 58, 60, 61
Robert[9] 161
Roxanna[7] 158, 160, 162
Ruth 60
Ruth[5] 88
Ruth[6] T. (da. Samuel[5]) 94
Samuel 102, 103, 104, 120
Samuel, Cap't. 102
Samuel[2] 58, 59, 60, 63, 64, 65, 67, 68, 85, 89, 101, 113, 117, 432, 437
Samuel[3] 53, 57, 63, 64, 65, 67, 68, 69, 75, 85, 86, 87, 89, 95, 103, 119, 432
Samuel[4] 85, 86, 87, 88, 91, 92, 93, 94, 96, 97, 101, 102, 103, 104, 113, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 432
Samuel[4] (son Moses[3]) 89
Samuel[5] 85, 88, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 101, 102, 103, 104, 115, 116, 117, 118
Samuel[5] (son Ithamar[4]) 88, 95, 96, 97, 103
Samuel[6] F. (son Samuel[5] of Rochester) 97
Samuel of Epson 103, 104
Sarah[4] 60, 86, 88, 91
Sarah[5] (da. Samuel[4]) 93
Sarah[7] 157, 159
Sarah[8] 161, 253
Sarah A.[8] 244, 245, 246
Sarah (Pierce) (Jones) (Mattone) 59, 61, 113
Sewell[7] 157, 159
Simon[5] (son of Jonathan[4]) 89
Slaves Seavey, Family Members, Ammi 50, Caezer Walles (Seavey) 50, Dinah 50, George 50, Hampshire 50, Phillis 50, Titus 50

Solomon[5] 60, 85, 91, 93, 94, 95, 104, 107, 113, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 141, 155, 157, 161, 168, 169, 170
Solomon[7] 94, 115, 145, 155, 159, 160, 162, 164, 178, 180, 187, 188, 189, 191, 239, 243, 244, 245, 246, 253, 257, 304, 431, 432
Stephen[2] 48, 51
Stephen,[3] Cap't. 50, 51, 52
Stephen[4] (son of Cap't. Stephen[3]) 52
Sylvia (Washburn) 245, 249, 253, 304
Tamsen (Tomasine) 58, 62, 68, 85
Thomas 51
Thomas[1] ii, 12, 13, 35, 36, 37, 42, 44, 45, 49, 51, 53, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 64, 65, 68, 73, 85, 91, 101, 113, 115, 118, 142, 145, 154, 168, 386, 432, 434, 435, 436, 437, 446
Thomas[2] 65
Thomas[3] 50, 63
Victor Orville 263, 264
William 67, 88, 118
William[1] ii, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 31, 35, 36, 39, 40, 42, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 53, 55, 56, 57, 58, 61, 62, 64, 68, 70, 72, 73, 85, 96, 101, 118, 145, 154, 162, 446
William[2] 44, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 56, 68
William[3] 50, 64
William[5] (son of Samuel[4]) 94
William[6] (son of Solomon[5]) 94, 115, 120, 121, 134, 155, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 169, 170, 172, 243, 246
William[7] 159
William[8] 161, 163
William, Jr. 67

SEELEY
William 45

SENTER
Col. 97

SHAETE BROTHERS 99

SHARROW
Charles S. 268
Lewis 268
Sophia i
Sophia L. 153, 265, 268, 271

SHATTUCK
Samuel 126, 129

SHAW
Elizabeth 227
James[2] 216
John, The Rev. 227
John[1] 216
John[3] 216
Joseph 227

SHERBURN (SHERBORN)
Henry 11, 71

SHERBURNE
John H. 298
Naomi (Irwin) 275, 287, 288, 432

SHERWILL
Nicholas 9

SHORTRIDGE
Samuel 100

SHUTE
John 60

SIGNOR
Philip 177

SILVER
Cassius D., Dr. 329, 407, 409, 410

SLAVIN
James 258

SLEEPER
Esther 159, 172
Samuel T.W. 159

SMART
Albert 402
Beatrice 402
Mickey 402

SMITH
Barbara, Mrs. 142
Della 392
E. 177
Elizabeth 120
George 129
John 225
John, Cap't. 6, 15, 17, 19, 22
Margaret 129
Stella 400
Sylvanus 176
Tammasen 129

SNOW
Bernard[8] 237, 238
Bernice 237

SOUTHER
Mary 72
John 72
SOUTHWICK
Cassandra 126
Daniel 127, 128
Esther 132
Josiah 126, 137
Lawrence 126
SPAULDING
Wright 176
SPENCE & SHERBURNE CO. 99
SPENCER
Humphrey 9
Thomas 11
SPOFFORD
James 159
Mary E. 159
Sophia 159
SQUANTO 4
STANDISH
Josiah[2] 223
Miles 17, 204, 205, 208, 214, 220, 223
STERN
Ezera S. 45
STERNS
Judith (Ruth) 159
STEVENS
— 86, 88
STILEMAN
Elias 39
STODDARD
Benjamin 53
STORY
William 110
STOVALL
Bartholomew 391, 421
Bill, Major 420
James C., Mrs. 384
STOWE
Harriet Beecher 24
STREAM
Elizabeth 191, 221, 227
STRIGHT
Barbara 419
STRUCK
Barbara Ann 299
SUMMER
Waitsill 227
SUPPLY
Clap 99
SWADDON
Philip 45
SWAIN
John 63
Mary 63
Richard 63
SYMONDS
John 11

T

TAFT
Nathaniel 133
Sarah 133
William Howard 133
TALLMAN
Louise 433
TANKARD
Martin 183
TANNER
Isabel 278
John 100
TARLETON
Ruth 94
TARR
Del 280
TASANEN
Minnalisa 77, 78
TASH
Thomas, Maj. 116
TASKER
Rebecca 88, 97
TAYLOR
Ellen 189, 207
Mary Christine, Sister 281
TERRY
Samuel 196
THADBURN
Mary 81
THAXTER
Celia 22, 24, 26, 142, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 150

Levi 26, 148
Rosamond 147, 149
THOMAS
Beryl 280
THOMASTON
George 244
THOMPSON
John 221
Isiah 110
John 122, 124
Jonathan 174
Margaret (also know as Margaret Buffum) 122, 124, 125
Mary 110
Thomas, Cap't. 101
Thomazine (Ward) 122
THOMSON
David 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12
TIBBETTS
Abagail 81
TILSON
Joseph 230
TIMBRELL
Martha 189, 190, 207
TRASK
John 137
Mary 127, 128
TRASKER
Ellen 89
TREADWELL
Jacob 99
TREDIECK
Henry 61
TRUDEAU
Adam 402
Erin 402
Ernest 402
James 402
Theresa 402
TRUE
Mary 52
Obadiah 52
TRUMBULL
Levi 173
TUCKE
John, The Rev. 27
TUCKER
Margaret, Mrs. 45, 61
Richard 45, 46, 61
TUCKERMAN
Samuel 145
TULER
Henry 71
TOLHURST
W.G. 161
TURPIN 70
Thomas 55

U

UOCHIN (DIGEHIN)
Margaret 212, 213

V

VAN DYKE
Archie Simeon 404
Clara Anna 399, 404
VAUGHN
George 11, 220
J.B. 271
Mary 220
VERRAZANO
Giovanni 1, 2, 3
VINES
Richard 51
VOLL
Christene 301
VOSBURG
Charles 161
George 161
John 161
Joseph 161

W

WAIT
James M. 163
WALDRON 9
WALFORD
Jeremy (Walford, Jeremiah) 10, 11
Thomas 11, 48

WALKER
Hannah (Philbrick) 48, 50
James 278
Joseph 50
Lucy 145
WALL
James 11
John 71
WALLIS
Eleanor 72
Esther 72
George 60, 72
Mary 60
Ralph 60
Samuel 67
Sara 81
William 67
WALTER
George, The Rev. 393
WALTON
George 13
John 71
WARBURTON
Joanna 51
WARD
— 123
Artemus 130
Dionis (Burrow) 122
George 122, 123
Jane 124, 125
Jeffrey 124
Richard W. 162, 188, 431
Thomasine 122, 124
WARNER
Alice Chester 163
WARREN
Elizabeth 205
John 80
Mercy 216
Richard 205
Sarah 205
WASHBURN ii
WASHBURN'S OF ENGLAND & CONNECTING LINES 189, 190
WASHBURN
Abagail[4] 219, 229
Abagail[5] 233
Amasa[8] 239, 241
Andana[6] 234
Ann[8] 239, 240
Anna[4] 220
Anne 180
Benjamin[3] 220
Benjamin[4] 219, 220
Bernice[8] 239, 241, 244, 254
Betsy[9] 239
Calvin[6] 234
Charles[8] A. 235
Charlotte[9] 239
Cornelius[4] 220
David[5] 233, 234
Deborah[5] 227
Deliverance[4] 219
Deliverance[5] 233
Dorcas 234
Dordona[6] 234
Ebenezer[4] 219, 220
Ebin[8] (Eber) (Eben) 177, 239, 240, 241
Edward[4] 219, 220
Elaine 188, 189, 191, 432
Eleayer[5] 227
Eliza[9] A. 239
Elizabeth 215
Elizabeth (Mitchell) 215, 216, 220, 221, 223, 227
Elizabeth[3] 220
Elizabeth[4] 219, 220
Elizabeth[5] 219
Emory 235
Ephriam[4] 219
Eunice (Wright) 187, 188, 239, 244
Eunice[9] 239
Gideon[4] 220
Hannah[4] 219, 227
Harriet 239
Hepzibah[4] 219
Isaiah 240
Israel[4] 227
Israel[5] 227
Israel[7] 235
James 229
James[4] 220

James[9] H. 239
Jane 207
Jane[3] 220, 230, 233
Jane[5] 227
Joanna[4] 220
Joanna[6] 230
John 189, 190, 192, 207, 223
John[1] 190, 191, 192, 195, 207, 208, 211, 219, 224, 229, 432
John[2] 190, 191, 195, 197, 204, 207, 208, 211, 213, 215, 216, 219, 220, 223, 224, 225, 227, 229, 230, 233
John[3] 219, 221, 224
John[4] 219, 224
John[7] 235
Jonathan[3] 220
Jonathan[4] 219, 220
Jone 207
Joseph[3] 219
Joseph[4] 219, 226
Joseph, Cap't. 230
Joseph[6] 220
Josiah[4] 220
Josiah[6] 234
Lacy[9] 239
Lydia[6] 233
Lydia[8] 239, 241
Marjorium 229
Martha[4] 220
Mary 207
Mary[3] 213, 220
Mary[4] 220
Mary[5] 219
Melissa 239, 241, 268
Miles[4] 219
Moses[4] 220
Nathan[4] 220
Nathaniel[4] 219
Nehemiah[4] 227
Noah[4] 227
Noah[5] 227
Orpha[8] 239, 241
Orville[8] 188, 239, 241, 254, 256
Patience[4] 219
Phillip[2] 207, 208, 219
Phillip[7] 235
Rebekah[4] 219
Reuben[6] 233, 234, 236, 239
Reuben[7] 234
Samuel[3] 191, 220, 221, 223, 225, 227, 233, 235
Samuel[4] 219, 227, 230, 233, 234
Samuel[5] 191, 233, 234
Samuel[6] 234, 235, 239
Samuel[7] 234
Samuel[8] 235
Sarah[3] 220
Sarah[4] 220
Sarah[5] 227
Seth[5] 227
Silence[5] 227
Simeon[7] 177, 187, 188, 191, 234, 237, 239, 240, 244, 245
Simeon[8] 239, 241, 254, 268
Solomon[5] 220, 230, 234
Solomon[6] 233
Sophia[8] 239, 241
Sylvanius[7] 234
Sylvia 160, 177, 180, 189, 191, 239, 240, 244
Tabitha[5] 233
Tabitha[6] 233
Thomas[3] 219, 225, 230
Thomas[4] 219
Thomas[5] 219, 229
Timothy[4] 219
William 207
William[4] 219

WASHINGTON
Temperance 51, 52

WATERHOUSE
Sarah 82

WATSON
Elkanah 276

WEBSTER
Abagail 72
George Hayward 339, 340

WEEKS
Elizabeth 81

WEIR
Robert 268

WELLS
William 244
WESTERVELT
Hazel 280
WENTWORTH
Joshua 96
WEST
P.H. 313
WEYMOUTH
George 4, 5
WHALEN
Alma 340, 341
WHEELWRIGHT 10
John, The Rev. 440
WHIPPLE
William 99, 100
William, Col. 96, 97
WHITE
Clara 245
Nellie 295
Ella 245
James 400
Joseph, Cap't. 23
Mary Ann 400
Will 298, 299
William 400
WHITEMAN
Chloe 230
Freelove 230
Lucinda 230
Samuel 230
Silvia 230
Susanna 230
WICKES
M.J.L. 32, 35, 36, 43
WIGGIN
Cap't. 144
Thomas 440
WILLES
Benjamin 230
WILLEY
Thomas 43
WILLIAM, DUKE OF NORMANDY (THE CONQUEROR) 29, 192
WILLIAMS
Andrew 266
Francis (Gov.) 11, 13, 46, 70, 71
John 11
Roger 20, 130
Sarah H. 266
WILLIS
Claire 280
WILSON
Don 364
Robert 127, 128, 129
WINSLOW 10
WINSLOW
Edward 196, 197, 203, 214
WINTHROP
John, Gov. 130
WITHERS
Thomas 11
WOLLASTON
John, Sir 8
WOMEN, TWENTY-TWO 11, 40
WONNERTON
Thomas 11, 39, 45, 46
WOOD
Abagail 229
Adrian 382
Ebenezer 160
Mary 110
Mary (Thompson) 110
Simon 174
WOODWARD
Jim 417
WORMWOOD
Love 112
William 19, 113
WRIGHT
Eunice 191, 234, 237, 239, 240
Isaac 191, 237, 238
Jerusa 237
Richard 215

BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 9999 06503 958 6